

PQ
6329
A2
1910

CORNELL
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY



GIFT OF

T. F. Crane

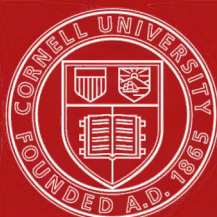
Date Due

JAN 23 1950		
FEB 17 1950		
MAR 4 1950	MAR 7 1960 M P	
MAR 25 1950	MAR 7 1960 M P	
APR 2 1950		
MAR 5 1954 H Z	DEC 2 1961 G Z	
MAY 2 1957 H Z	JAN 2 1962 M P	
	1 1963 M P	
MAY 2 1957 H Z	ncf 3-6-63	
FEB 20 1958 K P	MAY 20 1973 F	
OCT 16 1958 H S	MAY 15 1973 A P	
FEB 26 1959 H P	DEC 13 1979 S 19	
MAR 7 1960 M		
NYC R 22 Feb 60		



3 1924 027 658 172

olin



Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in
the United States on the use of the text.

DON QUIJOTE DE LA MANCHA

THAT IMAGINATIVE GENTLEMAN

DON QUIJOTE DE LA MANCHA

BY

MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA

TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH

BY

ROBINSON SMITH



LONDON

GEORGE ROUTLEDGE & SONS, LIMITED

NEW YORK : E. P. DUTTON & CO.

Fa

1910

27

A 526390

A

LA COMPAÑERA ETERNA MIA EN TODOS MIS CAMINOS Y CARRERAS

TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE

IN the prologue Cervantes speaks of this book as 'the tale of a poor, shrivelled, whimsical son, teeming with all manner of thoughts never entertained by another, even as one engendered in a prison, where every discomfort has its seat and every mournful sound its habitation.' Hence sprang and flourished a tradition that the book *Don Quijote* was at least begun, if not largely written, in confinement. And it is possible that portions of the first part were composed in the Seville jail, where trustworthy, though none too definite, evidence places Cervantes for a portion of the year 1602.¹ But it is not at all likely that the opening chapters were so written, since a small library must have been at hand for their composition.

The first book to come down from the shelf was a treatise by Antonio de Guevara, entitled *Contempt of Court and Praise of Country Life*,² where in the seventh chapter Cervantes found written: 'O happy he that dwelleth in the country! since for him suffice a lance behind the door, a horse in the stable, a shield in the hall.' This sentence forms part of the opening of *Don Quijote*; also from this treatise were derived suggestions as to the knight's diet and dress, the matter of the pruning-hook, together with his fondness for the chase and for debating with the village-priest.³ The fairly unusual word *Quijote* (our cuish, or thigh-piece) was probably suggested by its presence (in an emphatic position) in a passage (which for another reason we are sure Cervantes read) dealing with this same Guevara, where the hope is expressed that thigh-pieces (*quijotes*) may again come into use.⁴

Now that he has described the diet and dress, the house and habits of his hero, our author comes to the central idea of his story: such a country-gentleman becoming obsessed with reading books of chivalry and determining himself to become a knight-errant for the amelioration of the world. Teofilo Folengo had partially anticipated Cervantes in this idea by seventy years and more (1526) in his heroic-comic poem *Il Baldo*,⁵ being the wild and ridiculous adventures of a youth whose head had been filled with the nonsense of

the books of chivalry. He read all with relish, but had his favourites like his successor Don Quijote. ⁶

So one can follow Cervantes line by line, at times word by word, in the writing of his first chapter. After reading the second paragraph of this translation, turn to another treatise by Guevara (bound with the one above), the Counsels for Favourites, ⁷ and you will find, just before a denunciation of the books of chivalry : ' We see learned and well-read gentlemen becoming infirm and befogged, since so great is their delight in letters that they quite forget the refreshment of their persons ; ' and this as well : ' being advised how in the city of Damascus were some ancient books, he at once set out to see them... and arriving there sold his patrimony for their purchase... nay, was willing to forfeit his entire estate. '

Still another book to come down from the shelf was one then in manuscript : The Letters of the Bachelor of Arcadia, by Diego Hurtado de Mendoza, ⁸ who therein ridicules the style of Feliciano de Silva, especially his use of reason and unreason. The passage of Feliciano de Silva which Cervantes particularly parodies is from the Don Florisel de Niquea : ' O love ! why do I complain of thine unreason, since in thee unreason has more sway than reason. ' And Cervantes' next travesty is of : ' O celestial image, what grievance is done thy sovereign beauty, since, though thou deservest the highest seat of the heavens, they let thee abide among mortals ; and to them, by making none deserving of meriting thee save me. If any desert I have toward thee, it is for the love wherewith I love thee. ' But this was not from Feliciano de Silva, but from Antonio de Torquemada's Olivante de Laura, ¹⁰ a book of chivalry surpassing all the others perhaps both in fatuity and in the frequency with which it lent to Cervantes word, phrase, incident and even plot for the writing of Don Quijote.

Such are the more important derivations of Cervantes' two opening paragraphs. Perhaps too should be noted that Don Quijote's stew of rather more beef than mutton at once indicates both his poverty and his position — his poverty by the fact that beef then and there was cheaper than mutton ; his position, in that an old proverb ran, Beef and mutton, stew of a gentleman. ¹¹ His Saturday maigre of ' paunch and penance ' was probably composed of the head or neck and the tripe of animals. ¹² In hitting at authors that were divided between the names Quesada and Quijada (jaw-bone), though neither was the right one, Cervantes incidentally further characterises his hero.

In the third paragraph reference is made to the wounds received by Don Belianis. These occur in the History of Don Belianis by Geronimo Fernandez, in four parts.¹³ In the first two alone he receives one hundred and nine serious ones. The other reference is to the end of the fourth book, chapter seventy-five, where the author says : ' I give permission to any one into whose hands the other part may come to add it to this. ' The source for the debating with the village-priest has already been noted.¹⁴ As to Amadis' capacity for tears, one has but to read : ' Oriana was furious at seeing Amadis weep. ' ¹⁵ ' He was wan with much weeping. ' ¹⁶ ' I see him weep often, lady. ' ¹⁷ ' She saw tears fall from his eyes and moisten his whole face. ' ¹⁸

The key to the fourth paragraph is the word fantasía (fantasy), borrowed directly from the fifty-third line of the second Maccheronica of Il Baldo, the Folengo poem mentioned above,¹⁹ where the reading of Baldo is described much as Don Quijote's is here. The reference to Bernardo del Carpio is to the thirty-fifth canto of Nicolas de Espinosa's Segunda Parte de Orlando.²⁰ While the especial exploit of Rinaldo that delighted Don Quijote is from the Espejo de Caballeros²¹ : ' The good Rinaldo answered not courteous words ; rather with brave aspect he addressed him : ' O bastard... thou liest in every word, for to rob pagans in Spain is no robbery, when I alone in the teeth of forty thousand Moors and more seized a Mahomet of gold, whereof I had need to pay my soldiers. ' '

For the matter of the fifth paragraph one has but to turn to the Olivante de Laura : ' Silvano, armed to the teeth, wandered the world o'er in quest of adventures ; ' ²² ' Redressing many grievances and wrongs ; ' ²³ ' Courting dangerous adventures, and experimenting with his person in mighty deeds of arms ; ' ²⁴ ' In those days princes and young knights, to their fame and deathless name, were wont to encompass the earth... by their might and valour... surmounting things ; ' ²⁵ and Don Quijote's dream of becoming at least emperor of Trebizond had been realised by Rinaldo : ' Trebizond, or the Third Book of Rinaldo, how he came by his chivalries to be emperor of Trebizond. ' ²⁶ The Spanish word Trapisonda besides being a proper name also means confusion.

The sixth paragraph may be considered Cervantes' own, but when we come to the seventh we again meet with an appropriation, this time from the treatise that probably gave Cervantes the ingenioso (imaginative) of his title-page. In this book, the Examen de Ingenios,²⁷

the distinction between the imagination and the understanding is elaborated at great length, and the adjective *ingenioso* is frequently applied to the imaginative. In chapter eight, page ninety-eight, we read : ' They lose themselves in reading books of chivalry, in the Orlando, in Boscan, in the Diana of Montemayor, and others of that breed, since all are works of the imagination.' And in the same chapter, pages one hundred five and six, we get a hint for the naming of *Rocinante* : ' Of this opinion of Plato was a Spanish gentleman whose pastime was to write books of chivalry, since he possessed that order of imagination that inclines men to falsehoods and lies. Of him it is related that introducing a furious giant into his works he spent many days imagining some name that would wholly fit his temper.' Again, when Cervantes writes ' errant without lady-love is a tree bare of leaves or fruit, a body and no soul,' he is paraphrasing a couplet from the Orlando Innamorato : ²⁸

Perch'ogni cavalier, ch'è senza amore,
Se'n vista é vivo, é vivo senza core.

Finally, the name *Dulcinea* is a blending of *Dulcineo* and *Dulcina*, a shepherd and shepherdess that appear in Antonio de Lofraso's pastoral *Fortuna de Amor*. ²⁹

So much for the way Cervantes wrote his first chapter — a classic in the art of handling material already extant. This method indeed our author pursues throughout the entire book, though not again with such consistency as here at its beginning. And naturally, for when Cervantes sat down to write *Don Quijote*, he probably had in mind a short story only, one whose sole *raison d'être* was as a travesty of the books of chivalry, and its small canvass was necessarily crowded with materials from them. Apparently he had proceeded for seven or eight chapters (not divided as such when first written) before he saw what an inexhaustible mine of diversion he had in playing off *Don Quijote* and *Sancho*, one against the other, and hence that he could afford to leave the beaten track of imitation.

But here in the early chapters he keeps close to his models. At the beginning of the second, for example, *Don Quijote's* departure, unseen of any, before dawn, ³⁰ his eagerness to be dubbed, ³¹ the lyric tongues of the birds, ³² the coming of the flushed *Aurora*, ³³ can be matched almost word for word from the books of chivalry, as can also, in the third chapter, the words and manner of his petition for knighthood, ³⁴ the double invocation of his lady when in peril, ³⁵

and in the fourth, the delaying at the cross-roads.³⁶ But it is to be noted that Cervantes belittles and bemeans all that was fine and fair, never however sacrificing reality, but stopping short just this side of caricature. Instead of sallying forth through the gate of a city like the knights before him, it is through the postern of his corral that Don Quijote passes on that happy and historic July morning. In place of the customary castle it is a third-rate inn where he is that night regaled. It is a swineherd with a drove of hogs (and not a dwarf on the battlements) that, blowing his horn for them to herd, announces his arrival. Women of the lowest travelling type disarm him and not princesses solacing themselves on the castle-ward. A fat rogue of an innkeeper welcomes him and not the usual lord of the castle.

Cervantes thus does give life to much that was dead, bringing to common earth much that was in the air, and it were well to bear in mind, when we think him a trifle hard on his hero, that his object was not so much to be hard or easy, as simply to make as ridiculous as possible the books of chivalry and his own knight, the personification of them. Hence we find our imaginative gentleman believing that he is being regaled with music at some famous castle, and that ladies are serving him with trout and white bread, whereas in reality, dusty and way-worn, he is seated before an inn, and on his head an old-fashioned helmet tied on with green ribbons, with a cardboard visor so poorly contrived that even when it was raised he could not feed himself but must have poorly-soaked and worse cooked codfish from the hands of carriers' wenches, while all the music that he heard came from a boar-gelder, who sounded four or five notes on an instrument of reeds, the signal of his trade.³⁷

Regret as one may, and there have always been some to regret,³⁸ that Cervantes was not a little more sparing of his hero's flesh and feelings, one must at the same time admire the marvellous skill with which he made sport of the chivalresque tales and, by the same stroke, made them serve his own story. A good instance of this is the innkeeper's assertion that he too had been a knight, 'wandering in search of adventures in sundry parts of the world,' but that 'he had ended by taking up his abode in this his castle, where on his own and others' fortunes he now lived, welcoming there all knights-errant... simply from the great affection he bore them and that they might share their possessions with him in return for his good-will.' This passage travesties one in the second book of Olivante,³⁹ where

in all seriousness and fustian it is told of a knight that ' inasmuch as he had naught but this castle for a livelihood, he employed his goodwill in appropriating such knights and other persons as travelled these roads, bringing them to share their possessions with him.'

Continuing, the innkeeper suggests that Don Quijote should carry a little phial of ointments, telling of some knights that had friendly enchanters who carried to their relief, when stricken in the field or desert, some damsel or dwarf through the air in a cloud with a flask of water of such virtue that ' with just a drop the knights became as cured of their wounds as if they had none.' These last words, suited as they are to the mouth of the mocking innkeeper, also came from the *Olivante*,⁴⁰ twelve chapters further on, while quite another chapter is harked back to when we come to the innkeeper's next and most important suggestion, that of a squire. In that chapter⁴¹ *Olivante* petitions to be made a knight in much the same words as did Don Quijote after him; there *Olivante* declares that two hours would be sufficient for watching his arms before the dubbing, even as the innkeeper tells Don Quijote; there is *Olivante's* squire first mentioned. In the ninth chapter of the first book of *Olivante de Laura* was the immortal Sancho born.

And so Cervantes finishes his third chapter with the dubbing scene and the arming of the knight, which could be matched, with less plebeian surroundings, again and again in the romances of chivalry. Yet so well fitted are these incorporations to the characters and circumstances of the Don Quijote narrative, that the general reader may at no point detect the inclusion, may indeed not wish to be reminded thereof. But to others perhaps the humour of the book is thereby both double and more delicate. In any case it was Cervantes' method. Would he ridicule Angelica for excusing the overthrow of Sacripante,⁴¹ he makes Don Quijote likewise lay the blame of his mishap to the fall of his steed,⁴² though such fault-finding may be slightly out of keeping with our sense of his chivalry. If he wishes to burlesque a whole palace wailing over some fallen idol, he lets you hear the outbursts of niece and housekeeper.⁴³ If he goes to great pains to leave the swords of Don Quijote and the Biscayan in the air at the end of a chapter,⁴⁴ it is because Diego Ortuñez de Calahorra did the same with two combatants in his *Espejo de Principes y Caballeros*.⁴⁵ If he seems to outrage your feelings unnecessarily by having Don Quijote carried shamefully in a cage,⁴⁶ exposed to public view, it is because he is mimicking Pulci in his

Morgante Maggiore,⁴⁷ where the pagans in a similar way lay hold of Orlando in his sleep.

Thus does the story progress, less imitative than in the early chapters, yet ready like a gipsy to make its own whatever came its way, taking not alone from the prose and poetry of chivalry but frequently from books just published and more than once from contemporary events and from incidents in Cervantes' life.⁴⁸ At times the narrative is boldly and obviously mock-heroic, as in the adventure of the windmills taken for giants,⁴⁹ the flocks of sheep that appeared to be armies,⁵⁰ the penance in the Sierra Morena,⁵¹ the boon sought by the damsel,⁵² the adventure of the lions,⁵³ the descent into the cave of Montesinos.⁵⁴ But there are also many incidents and portrayals of life which one would not suspect to be transcriptions. The tossing of Sancho,⁵⁵ for instance, is a replica of the tossing of Guzman de Alfarache in Mateo Aleman's recently published novel of that name.⁵⁶ Cervantes also had that rogue in mind when depicting Ginés de Pasamonte,⁵⁷ particularly in Ginés' statement that he wrote his life while in the galleys,⁵⁸ in his otherwise obscure reference to the stains got by the commissary at the inn and in his reference to biscuit as part of the galley-fare.⁵⁹

Again the adventure of the corpse⁶⁰ is reproduced from an incident that occurred a few years before this, when the body of a monk was being carried to Segovia.⁶¹ In the thirtieth chapter of the first part Dorothea says of her prophesied deliverer that he was to have a grey mole with hairs like bristles on his right side, beneath his left shoulder or thereabouts; so in Miguel de Luna's history of Don Roderick⁶² a woman says in prophecy of a deliverer that as a mark of recognition he was to have a hairy mole upon the shoulder of the right hand. In the Don Quijote narrative stripping is suggested as a means of verification; in the other case it is actually performed. Similarly Dorothea's blunder⁶³ in making Osuna a sea-port is a hit at the historian Mariana, who did the same thing.⁶⁴

What pains and pleasure and risk Cervantes took in thus making merry at others' expense is nowhere more clearly shown than on the title-page of the second part, which reads *That Imaginative Knight* instead of *That Imaginative Gentleman*. This has always been regarded as a classic instance of cervantesque carelessness, but it is simply another case of copying our old friends the books of chivalry, where on the title-pages of the different parts young spit-fires constantly graduate from knighthood to kingship. And through-

out the second part, written ten years after the first and when the age of our author bordered on fifty, we meet almost on every page with evidences of the intense absorption in literature of one who was so finely a man of the world, so swift to action in time of great need. In the first chapter of this second part Don Quijote suggests that knights be summoned to protect Spain against the power of the Turk, an echo of a similar scheme mentioned in a petition put before the royal council at Madrid in 1611.⁶⁵ The braying incident of the twenty-fifth chapter was probably founded on a quarrel that arose between two villages in that neighbourhood in the fifteenth century.⁶⁶ In stating in the twenty-ninth chapter that fleas are said to leave mariners when crossing the equinoctial line Cervantes shows that he has been reading Abraham Ortelious, a Spanish translation⁶⁷ of whose *Theatrum Orbis Terrarum* had just appeared. The adventure of the enchanted head⁶⁸ has the marks of an incident in the life of Antonio de Guevara, connected with a mysterious voice.⁶⁹

But there is still another class of borrowings, unlike the first, which are legitimate travesties of adventures in the books of chivalry, unlike the second, which while making material also made fun of authors and incidents, both usually contemporary. This third class consists of wholesale transcriptions of episodes and anecdotes, usually ancient, appropriated by Cervantes, not for the sake of mockery as in the other cases, but simply to fill his page and further his story. Of this nature is the tale of the flock of goats crossing the river one by one;⁷⁰ Sancho's anecdote of the wine tasters;⁷¹ the debtor and his stick filled with crowns;⁷² the woman raped by the farmer;⁷³ several of the episodes at the house of the duchess,⁷⁴ though they might also be brought under class one; the race between the fat man and the lean man.⁷⁵ All these were wholly or in large part derived.

How much then, one is tempted to enquire, is left to Cervantes? Well, a vast deal — the whole splendid spirit of the book for one thing, and the best of its matter: above all, Sancho, and those inimitable dialogues 'twixt master and man. That is, in general; but in particular, when one reads of the manner of the stealing of Sancho's ass,⁷⁶ or of how Don Quijote was in love by report only,⁷⁷ of how the island was on the mainland,⁷⁸ and of how at its storming Sancho felt the whole thing must be sinking,⁷⁹ when the reader comes to these bits and is about to exclaim: How like Cervantes! how delightfully original! then must the reader beware.

This translation is based on the last Spanish Academy text of 1819. It follows Hartzenbusch⁸⁰ however in inserting the loss of Dapple at a point where it seems likely Cervantes intended it should be inserted, at a point at least that renders any change of the original text unnecessary. It follows that original text (first Madrid 1605) in putting the excommunication speech of I XIX into the mouth of the bachelor; also in the matter of the rosary in I XXVI. As to other, minor, cruxes the translation itself is in evidence. The short stories in the Don Quijote, which prove a stumbling-block to many readers and which Cervantes himself practically acknowledges⁸¹ interfere with the unity and flow of the main narrative, have been omitted, together with some of the poor poetry, but the translation is not therefore to be considered abridged or expurgated. Rather it may be contended that here the reader will find the true consecutive narrative for the first time. For occasional words and phrases I am indebted to my predecessors, Shelton, Ormsby and Watts. For sympathy and suggestion I owe to whom I dedicate it more than I can say.

1 Emilio Cotarelo y Mori: *Efemérides Cervantinas* Madrid 1905 pp 186-7

2 *Menosprecio de Corte y Alabanza de Aldea* in *Las Obras del Illustré Antonio de Guevara* Valladolid 1539

3 See my article *Notes on Don Quijote* in the *Athenæum* of August 21 1909

4 See note 69

5 *Le Opere Maccheroniche di Merlin Cocai* (Teofilo Folengo 1491-1544) Mantua 1882 vol I p 83. This reference was given me by Professor Henry R Lang of Yale University.

6 Sed quater Orlandi puerilia tempora legit,
Oh quantum haec eadem sibi phantasia placebat;
Maxime scarpavit Carlonis quando pium.
Talibus in rebus multum stimulator ad arma.

Il Baldo Maccheronica II ll 52-5

7 *Aviso de Privados*; see note 2

8 In *Carta del Bachiller de Arcadia al Capitan Salazar*; not published till 1890 (Madrid) in *Sales Españolas* ed by Antonio Paz y Mélia Part I p 80

9 Valladolid 1532 Part III ch 2

10 Antonio de Torquemada: *Olivante de Laura* Barcelona 15

11 Vaca y Carnero,
Olla de Cavallero.

Academy Dictionary Madrid 1726-39

12 A Morel-Fatio: *Duelos y Quebrantos* in *Études Romanes dédiées à Gaston Paris* Paris 1891

13 Burgos 1577-9

14 See note 3

15 *Amadis de Gaula* Saragossa 1508 II 17

16 II 46

17 III 72

- 18 IV 103, 109
- 19 See notes 5 and 6
- 20 Saragossa 1555
- 21 By Pedro de Reynosa, Seville 1533 I 46
- 22 I 40 of note 10
- 23 III 7 of note 10
- 24 I 9 of note 10
- 25 Dedication of note 10
- 26 Seville 1533
- 27 By Juan Huarte, Pamplona 1578 but references are to Leyden 1591
- 28 By Matteo Boiardo, Venice 1486 I canto 18 st 46
- 29 Barcelona 1573
- 30 I 9 of note 10
- 31 I 7 of note 10
- 32 II 43 of note 10
- 33 II 7 of note 10
- 34 I 9 of note 10
- 35 II 55 and I 39 of note 10
- 36 I 8 of note 21
- 37 Sebastian de Covarrubias : *Tesoro de la Lengua Castellana* Madrid 1611 fol 194
- 38 *Don Quijote* II 3
- 39 II 2 of note 10
- 40 II 14 of note 10
- 41 Ariosto : *Orlando Furioso* : Ferrara 1516 I 67
- 42 I 4 and 5
- 43 I 5
- 44 I 8
- 45 Saragossa 1562 Part V Book I chap 1
- 46 I 46
- 47 Venice 1481 XII 87
- 48 For example, the description of a sea-fight I 38. Cervantes was so exposed at Lepanto.
- 49 I 7
- 50 I 18
- 51 I 25-6
- 52 I 29 ; in imitation of I 33 of note 10.
- 53 II 17
- 54 II 22-3
- 55 I 17
- 56 Madrid 1599 Part I Book III 1
- 57 I 22
- 58 Preface of note 56
- 59 Book III 8 of note 56
- 60 I 19
- 61 M Fernandez de Navarrete : *Vida de Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra*, Madrid 1819 p 79
- 62 *La Verdadera Historia del Rey Don Rodrigo* Grenada 1592 ; also Saragossa 1603 I 7
- 63 I 30
- 64 Juan de Mariana : *Historia General de España* Toledo 1601 III 3 ; in Latin Toledo 1592
- 65 Gregorio Leti : *Vita di Don Pietro Giron, Duca d'Ossuna* Amsterdam 1699 vol II Part II Book 1

- 66 Aureliano Fernandez-Guerra y Orbe : *Noticio de un Precioso Codice de la Biblioteca Columbina — Algunos Datos para ilustrar el Quijote* Madrid 1864 p 38
- 67 *Theatro d'el Orbe de la Tierra* Antwerp 1612
- 68 II 62
- 69 *Cronica de Francessillo de Zuñiga* Madrid 1855 chap 84 (in vol 36 of *Biblioteca de Autores Españoles* published by Rivadeneyra)
- 70 I 20; in Francisco Sansovino : *Cento Novello Scelte*, to which is added *Cento Novelle Antiche* (Number xxxi) Venice 1575
- 71 II 13; see H E Watts : *Don Quijote* London 1895 vol III p 140 n
- 72 II 45; from Jacobus de Voragine : *Legenda Aurea* Basle 1470
- 73 II 45; in Francisco de Ossuna : *El Norte de los Estados* Burgos 1550
- 74 The car of II 35 is after *Caballero de la Cruz* Seville 1485 II 21; the description of Countess Trifaldi is after *Lisuarte de Grécia* Seville 1525 chap 7; the magic horse of II 41 is of very ancient invention : e. g. in Firdousi : *Shak Namu* Calcutta 1811
- 75 II 66; in Melchior de Santa Cruz : *Floresta Española* Toledo 1574
- 76 II 4; in note 41 canto XXVII st 84
- 77 II 9; so, among others, Alpartacio is enamoured of Miraminia in *Lisuarte de Grécia* Seville 1525 chap 79
- 78 II 45; so, among other places, *Palmerin de Oliva* 1511 chap 125
- 79 II 53; II 5 of note 10
- 80 *Argamasilla de Alba* 1863
- 81 II 3, 44

AUTHOR'S PROLOGUE

THOU canst take my word without an oath, idle reader, that I would that this book, as child of mine understanding, were the fairest, merriest and wisest imaginable. But alas ! how could I contravene nature's order, whereby like begets like ? What could my barren and half-tilled wit produce but the tale of a poor, shrivelled, whimsical son, teeming with all manner of thoughts never entertained by another ? even as one engendered in a prison, where every discomfort has its seat and every mournful sound its habitation. Leisure, tranquillity, the delight of the country, the serenity of the sky, the murmur of brooks, the spirit's own quietude within, are well-nigh indispensable if the more barren muses are to conceive and bring forth children to the joy and wonder of the world. If a father have an ill-featured, evil-favoured son, the love he bears him, veiling his eyes, blinds him to his deficiencies of mind and body, which rather he deems gifts and graces, recounting them to his friends as sallies of wit and charms of manner. But I, being after all but Don Quijote's step-father, do not, like others, care almost weeping to beseech thee, dearest reader, to pardon or disguise the faults thou mayst see in this my child. Thou art neither his kinsman nor friend and hast thy soul in thy body and thine own free will with the best of them. Thou livest in thy house, whereof thou art lord as the king of his taxes, and knowest the saying, Beneath mine own coat I kill the king. All of which exempts thee from every obligation of duty or respect : thou canst say of this story all thou choosest, nor needest fear they will abuse thee for the ill or reward thee for the good.

Mine only wish was to offer the tale clear and clean, unadorned with prologue and the countless customary fopperies of sonnets, epigrams, eulogies, that are wont to find place at the beginning of books. For I can tell thee that though the tale itself cost me some labour I met with none greater than in composing this preface, now before thine eyes. Many times I took pen in hand and as many laid it down, not knowing what to say. But on one of these occasions, as I sat in suspense, paper before me, quill behind mine ear, elbow on the table and my cheek resting on my hand, who should enter

but a charming, most intelligent friend of mine, who on seeing me thus pensive asked the cause. Making no bones of it I plainly told him I was attempting a prologue to the history of Don Quijote, but it so baffled me I was on the point not only of bidding it farewell but of surpressing the deeds of the noble knight altogether.

‘ For can you expect me not to be apprehensive of what that ancient judge, the public, will say when after the decades I have slept in the silence of oblivion it sees me with all my years on my back now appearing with a tale dry as sedge, barren of invention, feeble in style, poor in conceits and devoid of all learning and doctrine, without marginal citation or notes at the end, when I see other books, even the fabulous and profane, crammed with quotations from Aristotle, Plato and the whole pack of philosophers, which set their readers agog and proclaim the authors erudite and eloquent scholars ? And then when they cite Scripture ! you’d take them for Saint Thomases or other Church doctors, preserving as they do so resourceful a decorum that though in one line they paint a distracted lover, in the next they’re ready with a pious homily that does the heart good to hear or read.

‘ Of all this my book will be deprived, since I have nothing to quote in the margin and nothing to note at the end. Still less do I know who are my authorities in order that this book like all others might lead off with an alphabetical list, from Aristotle to Xenophon, or to Zoilus and Zeuxis, though the former was a slanderer and the latter wielded the brush. So also must my book be without prefatory sonnets, at least without those whose authors are dukes, marquises, counts, bishops, ladies or renowned poets, though had I asked two or three of my friends in the trade, I’m certain they would give me such that the poets of greatest repute in present-day Spain couldn’t match them. In short, dear sir and friend, resolved I am that Señor Don Quijote shall remain in the archives of La Mancha till Heaven provide some one to trick him out in the things he now lacks and which through incapacity and want of learning I cannot supply, being by nature slow and slothful in seeking out others to say what I can as well say myself. Hence that rapt suspense in which you found me ; you have heard its sufficient cause.’

Upon this, giving a slap to his forehead and breaking into a hearty laugh, my friend exclaimed : ‘ Fore God, brother, now am I relieved of an error that’s dogged me during the whole long period of our acquaintance. All that while I held you discreet and prudent of

action ; whereas now I see you as far from that as the heavens from the earth. For how can things of such little concern and easy cure engage and arrest so ripe a wit and one so wont to break through and trample under foot far greater obtrusions ? I' faith, 'tis not incapacity stands in your way but sloth and poverty of sense. Would you see the truth of this ? listen and you'll find that in the twinkling of an eye I'll put to rout the problems and remedy all the faults that frighten you from publishing the story of your famous Quijote, light and mirror of knight-errantry.' And I replied : ' Tell me then how you think to fill the void of my fears and lead unto light the chaos of my confusion. '

To this my friend returned : ' The first thing you balk at — the prefatory sonnets, epigrams and eulogies by persons of rank and importance — can be remedied if yourself will take the little trouble of their composition and at their baptism christen them with any names you please, fathering them on Prester John of the Indies or the emperor of Trebizond, who, I am confident, are reputed famous poets. Even if they were not and pedants and bachelors turned up to dispute it, snapping and snarling behind your back, don't care two maravedis for them, who, though they prove the lie, won't cut off the hand that wrote it. The marginal references to books and writers as authorities for your opinions and statements can be managed by the suitable introduction of a few sentences or tags of Latin which you already know by heart or are easily found. When treating of freedom or captivity for example, 'twill be a simple matter to insert :

Non bene pro toto libertas venditur auro,

naming in the margin Horace or whoever 'twas that said it. Should you dwell on the power of death, make haste with :

Pallida mors æquo pulsat pede pauperum tabernas
Regumque tures ;

if on friendship or the love God bids us bear our enemy, come to the point at once by citing Scripture, which requires the smallest possible research, quoting no less an authority than the Almighty : Ego autem dico vobis, Diligite inimicos vestros. If evil thoughts be your text, quick with the Gospel : De corde exeunt cogitationes malæ ; if the fickleness of friends, here is Cato with the distich :

Donec eris felix, multos numerabis amicos ;
Tempora si fuerint nubila, solus eris.

With these little odds and ends of Latin and the like you will at least be taken for a grammarian, which nowadays is no slight honour and profit.

' In the matter of notes at the end of your book you can safely proceed in this fashion. If you mention some giant or other, manage to make him Goliath, for merely with him, who will cost you nothing, you at once have a grand note reading : The giant Goliath or Goliath : a Philistine slain of the shepherd David by means of a spirited stone-cast in the vale of Teberinth, as related in the Book of Kings ; and then cite chapter. Again, to show yourself a scholar in polite letters and cosmography, drop an allusion to the river Tagus and you'll have ready-made another famous annotation : The river Tagus : so called by a certain king of Spain ; it has its birth in such-and-such a place and dies in the Oceanus, kissing the walls of the famous city of Lisbon. Its sands are supposed to be of gold ; et cetera, et cetera.

' If thieves be your subject, I'll give you the history of Cacus, which I know by heart ; if courtesans, enter Bishop of Mondoñedo, who will provide you with Lamia, Laida and Flora, which annotation will win you great credit ; if cruel women, Ovid will contribute Medea ; if witches and enchantresses, Homer has Calypso, and Virgil Circe ; if valiant captains, himself in his Commentaries will lend you Julius Cæsar, while Plutarch will furnish a thousand Alexanders. If it be love you are depicting, with your two ounces of Tuscan you will meet with Leon the Jew, who will satisfy you to your heart's content. Should you not care to wander in foreign lands, in your own house you have Fonseca, On the Love of God, where is condensed all that you and the most fastidious could desire. Indeed do but contrive to mention the above names or refer to their histories in yours, and leave to me the quoting and annotation, for by all that's good I pledge to cram your margins and waste four sheets at the end. As to the array of authors such as other books boast but which as yet is lacking in yours, all you must do is find a volume that names them as you say from A to izzard and appropriate the list outright. Though from the slight use made of it its falsity be apparent, what matters it ? some fool may think it helped your simple artless history and such an imposing parade will at once lend weight, and in any case none will trouble to see whether you follow it, since he would have nothing to gain.

' And most of all, your narrative needs none of the things you say

it wants since, if I mistake not, 'tis one long invective against books of chivalry, concerning which Aristotle never reasoned, Saint Basil delivered himself or Cicero had knowledge. The niceties of truth are in no way concerned with their fabulous nonsense, nor the calculations of astrology. Neither do geometric dimensions nor confutations of arguments employed in rhetoric fall within their scope. Nor is there ground for preaching, mixing human and divine in a motley wherewith no Christian understanding should be clad. A writer has but to make his chosen medium his own: as he disciplines himself therein, so much the more perfect will his writing be. And since the sole intent of your book is to destroy the favour and position with the vulgar enjoyed by the books of chivalry, your object should be, not to beg opinions from philosophers, precepts from Scripture, fables from poets, orations from rhetoricians, miracles from saints, but to see to it that your phrase and period issue flowing and festive in simple, pregnant, just and well-ordered words. Declare your conceits and underlying purpose without confusion or mystification, and so write that the melancholy will be moved to smiles, the merry to laughter. Let the simple be not bored; let the wise admire its invention, the grave not disparage nor the prudent fail to praise. In fine, keep your attention fixed on your aim, that of demolishing the ill-founded fabric of these knightly books, loathed by many yet lauded by more. If you achieve this, your success will not be slight.'

In profound silence I listened to my friend, and was so impressed by his argument that I accepted it then and there and adopted it for this prologue. Whereby, gentle reader, thou dost see not only his sense and my good fortune in this time of need but thine own advantage in securing without twists and turnings the history of the famous Don Quijote de La Mancha, who by all the dwellers of the district of the plain of Montiel is deemed the purest lover and most puissant knight seen in those parts this many a day. I would not exaggerate my services in introducing thee to so revered and notable a champion, but I should appreciate thy thanks for the knowledge thou wilt have of the famous Sancho Panza his squire, in whom methinks are epitomised all the squirely graces that lie scattered throughout the swarming and savourless books of knighthood. With this, God give thee health — not forgetting me — and farewell.

CHAPTER I

The character and calling of that famous gentleman Don Quijote de La Mancha

IN a village of La Mancha, whose name I do not care to recall, there lately lived one of those gentlemen that keep a lance in the rack, an ancient shield, a rake of a horse and one lone harrier-hound. A stew of rather more beef than mutton, usually appearing at supper as a salad, lentils Friday, 'paunch and penance' Saturday and young pigeon as a delicacy on Sunday, relieved him of three-fourths of his income; while a doublet of broadcloth with velvet breeches and slippers for feast-days and a week-day livery of the finest homespun made away with the rest. His family comprised a housekeeper past forty, a niece under twenty and a yokel for field and mart, who saddled the nag as nimbly as he handled the pruning-hook. The age of our hidalgo bordered on fifty years, but though dry of visage and spare of flesh he boasted a vigorous constitution, was a great early-riser and a lover of the chase. Authors differ as to his name, whether Quijada or Quesada, though there is reason to suppose that it really was Quijana. But this matters little to our story: enough that in its telling we swerve not a jot from the truth.

Be it known, then, that his intervals of leisure (covering most of the year) were employed by this gentleman in reading books of chivalry, and with such devotion and delight that he scarce gave a thought to the exercise of the chase or even to the management of his estate. Indeed this mad passion so obsessed him that he sold many acres of arable land for the purchase of these tomes, which (as many as he could buy) he then brought home to read. Of them all was he most taken with those composed by the renowned Feliciano de Silva, whose lucidity of style (with all its involutions) struck him as beyond praise — in particular the letters of conquest (or of congé) where frequently he lit on periods

such as : ' The reason of the folly done my reason so impairerh my reason that with reason I complain of thy beauty ; ' and again : ' The high heavens, which thanks to thy divinity divinely fortify thee with the stars, make thee worthy of the merit thy nobleness deserveth. ' Over such reasonings the poor man near lost his reason, trying far into the night to embowel them of theirs, which Aristotle himself could not have discovered had he returned to life for that special purpose.

On the other hand our friend had small patience with the wounds received (and inflicted) by Don Belianis, reflecting that however deft the surgeons that healed them, his face and whole body must needs have been left with many little scars and tokens. None the less he commended the author for taking leave with leave for another to end that interminable adventure, and more than once the wish came to take up the pen and finish it himself, and doubtless so he would have done and succeeded with it too, had not bolder and more urgent thoughts constrained him. He often debated with the village-priest (a learned man, a graduate of Siguenza) as to which had been the finer cavalier, Palmerin of England or Amadis of Gaul, but Master Nicholas the barber maintained that none came up to the Knight of Phœbus, unless perhaps Don Galaor — his was a nature ready for anything : he was none of your finikin knights, nor a whimperer like his brother Amadis, while in point of valour not a whit behind.

In a word this respected gentleman passed his nights from twilight to dawn and his days from dawn to twilight entangled in his books, till from little rest and much reading he muddled his wits, which were filled with the fantasy of all that he read, whether of enchantments, broils, battles, challenges, wounds, wooings, amours, hurricanos, or of other the wildest absurdities. And this fabric of fantastic dreams became so fixed in his fancy that for him there was no more reliable history in the world. Cid Ruy Diaz was, he granted, a most worthy cavalier, but not to be mentioned with the Knight of Flaming Sword, who with one back-stroke cut square in two a brace of huge and fearsome giants. On even better terms was he with Bernardo del Carpio, who at Roncesvalles throttled the enchanted Roland, after the

manner of Hercules with Terra's son Antæus. He also spoke well of the giant Morgante, for whereas giants as a race are proud and rude, Morgante alone was quite the reverse. But above and beyond them all he delighted in Rinaldo of Montalvan, especially when he saw him sally from his castle and rob everyone that came his way, and when (as his history relates) in the land of the Moors he made off with that idol of Mahomet, all of solid gold. To give a round of kicks to the traitor Galalon he'd have parted with housekeeper and niece to boot.

Deprived thus of his better judgment our hero hit upon the strangest fancy ever madman conceived, and this was that he deemed it both proper and imperative, as well for the increase of his honour as for the service of the state, that he turn knight-errant and wander the world o'er with steed and arms in quest of adventure, engaging in all that he had read knights-errant engage in, redressing every manner of grievance and courting perils and passes in whose surmounting he'd win deathless name and fame. The poor hidalgo already saw himself by his arm's might crowned emperor of Trebizond at least, and in his rare delight at so pleasant a prospect he hastened to effect what had now become a life-resolve.

His first step was to furbish some armour belonging to his great-grandfather and which, eaten with rust and mould, had lain for ages forgotten in a corner. He scoured and adjusted the various pieces as best he could, but he saw they had one grave defect — the helmet had no visor. This lack his ingenuity supplied by making one of cardboard, which, joined to the head-piece proper, gave the effect of helmet entire. 'Tis true that to prove it he drew blade and giving it two cuffs, with the first undid in an instant the work of a week. The ease wherewith he wrecked it could not but seem ill to him, and to secure himself from further disaster he made it all over again with little iron ribs inside, till satisfied of its strength without a second proving, he commissioned and accepted it as a complete and perfect helmet.

Our friend next looked to his horse, one with more sandcracks than there are cuartos in a real and with more outs about him

than had Gonela's jade, that was so much skin and bones ; yet to his master neither Alexander's Bucephalus nor the Cid's Babieca seemed his equal. Four days he spent in choosing a name for the beast, since (so he argued) the charger of so famous a knight and one so excellent in himself would ill lack a recognised appellation. He aimed therefore to procure one suggestive of what the animal had been before he became the mount of an errant as well as what he was now to be : it stood to reason that since the master was changing his calling, the steed should change his cognomen, getting him one pompous and high-sounding, as comported with the new order and exercise he was about to profess. Hence of the many names he constructed, dropped, added to, tore to pieces and restored, he at last decided on Rocin-ante, a word that seemed to him both lofty and sonorous, and indicative of what the creature had been when but a forlorn, work-a-day nag (rocin), before (antes) becoming what he now was : the first and foremost (antes) of all the nags of the world.

With so pleasant a title for his steed, our knight's next wish was to procure one for himself. Eight days were given up to this consideration, with the issue that his choice fell on Don Quijote (whence, as has been said, certain authors of this so very true history would have it that surely his real name was Quijada, not Quesada as others would affirm). But recollecting that the worthy Amadis, not content with that dry name, made mention of his country that he might bring it renown, styling himself Amadis of Gaul, he too, like the good knight he was, desired with the name of his native country as a tail to his own to be proclaimed Don Quijote de La Mancha, whereby (as it seemed to him) he declared unmistakeably his lineage and his land and honoured the latter by so doing.

With armour cleansed, helmet reclaimed, horse christened and himself confirmed, our champion saw that naught was lacking but a maid of whom to be enamoured : for errant without lady-love is a tree bare of leaves or fruit, a body and no soul. He would say : ' If by mischance or by good hap I stumble on some giant hereabouts, as is the fashion with errant knights, and if unsaddling him or slicing him in twain I vanquish and make him surrender,

will it not be well to have someone to whom to send him as a gift, that he may enter and kneeling before my sweet mistress say in accents contrite and humble: ' I am the giant Caraculiambro, lord of the island Malindrania, o'erthrown in single combat by the never-adequately-praised Don Quijote de La Mancha, who bids me present myself before your worship that your highness may dispose of me according to your pleasure.' '

O how pleased with himself was our good knight when delivered of this speech, and still more when he found one to call his lady fair ! It seems that in a village near his own dwelt a comely peasant-girl for whom he once cherished feelings, though it would appear she never knew it or cared a fig. Aldonza Lorenzo was she on whom he thought well to bestow the title of mistress of his thoughts. And casting about for a name that would not greatly belie her own and at the same time sort and square with that of princess and great lady, he hit upon Dulcinea del Toboso (el Toboso being her native town) : a name that seemed to him musical, self-evident and rare, like all the others he had chosen for himself and his outfit.

CHAPTER II

The first sally of this imaginative gentleman from his native village

Now that his preparations were complete, our knight would brook no tarriance in effecting his design, impelled by the feeling of the want its postponement was causing in the world, such were the grievances he meant to redress, wrongs right, follies correct, abuses mitigate and obligations discharge. And so, acquainting no one of his resolve, unseen of any, before the dawn of a hot July day he donned armour and ill-fashioned helmet, mounted Rocinante, embraced shield, seized lance and through the postern of his corral sallied forth onto the open plain, tasting the greatest satisfaction and delight on seeing with what ease he had embarked on his good emprise.

But scarce did he find himself out on that table-land, when a terrible thought assailed him, and one that all but nipped his venture in the bud. He suddenly woke to the fact that he hadn't been dubbed a knight ; that accordingly, in compliance with the laws of chivalry, he neither should nor could bear arms against a cavalier, and that even had he been so dubbed, as a novice he must carry his armour white, with no device on his shield till his valour earned him one. These considerations made him stagger in his purpose, but as his lack of reason prevailed over every other, he determined to be made a knight by the first he came across, in imitation of many before him, even as he had read in the books that held him in thrall. Touching the white armour he thought, come the chance, to scour his own whiter than ermine. With this he quieted down and continued on his way, letting his steed take which he would, for therein he deemed lay the very spirit of adventure.

As he ambled along, our new-born champion communed with himself and said : ' Who doubts that in years to come, when the true narrative of my famous deeds leaps to light and the sage-chronicler comes to relate this my first sally so early in the morning, who, I ask, doubts that he will describe it in this manner : ' Scarce had the refulgent Apollo spread the golden tresses of his hair over the face of the broad and spacious earth, and scarce had the little painted birds with their lyric tongues proclaimed in sweet and mellifluous harmony the coming of the flushed Aurora as she, leaving the soft couch of her jealous husband, revealed herself through the doorways and balconies of the Manchegan horizon, when the renowned knight Don Quijote de La Mancha, forsaking his downy bed of ease, mounted his far-famed Rocinante and rode forth over the ancient and celebrated plain of Montiel ; ' which was in truth where his journey lay.

And he continued, saying : ' Happy age and happy time in which shall be blazoned abroad my famous deeds, worthy to be graven on brasses, chiselled on marbles and painted on tablets for future remembrance. O thou cunning magician, whosoever thou art to whose fortune it shall fall to chronicle this rare story, prithee forget not my good Rocinante, my eternal companion in

all my callings and quests.' Then he struck a new strain, murmuring as if truly enamoured : ' O princess Dulcinea, ruler of this captive heart, grievous wrong hast thou done, censuring and spurning me with cruel mandate not to appear before thy beauty. Deign to bethink thee of this submissive heart, lady, that endures how many sorrows for thy love.' With these he strung other extravagances, all after the manner of those which his books had taught him, imitating as best he could their very language.

Thus communing with himself our knight travelled so slowly and the sun mounted so apace, the heat was enough to melt his wits, were any there. Quite all that day he ambled along, yet naught befell him worthy the notice, and at this he nigh despaired, expecting at the very outset to run against one upon whom to prove the valour of that puissant arm. Some authors name Puerto Lápice as his first adventure, others the adventure of the windmills, but the truth is (and this I have verified and found so written in the annals of La Mancha) he kept saddle till toward evening, when his nag and he were sore fatigued and nearly dead of hunger. Casting about on the chance of discovering some castle or shepherd's hut to relieve his great want, not far off he espied an inn, which like a star was to lead him not to the porch alone but to the very palace of his salvation. He pricked steed and drew near just as the evening was closing in.

As each new thing he thought, saw or imagined, assumed the semblance of something he had met with in his reading, so this tavern instantly loomed a castle with four corner-towers and silver-shining pinnacles ; nor was drawbridge lacking or deep moat or any of the appurtenances wherewith such strongholds are depicted. A stone's throw from this inn or castle our adventurer drew rein, looking for some dwarf upon the battlements to announce with trumpet that knight was approaching. But seeing there was delay and that Rocinante was restless for supper, he rode toward the tavern-gate, where chanced to be standing two women-adventurers, on their way to Seville with some carriers passing the night there. Our cavalier immediately supposed them maidens or gracious matrons solacing themselves on the castle-ward.

Now at this juncture a swineherd, gathering in from the stubble a drove of hogs (without your pardon be they named), chanced to blow his horn, the signal for them to herd. Don Quijote, supposing this the dwarf announcing his arrival, with rare content rode toward the women. But they, seeing and fearing this man in full armour with lance and shield, turned to seek refuge within, till the other, divining their fear from their flight, lifting his cardboard visor, half-revealed his lean and dusty face and in subdued tones thus addressed them : ‘ Let not your worships flee or fear aught of injury, since it pertains to the order of chivalry I profess to wrong nobody, least of all damsels of the rank your presence declares. ’

The women had stayed to make out his features, which the sorry visor half-concealed, but on hearing themselves called damsels, a word so foreign to their station, they couldn’t forbear laughter, to the extent that Don Quijote flew off the handle saying : ‘ Courtesy befits the fair and laughter proceeding from slight cause is folly. I don’t say this to vex or rouse ill-will, since mine is no other than to serve you. ’ Such language was Greek to these ladies and the poor figure cut by our knight did but increase their mirth, his annoyance. Things would have gone from bad to worse had not now come on the scene the innkeeper, who, excessively fat, was a lover of peace, and though, on beholding that scarecrow with trappings, shield and corselet so out of keeping with his manner of riding, he almost seconded the women’s unsurpressed amusement, startled as he was by the warlike appearance of our champion, he deemed it best to speak civilly and so said : ‘ If your worship, sir knight, seek lodging, here you’ll find it and to spare — all save a bed for there is none. ’

Don Quijote, marking the amenity of the stronghold’s governor (such he thought him), replied : ‘ For myself, sir castellano (governor), aught is enough, since

Of arms my habit’s made
And fighting’s my repose. ’

Now his host thought that in addressing him as castellano he

meant to suggest ' a sly old fox of Castile, ' a thief in disguise in other words, whereas he really hailed from Andalusia, from the shore of San Lúcar, not less a robber than Cacus, nor less a rogue than student or page. So he answered : ' In that event

Shall bed on rocks be laid
And eyes in sleep ne'er close,

since your worship may alight with the certainty of finding in this humble dwelling cases and causes of not sleeping the whole year through, to say nothing of one night.' With this he held the stirrup for our hero, who dismounted with real labour, having fasted all that day. He asked that extra care be taken of Rocinante, the finest bit of horse-flesh that ever ate bread. The innkeeper glanced the animal over but did not think him so good as his master had said, nay, not by half. He put him in the stable however and returned to attend to the wishes of his guest.

The damsels, who had made their peace, were in the midst of disarming him. They had removed breast-plate and shoulder-piece but couldn't loosen the gorget and counterfeit helmet, tied together with green ribbon whose knots wouldn't undo and Don Quijote wouldn't hear of their being cut. So all that night he remained with head-piece on, the oddest and most ludicrous figure conceivable. While these rough women were divesting him, our adventurer, taking them for fine ladies attached to the castle, with a deal of manner thus addressed them :

' By dames so well watched o'er
A knight was never seen
As, since he left his door,
Has Don Quijote been :
Him maids provided for,
Princesses his rocin —

or Rocinante, the name, your highnesses, of my steed, and Don Quijote de La Mancha mine. Though I had wished not to be known till the deeds done in your service and behalf made me, the need of adapting this old ballad concerning Lancelot to the present occasion discovered me aforetime. But the day will come

when your ladyships shall ask and I obey, and the valour of mine arm make plain my desire to serve you.'

The women, unused to such rhetoric, replied not a word save to ask would he eat. 'Anything, for methinks 'twill be much to the purpose.' Now it chanced to be Friday and the only food in the tavern was some portions of a certain fish called in Castile poor-jack, ling in Andalusia, in some districts cod and in others small-cod. So they asked would his worship perhaps relish some small-cod, and were answered : 'Many small-cod will serve for a salmon-trout, since 'tis the same whether they give me eight single reals or a piece of eight ; the more that these small-cod may resemble the calf, which is better eating than the cow, even as the kid than the goat. But whatever it be, fetch it at once, for the work and weight of arms can't be borne on empty stomach.'

They placed a table before the inn-door for coolness and the keeper brought the knight a piece of ill-soaked and worse cooked cod-fish, together with some bread as black and mouldy as his armour. Merry thing it was to see him eat, for with helmet on and visor over his mouth, one of the women must needs help feed him. Likewise was he unable to drink, till the keeper, boring a cane and putting one end between his teeth, poured the wine in at the other. And this Don Quijote patiently endured rather than have them cut the ribbons of his casque. While all were thus busy, arrived a boar-gelder who, as he approached, sounded four or five notes on an instrument of reeds. This was the last touch necessary to assure our errant he was at some famous castle where they regaled him with music. Now was he certain that the cod were salmon-trout, the bread white, the women ladies and the innkeeper the keeper of the stronghold. So he could not but regard his purpose and pilgrimage as happily begun. Only one thing distressed him : to find himself not dubbed, feeling as he did that lawfully he might not tax himself with any adventure till he had received the order of knighthood.

CHAPTER III

The delightful way our friend chose for being knighted

HARRASSED by this thought Don Quijote shortened his pot-luck and limited meal. Calling the innkeeper he closeted himself in the stable with him and kneeling said : ‘ Never shall I rise from where I kneel, worthy knight, unless your courtesy promise to grant the boon I seek, which will redound to your own praise and the good of mankind.’ The other, seeing his guest at his feet and hearing this declaration, was confounded and stood looking at him, not knowing what to do or say. He endeavoured to get him to rise but in vain till he had given his word as to the desired boon. ‘ I looked for no less from your great magnificence, and I make known that the gift I seek and of your large heart granted, is that to-morrow you dub me a cavalier. To-night in the chapel of this your castle I shall watch mine arms and on the morrow as I have said shall be fulfilled what I so strongly desire, that I may wander, as is fitting, over the four quarters of the globe in search of adventures on behalf of the needy — the office of chivalry and of knights-errant like myself that are inclined to such deeds.’

The keeper as already hinted was a knowing rogue and ere this had suspected his guest’s judgment to be clouded, and though now certain he decided to humour him and thus provide for the evening’s entertainment. So he answered that this was a most just request and that such a fancy was both proper and natural for errants of the high rank he seemed and his genteel presence showed him to be ; that himself in his youth had practised that honourable calling, wandering in seach of adventures in sundry parts of the world, not forgetting the Curing-Grounds near Malaga, the Isles of Riaran, the Compass-Quarter of Seville, the Little-Mart of Segovia, the Olive-Plaza in Valencia, the Walls in Granada, the Shore of San Lúcar, Cordova’s Colt-Fountain, the

Stalls of Toledo and divers other places, where he had exercised lightness of hands and feet, committing numberless offences, soliciting various widows, wronging a maiden or two, cheating minors, in a word coming in contact with well-nigh all the courts and tribunals of Spain ; but he had ended by taking up his abode in this his castle, where on his own and others' fortunes he now lived, welcoming there all knights-errant, no matter what their quality or status, simply from the great affection he bore them and that they might share their possessions with him in return for his good-will.

He went on to say that for the present the castle was minus a chapel for watching arms, for the old one had been torn down to be built anew, but he assured Don Quijote that in case of necessity they could rightfully be watched wherever he pleased. There was an open castle-court where he might keep his vigil for the night, and in the morning, God consenting, they would execute the appropriate ceremonies and the other would emerge a dubbed knight and such an one that there couldn't be more of a knight in the world. He asked his guest had he any silver about him, and the other told him not a coin, for he had never read in tales about knights-errant that they carried such a thing. The innkeeper said that in this he was deceived : authors of these books didn't specify it, feeling there could be no occasion to mention such obvious needments for a journey as bandages and cash. But one should not infer that knights did without them ; indeed he should consider it proved beyond cavil that all those errants, to whose existence so many books testify in extenso, carried purses well lined for any emergency.

They also carried lint, the innkeeper declared, and a little chest filled with ointments for healing of wounds, for out there on the plains and deserts where they fought and sustained injuries there couldn't always be someone around to attend to them, unless they had a sage-magician for a friend who, in that case, would come to their relief instantly, bearing through the air on a cloud damsel or dwarf with flask of water of such virtue that with just a drop the knights became as cured of their sores and wounds as if they had had none. But were they not favoured

with such friends, the errants of the past took it for granted that their squires came provided with money and other necessities such as bandages and healing salves. And if they couldn't boast squires even, which was rare indeed, themselves carried everything in cunning wallet back of the saddle almost hidden from view, as if 'twere something else of greater respect, for, save in emergencies of this kind, the carrying of wallets was frowned on by the order. He advised him therefore, indeed, as the other was so soon to be his god-child, he might command him, to proceed no further without money and the stated requirements, since he would see when least expected how well it was to have them on hand.

To all this Don Quijote promised strictly to adhere and the keeper thereupon ordered the vigil to be kept in a large corral at the side of the inn. Our novice gathered his arms and laid them on a trough near a well, and embracing shield and grasping lance paced slowly back and forth ; and as he began to pace, the night began to shut down. The keeper of the tavern told the folk inside about his guest's aberration, the arms-vigil and knighthood-dubbing that was to follow and they, marvelling at such strange delusion, came to witness the spectacle at safe distance. They found him pacing back and forth in quietude, but again he would stop and leaning on lance gaze fixedly at his armour, long and long. Though 'twas night now, the moon shone with sufficient brightness to have vied with him that lent it her, and whatever the new errant did could readily be seen by all.

Now at this juncture it befell that one of the carriers came to get water for his mules, to do which it was necessary to remove the arms from the trough. Don Quijote seeing him approach exclaimed : ' Ho thou, whoever thou art, reckless knight, that comest to touch the arms of the bravest errant ever girt on sword, take heed, would thou not quit this life as guerdon for thy guile.' The carrier took no heed (though better had he attended this behest and attended himself in health) but instead seized the armour by the straps and gave it a good fling. Beholding this, Don Quijote raised his eyes aloft and cried (directing his thoughts to his lady Dulcinea) : ' Lend me thine aid, lady mine, in this

the first affront offered thine enthralled heart. Let not thy favour and protection forsake me in this initial crisis.' With these words and more like them he dropped shield and raising lance gave the carrier a swingeing blow on the head, laying him so flat that had another followed the poor chap would have had no use for a leech. This done our novice collected his armour and paced back and forth with the same tranquillity as at first.

After short space another carrier, ignorant of what had occurred (for the first lay unconscious), came with like intent of watering his mules. As he approached to remove the armour from the trough, Don Quijote again, and this time without words and imploring favour of none, dropped shield, raised lance and broke not it but the carrier's head into more than three parts for it opened up in quarters. All, including the innkeeper, at once came on the run to the scene of trouble, but the knight at their advance raised shield again and putting hand to sword cried : ' O mistress of beauty, vigour and virtue of my enfeebled heart, now is the moment to turn thy ladyship's eyes toward this thy captive lord whom so great an adventure is awaiting ; ' which invocation seemed to instil such fresh courage in his breast that he wouldn't have taken a step backward for all the carriers in the world.

The comrades of the wounded, seeing them so, from afar began to shower stones on the assailant who, covering himself with his shield as he could, ventured not to leave the trough lest he seem to forsake the armour. The keeper called to the carriers to quit — hadn't he told them the man was mad and being mad could kill them all with impunity ? Likewise Don Quijote in still louder voice denounced them as recreant traitors and named the lord of the castle villain and base-born knight in allowing errant guests to experience such treatment, adding that had he received the order of chivalry, he'd make him understand this breach of trust. ' But of you, you low-lived rabble, I make no account. Come throw your stones and injure me as you can ; you'll soon find reward for your insult and folly. ' This was said with such utter fearlessness that his adversaries quailed, and therefrom no less than from their host's warning ceased their attack. Don

Quijote left them to carry off their wounded and himself returned to his vigil, calm and untroubled as before.

The innkeeper didn't fancy his guest's jokes and hoping to cut them short determined to give him the benighted order of chivalry at once, before another disaster should befall. Walking to Don Quijote he tried to exculpate himself from that base crew's insolence, professing entire ignorance save that they were roundly punished for their temerity. As he had already informed him, the castle didn't boast a chapel, but a chapel after all wouldn't be of much use for what remained to be done. The whole business of being dubbed, according to his understanding of the ceremonial, consisted in a cuff on the neck and a blow with the flat of the sword on the shoulder and these could be given in the middle of a field. Our candidate had fulfilled, he said, the requirement of watching arms : only two hours were necessary and he had been over four. His pupil swallowed all and said he was ready to obey him then and there, urging the greatest possible despatch, for if he were attacked a second time and found himself knighted, he didn't think to leave a person in that castle alive, save such as he might spare at the request of and out of respect to its lord.

Forewarned and fearful of such catastrophe, the keeper quickly brought from the inn a book wherein he kept account of straw and barley used by carriers, and accompanied by the two women and a small boy bearing a candle-end, approached the applicant. Commanding him to kneel he muttered something behind his manual as if in devout prayer and midway raising his hand gave him a sound whack on the neck, following it with blow royal on the shoulder with the flat of his sword, all the time muttering between his teeth as if praying. This done he ordered one of the women to gird on the blade, which she did with great sobriety and self-control, though at every point all were on the verge of laughter, and only the recollection of the prowess just displayed by the new knight restrained them.

In fastening the sword the good woman said : ' God make thy worship a most venturesome knight and grant thee fortune in battle.' Don Quijote enquired her name that thereafter he might

know to whom he was beholden for the favour received, since he purposed to bestow upon her some portion of the honour his strong arm was to reap him. She answered most humbly that she was known as La Tolosa, the daughter of a Toledan cobbler of the stall of Sancho Bienaya, but that wherever she might be, she would serve him as her lord. The knight asked that for love she do him the favour of assuming the Don and thereafter style herself Doña Tolosa ; which she promised to do. The other woman buckled his spurs and the same colloquy passed as with her of the sword. He asked her name and was told La Molinera, her father a respected miller of Antequera. He requested her likewise to assume the Don and call herself Doña Molinera, offering his further services and good-will.

Now that with breathless speed this unprecedented ritual was concluded, our late-born champion scarce could wait to find himself ahorse and on the road in quest of adventure. Accordingly he saddled Rocinante and mounted, and embracing his host made such extraordinary speeches by way of thanks that 'tis impossible accurately to set them down. Seeing him well outside, the innkeeper with no less rhetoric but in fewer words made reply and not asking pay for his lodging gave him hearty farewell.

CHAPTER IV

Our knight's experiences after quitting the inn

TWAS early dawn when Don Quijote rode forth from the inn, so contented, thrilled and jubilant at finding himself a knight, his joy was like to burst his horse's girth. But recollecting the landlord's advice as to requisites for the road, in particular money and lint, he decided to turn home and get a complete outfit, including a squire, slating a peasant neighbour of his, poor and with children but otherwise well suited to that office. He therefore headed Rocinante home, who, as if scenting old haunts, started off so briskly that his feet appeared barely to touch the ground.

The two had not gone far when the rider thought he heard in the thick coppice on his right a voice as of a person pleading, and then and there he exclaimed : ' I give thanks to Heaven for the favour it shows in laying so promptly before me opportunities whereby I can fulfil mine obligations to my calling and gather the fruits of my worthy aims. This voice proceeds no doubt from a person in distress, some man or woman that requires my succour and assistance. ' He guided Rocinante toward the sounds and soon discovered a mare tied to a holm-oak and a boy about fifteen tied to another, naked to the waist. He it was that was making outcry and not without cause, for a lusty farmer was belting him, accompanying each stroke with reproof and precept saying : ' Wide eyes and tight mouth ; ' while the lad kept crying : ' I'll not do so again, master ; by the passion of God I won't. I swear I'll take better care of the flock. '

Don Quijote, observing all, called in angry voice : ' Impudent knight, it looks ill to attack one that can't defend himself. Mount and take lance (one was standing against the tree to which the mare was tied), that I may expose the dastardly trick you are playing. ' The farmer, seeing an armed figure brandish a lance over him, gave himself up for dead and with humble words made answer : ' Sir knight, this boy I flog I hired to watch a flock of ewes hereabouts, but he proves so careless that every day one is missing, and because I punish his negligence, or roguery it may be, he says I do it out of miserliness to avoid wages, and 'fore God and on my soul he lies. ' ' How dare you utter such libel in my presence, vile villain ! ' quoth Don Quijote ; ' by the sun that gives us light I have a mind to pass you through with this lance. Pay him without a word, or by the God that rules I'll transfix you to your death. Unbind him instantly I say ! '

The farmer hung his head and attempting no reply unbound the lad, whom Don Quijote questioned as to what his master owed. ' For nine months at seven reals a month. ' Don Quijote making the calculation and finding it came to sixty-three reals ordered the farmer to lay down the money on pain of death. The terrified countryman replied that by the pass in which he found himself and by the oath he had already sworn (though he

had sworn to nothing) the debt was not that large, since three pairs of shoes and a real for two blood-lettings when the lad lay sick were to be deducted. 'Well and good,' said the knight; 'pair off the shoes and blood-lettings with these undeserved stripes. If he broke through the hide of the shoes, you have broken through that of his body, and if the barber drew blood in sickness, you have drawn it in health, so that on either score he owes you nothing.'

'The deuce of it is, sir knight, I haven't the money here. Let Andres come home and I'll pay him to the real.' 'I go home with him!' exclaimed the lad; 'O year of woe! sire, 'tis not to be thought of, for the moment he has me alone, he'll flay me like Saint Bartholomew.' 'Nay, nay,' said his deliverer; 'that I command is enough that he shall obey, and provided he swear by the order of chivalry he has received, letting him go I'll guarantee the payment.' 'May your worship listen to what you say,' returned the lad; 'my master is no knight nor has he received any order of chivalry — he's only Juan Haldudo the rich of Quintanar.' 'What of that?' responded Don Quijote; 'Haldudos can be knights and gentlemen; the more that everyman is the son of his works.' 'True enough,' said Andres, 'but of what works is my-master the son when he withholds pay for the sweat of my brow?' 'I don't withhold it, brother Andres,' put in the farmer; 'give me the pleasure of your company and I swear by all the orders of chivalry in the world to pay you as I said, real by real and all perfumed.'

'Keep the perfumery,' said Don Quijote; 'pay in reals and I shall be content. But take care to do as you have sworn or by that same oath I swear to return, hunt you out and punish you, though you hide closer than a lizard. Would you know who gives this command, that you may be the more bound to obey it, behold the valerous Don Quijote de la Mancha, avenger of insults and injuries. God be with you and may you forget not the promise and oath under pain of the penalty pronounced;' so saying he spurred Rocinante and soon had left them behind. The farmer followed with his eyes till the knight had quit the wood, and then turning to his servant said: 'Come hither, my

son, that I may pay what I owe, as commanded by this avenger of wrongs.' And Andres : ' I swear you will do well in obeying such a good knight. May he live a thousand years, since he's a worthy and fearless judge. By Roque, but he'll return and do what he threatens, if you don't pay me.' ' I swear so too,' said the farmer, ' but I love you so well that I wish to increase the debt in order to increase the pay.' And seizing the lad's arm he tied him again to the holm-oak and lashed him nearly to his death. ' Call on the redresser of injuries now, Mister Andres, and you'll find he doesn't undo this one, though I believe it not wholly done, for I've a mind to flay you alive even as you feared.' But instead he set him free, giving him leave to seek out his judge that he might execute the sentence pronounced. Andres left him in dudgeon, swearing to go in search of the valerous Don Quijote de La Mancha and rehearse to him point by point what had passed, and all would be paid sevenfold. But he was sobbing when they parted, and the farmer laughing.

Thus did the gallant adventurer right this wrong; but he of course was more than content at what had taken place, deeming it a high and happy beginning to his chivalrous deeds. With great complacency he rode toward home, saying half-aloud : ' Well mayst thou call thyself blest above all living, O thou fair above the fair, Dulcinea del Toboso, since it sorted to thee to hold subject and obsequious to thine every wish and will so valiant, so renowned a knight as is and shall be Don Quijote de La Mancha who, as all the world knows, only yesterday received the order of chivalry, and to-day has righted the direst wrong and injury ever injustice concocted or cruelty performed, wresting the scourge from his heartless foe who so without reason was flogging a delicate child.' Having now arrived where four roads met, the knight straightly bethought him of the cross-roads where errants were wont to place themselves that they might cast in their minds which one to take, and in imitation thereof our errant now delayed a while. When he had thought it all out, he lent the reins to his steed, subjecting his own to Rocinante's will, which led him, as at first, straight toward his stable.

Again had they gone about two miles when Don Quijote

descried a company of horsemen, who later appeared Toledan traders en route to Murcia to buy silk. They were six, each under a parasol, together with four mounted servants and three mule-servants afoot. Scarce had our knight observed them when he imagined this a fresh adventure, and to emulate as far as possible the various feats of arms described in his books, he intended now to introduce one that, he felt, fitted like a glove. To this end, assuming an easy air of courage he planted himself firmly in the stirrups, tightened his hold on lance, drew shield over breast and taking stand in the middle of the road awaited these knightly-adventurers, as he held and judged them to be. When they were near enough to see and hear him, with haughty gesture he cried : ‘ Let all the world halt, if all the world do not acknowledge there’s not in all the world a maiden more beautiful than the empress of La Mancha, the peerless Dulcinea del Tobosa.’

On hearing these words the merchants halted and when they beheld the scarecrow figure that uttered them, his demeanour and demand at once showed them that the person responsible for them was not responsible for himself. They were anxious nevertheless more leisurely to learn why such confession was sought, and one, a bit of a wag and shrewd withal, spoke up and said : ‘ Sir knight, we know not the lady fair you refer to. Discover her, and if she prove as beautiful as you say, with pleasure and without reward we shall acknowledge the truth of your assertion.’ ‘ Should I show you her,’ said Don Quijote, ‘ what profit in the acknowledgment of a truth so obvious ? The thing is without sight of her you must acknowledge and believe it, affirm, swear and defend it, or fight, you unnatural and presumptuous louts. Whether you come singly, as the order of chivalry craves, or all together, as is the custom and vulgar usage of your breed, here I expect and await you, trusting in the right on my side.’ ‘ Sir knight,’ replied the other, ‘ that we may not burden our consciences by vouching for a thing we’ve neither seen nor heard, and which moreover is strongly to the prejudice of the empresses and queens of Alcaria and Estramadura, on behalf of all these princes I pray your worship may

be pleased to show us a portrait of the lady, for, though it be no larger than a grain of wheat, by the thread one comes to know the reel : we shall rest satisfied and safe, you contented and acquitted. Indeed methinks we're already so much on her side that though her likeness represent her asquint of one eye and distilling vermillion and brimstone from the other, for your sake we should say in her favour all that you asked.'

'She distils nothing of the kind, ye dogs!' exclaimed our knight in towering rage; 'she distils naught but ambergris and civet in cotton; nor is she crook-eyed or crook-backed but straighter than the spindle of the Guadarrama mountains. But you shall answer for this great blasphemy against the boundless beauty of my lady-love.' Saying this he drove at their spokesman with levelled lance and with such sudden fury that if by good chance Rocinante had not stumbled and fallen in mid-career, the rash merchant would have fared ill. But the steed fell and sent his rider rolling a good space along the road. The latter tried repeatedly to rise but the weight of the old armour, with that of lance, shield, spurs and helmet, hindered him and held him down. In this vain endeavour to regain his feet he kept crying: 'Flee not, cowards! flee, not, caitiffs; stand! not I but my horse is why I am stretched out here.'

One of the mule-servants, who couldn't have been any too good-natured, hearing such arrogance from the poor fallen one, could not suffer it without giving him answer in the ribs. Coming up, he seized the lance, and breaking it into several pieces, with one began to administer such swinges to our Don Quijote that despite the armour he ground him like grain. His masters cried out for him to desist, but the fellow was piqued and wouldn't quit the game till he had staked all his fury. Availing himself of the other lance-pieces he expended them all on the miserable challenger, who amid all this tempest of sticks kept threatening the vengeance of heaven and earth against these brigands, as he now considered them. The servant at last exhausted himself and the merchants jogged on, not wanting matter for talk on their way. When he of whom they spoke found himself alone, he again attempted to rise, but if he could not when whole and

sound, how could he be beaten to bits and well-nigh undone ! Even so, he counted himself happy, esteeming this a misventure appropriate to knights-errant ; moreover he attributed all to the shortcoming of his steed. But rise he certainly could not, since his body was one bruise.

CHAPTER V

A continuance of the narrative of our knight's humiliation

SEEING of a surety that he could not help himself, our hero resorted to his usual remedy of recalling some episode in his books, and his madness brought to his mind the case of Baldwin and the Marquis of Mantua when the former was left wounded on the mountain by Carloto — a tale familiar to children, not unknown to youths, praised and even believed by old men, yet no more fact than the miracles of Mahomet. That affair seemed to Don Quijote to come pat to his predicament, and as in great agony he rolled along the ground, with broken breath he began to repeat the words of the wounded Knight of the Wood :

Where canst thou be, beloved heart,
That for my plight thou dost not grieve ?
Either in ignorance thou art
Or thou art false and dost deceive.

In this manner he continued as far as the lines :

O noble Marquis of Mantua,
Mine uncle and lord in the flesh,

when it chanced that there passed a peasant (a neighbour of the knight) who had been with a load of wheat to the mill. Beholding this man lying there, he approached and asked his name and why he thus sadly lamented. But Don Quijote, taking him for his uncle the Marquis of Mantua, made no reply, continuing the ballad where it tells of his humiliation, together with the amours of the emperor's son and his wife, word for word as the romance

relates. The peasant stood listening to and marvelling at this nonsense till, removing the visor, which had been demolished by the blows, and wiping the dust from the poor man's face, at once recognising him he exclaimed : ' Señor Quijada ! ' (the name by which he was known before he lost his reason and turned from a gentleman at ease to a knight of the road) ' and what has brought you to this pass ? ' But the other let the ballad answer each question that was put.

So there was naught for the good man to do but remove the knight's breast-plate and shoulder-piece as best he could ; but no blood or sign of wound was discoverable. He managed to lift him from the ground and after not a little labour lay him on his ass, which seemed the easier of the two mounts. Gathering up the arms, even to the fragments of the lance, he fastened them on Rocinante, whom he then led by the bridle and his ass by the halter toward their village, sadly troubled by the wild talk of the challenger, who was no less in grief since, pounded and broken to pieces, he could not keep position, still sighing heavenward in a way that caused the peasant again to enquire as to his troubles. But it seemed as if Satan reminded the poor man of stories that sorted with his situation for, losing sight of Baldwin, he bethought him of how the governor of Antequera, Rodrigo de Narvaez, captured the Moor Abindarraez and brought him prisoner to his fortress. So when the peasant now asked, the knight answered in the words employed by Abindarraez in his reply to Rodrigo, as told in the *Diana* of Jorge de Montemayor ; and so apposite did he make it that the peasant wished himself to the devil for listening to such a harvest of absurdities. Gleaning from it all that his neighbour had gone mad, he hastened to their village that he might be rid of the confusion caused by this long harangue.

At the end of this last tale Don Quijote said : ' Señor Don Rodrigo de Narvaez, your worship is to know that the fair Xarifa above named is not the rare Dulcinea del Toboso, she for whom I have done, am doing and shall continue to do the most famous deeds of knighthood the world has yet seen, now sees or ever shall see.' To which the peasant replied : ' Mark you,

sir, that, sinner though I be, I'm no Rodrigo de Narvaez nor Marquis of Mantua, but your neighbour Pedro Alonso ; nor is your worship Baldwin or Abindarraez but the respected gentleman Señor Quijada.' ' I know who I am and I know that I can be not only those I have named but the Twelve Peers of France and the Nine of Fame as well, since my deeds outweigh all theirs, both what they did singly and in unison.'

Engaged in this and similar converse they reached the village, just at dusk, but the peasant delayed a bit before entering, that none might see how poor a horseman their battered townsman made. When all was dark, he entered the place and the corral of Don Quijote's house, which he found in great turmoil. The priest and barber, the knight's great friends, were there, and the housekeeper at the top of her voice was saying : ' What think you, Doctor Pedro Perez, of my master's strait ? Neither horse nor rider nor shield, lance and armour has been seen these three days. Misery of me but I think, and this is the truth as I was born to die, that those cursed books of chivalry, which he reads with never a let-up, have addled his wits. For I remember often to have heard him say, addressing himself, that he longed to turn errant and go through these worlds on the track of adventures. May all such books be commended to Satan and Barabbas, since they have wrecked the most delicate understanding in all La Mancha.'

The niece said the same and more : ' Believe me, barber Nicholas, not infrequently mine uncle would read in these soulless books of disaventures two days and nights at a stretch, and then throwing the volume from him would clap hand to sword and go slashing the walls. At length, exhausted, he'd say he had killed four giants like four towers, calling his sweat the blood of battle-wounds. Then would he drink a jug of cold water and rest well and quiet again, saying the water was a most precious balsam fetched by the sage Esquife, a great magician and a friend of his. But the whole blame is mine, in that I didn't advise your worships of mine uncle's frenzies, that they might have been cured ere they reached this present pitch and all those excommunicated books, whereof he has great num-

ber, been set on fire, for they deserve to be burned like heretics.' 'I say no less,' said the priest, 'and by my faith to-morrow shall not pass without a public act being voted to condemn them to the flames; no longer shall they cause whoever reads them to do what my good friend must have done.'

The peasant and Don Quijote were outside listening to all this. Thereby the former came to know for certain the nature of the latter's malady, so now he called: 'Open, your worships, to Señor Baldwin and Señor Marquis of Mantua, who comes sorely wounded; open too to Señor Moor Abindarraez, whom the worthy Rodrigo de Narvaez, Governor of Antequera, leads captive.' At this they rushed out and recognising some their friend, others their master and uncle, ran to embrace him, though not yet dismounted from the ass — for he was helpless. 'Hold all,' he cried, 'for I come sadly wounded through my steed's default. Carry me to bed and if possible call in the sage Urganda to inspect and heal my wounds.' 'May I be cursed,' quoth the housekeeper, 'if my heart didn't tell me truly on which foot my master limped. Dismount, sir, and welcome home, for we shall know how to cure you without any of your ganders. The devil take, I say again and a hundred times more, the books that have done you this ill.'

They straightway carried him to bed, but found no wounds though he told them his whole body was one, having suffered a great fall whith his steed Rocinante while fighting ten giants, the boldest and most lawless that could be found in the greater cattle of the world. 'Ha, ha!' nodded the priest, 'so there are giants in the dance?' They asked a thousand questions but his only answer was that they must give him something to eat and led him sleep, the thing he most needed. This they did and the priest got a full account from the other of the finding of their friend. The peasant told all, including the wild things he had said both as he lay on the ground and on the road home. This increased the priest's desire to do what he did next day, which was first of all to get the barber to go with him to Don Quijote's house.

CHAPTER VI

The high and mighty inquisition held by priest and barber on the library of our imaginative gentleman

THE knight was still sleeping. The priest asked for the key of the room where were kept the books that had done the mischief. The niece willingly gave it and all went in. There they found more than a hundred well-bound large volumes and numerous small ones. No sooner did the housekeeper catch sight of them than she fled from the room, presently returning with a rock of holy-water and a bunch of hyssop, saying to the priest :

Take these, your worship, and sprinkle the room lest here lurk some magician, one of the many in these books, who might enchant us for our seeking to oust them from the world.' Smiling at her credulity, the priest bade the barber hand him the books singly that he might learn whereof they treated — he might find some undeserving judgment by fire. 'None deserves pardon,' pleaded the niece, 'since all are offenders. 'Twere well to throw everyone of them into the inner-court and apply a light to the heap, or better carry them to the corral where the smoke won't trouble us.' The housekeeper agreed — such was the pair's pleasure in the slaughter of these innocents. But the priest wouldn't consent till he had at least read the titles.

The first that Master Nicholas placed in his hands were the four volumes of Amadis of Gaul. 'Curious,' said the priest, 'for his was the first book of chivalry printed in Spain, they tell me, and from it sprang all the others. As founder of so pernicious a sect, methinks we should condemn it without apology to the fire.' 'On the contrary,' replied the barber, 'tis the best, I have heard, of all the books of this character ; as alone in its class therefore it should be pardoned.' 'Right you are,' said the priest ; 'for the present at least its life shall be spared. What is the one standing next it ?' 'The Exploits of Esplandian, legitimate son of Amadis of Gaul.' 'The goodness of the father

avaieth not the child,' returned the priest; 'open the window, mistress housekeeper, and lay the foundation for the fire.' With a right good-will the woman obeyed and the worthy Esplandian went flying into the yard to await with all patience his pending doom.

'This next,' said the barber, 'is Amadis of Greece and all on that side are of the same Amadis breed.' 'To the yard with them,' ordered the priest; 'rather than not burn Queen Pinti-quiniestra and the shepherd Darinel together with the eclogues and the involved and bedevilled discourse of the author, I'd burn the father that begat me, did he masquerade as knight-errant.' 'I too,' agreed the barber. 'And I,' said the niece. 'Well then,' chimed in the housekeeper, 'let them come, and away they go,' she cried, as they handed them to her and she, sparing the stairs, pitched them out of the window. 'What is that tub?' asked the priest, and when the barber told him Don Olivante de Laura, he said: 'The author of this book also wrote The Garden of Flowers, and 'tis difficult to tell which is the more truthful, or better say, the less false. But of this I am certain that for its fatuous pride it should go to the yard. 'And this,' said the barber, 'is Florismarte of Hyrcania.' 'And is Señor Florismarte here!' exclaimed the priest; 'then by my faith he must soon be in the yard despite his miraculous birth and extraordinary adventures; his stiff barren style permits of naught else. To the yard with him and the other, mistress housekeeper.' 'My pleasure,' she answered, carrying out his wish with despatch.

'Here is The Knight Platir.' 'Tis an old book,' the priest declared, 'but I have yet to find aught that warrants absolution, so let him join the others without protest;' and join them he did. He opened another whereof he found the title, The Knight of the Cross. 'For the sacredness of the name one might forgive its stupidity, but the saying is: The devil lurks — so away with it to the fire.' Taking up another the barber told him 'twas The Mirror of Knightly Deeds. 'I know his worship of old,' offered the priest; 'Rinaldo of Montalvan appears in this book, together with his friends and boon companions, worse robbers than

Cacus ; and the Twelve Peers with their truthful story-teller Turpin. I'm for condemning it to certainly no more than perpetual banishment, if only because it furnished material to Matteo Boiardo, and from it too the Christian poet Ludovico Ariosto spun his web. Him, were he here in another tongue, I should little respect, but if in his own, I'd place him on my head. ' Well, 'tis in the Italian I own him,' vouchsafed the barber, ' but I confess I don't comprehend him.' ' Nor were it well if you did,' returned the priest ; ' and we should have forgiven the good Captain if he had not introduced him into Spain by dressing him in Castilian. He robbed him of much of his native force, as indeed do all that would turn verse into another tongue ; however cunning and careful they be, the poems never have the charm of the original. But to return : I feel that this and all the books treating of those French affairs should be dropped down a dry well and left, till we can examine and see what shall be done with them, always excepting one Bernardo del Carpio that is going about nowadays, and a book called Roncesvalles. These in coming to my hands are certain to pass into those of the housekeeper and so to the fire without remission.' Of all this the barber approved : so assured was he that the priest was too good a Christian and too much a friend of the truth to speak else for all the world.

Opening another book the barber found it Palmerin de Oliva and next Palmerin of England ; whereupon the priest remarked : ' Let this olive be hewn down and cast into the fire, till not even the ashes remain, but let this English palm be spared and preserved as a rare specimen, and let there be made a chest for it such as Alexander found among the spoils of Darius, who kept the works of Homer therein. This book, my friend, possesses merit of two kinds. First, 'tis excellent in itself, and secondly, according to report 'twas written by an intelligent Portugese king. The episodes connected with Miraguarda's castle are deftly contrived, the dialogue is courteous and clear and very perceivingly maintains the essential character of each speaker. I feel therefore, saving Master Nicholas's good judgment, that this and Amadis of Gaul should be saved the fire, but that the

rest should perish without further examination.' 'Not so, friend priest,' replied the barber, 'for the book now in my hand is the celebrated Don Belianis.' 'Even he,' said the priest, 'with his second, third and fourth parts needs a little rhubarb to purge him of excess of bile. 'Twere well also to rid him of that rubbish of the Castle of Fame and even worse nonsense, wherefor we shall allow him certain days of grace and, as he is purified or not, so mercy or justice shall be dealt him. In the interval, my friend, keep him in your house where none can read him.' 'Agreed,' replied the other.

As the priest cared not to weary himself further with books of chivalry, he bade the housemistress take all the larger volumes and throw them into the yard. He spake to a person neither deaf nor dull but more eager to destroy these books than weave a piece of cloth however large or fine. Taking seven and eight at a time, she pitched them out of the window. In this way one fell at the feet of the barber who, picking it up, found it bore the title, History of Famous Tirante the White. 'God help me!' quoth the priest; 'and if here isn't Tirante. Hand it over, friend, for verily methinks therein have I found a treasure of content, a mine of diversion. In this book we meet with Don Kyrielson of Montalvan, a worthy knight, together with his brother Thomas of Montalvan and the cavalier Fonseca, not to mention the battle the bold Tirante fought with the mastiff and the repartees of the damsel Placer-de-mi-vida, with the intrigues and amours of the widow Reposada and the tale of the empress enamoured of Hippolito her squire. Truly, friend, by right of style this is the best book in the world. Here knights eat, sleep, die in bed, and make their wills before the end, together with much else other books of chivalry eschew. In my opinion this author is deserving, for he didn't with open eyes write nonsense fit to send him to the galleys for life. Take him home and read him and you'll see I speak truth.'

'Good,' said the barber; 'but tell me, what disposal shall we make of these little books?' 'They must contain poetry, not chivalry,' remarked the priest; opening one he found the Diana of Jorge de Montemayor, and supposing the others to be poetry as

well, he continued : ' These books don't deserve the fate of the others because, written for our amusement, they do not and will not do the harm books of chivalry have done.' ' Ah, sir,' interposed the niece, ' 'twere better to burn them with the rest or no sooner will mine uncle be cured of his chivalry-ailment than like enough, after reading all these verses, he'll want to turn shepherd and wander through field and forest with pipe and song. And 'twould be worse if he became a poet, a disease both infectious and incurable they say.' ' The girl is right,' acknowledged the priest ; ' 'twill be as well to save him from this pitfall. But as to the Diana, methinks it shouldn't be burned ; merely shorn rather of the passages dealing with the sage Felicia and most of the longer verse. The prose, and the honour of being the first book of its kind, should be left it.'

' The next one,' said the barber, ' is Diana the second, by the Salamancan, and still another of the same name by Gil Polo.' ' The one by the Salamancan may join and increase the number of the damned, but the other, by Gil Polo, shall be preserved as if by Apollo. Come, my friend, let's use despatch for 'tis getting late.' ' This book,' said the barber opening another, ' is The Ten Books of Love's Fortune, by the Sardinian poet Antonio de Lofraso.' ' By mine orders,' the other exclaimed, ' from the time Apollo was Apollo, the muses muses and the poets poets, this is the best and rarest book of its kind ; one so diverting and whimsical has never been put together and he that hasn't read it may be sure he has never read anything so delightful. Hand it here, friend, for I prize more having met with this than the gift of a cassock of Florentine serge.' The priest joyously put it out of harm's way and the other remarked : ' These now in my hands are The Shepherd of Iberia, The Nymphs of Henares and a Disclosure of Jealousy.' ' All you must do is to entrust them to the secular arm of the housekeeper ; don't ask why or I'd never have done.' ' And this,' offered the barber, ' The Shepherd of Filida.' ' No shepherd, his informant replied, ' but a talented nobleman ; keep him like a precious stone.'

Still another the barber produced saying : ' This larger volume is entitled A Treasury of Many Poems.' ' Were they fewer they

‘ would be more prized,’ was the criticism ; ‘ this book should be weeded of the failures that choke the finer things. Keep it however, both out of consideration of the author’s more heroic and high-minded verse and because he’s a friend of mine.’ ‘ And this The Songs of Lopez Maldonado.’ ‘ Him too I number among my great friends,’ returned the priest ; ‘ they that hear him sing his songs are ravished by them and enchanted by the sweetness of his voice. He’s a trifle too verbose in his eclogues, but perfection after all is not to be looked for everywhere ; so let the book be kept among the sheep. Have you another ?’

‘ The Galatea, by Miguel de Cervantes,’ replied the barber. ‘ My great friend for many years, this Cervantes, and I can assure you he’s a man more versed in reverses than verses. His book shows a fair amount of invention and proposes things but ~~concludes nothing.~~ We must wait for the promised second part—it may then receive the full measure of grace now denied it. In the meantime keep it in your house like a recluse.’ ‘ Very good,’ assented the other ; ‘ and now come three at once, The Araucana by Don Alonso de Ercilla, The Astriada by Juan Rufo, a magistrate of Cordova, and Montserrat by the Valencian poet Christóbal de Virués.’ ‘ These three books,’ explained the head-inquistitor, ‘ are the best in Castilian heroic verse and compare favourably with the most famous in the Italian. Keep them as the richest poetic treasures Spain possesses.’ The priest was too weary to examine further and ordered the rest of the books to be fired off in a general discharge, but the barber had already opened another, called The Tears of Angelica. ‘ I should have wept,’ said the ecclesiastic, ‘ had I assented to this book’s destruction, for its author was one of the famous poets of the world, let alone Spain, and made a happy translation of sundry of Ovid’s fables.’

CHAPTER VII

The second sally of our good knight Don Quijote
de la Mancha

OF a sudden Don Quijote was heard to cry out : ‘ This way, this way, brave knights ; display the power of your stout arms ; the courtiers are prevailing in the tourney.’ The inquisitors at once dropped the examination of the books, with the result that the Caroles, The Lion of Spain and The Deeds of the Emperor, all works of Don Luis of Avila, which must certainly have been in the library, were burned without a hearing ; otherwise they might have escaped such harsh sentence. All rushed to the knight, whom they found risen from bed, shouting and laying about with his sword, as wide awake as if he had never slept. The two friends grappled with him and forced him back. When he had recovered composure a little, he adressed the priest in these words :

‘ Señor Archbishop Turpin, we that are known as The Twelve Peers have certainly brought great disgrace upon us by permitting the courtier-knights to carry off victory in this tournament and with such ease, after we adventurers had held the advantage the three days preceeding.’ ‘ Let your worship not worry,’ said his friend, ‘ for God may be pleased to change the luck and what is lost to-day may be won to-morrow. For the present think only of your health ; I know you must be excessively fatigued if not badly wounded.’ ‘ No, not wounded, but unquestionably pounded and broken, since that bastard of a Don Roland belaboured me with the trunk of an oak, all from envy, seeing that I alone rival his feats of daring. But despite all his enchantments I am no longer Rinaldo of Montalvan if, when I rise from this bed, he shall refuse me satisfaction. First bring me something to eat, which methinks is what I need most, and to me leave my revenge.’ Carrying out his wishes the

women brought him refreshment, and soon after he fell asleep, leaving them marvelling at his rage. That night the housekeeper burned all the books to ashes, both those in the corral and any left in the house. Some must have perished that deserved to have been kept among archives for ever, but the inquisitor's negligence and their own fate did not permit. Thus was the proverb fulfilled that the saint sometimes suffers for the sinner.

One of the remedies the priest and barber suggested for the temporary relief of their friend was that his library-door be walled up and plastered over, so that when he recovered, he'd not find it — perhaps with the cause removed the effect might cease; they could say a magician had carried the books off, room and all. This suggestion was made a fact with all speed, and two days later when Don Quijote, leaving his bed, at once made for his books, he didn't find them where he had left them, though he searched everywhere. At last he came to the spot where the door had been and went feeling along with his hands, not saying aught but looking and looking. After a long space he asked the housekeeper where were his books and the room. The woman, well prompted, said: 'What room or what nothing does your worship seek? There's neither room nor books in the house for the devil himself whisked them all off.'

'Twas not the devil,' interposed the niece, 'but a magician that came on a cloud one night soon after your worship set forth, and alighting from a serpent entered the room. What he did there I don't know, but after a little he went flying through the roof, leaving the house full of smoke. And when we ran to see, we found neither room nor books; only we clearly remember, housekeeper and I, that as he flew off, the old wretch called down that because of the secret enmity he bore the owner of that library, he had used him in a way that would be seen. His name was Muñaton he said.' 'Freston he should have said,' observed Don Quijote. 'I don't just remember whether Freston or Friton,' offered the housekeeper, 'but I'm certain it ended in ton.'

'It does,' Don Quijote assured her; 'he's a cunning magician, a great enemy of mine; hates me bitterly, having learned from his necromancy that sometime or other I shall engage and van-

quish a favourite knight of his and that nothing he can do will stop me. He therefore does his best to work me ill, but I warned him that naught could oppose or escape what Heaven had ordained.' 'Is there one to doubt it?' said the niece; 'but, uncle, who mixes you in these quarrels? Wouldn't it be better to stay quietly at home rather than wander over the world in search of better bread than wheat, forgetting that many go for wool and come back shorn?' 'O niece of mine,' cried her uncle, 'how far out thou art in thy reckoning! Ere they shear me I shall pluck the beards off all that think to touch the end of one of my hairs.' Neither woman cared to say more, seeing his anger kindle.

Our knight thus passed fifteen tranquil days and showed no desire to return to his vagaries. He had pleasant converse with his friends, the priest and barber, anent that thing of which he deemed the world stood in sorest need, and which in him was to be revived. At times the priest confuted and again concurred in what he said — the only way to keep him within bounds. But during this period our hero was making overtures to a peasant-neighbour of his, a good man though with few goods and very little salt in his brain-pan. He said so much and offered so many inducements and promises of reward that in the end the fellow agreed to sally forth as his shieldbearer. Among other things, Don Quijote told him he should be glad to go, since some time or other an adventure might befall that like a flash would win his master an isle, and he would make him, his servant, its governor. Lured by these and other assurances Sancho Panza forsook wife and children and engaged himself as squire.

The knight then looked about for money, and by selling this and pawning that, making bad bargains in all, got a fair sum together. From a friend he borrowed a shield and patching his battered helmet as he could gave notice to his squire of the day and hour he purposed to take the road, that the other might procure their equipment; above all he charged him to bring saddlebags. Sancho said yes, he would, and he was going to fetch along a very good ass of his, since he wasn't accustomed to long distances afoot. At the ass Don Quijote demurred, trying

to recall where the squire of a knight-errant rode ass-back. No such instance came but he decided to admit the little beast, counting on a more respectable mount by substituting the steed of the first rude knight he encountered. Our champion also provided himself with lint and the other things as advised by the innkeeper. And now when all was said and done, without taking leave, Panza of wife and children, his master of niece and house-keeper, one night they sallied forth unseen and by dawn were so well on their way they felt they couldn't be overtaken though pursued. Sancho rode his ass like a patriarch, with wine-bag and wallet and a huge desire to see himself governor of that promised isle.

They chanced to take the same route the knight had taken on his first sally, across the plain of Montiel, but now the don travelled with less discomfort, for it was still early morn and the sun's rays shone obliquely. As they ambled along, the squire said to his lord : ' May your worship not forget the isle you promised me, sir errant knight, for I can govern it, no matter how big.' And the other answered : ' You must know, friend Sancho Panza, that usage among knights-errant of old was to make their squires governors of the isles or kingdoms they won, and I am resolved that such a pleasant custom shan't fault through me. Rather I mean to improve upon it, for frequently and perhaps more often than not they waited till their squires had grown old in a service of hard days and worse nights before bestowing the name of count or some such tittle — at least of marquis of a valley or a province more or less. But if you live and I, it might easily come about before six days are up that I shall win a realm with dependencies that would come pat for you to be crowned king of one of them. Don't regard this as a miracle, for things happen to knights and occasions arise in such unexpected and unforeseen ways that perchance I can give you more than I promise. '

' And if by one of those miracles,' ventured Sancho Panza, ' I became king, then my wifey Juana Gutierrez would have to be queen and all my children princes.' ' Well, who doubts it ? ' ' I doubt it,' said Sancho ; ' did God rain kingdoms, not one

methinks would sit well on the head of Mari Gutierrez. Take my word for it, ~~sire, she's not worth two coppers for a queen ;~~ a countess would better suit — and then God help her.' 'Leave it to Him, for He will give what will most become her. But humble not your spirit so low, my son, as to rest satisfied with aught less than a governorship.' 'That I will not,' promised Sancho ; 'the more that in your worship I've a master of such rank as to know everything befitting me and my capacity.'

CHAPTER VIII

The gallant knight's good fortune in the alarming and unprecedented adventure of the windmills, together with other occurrences worthy of kindly remembrance

WHILE thus they conversed, fate brought it to pass that some thirty or forty windmills, rising from that plain, came into view, and no sooner did Don Quijote sight them than he said to his squire : 'Chance guides our fortunes better than we could have wished, friend Sancho Panza, for yonder appear thirty or more huge giants whom I purpose to engage in battle, taking all their lives, and from the spoils we shall begin to enrich ourselves. This is a righteous war and great service to God it is to wipe this wicked brood from the face of the earth.' 'What giants?' questioned Sancho. 'Those there with the long arms; some giants have arms two leagues long.' 'Please, your worship, those are not giants but windmills and what look like arms are sails which, blown round by the wind, turn the millstones.' 'Tis more than plain,' rejoined Don Quijote, 'that you are not up in the business of adventures. Giants they are, and if you fear, run and pray while I close with them in furious and unequal battle.'

With this our hero gave spurs to Rocinante, heedless of the cries of Sancho who shouted that they were sure-enough windmills and no giants. But the knight was so certain they were the latter that he heeded naught nor stopped to see what they

were, though now in the midst of them. He came on shouting : ' Flee not cowards and low-lived caitiffs ; one knight single-handed comes to assail you.' Just then a breeze arose and as the long arms moved, the champion cried : ' Though ye wield more arms than the giant Briareus, yours will be the penalty ; ' and commending himself with his whole heart to his lady Dulcinea, petitioning her aid in this crisis, well covered with shield and with lance on rest, he rode forward at his steed's full gallop, attacking the mill before him by thrusting the lance into its sail — which now the wind turned with such velocity that shivering his weapon to pieces it gave horse and rider such a toss that in sad plight they rolled over and over along the plain.

Sancho Panza, coming to the rescue at his ass's best speed, found his master unable to stir, for he and Rocinante had landed with tremendous force. ' God bless me,' Panza cried, ' didn't I tell your worship to look well to what you did, and that they were windmills and naught else — that only he that had things like them in his head could mistake them.' ' Peace Sancho,' murmured the other ; ' the fortunes of war are peculiarly subject to change. Moreover I believe, and indeed it is so, that Freston, the sage that spirited away my library, has turned these giants into windmills, hoping in his hatred of me to snatch the glory of victory. But little shall his wicked arts avail against my trusty sword.' ' God settle it as He will,' said Sancho ; and helping his master rise, mounted him on Rocinante, though the latter had half-dislocated his shoulder.

Talking of the recent incident they followed the road to Puerto Lápice, for much people journey through that pass and they could not but find many and a great variety of adventures, so their leader said. Sore distressed at the loss of his lance, he confessed it to his squire, adding : ' But I remember to have read that a Spanish knight Diego Perez de Vargas, having snapped his sword in battle, lopped off a heavy branch from a holm-oak and with it wrought such havoc that day and pounded so many Moors to pieces, that he won the surname of Machuca or the Bruiser, and he and his descendants have gone by the name of Vargas y Machuca ever since. I speak of this because I purpose

to lop off as good an one from the first holm-oak we come across and I think and foresee I shall do such deeds with it that you may consider yourself fortunate in being found worthy to come and be eye-witness to things that will with difficulty be believed.'

'With the help of God,' said Sancho, 'I believe every whit your worship says, only straighten a little, for you seem to ride lopsided; that fall must have left its token.' 'It did, and if I don't murmur, it's because 'tis not given to knights-errant to complain of wounds, though their bowels protude.' 'Then have I nothing to say,' replied the squire, 'though God knows I'd rather you told me when aught ailed. For myself I shall make a fuss over the smallest twinge, unless this business of not complaining pertains also to squires.' Don Quijote could not help smiling at the others's simplicity, promising he could complain how and when he pleased, with or without cause, for as yet he had read nothing to the contrary in knightly discipline. Sancho now bade his master consider that 'twas time to eat. The latter told him to eat whenever it suited him; for himself he had no desire at present. With this license Sancho arranged himself on his ass as comfortably as he could and opening the saddlebags rode behind his master eating and taking his time, every now and then raising the wine-bag with such good-will the daintiest tapster of Malaga might have envied him. So long as he retailed draughts, he little bethought him of his lord's promises, nor was it work at all, but a complete change rather, to go in quest of adventures through it mattered not what hazards.

The two passed that night amid a grove of trees, from one whereof Don Quijote lopped a dry limb that might fairly serve as a lance, which he tipped with the iron from the broken one. All night he slept not, thinking on his lady Dulcinea, so as to be in line with what he had read in his books, where cavaliers passed many nights in forests and deserts wide-eyed, busy with memories of their loves. Not so did Sancho Panza let the time slip by, for, as his stomach was full and not with chicory-water, he made one long nap of it, and had not his master called, neither the sun's rays shining in his face nor the many birds joyously

proclaiming the new day would have stirred him. On rising he felt of the wine-bag and finding it much flatter than on the previous eve was stricken to the heart, seeing no ready way of supplying the deficiency. His master on the other hand didn't care to breakfast, sustained as has been said by succulent memories.

The pair continued their road to Puerto Lápice and at three that afternoon the pass came into view. 'Here, brother Sancho, we can put our arms up to the elbows in your so-called adventures,' remarked Don Quijote on sighting the place; 'but take care you touch not your sword to defend me, even though you see me in the direst dangers in the world, unless you observe my assailants to be of the vulgar rabble — then may you lawfully assist. If they be knights, the rules of chivalry debar you from giving aid under any circumstance, until dubbed yourself.' 'No question, sire, but that your worship will promptly be obeyed in this; the more that I am of peaceful turn and little inclined to mix myself in quarrels and disputes. Touching mine own defence however, I confess I shall little heed these laws, for those of God and man allow everyone to protect himself against any that seek to work him harm.' 'I say no less,' assented the other, 'but when it comes to joining against knights, you must control this natural impulse.' 'I give my word,' replied Sancho, 'and this commandment shall be kept like the sabbath.'

While they thus discoursed, appeared two Benedictine friars, riding dromedaries — at least their mules appeared that tall. They wore riding-masks and carried parasols, and behind them came a coach attended by four men on horse-back and two mule-servants afoot. It later appeared that a Biscayan lady was in the coach on her way to Seville to join her husband, who was setting out for the Indies with an important commission. The two friars were not of the party but chanced to go the same road. Scarce had our knight discovered them when he said to his squire: 'Either I deceive myself or this is the most famous adventure that ever came to pass. Those dismal-looking phantoms there must be and doubtless are magicians, abducting a princes in that coach, and there's need to redress this wrong with all the power

at my command.' 'Worse will this be than the windmills,' murmured Sancho; 'see, master, these are naught but Benedictine friars, and the coach must belong to travellers. Take care I say and look well to what you do, lest it be the devil deceives you.' 'I told you once before, Sancho, that you understand little of this business of adventures. What I have said with regard to this company is the truth, as you'll now see for yourself.'

With these words our champion rode forward, stationing himself in the middle of the way, and when the friars were come within earshot, he cried: 'Hideous and monstrous creatures, straight release the noble princesses you abduct in that coach or prepare to suffer instant death as the desert of your iniquity.' The two friars drew rein, astonished not less at the knight's appearance than at his words, to which they made answer: 'Sir knight, we are neither hideous nor monstrous but simply two Benedictine brothers on a journey. Whether or no there be abducted princesses in that coach, we cannot say.' 'No honied words for me, for I know you of old, ye traitors,' exclaimed Don Quijote, and not awaiting reply he put spurs to Rocinante, with couched lance attacking the first friar with such sudden vigour that had he not slipped from his mule, he'd have been brought to the ground against his pleasure and sorely wounded if not killed outright. The second brother, seeing the reception his companion met with, drove his heels into his giant of a beast and flew across country more swiftly than the wind.

Sancho Panza, observing the first friar on the ground, nimbly alighted from his ass and running up began to remove the other's habit. Two servants of the friars came forward and asked why he did so. Sancho replied that this part fell lawfully to him, since these were the spoils of the battle won by his lord Don Quijote. The two servants, unused to jesting and ignorant of spoils and battles, seeing the knight engaged in conversation with those inside the coach, grappled with the squire, threw him and after plucking every hair of his beard kicked him till he had neither breath nor feeling. The friar, pale and trembling, immediately made after his companion, who had halted at a distance in order to see what this attack portended. And now, having witnessed

all they cared to, they went their way, crossing themselves more than were the devil at their heels.

Don Quijote, as mentioned, was speaking to the lady of the coach, saying : ' Thy beauty, my lady, can now do with thy person what is most thy pleasure, for the pride of thy abductors is laid in the dust, o'erthrown by my puissant arm. And that thou mayst not pine to learn the name of thy deliverer, know that I call myself Don Quijote de La Mancha, errant knight and captive of the peerless and beautiful Dulcinea del Toboso. All I ask for the benefit received at my hands is that thou return to el Toboso and presenting thyself before my lady tell her how I set thee free. '

One of the squires attendant on the coach, a Biscayan, listened to these words of Quijote, and finding that he intended the coach shouldn't proceed but should return to el Toboso, he rode up to him and taking hold of the other's lance said in bad Castilian and worse Biscayan : ' Begone, knight, and go to the devil ! by God that made me, if you leave not this coach, I kill you as sure as I am Biscayan. ' Don Quijote understood him sufficiently well and quietly made answer : ' Were you a knight (*caballero*) as you are not, I should have chastised your folly and audacity ere this, slave. ' To which the other replied : ' I no gentleman (*caballero*) ! My God you lie as I am Christian. Drop lance, draw sword, and you see you fetch water to the cat. Biscayan by land, gentleman by sea, gentleman to the devil, you lie. If you say other, I say, look out. '

' Now shalt thou see, quoth Agrages, ' shouted Don Quijote ; and throwing down his lance he drew sword, embraced his shield and made at the Biscayan, bent on taking his life. The latter, seeing the onset, though wishing to dismount from his mule (a poor hired beast not to be trusted), had time merely to draw sword. Fortunately however he was near the coach and could snatch a cushion to serve him as a buckler. And now they dashed at each other like mortal foes. The rest tried to pacify them but in vain, for the Biscayan in his broken sentences said that if they didn't let him fight it out, himself would slay their mistress and all that opposed him.

Amazed and alarmed at the spectacle, the mistress bade her coachman drive to one side, and there she set herself to watch the mighty struggle. In the course thereof the Biscayan smote heavily on his adversary's shoulder over his shield — a blow to have opened him to the waist had he been unprotected. Feeling the uncommon force of the stroke Don Quijote cried aloud : ' O lady of my soul, Dulcinea, flower of beauty, succour this thy knight, who for the sake of thy great goodness finds himself in dire extremity.' To say this, clutch his sword, cover himself well with his targe and rush at the Biscayan was the work of a moment, since he resolved to hazard all upon a single blow. The other, seeing what was coming and guessing his opponent's mettle from his fearlessness, decided to pattern himself after him, and so, protecting himself with his cushion, he awaited the blow, unable to stir his mule which, unfit for these levities, from pure exhaustion stood stock still.

This then was the situation : Don Quijote with sword on high about to strike the Biscayan and split him in two ; the Biscayan with sword equally aloft, screened by the cushion ready to receive him; the bystanders in tremulous suspense as to what must result from blows of the force of those now impending ; and the lady of the coach and the maids offering a thousand promises and vows to all the shrines and images of Spain, would God deliver their squire and themselves from this grave peril. But deuce take it all, at this critical point the author lets the combat hang fire, explaining that no more could be found concerning it. The present writer however refused to believe that so rare a tale had been consigned to the judgment of oblivion : that the wits of La Mancha had been so little curious as not to possess amongst their records and annals documents that treated of this famous cavalier. He therefore despaired not of discovering the conclusion of this engaging narrative, and this, Heaven favouring, he did discover in the manner related in the following chapter.

CHAPTER IX

The conclusion of the stupendous battle between the gallant Biscayan and the puissant Manchegan

IN the previous chapter we left the worthy Biscayan and the renowned Don Quijote with unsheathed and lifted swords about to strike two such furious blows as, did they reach home, would cleave them both in twain, split like pomegranates. At this critical juncture the story broke off and was left a torso, nor did the author hint as to where the missing part might be found. This distressed me considerably, for my pleasure in the little I had read turned to disgust at the thought of the difficulties in the way of finding the deal I felt must be wanting to this savoury narrative. It seemed to me impossible and contrary to all good precedent that so worthy a knight should have no sage to take it upon himself to describe his never-such adventures — a fortune that not once failed any of the errants that, as it is termed, went adventuring. Every one had a sage or two handy not only to describe his exploits but to enlarge on his most trifling fancies and follies no matter how private. So excellent a knight as ours, I reasoned, couldn't have been utterly denied what Platir and his kind possessed and to spare. In a word I couldn't persuade myself that so fine a tale had been left maimed and mutilated, laying the blame for its present non-appearance at the door of malicious Time, the devourer and consumer of all things. Time, I said, had either concealed the missing part or consumed it.

Yet I consoled myself with the reflection that since such modern books as *A Disclosure of Jealousy* and *The Nymphs of Henares* were found in Don Quijote's library, his life too must be of to-day, and were it not yet recorded, would at any rate still live in the memory of his village and the neighbourhood. I was more than ever anxious therefore to discover the life and deeds of our famous Spaniard, light and mirror of Manchegan

chivalry and the first in our age and these calamitous times to enter on the labour and exercise of errant arms, redressing wrongs, succouring widows and protecting damsels, such as in all their maidenhood were wont to roam with whip and palfrey over hill over dale over mead over mountain, and did not some villainous churl with steel hood and battle-axe or some big, big giant win the day, continued virgins till eighty, and in all that time slept not a night under roof, going to their graves as chaste as the mothers that bore them. On this as on many other accounts I maintain that our noble Quijote deserves lasting and especial praise, nor should it be refused me for my diligence in discovering the end of this absorbing tale; though I confess that had not Heaven, circumstance and good-fortune assisted me, the world would have lost the diversion and delight wherewith the attentive reader may now be occupied for nearly two hours.

In this manner then, I chanced to find the missing part. One day as I stood in the Alcana market-place of Toledo, a lad approached a silk-mercator in the hope of selling him a quantity of old memorandum-books and papers, and as I love to read even torn scraps I pick up in the streets, I was led to ~~examine~~ one of the note-books the boy was selling. I recognised the writing as Arabic but not knowing how to read that tongue I looked about for some Morisco that spoke Spanish. It isn't difficult to find such an interpreter there, and had I sought one that could speak the older and better language of Hebrew, I shouldn't have been disappointed. I soon happened on one in fact and telling him mine errand put the pamphlet in his hand. He opened it at the middle and reading a short way began to chuckle. I of course asked his reason and he replied because of a certain note written in the margin, which at my request he translated, still chuckling as he read: 'This Dulcinea, so often referred to in these pages, is said to have had a better hand at salting down pigs than any woman in La Mancha.'

I was indeed dumfounded, for it came to me like a flash that these note-books must contain the history of our errant. I asked the Morisco to read at the beginning and he translating as he went read the title: History of Don Quijote de la Mancha, written

by the Arabian Historiographer Cid Hamet Benengeli. It required considerable control to dissemble my pleasure, but forestalling the silk-mercator I purchased all the papers and note-books for half a real. Had he had been keen or suspected why I wanted them, he might easily have asked and received more than twelve times that amount. I then went apart with the Morisco to the cathedral-cloister and bade him translate all passages dealing with Don Quijote, without addition or omission, offering to pay whatever sum he named. He was satisfied with one bushel of raisins and two of wheat, agreeing to make a good and faithful rendering with all speed. To facilitate the arrangement and not to let so rare a find leave my hands, I took him home with me, where in little more than a month and a half he translated the whole, just as is here set down.

In the first note-book was depicted to the very life the combat 'twixt Don Quijote and the Biscayan, each represented with drawn swords in the same attitude as in the story, the former protected by his shield, the latter by a cushion. The Biscayan's mule was drawn so vividly you could have told she was a hired one a bowshot off. At its feet was printed Don Sancho de Aspeitia, the name of the rider no doubt, for under Rocinante one read Don Quijote. Rocinante himself was marvellously portrayed, so long and lank and lean with so prominent a back-bone and so far gone in consumption, 'twas clear how perceivingly he had been named. Near him stood Sancho Panza, holding his ass by the halter, and at his feet was another inscription reading : Sancho Zancas. This picture made him appear with round belly, short waist and generous legs. Indeed the narrative mentions him by both the names Panza (paunch) and Zancas (shanks).

A few other trifles concerning the manuscript might be mentioned but they are trifles after all and have naught to do with the truth of the history (and no history can be at fault provided it be true). If there be any doubt about the honesty of this, it can only arise from the fact that its author was an Arab, it being a trait of that people to deceive. But from their being such bitter enemies of ours, 'tis likely that he slighted rather than embellished the story. Indeed I am almost certain that such is the case,

since when he has the chance and ought to descant in so worthy a knight's praise, he appears to observe intentional silence — bad practice and worse principle, since the imperative duty of historians is to be accurate, truthful and unprejudiced: neither interest nor fear, partiality nor dislike, should move them from the path of truth, whose mother is history — that rival of Time, that depository of actions, witness for the past, ensample and warning to the present and guide to the future. I know that in this particular one will be found all the pleasantest thing to be desired, and if it lack aught, I shall consider it the fault of the hound of an author rather than of the subject. Be that as it may, its second part begins :

The two valiant and enraged combatants with their trenchant blades on high appeared to menace heaven, earth and hell, such the terror of their aspect. The first to let fall a blow was the peppery Biscayan, and it descended with such force and fury that had it not been turned aside, 'twould alone have sufficed to end the bitter combat and all the adventures of Don Quijote. But fortune, keeping him for greater things, averted it, and though the sword struck his left shoulder, its only damage was to pare the armour on that side, carrying in its train a goodly portion of the helmet and half an ear — all of which came to the ground with hideous ruin, leaving our knight in wretched case.

God help me, who can at all describe the wrath that now raged in our Manchegan's heart on feeling himself thus dealt with ! All that can be said is 'twas sufficient to cause him again to raise in his stirrups, and having grasped his weapon more firmly with both hands, to give the other such a whopping whack that, reaching his head with force unabated by the cushion (even that defence not availing him), as though a mountain had struck him it caused him to spurt blood through mouth, ears and nostrils, and doubtless would have knocked him from his mule, had he not clutched her neck and saved himself. But she, thunderstruck by the terrible impact, started across country on the run, and her rider, losing stirrup and letting fall his arms, with a few plunges was brought to earth.

The other, who had been calmly looking on, now leapt from

his horse, and quickly running up pointed his sword at his enemy's eyes, telling him to surrender or he'd cut off his head. The man was too confused to speak and Don Quijote so blinded that it would have fared ill with his victim had not the ladies of the coach, who in dismay had watched the encounter, hastened to our champion and earnestly besought the great favour and kindness of sparing their squire's life. With proud and serious bearing the victor replied : ' Of a surety, fair ladies, I am most willing to do as you list, but only on this stipulation and condition, that your knight promise to visit el Toboso, presenting himself before the peerless lady Dulcinea, that she may deal with him according to her pleasure.' In their terror and bewilderment the ladies didn't discuss terms, and without enquiring as to Dulcinea's identity promised that their squire would strictly obey the command. ' On the faith of that pledge,' returned Don Quijote, ' I shall do him no further injury ; though richly he deserves it.'

CHAPTER X

The pleasant colloquy that passed 'twixt Don Quijote and his squire Sancho Panza

SANCHO Panza, so ill used by the friars' servants, had come to in time to witness his master's bout, offering in his heart prayers to God that He should be pleased to grant him victory, that thereby he might win an isle, whereof himself should be governor, as promised. Seeing now that the scuffle was over and that his master was about to remount, he ran to hold the stirrup, first kneeling and taking his hand, kissing it and saying : ' May your worship be pleased, my lord Don Quijote, to make me governor of the island you won in this vengeful quarrel, for no matter how big it is, I feel the stuff in me to govern it as well as any man ever did isles in the world.'

To this request Don Quijote answered : ' You forget, brother Sancho, that this adventure and any like it aren't adventures of

isles but of cross-roads, where one wins naught but a broken pate or the loss of an ear. Have patience, and adventures will arise by whose means I can make you a governor and more too.' Sancho returned thanks and again kissing the other's hand and the border of his cuirass helped him mount Rocinante. He in turn mounted and followed, for our knight, without word or farewell to the ladies of the coach, at double-quick entered a neighbouring wood.

Sancho kept his ass at its best trot but Rocinante travelled so fleetly that, seeing he was left behind, the squire felt obliged to call to the other. Don Quijote drew rein and stayed till Sancho caught up, who said as he drew near : ' It looks to me, señor, 'twould be better for us to take refuge in some church, since you left that fellow in bad shape. 'Twill not be strange if they advise the Holy Brotherhood, who will lock us up, and by my faith we shall sweat our tails before we get out.' ' Peace, Sancho ; where have you seen or read of knight-errant brought to justice, no matter of how many homicides he was guilty ? ' ' I know not these homely sides, nor have I ever seen any. I only know that the Holy Brotherhood look after all country-fighters ; the rest I shall let pass. ' ' Then don't worry, friend, for I shall save you from the hands of the Chaldeans, let alone the Brotherhood. But tell me, on your life, have you ever seen a more valiant knight than I in all the known parts of the world ? have you ever read in histories of another that possessed more fearlessness in the onset, more endurance in sustaining it, more skill in wounding or more cunning in the final overthrow ? '

' To be plain with your worship,' replied Sancho, ' never a history have I read, nay, not one, for I can neither read nor write. What I will wager is that I never served a more dare-devil squire in all the days of my life ; I only pray these gallantries may not be answered for in the quarter I spoke of. All I ask is that your worship doctor himself, for a good bit of blood is oozing from that ear and I have lint and a little white ointment in the saddlebags. ' ' Both would be superfluous,' remarked the other, had I thought to make a flask of Fierabras' balsam, with one drop of which time and medicines would be saved. ' ' What flask

and what balsam is this ?' ' 'Tis a balsam whereof I have the recipe in memory, whose possessor, even if sorely wounded, need have no fear of death. When I have made it and handed it over, should you in some battle see me cut in two, a thing that not infrequently occurs, all you must do is deftly to clap the half of me that has dropped to the ground back onto the half still in the saddle, taking care to make an even and straight juncture ere the blood congeal. Then give two draughts of this balsam and you'll find me sounder than an apple.' ' In that case,' said Panza, ' I henceforth forfeit the government of the promised isle and accept as pay for my many and good services the recipe of this sovereign drug, for an ounce thereof will methinks fetch two reals anywhere and naught shall I do but live my life care-free and respected. But first tell me if it costs much to make.' ' For less than three reals can be made a gallon and a half.' ' Sinner that I am ! and why does your worship delay in making some and teaching me ?' ' Peace, my son, since I intend to teach you greater mysteries and do you greater services than these. For the present let us look to mine ear, which I confess pains me more than I list.'

Sancho produced lint and ointment from the saddlebags, but when Don Quijote observed his helmet in pieces, he well-nigh went out of his head. Putting hand to sword and lifting eyes heavenward he cried : ' I swear by the Creator of all things and by the four Holy Gospels word for word to lead the life led by the great Marquis of Mantua when he swore to avenge the death or his nephew Baldwin, which was not to eat bread off a cloth or embrace his wife, together with other things that now escape me but which I agree to as if here expressed, until such time as I take complete vengeance on him that brought me this shame.' Hearing this the squire remarked : ' Observe, Señor Don Quijote, that if yon knight obeyed your command to go and present himself before my lady Dulcinea del Toboso, he'll have done his duty and deserves no further punishment until he commit another crime.' ' You have spoken well and to the point, Sancho, and I therefore annul the oath so far as it relates to taking further vengeance, but I asseverate it in the matter of leading that

kind of a life until I capture from some knight another helmet as good as this of mine. And don't think this all smoke and no fire and that I don't know what I say, for I have an excellent example set me, in that this very thing occurred in the case of Mambrino's helmet that cost Sacripante so dear.'

'Give all such oaths to the devil, sir,' advised Sancho, 'as mischievous to the health and harmful to the conscience. Or tell me what we're to do if we don't meet a helmeted man for many days to come; must the vow be lived up to in spite of the many trials and discomforts entailed, such as sleeping in our clothes, never sleeping under roof and a thousand other nuisances contained in that old fool of a Marquis of Mantua's oath which your worship would now ratify? Consider long, sir, that no armed men travel these roads, none but carriers and carters that not only don't wear helmets but belike never heard them named in all their days.' 'In this you are mistaken, friend, for we shan't be two hours along these cross-roads before we meet more men-at-arms than invested Albraca for the rescue of Angelica the fair.' 'Halt!' said the squire; 'so let it be, and God grant us good-luck and that the time may be drawing near for winning that isle that's costing Sancho Panza so dear; and then let me die.' 'I have before told you,' replied the other, 'to give this no care, for should an isle fail, there's the kingdom of Denmark or of Sobradisa, to fit you like a ring the finger, and you ought to be the more pleased in that both are on terra firma. But let us leave this to its time, and see now if you have aught in the saddlebags to eat. We may then go in search of a castle to lodge in for the night, where we can make the balsam I told of; for I swear to you before God that mine ear continues to pain me more than enough.'

'I have an onion here, a little cheese and some bread-crumbs,' declared Sancho, 'none of which is fit food for so worthy a knight as your worship.' 'How little you understand this matter,' Don Quijote sighed; 'I must explain to you, son, that it's reckoned an honour among knights-errant not to eat a thing for a month at a time, and when they do eat to eat whatever comes most handy. You would be assured of this had you read

as many histories as I, for though they are legion, in none have I found mention of errants eating, unless by accident or at sumptuous banquets prepared especially for them — the rest of their days they feasted on flowers. Though it goes without saying that in order to live they did eat and performed other natural functions, being men like ourselves, it should likewise be appreciated that as they spent most of their time wandering through deserts and forests without a cook, their usual fare must have been rustic, of the kind you now offer. Don't plague yourself with a thing that pleases me, friend Sancho, nor hope to make the world over, or lift knight-errantry off its hinges.'

'Forgive me,' said Sancho, 'but since, as I have before said, I can neither read nor write, I don't know and haven't picked up as yet the rules of the chivalry profession. Hereafter I shall fill the saddlebags with all manner of dried fruits for your worship that is a knight, and for myself that am not one I shall provide things more substantial that can fly.' 'I do not say, Sancho, that it's incumbent on errants to eat naught but these fruits, but that their fare must usually consist of them and certain field-growing herbs known to them and me.' 'Such knowledge is a virtue,' returned the squire, 'for methinks some day there'll be occasion to make use of it;' and drawing forth the things he had named, the servant ate in good peace and fellowship with his lord. But as both were concerned about their lodging, the pair soon finished their dry and scanty meal and mounting hastened to reach cover ere night set in. The sun however and this hope failed them near some goatherd-huts, forcing them to shelter there. This compromise, bringing sorrow to Sancho, brought equal joy to his master, who felt that in sleeping under the open he performed an act of possession that helped establish his knighthood.

CHAPTER XI

Don Quijote with the goatherds

THE knight was cordially welcomed by the goatherds, and when Rocinante and the ass had been provided for as well as possible, Sancho ran down an odour that came from some salted goat boiling in a pot. He was instantly moved to taste and see if 'twere ready to be transferred to the stomach, but refrained, for his hosts now removed it from the fire. Spreading pieces of sheep-skin on the ground, they quickly prepared the rustic meal, giving a warm invitation to their guests to sup with them. Six of the goatherds squatted round the skins, having first with rough ceremony asked Don Quijote to be seated on an overturned trough. The invitation was accepted but the squire remained standing, the better to pass the horn-cup to his master, who, observing him not yet seated, said :

‘ That you may see, Sancho, the virtue inherent in knight-errantry and that they who perform therein it matters not what service are on the high road to be honoured and held in favour by the world, I desire, my son, that you be seated here by my side in the presence of this good company, that you be one with me, thy master and natural lord, eating from my plate and drinking from whatsoever I drink — for the same thing may be said of chivalry as of love, that it levels all things.’ ‘ Many thanks,’ replied the other, ‘ but I must tell your worship that provided it be enough I can eat as well and better on my feet by myself than seated on a level with an emperor. Indeed if the truth must be told, what I eat in my corner without fuss or feathers better agrees with me, though but bread and an onion, than turkey at tables where I am supposed to chew my food, drink in moderation, wipe my mouth every now and then, not sneeze or cough if I wish to, nor do other things that freedom and solitude permit. So these honours, which your lordship would

bestow upon me as servant and follower of knight-errantry, prithee convert them into things more useful and suitable, for, though I acknowledge them as well established, I renounce them from this time forth even to the end of the world.' 'Seated you must be none the less,' said his master, 'for him that humbleth himself, God exalteth;' and grasping the squire by the arm, he seated him next himself.

Little did the goatherds comprehend this gibberish about squires and errant-knights, so they ate in silence, looking blankly at their visitors, who with great elegance and pleasure were stowing away pieces as big as one's fist. The meat-course over, a number of brown shrivelled acorns were dropped on the skins, together with a half-cheese harder than cement. Nor did the horn lie idle all this hour but kept going the rounds, now full now empty like the bucket of a water-wheel, draining with no trouble one of the two wine-sacks hanging there. After our knight had satisfied his hunger, he reached for several of the acorns, and having gazed at them attentively for some time, he keyed his voice to the following :

'Happy the age and time that men of old termed golden — not that gold, so prized in this our iron age, could be had without toil, but because they that lived then knew not the words, thine and mine. All things were common in that blessed state. To gain a livelihood one needed but to raise his hand and pluck it from lusty oaks which generously invited him to their sweet and seasoned fruit. Crystal springs and running rivers gave him bountifully of their delicate transparent waters. In the fissures of rocks and hollows of trees the zealous and provident bees formed their republic, offering to every hand without interest the rich harvest of their honied toil. The stalwart cork-trees, in no other office than that of courtesy, shed their bark in strips ample and light, which men spread upon stakes to form houses, merely as protection against the sky's inclemency.

'All was peace then, all friendliness, all harmony. The heavy crooked ploughshare made not bold to open and expose the compassionate bowels of our first mother, who of her own sweet will offered over all her broad and fertile bosom whatever could

nourish, sustain and delight the children that then possessed her. So, too, the fair and simple shepherdesses wandered from vale to valley from upland to hill, with braided locks or flowing tresses and just enough costume to conceal what continence has always required. Nor were their ornaments like those worn now, set off by Tyrian purple and silk martyred in a thousand ways, but burdock-leaves and ivy interwoven, and in such it may be they walked with as much real dignity and composure as now strut our noble dames in all their rare exotic inventions of an idle thirst for novelty.

‘ In that age they expressed their love-conceits simply and naturally, as the heart felt them and with no artificial turn of words to set them off. Nor did fraud, malice or falsehood mingle with truth and sincerity. Justice maintained herself in her proper bounds, nor did they venture, from favour or interest, to warp or offend her, as they threaten, deform and persecute her now-a-days. Unwritten law, that rests merely on the say-so of the judge, was unknown, since there existed neither malefactor nor magistrate. As I have said, maidens and modesty went hand in hand, alone and single, without fear of ravishment, and their undoing, if it came, was of their own free will. In our own contemptible times no maid, though hid in a Cretan labyrinth, is secure, for even there, through crannies or the air, the lust-epidemic enters in its cursed zeal and in spite of her seclusion works her ruin. For her protection, as time went on and maliciousness increased, was instituted the order of errant arms, for the defence of damsels, the relief of widows and the guardianship of orphans and the oppressed. Of this order am I, brother goatherds, to whom I am indebted for this pleasant welcome and reception. By the law of nature all persons are in duty bound to favour errants, but since you received and regaled me without knowing I was one, ’tis fitting that with the best possible goodwill I thank you for yours.’

Though it might well have been excused, our knight delivered this long harangue, simply because the acorns chanced to mind him of the golden age. Moreover ’twas a pleasure to him to hold forth thus idly to these goatherds, who listened in silence and

open-mouthed suspense. The squire too was silent, eating his acorns and paying frequent visits to the other wine-sack that hung from a cork-tree to cool. The knight had been longer in speaking than he now was in finishing his repast, at the end whereof one of the goatherds said to him : ‘ That your worship, sir knight-errant, can say with more truth that we entertained you with a right good-will, we would give you solace and pleasure by asking a companion of ours that will soon be here to sing for us, for he’s a lad of understanding and head-over-heels in love, can read moreover and write, and plays the rebeck to perfection. ’

Scarce had the goatherd spoken, when the sound of that instrument reached their ears, and soon appeared its player, a good-looking lad of about two-and-twenty. His friends asked had he eaten and on his answering yes, he that first suggested it said : ‘ In that case, Antonio, you can give us pleasure by a little singing, that this gentleman our guest may know there is music even among mountains and woods. We have told him of your skill and are anxious for you to show we told the truth. As you live, prithee be seated and sing the song the curate your uncle composed for you, for it has been most favourably received in the town. ’ ‘ Very well, ’ said the lad and without further entreaty, sitting him down on a felled oak’s trunk, presently, after tuning his instrument, with excellent grace began the lay.

When he had done, our knight wished him to sing more, but Sancho Panza wouldn’t hear of it : he was more for sleeping than hearing ditties and said to his master : ‘ Your worship would do better to retire at once, for these good men’s work during the day doesn’t permit them to pass the night in song. ’ ‘ I understand you perfectly, Sancho ; ’tis evident wine-sack visits ask larger recompense from sleep than from music. ’ ‘ ’Tis pleasant to us all, God be praised, ’ apologised the servant. ‘ I don’t deny it ; accommodate yourself where you wish ; those of my profession appear better awake than asleep. But before you go, my son, attend to mine ear, for it pains me unnecessarily. ’ Sancho was about to obey when one of the goatherds, seeing the

cut, told him not to trouble, for himself would apply a remedy that would soon heal it. Taking some rosemary leaves, which grew there in plenty; he chewed them and with a little salt applied them to the ear, bandaging it tightly, assuring Don Quijote that he needed no other medicine; and so it proved.

CHAPTER XII

What one of the goatherds related to Don Quijote and the others

At this point arrived another of the lads that brought the goatherds food from the village, saying: 'Comrades, do you know the village-news?' 'How should we?' one of them replied. 'Well then, the famous student-shepherd Chrysostom died this morning and rumour goes 'twas from love of ~~of that~~ possessed girl of a ~~Marcela~~, the rich Guillermo's daughter, she that wanders through these solitudes in the garb of a shepherdess.' 'Marcela?' exclaimed one. 'The same, and the best of it is that the fellow in his will asks that they bury him out in the country, as if he were a Moor, at the foot of the cliff beside the cork-tree spring; they say 'twas there he first saw her. Other requests he made as well which the clergy of the town declare should not and must not be complied with, since they savour of paganism. His great friend the student Ambrosio, who played the shepherd with him, answers to all this that everything must be done according to Chrysostom's desires. The village is all astir over the matter, but it is said that in the end Ambrosio and his shepherd-friend's wishes will be fulfilled, and that in the morning they will come and bury him with great ceremony. Methinks 'twill be worth seeing — I at least intend to be there even though I can't get back to the village to-morrow night.'

'We shall all go,' said the others, 'for we can cast lots to see who'll stay with the goats.' 'You say well, Pedro,' spoke up another, 'but it won't be necessary to cast lots, since I shall remain for you all. Don't consider this kindness on my part or

lack of curiosity ; the fact is that the splinter I ran into my foot the other day won't let me walk.' 'None the less you have our thanks,' replied Pedro. Don Quijote asked the last speaker who the dead shepherd and who the shepherdess were. Pedro replied that the youth was a rich hildago, a citizen of one of the mountain villages, who had studied several years at Salamanca, returning with the reputation of being a most wise and learned man. 'They say he chiefly was expert in the science of the stars and of what the sun and moon do up there in the sky, foretelling their elipses.' 'The obscurations of these larger luminaries,' interrupted their guest, 'are spoken of as eclipses, not elipses.' But Pedro paid no attention to trifles, noving right on with his tale :

'This student could also foretell whether the year were to be fruitful or storil.' 'Sterile you mean to say, my friend.' 'Sterile or storil, 'tis the same in the end. I was about to tell that his father and friends, following his counsel, grew very rich, for he would say to them : This year sow barley, not wheat ; or, You mustn't sow barley this year but pulse ; next year will see a good olive-crop but not a drop of oil will be had the three following.' 'This science is called astrology,' suggested Don Quijote. 'I don't know its name,' Pedro went on, 'but I know he knew all that and more. Well, he hadn't been back many months from Salamanca when one day he appeared in the habit of a shepherd with crook and skins, having thrown off the heavy flowing scholar's gown. And with him appeared, also as shepherd, his great friend Ambrosio, a former companion in his studies. I forgot to mention that Chrysostom was a great hand at writing verses, so much so that he wrote the Christmas carols and the Corpus Christi plays, which the village-people acted and everyone admired. When the villagers saw the two scholars thus suddenly decked out, they were amazed and couldn't guess what had caused this extraordinary transformation. In the meantime the father of Chrysostom had died, leaving him heir to a large estate in buildings, land, chattels, a goodly number of live-stock large and small, together with plenty of money, of all which he remained the dissolute owner. Indeed he deserved it, for he was an excellent comrade, affectionate, a friend to all good people

and his face was like a benediction. In time it came to be understood that the sole reason for his change of garb was that he might wander through these desolate regions in the wake of the shepherdess Marcela (just mentioned by this lad) with whom he was in love.

‘ I now must tell you about this young woman and ’tis well you should know, for perhaps you’ll not hear of such a case in all the days of your life though you live to be older than sarna (the itch). ’ ‘ Say Sarah, ’ offered our knight, who couldn’t bear his murdering of words. ‘ The itch lives long enough, ’ rejoined Pedro, ‘ and, sir, if you go on correcting me at every step, we haven’t have done in a twelvemonth. ’ ‘ Forgive me, friend ; I spoke because of the great difference ’twixt Sarah and the itch. But you are right, for the itch lives the longer. Proceed with your story and I promise not to interrupt again. ’ ‘ I was about to say, my dear sir, that in our village dwelt a farmer even richer than Chrisostom’s father, one Guillermo, to whom in addition to his great wealth God gave a daughter. The mother, who died at her birth, was the most esteemed woman in these parts. I seem to see her now with a face that on one side had the sun and on the other the moon. She was diligent above all and a friend to the poor, so I am certain her soul is enjoying God in the other world. Her husband, Guillermo, from grief at the loss of such a wife, died soon after, leaving his daughter Marcela, rich and very young, in the protection of an uncle, a priest of our village.

‘ The girl grew in such beauty as to remind us of her mother, or though the latter’s charm had been extreme, ’twas thought it would be surpassed by her daughter’s. When she reached the age of fourteen or fifteen, none saw her but blessed God that had made her so fair ; and most were left irretrievably in love. Her uncle kept her in close seclusion but the fame of her great beauty so spread, that for it as well as for her large fortune men not alone of our village but for many leagues around, and the best of them, prayed, importuned, begged the uncle for her hand. But being a Christian to the back-bone, albeit he wished her to marry, now she was of age, he wouldn’t have her do so against her will, and in this had no eye to the income afforded him by

the girl's estate while she remained single. By my faith this was conceded in more than one gossiping village-group to the praise of the good man, for I want you to realise, sir errant, that in these dull places naught escapes being talked about and censured, and rest assured as I am that he must be an uncommonly good priest whose parish, especially in the country, speak well of him.' 'True,' assented his listener, 'but continue, for the story is excellent, and you, my good Pedro, tell it with rare grace.'

'May that of our Lord not fail me, for his is the grace that counts. Well then, you must be told that the uncle represented these things to his niece, telling her the particular qualities of each suitor and urging that she make her choice and marry. But always the girl answered that she had no inclination and being young didn't feel capable of undertaking the burden of matrimony. In view of these apparently reasonable excuses the uncle desisted from urging, trusting that as she grew older she would choose to her taste. He said, and said well, that parents shouldn't marry their children against their will. But one day, lo and behold, when least we expected, the dainty Marcela makes her appearance as a shepherdess, and despite her uncle and townspeople that did their best to dissuade her, she takes to the fields with other village-maidens to tend her flock. And as she moved among folk and her beauty became manifest, it naturally fell out that numberless rich young men, country-gentlemen and peasants, put on the garb of Chrysostom and went a-wooing her through these fields. Among them, as has been said, was our lamented friend, of whom 'tis rumoured that he had ceased to love and now truly adored her.

'But do not think that in choosing this freedom and independence and a life of little or no restraint Marcela permits the faintest suspicion to arise that might result to the disparagement of her reputation and virtue. Rather, the vigilance wherewith she looks to her honour is so continuous, that of the many who court and solicit her not one has boasted or can boast that she has given him the slightest hope of attaining his end. Though she doesn't eschew the company and conversation of the shepherds, whom she treats with courtesy and even friendliness, the moment

ne of them discovers his purpose, though it be the pure and only one of matrimony, he's shot as from a catapult. With this conduct of hers she does more harm in the country hereabouts than the plague, for her kindness and beauty cause all hearts to love and court her, while her disdain and open censure drive them in the end to despair, and they know not what to say to her, unless to cry her cruel and ingrate and similar epithets to characterise her nature. Were you here in the daytime, sir, you'd hear these mountains and valleys resound with the laments of the rejected suitors of Marcela.

'Not far hence are grouped some two dozen beech-trees and on the soft bark of every tree is inscribed this maiden's name. Above some is carved a crown, as if the lover would declare that Marcela possessed and deserved the crown of human beauty. Here a shepherd is sighing, there one is lamenting, yonder may be heard love-ditties and hard by dirges of despair. This one sits the whole night through at the foot of oak or cliff and without once closing his tearful eyes, lost and transported in his thoughts, is found by the morning sun. Another, giving no espite to his complaints, stretched on the burning sand in the heat of the most oppressive summer noontide, sends forth his appeal to the compassionate heavens. And over this one, over that, over all, the fair Marcela holds free and careless sway. All are wondering how her pride will end : who will be fortunate enough to tame a nature so terrible and enjoy beauty so rare.

'All that I tell being true, I can easily believe that what our bad reports concerning the death of Chrysostom is the same, and I advise you, sir, to be present at his burial. 'Twill be worth seeing, for Chrysostom had many friends and the spot isn't half a league distant.' 'I have in mind to do so,' answered Don Quijote, 'and I thank you for the pleasure your recital of so lively a tale has afforded.' 'As for that I don't know half the things that have overtaken Marcela's lovers, but very likely we shall fall in with some shepherd on the road that can tell us. For the present 'twill be well that you turn in, for the night, sir, might aggravate your wound, though the dressing that was applied is of such virtue that no return of the pain need be

feared.' Sancho Panza, who some time back had given the goatherd's long tale to the devil, also solicited on his part that his master enter and sleep in Pedro's hut. This Don Quijote did and spent the rest of the night in recollections of his Dulcinea, imitating the lovers of Marcela. His henchman settled himself 'twixt Rocinante and the ass and slept, not like a rejected suitor, but like a man kicked to death.

CHAPTER XIII

A continuation of the shepherdess Marcela story and other occurrences

THE first streaks of dawn could just be seen through the balconies of the east when five of the six goatherds arose and came to waken Don Quijote, saying they were ready to bear him company did he still wish to witness the much-talked-of burial of Chrysostom. The knight, who wished for nothing but that, arose and bade his squire saddle and pannel at once, which the latter did with diligence and all set off. They hadn't gone a quarter-league when down a path they saw approaching six shepherds clad in black skins, crowned with garlands of cypress and the bitter bay and each bearing a stout branch of holly. Two mounted gentlemen, well-equipped for travel, and three foot-servants accompanied them. On meeting, each parted courteously greeted and enquired the destination of the other, and finding all were on their way to the burial place, they rode on together. One of the gentlemen addressing his companion said : ' Apparently, Señor Vivaldo, we do well to wait and witness this remarkable ceremony. It can't fail to be worth seeing according to the reports these shepherds give not only of their dead friend but of the fatal Marcela.' ' I agree with you,' replied Vivaldo, ' and I should delay not one day but four if necessary.'

Don Quijote asked what had they heard anent Marcela and Chrysostom and one of the travellers replied that they had fallen

in with these shepherds early that morning, and seeing them in their sad garb, enquired the reason. They then were told of the eccentricity and beauty of Marcela, the loves of the many that sought her, together with the death of Chrysostom, to whose burial they now were going. In short they were told all that Pedro had related to Don Quijote. This topic ended, another was begun by the horseman Vivaldo who enquired of our adventurer the reason that impelled him to ride armed through such a peaceful country. To this Don Quijote responded : ' The exercise of my profession doesn't permit or allow me to go otherwise. A life of ease, pleasure and repose began of old for delicate courtiers, but toil, unrest and arms originated solely for them whom the world calls knights-errant, of whom I, though unworthy, am the least. '

No sooner did the company hear this than they set down the speaker as mad, but to make sure thereof and in what direction, Vivaldo asked him what he meant by knights-errant. ' Have your worships not read the annals and histories of England wherein are recorded the famous deeds of King Arthur, whom we in Castilian call King Artus, concerning whom there's an old and common tradition throughout his kingdom that he did not die but was by necromancy transformed into a raven, and that he will return in time and recover his rule and sceptre ? And it cannot be proved that from that day to this any Englishman has killed a raven. Now in the reign of this good king was instituted the famous order of chivalry known as the Knights of the Round Table. At this time too occurred the love 'twixt Lancelot of the Lake and Queen Guinevere, precisely as is written in these books, with the trusted dame Quintañona as their confidante and go-between. Hence arose the familiar ballad so much prized in our Spain, beginning :

By dames so well watched o'er
A knight was never seen
As, since the Breton shore
He left, has Lancelot been ;

continuing with the sweet kindly story of his deeds in love and war.

‘ This order of knighthood, handed down from that time, spread abroad through many parts of the world. The valiant Amadis of Gaul, his sons and grand-sons to the fifth generation, belonged thereto and became renowned for their deeds ; likewise the bold Felixmarte of Hyrcania, the never-adequately praised Tirante the white and he whom almost we have seen in our own days, yea, heard and spoken to, that fearless and invincible knight, Don Belianis of Greece. This it is, sirs, to be knight-errant, and such is the order of chivalry which I, though a sinner, have made my calling. What those cavaliers professed, I profess, and wonder through these wastes and solitudes in search of adventures, whereof in the most perilous that chance may afford with my whole soul I am determined to offer mine arm and person in behalf of the weak and needy. ’

From this discourse of their companion the travellers were now fully convinced he was mad and of the kind of madness that swayed him, and the knowledge produced the same astonishment in them as in everyone on first discovery. Vivaldo, a shrewd and playful person, wished to give him opportunity to continue his rhapsodies, that they might beguile the short remaining distance, so he said to our knight : ‘ It strikes me, sir errant, that your worship has chosen one of the most austere professions in the world ; methinks that of the Carthusian monks is not so strict. ’ ‘ It may be equally rigid, ’ returned the other, ‘ but as necessary to mankind I am but an inch from doubting, for in truth the soldier executing his captain’s order achieves no less than the captain giving the order. My meaning is that ecclesiastics in all peace and comfort seek of Heaven the welfare of the earth, but we soldiers and knights bring to pass what they but pray for, defending the world with might of arm and edge of sword ; not under shelter but exposed to the open sky, a target to the insufferable rays of the summer sun and the chilling winter frosts. Thus are we the servants of God — the arms whereby He brings his justice to pass on the earth. ’

‘ But inasmuch as war and the things pertaining thereto cannot be carried on without extreme sweat and toil and travail, its followers unquestionably work harder than they that in quiet

ease and repose beseech God to succour the unfortunate. 'I don't for a moment say nor does it come to my mind that the actual condition of the errant knight is as enviable as that of the cloistered priest; mine only inference from what I myself have suffered is that 'tis certainly more laborious and rib-roasted, more hungry and thirsty, more miserable and in rags, and more subject to lice. For the knights before me certainly experienced rough-and-tumble times, and if some through valour of arm came to be emperors, in faith it cost them dear in sweat and blood, and had no wizard or warlock helped them to their high places, they'd have been defrauded of their desires and utterly deceived in their hopes.'

'So it always seemed to me,' broke in the traveller; 'and another thing to which I take exception in knights-errant is that when about to engage in some grand and perilous adventure, wherein is evident danger of losing life, at the moment of onset they never think to commend their souls to God as is the bounden duty of every Christian at such times. Instead they commend themselves to their lady-loves with as fervent will and devotion as if they were their gods — conduct that to my mind savours of paganism.' 'This could on no account be different, sir,' explained Don Quijote; 'ill would fare the knight that did otherwise. It has ever been an observed custom of our order that everyone of us, undertaking some great feat of arms, must turn his eyes softly and lovingly toward his lady, should he find her before him, as if beseeching her help and favour in the impending crisis. And where no such fair one is at hand, none the less he is supposed to say something between his teeth by way of entrusting his whole heart to her. We have countless such instances in the histories. But not for this is it to be understood that they may omit the committal of their souls to God, for which there will be ample time and occasion in the course of the adventure.'

'One scruple yet remains,' replied the traveller; 'I have often read how words pass 'twixt two errants, with the result that both become incensed, turn their steeds about, get some distance between them and then without more ado rush against

each other at full tilt, in the midst of the onset commending themselves to their lady-loves. Now in the shock it commonly befalls that one of the knights turns a somersault over his horse's crupper, passed clear through by the lance of his adversary, who likewise would have come to the ground had he not held on by his horse's mane. My doubt is as to how the dead knight found time to commune with God when all occurred so suddenly. Better had he devoted the words wasted on his lady to his duty and obligation as a Christian, especially since not all knights-errant, in my opinion, have ladies to whom to commend themselves, for not all are enamoured.' 'Impossible,' protested the champion; 'no knight-errant can be without lady fair: 'tis as natural for them to love as for the sky to have stars. Most certainly no history was ever seen that told of a knight-errant devoid of the tender passion, for the simple reason that should one be discovered, 'twould be held he wasn't an out-and-out errant but a bastard — that he entered the fortress of said chivalry not by the gate but over the wall like a footpad and robber.' 'All may be true,' said the traveller, 'yet, if my memory serve me, I once read that Don Galaor, brother of the valiant Amadis, had no special lady to whom to commend himself, yet was held in no less esteem — was, in fact, a most bold and renowned cavalier.'

To this Don Quijote replied: 'One swallow doesn't make a summer; the more that this knight, as I happen to know, was secretly very much in love. His natural tendency and a thing beyond his control was to desire every woman he deemed fair. It is equally certain however that there was but one he made mistress of his will; to her he commended himself often enough, though in secret, for he prided himself on his furtiveness.' 'If it's essential, then, that every knight-errant be in love,' pursued the traveller, 'it's fair to presume that your worship is, being of that profession. And if you don't pride yourself on being as furtive as Don Galaor, I earnestly request that for the sake of this company and for mine own you tell us the name, country, rank and appearance of your lady, who will count herself fortunate that all the world knows she is loved and served by such a knight as your worship appears.'

Upon this the other gave a deep sigh and said : ‘ I cannot tell whether or no my sweet enemy would relish that the world should know I serve her, but in reply to your most courteous inquiry let me say that her name is Dulcinea, her native district el Toboso, a La Manchán village, her station at least that of princess, since she is my mistress and queen, and her appearance above that of woman, for in her are realised all the extravagant impossible attributes bestowed by poets upon their fair ones. Her tresses are of gold, like the Elysian fields her forehead, her eyebrows like the arcs of heaven, suns are her eyes, her cheeks roses, coral her lips, pearls are her teeth, her neck alabaster and her bosom marble. Her hands are as of ivory and her fairness is like the whiteness of the snow. The parts wích modesty veils from human eyes are such, so I give myself to understand, that shrewd conjecture may praise but not compare. ’

‘ Her race, lineage and descent we would know as well, ’ said Vivaldo. And to this Don Quijote replied : ‘ She is not descended from the ancient Curtii, Gaii or Scipios of ancient Rome, nor from the more modern Colonnas or Orsini, nor from the Moncadas or Requesenes of Catalonia ; nor yet does she trace her descent from the Rebellas, or Villanovas of Valencia, the Palafoxes, Nuzas, Rocabertis, Corellas, Lunas, Alagones, Urreas, Foces or Guerreas of Aragon ; nor is my love of the line of the Cerdas, Manriques, Mendozas or Guzmans of Castile, nor of the Alencastres, Pallás or Meneses of Portugal ; nay — but of those of el Toboso of La Mancha, a line so modern that it can give an honourable ancestry to the most illustrious houses of the future. And let none dispute me in this, save on the terms that Zerbino placed at the foot of Roland’s arms :

Let none these arms remove
That cannot his deserts with Roland prove. ’

‘ Though my family is the Cachopines of Laredo, ’ returned the traveller, ‘ I shouldn’t venture to compare it with that of el Toboso of La Mancha, though to tell the truth this is the first time the name has reached mine ears. ’ ‘ Extraordinary, ’ was all our knight could say. The rest of the party listened to this

dialogue with eager attention and by it even the goatherds and shepherds perceived our knight's delusion. Sancho alone thought true what his master said, having known him from birth. The wonderful Dulcinea del Toboso was the only thing he doubted, for such a name and princess had never come to his notice, though her village lay so near his own.

The two were still conversing when in a gap ahead between two high cliffs they saw some twenty shepherds, clad in skins of black wool and crowned with garlands some of cypress, some of yew. Six carried a litter covered with a great variety of leaves and flowers, and on seeing this one of our goatherds said : ' They carry the body of Chrysostom and the base of that mount is where he asked to be buried. ' Accordingly they hastened and arrived soon after the others had laid the stretcher down, while four with sharp picks were already digging the grave close to a hard rock. Each party courteously saluted the other and Don Quijote and his fellow-travellers straightway moved toward the litter. They beheld the body of a youth, apparently of some thirty years, covered with flowers and clad like a shepherd. Even in death it showed that when alive he had possessed a lovely countenance and pleasing bearing. Round about him lay a few books and many papers, some loose, some tied together.

Not only the spectators of this scene but the diggers of the grave were perfectly silent ; till one of the bearers said to another : ' Are you sure this is the spot Chrysostom meant, Ambrosio ; you wished his request in the will satisfied to the letter ? ' ' I am sure, for oft in this very place my friend rehearsed to me the story of his misfortunes. 'Twas here he first saw that fatal enemy of the human race ; 'twas here too he first told her of his love, pure as it was deep ; and here Marcela finally rebuked and disdained him, putting an end to the tragedy of his wretched existence. In testimony of these many miseries he desired to be buried here in the depths of oblivion. ' Then turning to Don Quijote and the travellers Ambrosio continued : ' This body, sirs, whereat you gaze with pitying eyes, was the dwelling-place of a soul in whom Heaven lodged a great proportion of her riches. This is the body of Chrysostom, a youth of rare fancy, of

unique courtesy, of extreme delicacy ; a phoenix in friendship, liberal beyond measure, serious without pride, jocund without vulgarity ; the first in all that is good and without second in all that is unfortunate. He loved devotedly, was hated in return ; he adored but was disdained ; courted a wild beast, solicited a statue, pursued the wind, spake to the wilderness, served ingratitude and as reward became death's spoil in the prime of life, murdered by a shepherdess whom he would immortalise, as these papers could reveal had he not ordered them to be given to the flames as soon as his body had been given to the earth. '

' You'll be showing greater severity toward them than did their owner,' protested Vivaldo ; ' 'tis wicked to comply with a request that's beyond all reason. Augustus Cæsar certainly would have sinned had he permitted the divine Mantuan's wish to be effected, and with his example before you, though you bury your friend's body in the earth, give not his writings to oblivion. If he in a fit of spleen so bade, 'tis not for you in a moment of folly to obey. Preserve the papers that the tale of Marcela's heartlessness may live for ever that others may thus escape falling over the same precipice. I and my companions know the story of your loving and despairing friend ; we know too of the fellowship between you, the occasion of his death and his final prayer. 'Tis easy to gather how great has been Marcela's cruelty, Chrysostom's devotion, your loyalty and the end that's in store for all that ride recklessly along the path of immoderate love. Last evening we were told of Chrysostom's death and burial here, and from curiosity and compassion we turned aside to see what we had heard with so much regret. In return for this our sorrow and our desire to lessen yours if we may, we ask you, most sensible Ambrosio, at least for myself I beg of you, to hand me some of these writings and that you on no account burn them. '

Without waiting for reply Vivaldo reached down and picked up some of the papers lying nearest him ; observing which Ambrosio said : ' Out of courtesy, sir, I grant your desire so far as it relates to the manuscript already in your hand. But 'tis vain to think I shall not burn the rest. ' Vivaldo, eagerly opening out one of the papers, said its title was *A Lay of Despair*. Upon

this Ambrosio observed : ‘ ’Tis the last piece the poor fellow wrote. That you may see, sir, the pass to which his misfortunes brought him, read it aloud ; you’ll have time while they dig the grave.’ ‘ I shall be only too glad to comply,’ said the other ; and as all present desired to hear it, they gathered about him and Vivaldo in a clear voice read the lay.

CHAPTER XIV

Unexpected occurrences following on the despairing verses of the dead shepherd

THOSE that heard Chrysostom’s lay approved it, but its reader thought it fitted ill with what he heard of the purity and goodness of Marcela, since in the verses Chrysostom complained of jealousy, suspicion and neglect, all to the prejudice of the girl’s good name and honour. To this answered Ambrosio, as one that knew well his friend’s most secret thought : ‘ To free yourself of this uncertainty, sir, you must realise that when the poor fellow wrote the poem he was absent from Marcela, from whom he banished himself to see whether or no separation would affect him as it has others. But inasmuch as there’s naught that doesn’t distress an absent lover and no fear that doesn’t haunt him, so Chrysostom was as much beside himself with suspicions and imaginary causes of jealousy as though they had been real. This however doesn’t lessen the truth of what is said of the virtue of the girl, in whom envy itself cannot and should not find fault, save that she is cruel, a little arrogant and more than a little contemptuous toward lovers.’ ‘ You have spoken well,’ acknowledged Vivaldo.

The latter was about to read another paper he had saved, when he was prevented by the appearance of a marvellous vision (for so it seemed) that presented itself above them. Upon the large rock where the grave was being dug came into view the shepherdess Marcela, beautiful beyond all they had heard. Those that had never seen her gazed at her speechless, nor were the

others less astounded. Scarce had Ambrosio realised her presence when he said with manifest indignation : ‘ O relentless basilisk of these moutains, you are here perchance to see if the wounds of this poor creature, slain by your heartlessness, will bleed afresh at your coming. Is it that or do you wish to glory in your cruel deeds and look down from on high upon the burning of your enkindled Rome, like another pitiless Nero ? Belike you would haughtily trample under foot this ill-used body, as Tarquin’s daughter did his ? At once tell us your mission and pleasure, for knowing as I do that Chrysostom’s thoughts never failed you in his life, I shall see that all his friends obey you now that he is dead.’

‘ I come not, Ambrosio, for any of the purposes you have named. Rather I come in mine own defence, to show how unreasonable are they that blame me for their trials and Chrysostom’s death. I beseech you all to give ear, for little time and few words will win men of understanding to the truth. Heaven made me fair you say and so fair that in spite of yourselves my beauty moves you to love me, and you insist that I in return am bound to love you. With the perception given me of God I realise that all beauty is lovable, but I do not feel that because it is loved it must of necessity love in return, especially as it might well be that the lover of beauty was himself ugly, and since ugliness is displeasing, how idle would it sound to say : ‘ I love you for your beauty : you must love me though ugly.’

‘ If on the other hand the man and woman were equally comely, it doesn’t follow that they should equally love, since certain kinds of beauty do not excite the affections but merely gratify the eye. Indeed if all beauties inspired love, one wouldn’t know where to rest ; but even as lovely things are without number, so is there infinite variety in tastes. Moreover have I heard say that true love is single-minded and acts of its own free will, and if this be true, as I think it is, why wish my affections to be forced ? is it merely because you love me deeply ? Tell me, had Heaven made me ugly instead, would I be right in complaining that you loved me not ? Furthermore you must consider that I didn’t choose my beauty, but Heaven of its

bounty bestowed it unsought upon me, and even as the serpent is not to be rated for its poison, though he kill with it, since it's a gift of nature, so should I not be censured, being fair. Beauty in a good woman is like a distant flame or sharp sword : it neither burns nor cuts those that stand apart. Honour and virtue are not only adornments of the soul, but without them the body too, though it appear beautiful, shouldn't be esteemed so. And if purity is one of the virtues that most adorn both body and soul, why should she that is loved for beauty, sacrifice her purity by yielding to the wish of one that simply for his selfish pleasure seeks with all means at his command that she do so ?

‘ Free was I born, and that I might continue so to live, I chose the solitude of the fields. The mountain-trees are my companions, the clear waters of these brooks my mirror, to the trees and the brooks I communicate my thoughts and my beauty. I am a fire removed and a sword afar off. Those in whom I have aroused passion by my countenance, I have disdained by my word. If desire feeds on hopes, none have I given Chrysostom or another, and if any have died therefrom, his own obstinacy, be it said, and not my cruelty, killed him. But if it be charged against me that his purpose was honourable and that therefore I should have yielded, I can only say that when first on this spot where now they dig his grave he made known the seriousness of his intent, I told him that mine held to live singly all my life and that only our mother-earth should enjoy the fruitage of my chastity and my beauty's spoils. If on top of all this plain-speaking he hoped against hope and tried to sail against the wind, what wonder if he perished in the maelstrom of his own recklessness ?

‘ Had I encouraged Chrysostom, I had been false ; had I gratified him, 'twould have been against my better instinct and intent. Though refused he persisted, not hated he despaired. Consider now if I am to blame that he suffered. Let him that has been deceived complain, let him despair whom promised hopes have failed. Let him take courage whom I shall invite and let him whom I admit rejoice. But let him not cry me cruel and

fatal whom I neither promise nor deceive, neither invite nor admit to my company. Heaven has not yet ordained mine a fated love and 'tis vain to think I shall love from choice.

‘ Let this serve inclusively for all that for their several advantages importune me. Henceforth let it be understood that if any die for me, 'twas not from jealousy, and frankness should never be interpreted as rebuke. He that calls me wild-beast, and basilisk, let him quit me as a wicked, baleful being ; he that calls me ungrateful, let him not serve me ; or hateful, let him not know me ; or cruel, follow me. For this wild-beast, this basilisk, this cruel and hateful ingrate, will not seek, serve, know or follow them, they may rest assured. If his impatience and unbridled passion caused Chrysostom's death, what blame can be attached to mine open conduct and withdrawal ? If I preserve my purity in the company of trees, why does he that would have me preserve it among men exert himself that I may lose it ? I, as you know, have riches and covet no man's. I delight in freedom and would not subject myself. I neither love nor hate. Neither do I deceive this man and solicit that, nor scoff at one and favour another. Natural companionship with these village-maidens and the care of my goats engage me. My wishes are bounded by these mountains, and if they soar beyond, 'tis but to contemplate the beauty of the sky — steps whereby the soul journeys to its first abode. ’

With this and without waiting for reply Marcela turned and disappeared into the depths of the neighbouring wood, leaving them all as struck with admiration for her understanding as for her beauty. Some of the shepherds, wounded by the keen arrows of light from her beautiful eyes, made as if to follow, ignoring her plain prohibition. When Don Quijote observed this, thinking his chivalry as champion of maidens would be well employed, he clapped hand to sword-hilt and said in loud and unmistakable tones : ‘ Let none of whatever condition or estate dare follow the fair Marcela on pain of falling under my wrath. She made clear to you the little or no blame attaching to her for Chrysostom's death and how far she is from yielding to the desires of any lover. Instead of being followed and persecuted, she

should be prized and respected by all good people of this world, for she alone therein purposes to live with these pure desires.'

Owing either to these threats or to Ambrosio's saying they should first finish their duty to their good friend, not a shepherd moved or left the spot till the grave was dug, the papers burned and the body lowered to its resting-place amidst the tears of all. They covered the grave with a huge boulder till such time as a slab could be made whereon Ambrosio purposed to have cut the following :

Beneath this sod has lain
A lover's body cold —
A shepherd of the fold
That died through love's disdain.

Who killed the luckless swain ?
A maiden fair but rude,
By whose ingratitude
Love amplifies his reign.

They then strewed many leaves and flowers, and expressing their last sympathy to Ambrosio, the company dispersed. Don Quijote took leave of his hosts and the travellers, who sought his company to Seville as a city rich in adventures, where every street and corner offered more than any place he could find. The knight thanked them for their good-will but he couldn't and wouldn't go till he had rid these mountains of banditti, in whom report said they abounded. Seeing his good and firm intent the travellers didn't press further and taking leave anew continued on their journey ; during which was no lack of matter for discussion regarding both Marcela and Chrysostom and the frenzy of the knight. He on his part decided to seek out the shepherdess and offer his services. But it fell out other than was expected, as is related in the course of this faithful narrative.

CHAPTER XV

The calamity that overtook our knight in connection
with certain heartless Yanguesans

THE sage Cid Hamet Benengeli relates that after Don Quijote took leave of his hosts and the rest of the company at Chrysostom's burial, he and squire entered the wood into which the shepherdess Marcela had disappeared. After wandering for more than two hours in vain search, they came out upon a grassy green meadow bordered by a cool and pleasant stream, so that they could not but pass there the siesta, already very warm. They dismounted, and letting the ass and Rocinante feed at large on the abundant pasturage, themselves plundered the saddlebags, and waiving ceremony ate of their contents in good peace and fellowship. Sancho had not taken the trouble to fetter Rocinante, thinking him so gentle and dispassionate that not all the mares of the Cordovan mead could lead him astray. But fate and the devil, who doesn't always sleep, ordained that a number of Galician ponies, the property of Yanguesan carriers, should be feeding in that same pasture, it being the fashion of such gentlemen to pass the siesta with their teams in watered grassy places such as this. Now Rocinante took it into his head to disport himself with these lady-ponies, and having once scented them, departing from his usual procedure, went at very brisk trot and without his master's leave to tell them of his pleasure.

The ponies however apparently preferred feeding to aught else and received their caller with heels and teeth so forcefully that they soon had broken his girth and clean rid him of his saddle. But what must have still more displeased him was that the carriers, seeing the violence offered their thoroughbreds, hastened to the spot with loading-sticks and gave him such a rib-roasting as to level him, considerably damaged, with the ground. The knight and squire, witnessing this punishment, came running up out of

breath, the one saying to the other : ' Methinks, friend Sancho, that these are not knights but a low-lived worthless rabble, and you therefore may lawfully aid me in wreaking deserved vengeance for the insult offered my steed before my very eyes.' ' What devils of vengeance have we to wreak,' gasped the other, ' when they are more than twenty and we but two, or maybe one and a half?' ' I am a hundred,' cried his master, who without more ado now clapped hand to sword and charged the mob, followed by his squire, whom his example incited.

With his first sword-cut Don Quijote opened the leathern jacket of one of the Yanguesans, together with a good bit of his shoulder, but his friends, seeing themselves abused by two only and they so many, grasped their stakes, surrounded the pair and began to baste them with most determined fury. The result was that their second blow felled squire and master together, for the latter's skill and courage proved but vain, and he lay at the feet of his good steed, who had not yet risen. From this may be gauged the pounding force of stakes when wielded by rustic and wrathful hands.

Seeing the mischief they had wrought, the carriers with all possible speed loaded their ponies and went their way, leaving the two adventurers a sad sight and in sorrier mood. The first to show his displeasure was Sancho, who, on discovering his master hard by, called in weak, pitiful accents : ' Señor Don Quijote, ah, Señor Don Quijote !' ' What do you want, brother Sancho?' came from the other in the same feeble aggrieved tone. ' If possible, I would your worship gave me two gulps of that Feo (ugly) Blas' balsam, if you have some handy. It may be good for broken bones as for wounds.' ' Ah, had I but that here, what more should we need, ill-fated that I am ! But I swear to you, Sancho Panza, on the faith of a knight-errant, that, provided fortune do not order otherwise, I'll possess that treasure (or my hand has lost its cunning) ere two days are passed.'

' And how many do you think 'twill be ere we can move our feet?' ' I for myself cannot guess,' replied the cudgelled knight; ' but the blame for this is mine, since I shouldn't have fought with men not dubbed as I. Verily I believe that as penalty for

this trespass the God of battles allowed our chastisement. Wherefore, brother, 'twere well that you be warned of what I am about to tell, for it deeply concerns the welfare of both. It is that when you see such riff-raff working us harm, don't wait till I draw sword against them, for I shall refrain. But do you draw yours and lay on to your heart's content. Should knights come to their aid and protection, I shall be ready to oppose them and defend you with all my power ; and you've had a thousand proofs of how far the might of my strong arm availeth ; ' so inflated had the poor gentleman become through his triumph over the gallant Biscayan.

This suggestion didn't strike Sancho favourably enough to let it pass without saying : ' Señor, I am law-abiding, gentle and a lover of ease, and I can overlook any injury whatsoever, for I have a wife and children to feed and raise. In return let this be my suggestion (it cannot be a command) that on no account shall I draw sword against countryman or cavalier : before God I henceforth forgive all scath that has been or shall be done me, whether he that has done, does now or shall do it be high or low, rich or poor, noble or commoner, no rank or condition excepted. ' To which his master replied : ' I would I had breath enough to speak with a little ease and that the pain in this rib would lessen, that I might make clear to you, Panza, your error. For look here, sinner, if the wind of fortune, which till now has blown dead against us, should suddenly shift in our favour, bellying the sails of our desires, so that safely and freely we reach our port in one of the promised isles, how will you fare, if on winning it I make you its lord ? Why, you'll bring all to naught, because you're not a knight nor wish to be one, and have no courage, nor care to avenge your injuries and protect your realm. You must realise that in kingdoms and provinces newly conquered the subjects are never so content or so much their new lord's partisans that he needn't fear their springing a revolution, trying to see what fortune will do for them as they say. The new incumbent must, necessarily, be wise enough to govern and valiant enough to fight and defend himself in every emergency. '

‘ In this last one, ’ replied Sancho, ‘ I would I had possessed the wisdom and valour your worship mentions. But I swear to you on the faith of a poor man that for the present I’m more in need of plasters than palaver. Try your worship to rise, and let us help Rocinante, though in truth he doesn’t deserve it, being the cause of all that drubbing. I never would have believed it of Rocinante, whom I took for a chaste person and as great a lover of the peace as myself. ’Tis a true saying that it takes a long time to know people and that in life nothing’s certain. Who’d have thought that on the heels of those heavy whacks your worship gave that unlucky knight-errant, would come post-haste such a tempest as but now fell on our shoulders ? ’ ‘ Yours, Sancho, should be accustomed to such squalls, but mine, acquainted with soft cloth and fine linen, naturally feel the pain of this mishap more acutely. And did I not imagine, imagine do I say, did I not know as a fact, that all these discomforts are closely affiliated with the practice of arms, I should be ready to die on the spot from pure exhaustion. ’

Again the squire made answer : ‘ If these humiliations be the natural harvest of chivalry, tell me, sir, are there many in a year and do they come at certain seasons ? for methinks with two such reapings we should be no good for a third, unless God of his infinite mercy come to our aid. ’ ‘ Be assured, friend Sancho, ’ responded the other, ‘ that though the life of knights-errant is exposed to a thousand perils and reverses, equally is it in their power to become kings and emperors — as experience has shown with many knights whose histories I know from beginning to end. I now could tell you, pain permitting, of some that have risen solely through valour to those high stations, yet found themselves, both before and after, in divers miseries and vicissitudes. Amadis, for example, fell into the power of his mortal enemy the magician Arcalaus who, it is asserted, tied him to a pillar in the court-yard and with his horse’s reins applied more than two hundred lashes. Moreover there’s an unknown but reliable author relates how the Knight of Phœbus, falling through a trap-door at a certain castle, straightway found himself tied hand and foot in a cavern, where they injected into him a certain

thing called a clyster, made of snow and water, which nearly proved his finish ; had not a sage and great friend rescued him in his jeopardy, the poor fellow would have fared ill indeed.

‘ I, therefore, being in such good company, can well bear my sufferings, the better that the calamities that overtook them were worse than ours. For I must enlighten you, Sancho, that wounds given with instruments already in the hand are no humiliation, as is expressly set down in the law of the duel. For example, if a cobbler strike another with a last, the recipient of the blow is not said to have been mauled thereby. This I say lest you think that, pummeled as we were, we were also in some degree insulted. The arms those men ^{carried} and wherewith they basted us were merely pack-staves — not a rapier, as I remember, or sword or dagger among them. ’

‘ They gave me no time to observe, sir, for hardly had I grasped my good weapon, when their sticks or whatever they were signed the cross on my shoulders in such a way as to deprive me of eye-sight and the use of my legs, fetching me where now I lie, and were it gives me no concern whether stakes made it an insult or ^{not}. The pain of the blows does interest me, since they’re as likely to remain as deeply impressed on my memory as on my shoulders. ’ ‘ Still, brother Sancho, you must bear in mind there’s no memory time does not obliterate, no suffering death doesn’t consume. ’ ‘ But what worse luck can there be than that which must wait for death to obliterate, or time to consume. Were our disaster of the kind that a couple of bandages could cure, ’twouldn’t be so bad, but I am beginning to think the plasters of a whole hospital won’t straighten us out. ’

‘ Enough of this, my son ; pluck strength out of weakness and I’ll do the same. Let us first look to Rocinante, since it appears that not the least part of this misfortune fell to him. ’ ‘ What wonder, master, since he too is an errant. The astonishing thing is that while we three came off without a rib, mine ass escaped without a rub. ’ ‘ In reverses, my son, fortune ever leaves one door open for their relief ; even as now, when this little beast, relieving Rocinante, can carry me hence to some castle where my wounds may be healed. I shall the less consider such a mount

dishonour in that I remember how the good old Silenus, tutor to the merry god of laughter, entered the hundred-gated city riding very pleasantly a fine-looking ass.'

'Maybe he did,' said the squire; 'but there's big difference between going mounted like a gentleman and slung across like a sack of sweepings.' To this the master replied: 'Battle-wounds augment not lessen honour; so speak no more, Panza friend. Rise, I say, as best you can, and place me on your ass however you think well, and let us depart lest night overtake us in this wilderness.' 'I have heard you tell,' ventured the other, 'that it's quite the thing for knights-errant to sleep on heaths and deserts most of the year and that they considerer it good-luck.' 'That is when they cannot do better, or when they're in love, There have been knights that, unknown to their ladies fair, remained two years on a cliff exposed to the sun and the darkness and the sky's inclemency. Such an one was Amadis, who under the name of Beltenebros abode on Peña Pobre eight years or months — I am not sure which. Be that as it may, he did penance there for some fault or other wích the princess Oriana took exception to. But let us drop this, boy, and make haste ere some disaster befalls the ass similar to the one that overtook Rocinante.'

'Here would the devil be then, sure,' quoth Sancho; and with thirty ohs, sixty sighs and a hundred and twenty curses and plagues on the creature that had brought him to this pass, he raised himself, but only part way, unable to stand upright, bent like a Turkish bow. Yet with all this distress he managed to pannel his ass, who in the immoderate license of that day as well had gone astray. He then helped to his feet Rocinante, who, had he possessed a tongue wherewith to complain, would certainly not have lagged a whit behind master or man. Last of all Sancho laid his lord athwart the smaller beast and tying the horse on behind took his ass by the halter and set out toward where he thought the high-road lay. As chance guided their affairs from good to better, he had gone less than a short league when he discovered the road and on it an inn, which to his sorrow and the other's joy must needs be a castle. Sancho insisted

'twas an inn and his master 'twas certainly a castle, and the dispute was still on when they reached it, at the gateway of which without further argument the squire entered, himself and all his retinue.

CHAPTER XVI

Of all that befell our imaginative gentleman in the inn supposed to be a castle.

THE landlord, on seeing our knight slung across the ass, asked the squire what was the trouble. The latter replied 'twas nothing, only his master had fallen from a ledge and bruised his ribs a bit. The innmistress, unlike most of her kind, felt for the misfortunes of her neighbours and made haste to attend to this one, making her comely young daughter assist. The only servant at the inn was an Asturian lass, one with broad face and flat head behind, snub-nosed, asquint of one eye and not cock-sure with the other, though certainly the litheness of her body balanced these shortcomings, for her height was not above seven palms, and her shoulders, being a trifle heavy, made her scan the ground more than she liked.

This graceful creature helped the daughter prepare a bed in a loft that in its day had evidently served many years for straw. Here too a carrier had taken up his rest a little beyond our knight. Though his bed was made of packsaddles and mule-blankets, it took the shine out of Don Quijote's, consisting of four rough boards on two rickety horses, a mattress like a quilt for weight, full of little knobs shown by rents to be of wool but to the touch seeming small cobbles; and on top of all two sheets of shield-leather and a blanket everyone of whose threads could have been numbered. On this wicked shakedown the knight reclined while wife and daughter plastered him from top to toe, aided with a light by the Asturian wench Maritornes. In applying the plasters the innmistress couldn't but notice how black and blue he was and said it looked more like a felling than a fall. ' It

wasn't,' said Sancho, 'but the ledge had lots of little points and projections, each one of which left its mark. And please, lady, leave a few cloths, for there won't lack one to use them — my loins as well pain a bit.'

'So you too had a fall, did you?' 'Not exactly a fall, but I got such a shock from seeing master go over that my body aches as though it had received a thousand bastings.' 'That may well be,' vouchsafed the daughter, 'for oft have I dreamed I was falling from a tower and never reaching the ground, and when I awoke I'd find myself as bruised and shaken as if it had really happened.' 'But the funny part of my fall was that without dreaming and more awake than I am now, I find myself with few less bruises than my master Don Quijote.' 'I didn't catch the name,' said Maritornes. 'Don Quijote de la Mancha, knight-adventurer and one of the best and bravest seen for many a day.' 'And what's a knight-adventurer?' queried the wench. 'Are you so fresh in the world as not to know what a knight-adventurer is? Then let me tell you, sister that he's something that in two words is cudgelled and a king. To-day he's the unluckiest beggar alive but to-morrow he'll have two or three crowns to throw away on his squire.' 'Then how does it happen,' said the innmistress, 'that you, being squire to a good master, haven't even a countship apparently?' 'It's too early yet; we've been out less than a month and so far haven't run across any; it sometimes happens you look for one thing and find another. But if my master gets well of his felling or fall, and if it doesn't leave me hunchback, I wouldn't exchange my hopes for the best title in Spain.'

Don Quijote lay attentive to this colloquy, but now sitting up as best he could he took his hostess' hand and said: 'Believe me, fair lady, you may call yourself fortunate in having sheltered in your castle a person whom if I do not praise, 'tis by reason of the common saying, Self-glorification doth make vile. But my shield-bearer will tell who I am. For myself let me add that I shall ever keep writ in memory the service you have rendered, that I may thank you for the same while I live. Would to Heaven love held me not subject to its laws and to the eyes of the fair

ingrate whom I name between my teeth ; else those of this lovely girl would rule my liberty. ' The innmistress, her daughter and good Maritornes were dumfounded by this speech, since 'twas so much Greek to them ; but they gathered that he offered his service and attentions. Unused to such language, they stared at him in astonishment as at a different order of being. At length they got out their thanks in tavern fashion and departed, leaving Maritornes to care for Sancho, who was in as dire straits as his lord.

Now it chanced that the carrier had arranged with this Asturian lass to be together that night, she having given her word to come when the household had retired and do his pleasure. And 'tis said of this good woman that she always kept an oath though 'twere given in the woods and without witnesses, for she prided herself on being gently-born, considering it no disgrace to be serving at an inn for, she said, misfortune had brought her there. The hard, narrow, stingy and treacherous bed of Don Quijote came first, near the centre of this starlit stable. Next came Sancho's, consisting of a rush-mat and a blanket plainly not wool but threadbare canvass ; and just beyond these two beds was heaped the carrier's, made of the packsaddles and trappings of his best two mules. He had twelve in all it seems, every one sleek, shiny and in prime condition, for their master was one of the richest carriers in Arévalo. At least so says the author of this history, who makes particular mention of him, being his close acquaintance and even distant kinsman, they say ; and Cid Hamet Benengeli was most diligent and exact in all things, as may be seen by his not passing in silence even the merest trifles, affording an example to certain grave historians whose accounts of incidents are so abbreviated that we scarce get a taste of them, while the essential part of the story, either from carelessness or malice or ignorance, is left in the ink-pot. A thousand blessings on the author of *Tablante de Ricamonte* and the narrator of the deeds of Count Tomillas ! with what pains is every smallest detail dwelt upon !

Our historians says, then, that after the carrier had visited his team and given their second feed, he stretched himself over his

packsaddles and waited for the punctilious Maritornes. Sancho in plasters had already accommodated himself and was even trying to get sleep, despite the pain in his ribs, while Don Quijote with the pain in his had his eyes wide open as a hare's. The inn was all silent and dark, save for a lantern that hung in the middle of the outer gate. This marvellous stillness, added to memories of situations so scrupulously recorded in the books that proved his undoing, brought to our knight's fancy one of the strangest delusions that well can be conceived. Having arrived at this famous castle, as he took this inn to be, he imagined the keeper's daughter the daughter of the lord of the place, and represented to himself that she, overcome by his graces, had fallen in love and had promised that unknown to her parents she'd spend a good part of the night in his society. Holding this chimera as downright truth he began to be restless, reflecting on the dangerous crisis his virtue was about to face. Yet in his heart he resolved to commit no treason to his lady Dulcinea del Toboso, though Queen Guinevere herself with her duenna Quinaña placed themselves in his power.

In the midst of this fantasy arrived the fatal hour of the quest of the Asturian who, clad in a smock, bare-footed, her hair caught up in a fustian net, with silent cautious steps entered the room where the three lay. Hardly had she gained the door when Don Quijote heard her and sitting up in bed maugre plasters and pains stretched out his arms to receive so much beauty, that stooping went quietly feeling her way toward her desired object. She thus was bound to come in contact with the arms of our knight, who seized her firmly by the wrist, drew her toward him and without her daring utter a syllable made her sit upon his bed. First he felt her smock which, though nothing but sackcloth, seemed to him the finest and most delicate silk. The glass-beads on her wrists sparkled like oriental pearls; her hair (more or less resembling a horse's mane) he pictured of the most dazzling Arabian gold, obscuring the sun itself in splendour, while her breath, reeking of the stale meat-salad of the night before, came to his nostrils like sweet aromatic fragrance.

In short our knight's imagination pictured this wench in

semblance of the other princess who, smit with love, came to attend the sorely wounded cavalier : to his senses this one had all her adornments of person. Such was the poor man's blindness that neither touch nor breath nor aught else undeceived him, though enough to make any but a carrier sick at the stomach. Rather he believed he had the goddess of beauty herself in his arms, and still clutching her wrist in low and amorous accent thus began : ' Would that I were in the way, fair and noble creature, to requite the favour thou hast done me in the disclosure of thy great beauty. But fortune, never weary in the persecution of the good, has seen fit to place me where I lie so battered and broken that even were my will ready to yield to thine, such a thing could not be. But on top of this impossibility is another still greater — the faith sworn to the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso, sole mistress of my secret thoughts. Were this not the state of things, I should not be such a ninny of a knight as to let slip the opportunity thy great bounty has placed in my hands. '

The lass was in mortal sweat and agony at finding herself so tightly held by this gentleman, and without comprehending or even hearing his talk and without saying a word in reply she struggled to get free. The good carrier, whom evil desire had kept awake, from the time he heard his courtesan enter listened to all Don Quijote said, and anxious lest the Asturian prove false, stole up to the other's bed, waiting to discover what these unintelligible words portended. But when he saw the lass struggling to get free and the man doing his best to restrain her, he no longer fancied the joke and raising his fist on high discharged such a truly terrible blow on the lantern-jaws of the enamoured knight as to bathe his mouth in blood.

But not content with this the carrier mounting his ribs started a quick trot, till the weakly-supported bed, unable to bear this fresh weight, came to the floor and with such a crash that it wakened the innkeeper, who soon guessed that Maritornes had a hand in the trouble, since he called her and received no answer. In this suspicion he arose and lighting a lamp hastened to the scene of disaster. The wench, seeing him come and knowing his

temper, was scared out of her wits, and taking refuge in the bed of Sancho Panza, who had fallen to sleep, rolled herself up like a ball. The innkeeper entering called out : ' Where are you, you trollop ? this is some of your doings, I'll wager.' Upon this Sancho awoke, and finding a large swelling on top of him, he took it for a nightmare and began to lay about on all sides, any number of which blows fell on Maritornes. She, feeling the pain they gave, dropped her gentility and delivered so many in return that in spite of himself Sancho quit the idea of nightmare. Finding how he was treated and by whom he knew not whom, he got up as he could and closed with the other, and then and there ensued the stormiest and most comical scuffle in the world.

The carrier, seeing by the light of the innkeeper's lamp how his lady fared, left Quijote and hastened to give the much-needed aid. The innkeeper made haste as well though with a different intention, for he meant to punish the woman, believing her the sole cause of all this harmony. As the saying is, the cat to the rat, the rat to the rope, the rope to the stick : even so the carrier made at Sancho, Sancho at the wench, the wench at him, the innkeeper at her and all let fly so briskly as not to grant a moment's respite. And the best of it was that the lamp went out and in the dark they struck so indiscriminately and so without pity that wherever fists lit, there was damage done.

Now chance quartered in the inn that night an officer of the ancient and holy Toledan Brotherhood, who, hearing an extraordinary commotion, seized his staff and tin box containing warrants, and entering the dark room called out : ' Hold, in the name of justice ! hold, in the name of the Holy Brotherhood ! ' The first person he laid hands on was the belted knight, lying senseless on his demolished bed with mouth in air. Catching hold of his beard as he groped about, the officer ceased not to cry : ' Help for the police ! ' but finding his victim didn't struggle or even stir, he called still louder : ' Close the inn-gate that none escape, for here's a man murdered ! '

Every one in a fright quit sparring instantly. The keeper fled to his room, the carrier to his packsaddles, the woman to her cot—the unlucky knight and squire alone couldn't move from

where they lay. The officer now let go the former's beard and went to get light whereby he might seize the delinquents. But no light was to be found, for the inn-keeper took care to blow out the gate-lantern as he fled to his chamber, and the officer was forced to hunt amid the hearth-ashes, where he at last found fire.

CHAPTER XVII

A succession of the countless troubles that brave knight and trusty squire experienced in the inn that to his sorrow the former took for a castle

BY this time Don Quijote had come to and in the same aggrieved tone used by him when speaking to his squire the previous day, stretched out there in the Valley of the Stakes, he now addressed him : ' Sancho friend, are you sleeping ? are you asleep, Sancho friend ? ' ' Curses on me, ' quoth Sancho in pain and displeasure, ' how can I be when 'tis clear all the devils of hell have this night been after me ! ' ' You have reason to think so, ' assented the other, ' and either I know very little or this castle is enchanted, for I must tell you — but first you must swear to keep it secret till I am dead. ' ' I swear it. ' ' I ask this, ' continued Don Quijote, ' since I'm no friend to anyone's losing his or her good name. ' ' I say I swear to keep it dark as long as your worship lives. God grant I may out with it to-morrow. ' ' Do I work you such harm, Sancho, that you wish me that soon dead ? ' ' It isn't that, but I'm no friend to keeping secrets and don't want them to go rotting in my insides with too long holding. '

' Be that as it may, ' said his master, ' I have sufficient confidence in your affection and respect to tell you that this night has befallen me one of the rarest adventures in the world, and trust me I shall know how to make the most of it. To be brief, a short time back there came to me the lord of the castle's daughter, the fairest and most refined maiden to be found in the wide universe. What shall I say of her apparel ! what of her brilliant under-

standing ! what of hidden things which, to guard my fealty to my lady Dulcinea del Toboso, I shall pass over untouched and in silence. This only I may reveal that, either because Heaven was jealous of the boon fortune placed in my hands or perhaps, and this is more likely, by reason that this castle is enchanted even as I said, in the midst of most sweet and loving audience with her, without my seeing it or knowing whence it came, the fist of a monstrous giant dropped such a blow on my jaws as to bathe them in blood, followed by such a rib-roasting as to leave me worse than yesterday, when by reason of Rocinante's license we were insulted by the carriers. I gather from all this that some bewitched Moor must guard the treasure of the maiden's beauty — that it cannot be for me.'

'Nor for me,' said Sancho, 'for over here more than four hundred Moors let fly, in comparison wherewith the stake-drubbing was but cakes and cookies. But tell me, señor, what sort of an adventure do you call this fine rare one that has left us where we are ? Your worship to be sure is less to the bad than I, since you had hold of that incomparable beauty, while I, what did I get but the heaviest slam-banging I think to receive in all my life. Unlucky Sancho and unlucky the mother that bore him, since to him, though no knight-errant and never hoping to be one, most of the hardships fall.' 'So you were basted too ?' 'Didn't I say I was, curses on my line !' quoth the squire. 'Be not troubled,' said the other reassuringly, 'for now I'll make the precious balsam, which will cure us in the twinkling of an eye.'

The officer having lighted his lamp now came to look after the man he supposed dead, and Sancho seeing the ugly-looking fellow enter in shirt and night-cap whispered to his master : 'Can this be the enchanted Moor, señor, returning to administer punishment in case any be left in the ink-pot ?' 'No, for bewitched persons are never visible.' 'Not visible perhaps but feelable certainly, or let my shoulders speak a word or two.' 'Mine also could talk, but that wouldn't be suffice to prove this the enchanted Moor.' The constable drawing near was greatly surprised to hear them talk so cheerfully, especially as Don Quijote still lay

there on his back, unable to stir as a result of poundings and plasters.

The officer was the first to speak : ‘ Well, how goes it, old fellow ? ’ ‘ I’d speak more respectfully, were I you ; is it usual in this country so to greet knights-errant, fool ? ’ The other finding himself abused and by such a sorry object lost his temper, and raising the lamp brought it down on Don Quijote’s head, leaving its mark there. Then, as all was dark again, he beat a retreat. Sancho spoke up and said : ‘ There can be no doubt, master, that he is the bewitched Moor, with treasures to look after for others, but for us only fisticuffs and lamp-rubbings. ’ ‘ It is ever so, and no notice can be taken of these enchantments, nor is it of any use to be put out by them, for, invisible and imaginary as they are, we could never find one on whom to avenge ourselves, however much we tried. Rise, my son, if you can, and calling the commander of this fortress, see will he give us a little oil, wine, salt and rosemary, wherewith to concoct the curative balsam. Verily methinks I have dire need thereof, since blood is flowing copiously from that spectre’s wound. ’

With plenty of aches in his bones Sancho lifted himself and going in the darkness for the innkeeper stumbled on the officer, who had been listening to his enemy’s plans. Sancho at once spoke out saying : ‘ Señor, whoever you are, be so kind as to give me a little rosemary, oil, salt and wine needed to cure one of the best errants in the world, who lies on yon bed sore wounded by the enchanted Moor living at this inn. ’ The officer took him for frenzied, but now that day was approaching, he opened the door and calling to the innkeeper told what was wanted. The latter soon produced the articles, which Sancho then carried to his master. He found him with hands to head groaning from the pain of the lamp-blow, which had done no more than raise two fair-sized weals — what he called blood proved to be sweat caused by the agony of the late tempest. He received the ingredients and after mixing boiled them till of the proper consistency. He then asked for a phial to pour the stuff into, but as the inn furnished none, he decided to entrust it to a tin cruet, freely contributed by the landlord. And over it all he said more

than eighty pater-nosters and an equal number of ave-marias, salves and credos, accompanyng each word with a cross by way of benediction. Present at the ceremony were Sancho, innkeeper and constable — the carrier had quietly gone off to look to his mules.

The moment all was said and done, the knight, wishing to test the virtue of the precious drug, tossed off near a quart that remained in the pot after the cruet had been filled. Scarce was it down when he began to vomit with a violence that clean emptied his stomach, and along with the pains and spasms of the puking he perspired most freely ; so he bade them cover him and leave him alone. After a sound sleep of above three hours he wakened, feeling such renewed life in his whole system and seeming so much better of his bruises that he deemed himself quite well, attributing all to Fierabras' balsam. Henceforth, with that remedy at hand, he persuaded himself he could engage without fear in disasters, wars and scuffles, it mattered not how perilous.

Sancho regarded his master's restoration as nothing short of miraculous and asked if he might drain off what still remained in the pot — not a little. The knight gave consent and the squire, holding the receptacle with both hands, in good faith and better will poured down not much less than had Don Quijote. But his stomach must by nature have been more hardy than his lord's for ere he vomited he suffered such pain and nausea, such sweatings and swoonings, that he thought his hour was come. He cursed the balsam and the rogue that had given it, but the latter, observing his state, remarked : ' I must believe, Sancho, that all this annoyance springs from not being knighted and I begin to think that this beverage cannot help those that are not.' ' Why did you so much as let me taste it then ? curses on me and all my kinsfolk ! ' The medicine however now began to act and the poor squire got relief both ways and at such a rate that the rush-mat on which he had thrown himself together with the canvass blanket were put out of business. He sweated and resweated with such fits and paroxysms that not alone he but every one thought he was done for. This bad weather and going lasted

upwards of two hours and even in the end he didn't come out as his master did, but too wasted and weakened to stand.

As has been said, our knight felt himself again and was ready to sally forth on his adventurous quests, since it seemed to him that time spent there was depriving the world and its needy of his favour and assistance. His confidence in the balsam made him feel this even more strongly, so he now saddled Rocinante and panned the ass of his squire, whom he helped to dress and mount. He then got upon his own steed and going to a corner seized a pike standing there to serve him as lance. More than twenty persons, all that were at the tavern, stood watching and among them the innkeeper's daughter from whom Don Quijote didn't remove his eyes, now and again heaving a sigh, uprooted from his lowest bowels, but supposed by every one to proceed from the pain in his ribs — at least by those that had seen him plastered the night before. Now that both were mounted, the knight in calm and serious voice called from the gateway: 'Many and great, sir governor, are the favours received in this your castle, and I shall remain under the greatest obligation to your worship all the days of my life. If I can repay by taking vengeance on some coxcomb that has harmed you, know that my sole profession is to help those that cannot help themselves, to avenge the wronged and to punish perfidy. Ransack your memory, and should you find aught of that character to give into my hands, say the word and I promise by the order of chivalry I have received to procure you reparation to your heart's content.'

The innkeeper with the same tranquil air replied: 'Sir knight, there's no occasion to avenge grievance of mine — I know how to do that myself the moment I suffer any. My sole request is that you pay me the night's reckoning, both for the straw and barley of the two beasts and for your and your squire's supper and beds.' 'Is this an inn, then?' 'Yes, and a most respectable one.' 'Till this moment, sir,' replied the guest, 'I laboured under a delusion, for I honestly supposed it a most respectable castle. Now that it proves an inn, all you have to do is excuse the payment, for under no circumstances may I violate the rules of errant knights who, I am certain, having never read

anything to the contrary, not once paid for lodging or aught else at the inns where they put up. There's owing them by inalienable right whatever good accommodation is provided, in return for the insufferable hardships they undergo, seeking out adventures by day and night, summer and winter, mounted and afoot, in hunger and thirst, in heat and cold, exposed to all the uncertainties of the weather and all the certain woes of the world.' 'I can see nothing in all this,' returned the innkeeper; 'pay me what you owe, and drop your fairy-tales and chivalries. All I care about is to get what's due me.'

'You are a fool and an ostler,' came from Don Quijote; and putting spurs to steed and brandishing lance he galloped off through the gate before anyone could stop him, and, not looking to see if his squire followed, soon had left the place a considerable distance behind. The innkeeper was greatly incensed and threatened, if Sancho refused to pay, to take it out of him in a way he wouldn't relish. To this the other made answer that by the law of chivalry received of his master he wouldn't pay a farthing though it cost him his life. Good old usages of knights-errant shouldn't fall into contempt through him, nor were future squires to blame him for having overstepped this most just provision. But the evil star of the unfortunate squire ordained that there should be stopping at the inn four wool-carders of Segovia, three needle-makers of the Colt-Quarter in Cordova and two lodgers from the Market in Seville—jovial, good-hearted rogues, up to all kinds of tricks, and these, as if moved by a common impulse, coming up to Sancho, removed him from his ass. One led the way in, seeking mine host's bed-blanket, but when they had thrown the squire into it, raising their eyes they marked that the ceiling was a trifle too low and decided to go out into the yard whose only upward limit was the sky. There they began to toss poor Sancho from the centre of the blanket and sport with him as with a dog at Shrovetide.

The cries of the blanketed wretch were so loud they reached the ears of his master, who, checking his horse that he might listen to better advantage, imagined some new adventure on the wing. But at last realising 'twas his squire that yelled, he

turned and rode back at a painful gallop to the inn and finding the gate shut, encircled the place in the hope of entrance. But he got no further than the yard-wall when he caught sight of the dirty trick they were playing. He saw his squire rise and fall, and with such grace and agility that had his rage allowed him, verily methinks he'd have laughed. He first tried to mount the wall, but, bruised and battered, he couldn't even dismount from his horse, and so sat there hurling such insults at the blanketers as cannot be repeated. But not for this did they cease their laughter or their labour, nor the flying Sancho his complaints, mingled now with threats, now with entreaties, which availed him little, nor at all until from pure weariness his persecutors let him go.

They brought the poor man his ass and mounting him drew his long cloak over his shoulders. The compassionate Maritornes, seeing him so far gone, thought to relieve him with a jug of cold water straight from the well. Sancho took the jug and was raising it to his mouth when he was checked by cries from his master : ' Son Sancho, touch not that water, drink it not, my son, for 'twill kill you. Look,' he shouted, producing the cruet, ' here is the blessed balsam ; with two drops you'll certainly be cured.' Sancho eyed him askance and called out still louder : ' Can you have forgot, sir, that I am no knight, or do you wish me to vomit what bowels are left from last evening. To the devils with your liquor and leave me alone.'

The end of this speech and the commencement of the draught coincided, but finding that water it truly was he halted at the first swallow and called to Maritornes to fetch him some wine. This she did most graciously, paying for it herself ; for 'tis said that though serving in that humble appointment she dimly and distantly resembled a Christian. When Sancho had done with his draught, he dug his heels into his ass and since the inn-gate was open sallied forth, tickled to death at having gained his point of paying nothing, though at the expense of his usual bondsmen, his shoulders. It is true the landlord relieved him of his saddlebags but in our squire's hurried departure these were not missed. Now that he was gone, the keeper would bar the

gate securely, but the tossers wouldn't hear of it, for they were of the kind that wouldn't have cared two coppers for Don Quijote had he been of the Knights of the Table Round.

CHAPTER XVIII

The conversation that passed between Sancho Panza and his master Don Quijote, together with a few adventures worth recording

SANCHO reached his master so wan and weary he could scarce urge his ass. On beholding his condition the other said : ' Now am I sure, Sancho, that yon castle or inn is enchanted, for they that made sport of you so outrageously, what can they have been but plantoms and inhabitants of another world ? I was confirmed in this by observing that when I looked over the yard-wall at the acts of your woful tragedy, I could in no way climb thereon, and still less was I able to dismount from my steed. They certainly must have bewitched me, for I swear to you by the faith of what I am that could I have climbed up or down, I should have avenged you in a way to have made those rogues and robbers remember their joke ever after ; though in doing so I should have known I was transgressing the laws of mine order, which prohibit a knight's fighting with him that isn't one, as I have often told you, except it be in defence of his own life or person, and only then in cases of great and instant need. '

' Had I been able, I likewise would have avenged me, dubbed or undubbed, but it didn't lie in my power, ' the squire protested ; ' yet of one thing I'm certain, and that is that they that sported with me weren't phantoms or enchanted beings as your worship says, but of flesh and bone like ourselves ; and all had names, for I heard them call to one another during the tossing. One was named Pedro Martinez and another Tenorio Hernandez, and the innkeeper they called Juan Palomeque the left-handed. Therefore, señor, your inability to leap the wall and to climb

down from Rocinante was caused by something other than enchantment. What I conclude from all this is that these adventures we are in search of will end in such misventures that we shan't know our right foot from our left. 'Twould be better and more to the point, according to my little understanding, to return home, now that it's harvest time, and mind our own affairs, and give over wandering from Zeca to Mecca, from smoke to smother, as the saying is.'

'How little, how little, Sancho, do you appreciate the ways of chivalry! But peace, and have patience, for the day will come when your own eyes shall see how honourable a thing it is to exercise this my profession. If not, tell me what greater pleasure in the world can there be than winning a battle and triumphing over one's enemy? none certainly.' 'Maybe so; I cannot say. All I know is that since we have been knights-errant, or rather since your worship has been, for I have no right to reckon myself of that honourable order, not a solitary battle have we won, unless you count that with the Biscayan — even there your worship came out poorer by half an ear and helmet. Since that affair it has been naught but raps and more raps, punches and more punches, I being one ahead with the blanketing, administered by enchanted persons on whom I cannot avenge myself, deprived therefore of that pleasure of which your worship speaks, of triumphing over one's enemies.'

'That is a drawback which I too have to put up with; but in future I shall try to have on hand a sword of such cunning that no kind of spell can bind its wielder. It even might be that fortune presented me with the weapon used by Amadis when called he of the Flaming Sword. 'Twas one of the best ever knight brandished in the world, since it also had the virtue of cutting like a razor, and no armour however strong or enchanted was proof against it.' 'But my luck is such,' said Sancho, 'that even should your worship find this blade, like the balsam 'twould serve and protect dubbed knights only — the squires would still have to swallow their groans.' 'Fear it not, for Heaven will treat you more kindly.'

The two were thus in chat when Don Quijote noticed a great

cloud of dust rolling toward them, and turning to Sancho said : ' This is the day, O my squire, on which is to be seen the blessings fortune keeps in store for me. This is the day I repeat, on which as on any other is to be revealed the valour of mine arm, since on it am I destined to perform deeds that shall be writ in the book of fame and abide there for the rest of time. You see yon dust-cloud, Sancho ? 'Tis churned up by a vast army of countless peoples in battle-array. ' ' Then there must be two armies,' observed the other, ' for opposite rises another dust-cloud just as thick. ' The knight, turning his eyes in that direction, saw that he spake true, and rejoiced immeasurably, believing that two hosts were about to battle on that wide level before them. At all hours and moments his head was full of the broils, enchantments, occasions, extravagances, amours and challenges recorded in the books of chivalry, and all his thoughts, words and deeds flowed in that channel.

Now these dust-clouds actually arose from two large flocks of ewes and rams coming from opposite directions. By reason of the dust they couldn't be seen, and Don Quijote insisted with such ardour on their being war-hosts that Sancho came to believe it saying : ' Bnt what are we to do, señor ? ' ' What but lend a hand and side with the weak and helpless. You should be aware, Sancho, that the force facing us is led by the great emperor Alifanfaron, governor of the large island Trapobana. The other, on our left, is the army of his foe, the king of the Garamantans, Pentapolin of the Sleeveless Arm, who enters every fray with his right arm bared. '

' But what are these gentlemen fighting about ? ' ' Their quarrel is that this Alifanfaron, a choleric old pagan, has fallen in love with Pentapolin's daughter, a most graceful and beautiful girl and a Christian, but the father is unwilling to bestow her on a pagan king unless he renounce the false prophet Mahomet and adopt his own. ' ' By my beard,' quoth Sancho, ' Pentapolin does quite right and I shall help him all I can. ' ' In doing so, you'll do your duty, for one needn't be a knight in order to participate in combats of this kind. ' ' Glad am I of that,' returned the squire, ' but where shall we leave mine ass that I may find him

when the thing is over? to enter a battle on such a mount has not so far been the practice, I believe.' ' True, and what you can do is to leave him to his chances, whether he come back or not, for we shall possess so many steeds when we issue victorious that even Rocinante risks being swapped. But listen now to what I say and use your eyes at the same time, since I would indicate the more important of the knights that accompany the two hosts. And that you may the better see and note them, let us retire to yon hillock, whence both armies should plainly be in view.'

The pair accordingly mounted a rise of ground, whence easily they could have seen the two flocks of sheep; represented by the knight to be armies, had not the dust they raised still blinded the eyes and obscured them. But since our hero saw in fancy things invisible to sight and without corporeal existence, raising his voice he began: ' Yon knight in yellow armour, whose shield-device is a crowned lion crouching at a maiden's feet, is the valiant Laurusco, lord of the Silver Bridge. The other, with golden flowers on his armour and three crowns argent on his shield, is the greatly dreaded Miccolembo, grand-duke of Quirocia. The one on the right with the giant limbs is the ever-laudless Brandabarbaran de Boliche, lord of the three Arabias, who comes armed in a serpent-skin and carries a gate for his cutcheon — a gate, 'tis said, of the temple destroyed by Samson when, at the cost of his life, he took vengeance on his foes.

' Now turn your eyes in the other direction and at that army's head you'll see the ever-victorious, never-vanquished Timonel le Carcajona, prince of New Biscay, whose armour is quartered azure, green, white and yellow and on whose shield is a golden cat on a tawny field and a motto reading, *Miau* — that being the first half of the name of his lady who, according to report, is the peerless Miaulina, daughter of the duke Afeñiquen of Algarve. The other with arms white as snow and shield white and no device, that presses the loins of his powerful steed, is a novice knight of France, Pierre Papin, lord of the baronies of Utrique. And the one beyond, that with iron heel digs the flank of a particoloured zebra and carries azure cups as his coat of arms,

is the mighty duke of Nerbia, Espartifilardo of the Wood. On his shield is depicted the asparagus plant with the motto in Castilian, *My fortune trails.*'

In like vein Don Quijote continued improvising names for the numberless knights of first this and then the other squadron, his imagination supplying arms, colours, devices and mottos. Swept on in his outrageous frenzy, without pause he explained : ' Folk of divers nations compose this squadron in our front. These are they that drink the sweet waters of the famous Xanthus ; mountaineers that tread the Masilian fields ; they that sift fine gold in Araby the blest ; that rejoice in the far-famed green riversides of the clear Thermodon ; those that drain by many and devious ways the golden Pactolus ; Numidians, unstedfast of promise ; Persians, renowned in archery ; Parthians ; Medes that fight on the wing ; there too the nomadic Arabians ; Scythians cruel as they are fair of face ; Ethiopians with pierced lips ; and other countless peoples, whose faces I see and know, but whose names have slipped me.

' In the other host march men that drink of the sparkling currents of olive-bearing Betis ; that wash their shining faces in the ever-fruitful Tagus ; that delight in the bountiful waters of the divine Genil ; that roam the pasture-abounding Tartesian plains ; that take their pleasure in the Elysean meadows round Jerez ; Manchegans, rich in fields crowned with ruddy ears of maize ; they that are encased in iron, ancient remnants of the Gothic blood ; those that bathe in the Pisuerga, famed for its gentle current, that feed their flocks in the wide pastures of the tortuous Guadiana, celebrated for its hidden course. On this side too are they that shiver in the cold of the wooded Pyrenees and amid the white snow-flakes of the lofty Apenines ; in short, there you may survey as many nations as all Europe holds within its borders ! ' God help me ! now many provinces did he name, how many peoples did he designate, assigning their attributes with incredible ease, saturated as he was with his fabulous lore.

Sancho Panza heard him in silence, turning his head this way and that, hoping for a glimpse of the knights and giants his

master was describing. But seeing none he said : ‘ Señor, the devil take it ! not one of those men, giants or knights is anywhere about ; at least I cannot see one. Maybe it’s all enchantment like the spectres of the inn. ’ ‘ How can you say such a thing ? don’t you hear the steeds neighing, the trumpets sounding and the rolling of the drums ? ’ ‘ I hear but the loud bleat of ewes and rams, ’ replied Sancho, and indeed the two flocks could now be heard close at hand. ‘ In your fear, my son, you neither see nor hear aright. One of the effects of fear is to confuse the senses, blinding them to realities. If you be that frightened, go one side and leave me to myself, for I alone suffice to render victorious the side I favour. ’

Saying this the knight clapped spurs to Rocinante and with couched pike dropped down the hillside like a thunderbolt. Sancho called after him : ‘ Come back, come back, Señor Don Quijote, for I swear to God ’tis rams and ewes you charge. Come back I say, cursed be the father that begat me ! see for yourself there’s neither giant nor knight nor cats nor arms nor shields, quartered or whole, nor cups azure or bedevilled. Sinner ’fore God that I am, what is this ye do ! ’ His master did not turn but kept straight on, shouting : ‘ So ho, knights ! ye that follow and fight beneath the banner of the bold Pentapolin of the Sleeveless Arm ! follow me and see how promptly I shall avenge him on his foe, Alifanfaron of Trapobana. ’ With this he dashed against the ewes and commenced to lance them with as determined courage as if mortal enemies. The herdsmen cried to him to quit, but finding him unmoved, preparing their slings they began to play upon his ears with pebbles the size of one’s fist. These too the knight heeded not, galloping in all directions and calling : ‘ Where are you, haughty Alifanfaron ? stand forth ! for I am alone and wish to test your might and work your death, in return for the scath you do the bold Pentapolin the Garamantan. ’

At this point a sugar-plum struck him in the ribs, burying a couple in his body, and finding his thoughts in utter confusion, he believed himself dead or at least terribly wounded. Recollecting his balsam he raised the cruet to his mouth and began to load his stomach. But scarce had he swallowed what he deemed

sufficient, when another almond hit his hand with such force that it smashed the cruet to smithereens, sending three or four front teeth flying along with it. Two fingers were badly bruised besides; and such impetus had the first blow and such the second that succumbing at last the poor man dropped from his horse. The shepherds, thinking him killed, speedily herded their flock, picked up more than seven dead and left in a hurry.

The squire all this time stood upon the hillock watching the other's frenzies. He pulled his beard and cursed the hour and moment that fortune first brought them together. Seeing at last that the other lay stretched to earth and that the shepherds had fled, riding down he found his master badly off though still in his senses. 'Didn't I tell you to turn back, Señor Don Quijote? and that those whom you attacked were not armies but flocks of sheep?' 'How that thief of a sorcerer, mine enemy,' sighed the other, 'can transform things for purposes of concealment! Know, Sancho, that they can change you and me as they list, and my especial persecutor, envious of the glory he forsook I should enjoy, changed these opposing armies into flocks of sheep. If you don't believe it, that you may be disillusioned and find that what I say is true, I swear you must mount your ass and stealthily follow them. A short space hence you'll see them change back again and from sheep become bona fide men, even as I described them. But don't go yet awhile, friend — I have need of your service. Kneel down and see how many front teeth and molars I lack. It feels as if not one were left.'

Sancho bent so close as almost to put his eyes into the mouth of his master, whose stomach, where the balsam had been fermenting, took this chance to discharge more instantly than a gun, all onto the beard of the compassionate squire. 'Santa Maria! and what has happened to me! this sinner is vomiting blood and must be wounded to death.' But further observation of the colour, savour and smell told him 'twas no blood but that old balsam he had seen him drink; and his disgust thereat was strong enough to turn his stomach, making him vomit back onto his master, till both were a sight to behold.

Sancho ran to the saddlebags for something wherewith to

clean himself and bandage his master, and not finding them he almost lost his wits. He cursed himself all over again and in his heart resolved to quit the business and go home, even though he forfeited wages and all hopes of the government of the promised isle. Don Quijote had now risen, and putting his left hand to his mouth to keep in the remaining teeth and with the other taking the bridle of Rocinante (who not once had moved from his master's side, so loyal was he and well-bred) he went to his squire, leaning there against his ass with hand to cheek like a man in affliction. Seeing him with such a show of sorrow, the knight said : ' Learn, my son, that one man is no more than another save as he achieves more. All these squalls that struck us of late are but signs of fine weather and fair fortune. Neither evil nor good can last for ever, and evil having continued long, good must be near at hand. So take not my humiliations to heart since none of them falls to you. '

' How not to me ? belike him they tossed in the blanket was not my father's son ? And perchance the saddlebags with all my valuables that have taken wing belonged to another than myself ? ' ' What, the saddlebags are gone ? ' ' Thou sayest, ' answered the squire. ' We have naught to eat, then ? ' ' That would be true were there no herbs in these meadows known to your worship as those the knights-errant like yourself are wont to use in place of food. ' ' Be it so, ' replied the other, ' though just now I'd sooner have a quarter-loaf or a whole and a couple of pilchards' heads than all the herbs described by Dioscorides, even with the annotations of Doctor Laguna. But mount your ass, my good Sancho, and follow me, for God, the Provider of all things, will not fail us now, especially as we do toil in his service. Mosquitoes of the air He fails not, nor worms of the earth, nor tadpoles of the water, and is so merciful that He maketh his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sendeth rain on the just and the unjust. ' ' Your worship, ' said Sancho, ' would make a better preacher than knight-errant. ' ' Knightly adventurers knew and still must know all things. In days gone by there were those as ready to deliver a sermon or oration on a battle-field as though graduated from the University of Paris : whence can be seen that

lance never blunted pen nor pen lance.' 'So be it, just as your worship says,' agreed the squire; 'but let us out of here and find where we can pass the night.' 'God grant it in a spot without blankets or tossers or phantoms or bewitched Moors, else the devil take the whole concern.' 'Ask it of God, my son, and guide us whither you will: this time I leave the lodging to you. But first feel with your finger and see how many front teeth and molars are missing from my right upper-jaw — 'tis there I feel the pain.'

The other obeyed and said while feeling: 'How many molars did your worship formerly have on this side?' 'Four beside the wisdom tooth — all in first-class condition.' 'Hear what you say, señor.' 'Four I repeat or even five — in all my life not one has fallen out or been drawn, nor have any been lost through rheum or decay.' 'Well,' reported the squire, 'on this lower side your worship has just two molars and a half, but up-stairs not half an one. 'Tis as smooth as the palm of my hand.' 'Woe's me!' groaned the knight at this sad news; 'I'd rather they lopped me an arm, provided 'twere not my sword-arm. You must know, friend, that a mouth without molars is a mill without stones — a tooth is more to be prized than a diamond.

'But to all this are they subject that profess the rigid order of chivalry. Mount, Sancho, and lead the way — whatever pace you set, I follow.' The other did so, leading whither he hoped they might find accommodation without forsaking the main road, there much frequented. The pain on Don Quijote's jaw gave him considerable trouble and kept them from making haste, and as they slowly plodded on, Sancho thought to divert his master with talk and so said to him among other things what will be set down in the next chapter.

CHAPTER XIX

The savoury converse Sancho had with his master, the adventure of the corpse and other noteworthy incidents

‘**I**T seems to me, sir,’ began the squire, ‘that all these mishaps befallen us of late must have come as chastisement for your sin against the order of chivalry in breaking the vow not to eat bread off a cloth or lie with the queen or any of those other things until you got possession of the helmet of Malandrino or whatever the Moor’s name is.’ ‘You are half-right, Sancho, and to tell the truth, it had slipped my mind. Doubtless your negligence in not having brought it to my attention in time occasioned the blanket-episode. For myself I shall make amends, since chivalry possesses ways to smooth out all things.’ ‘And did I perchance also swear to something?’ ‘The fact that you didn’t actually take oath doesn’t matter; enough that I consider you not wholly free from complicity in my fault, and ’twill be as well that we both look to our reparation.’ ‘See then that your worship doesn’t forget this time also; it might please the spectres to make further sport of me, or even of your worship, if they find you so heedless.’

While thus in converse and ere they reached or discovered a lodging-place, night overtook them. The worst of it was they perished of hunger, for the loss of the saddlebags meant the loss of their pantry and provender. To add to this untowardness occurred an adventure that without make-believe truly appeared one. The night grew darker but they plodded on, Sancho thinking all the while that on this the highway they were likely to find an inn after a league or two. But now, the night black, the squire famished and the master ready to eat, they suddenly saw ahead of them a multitude of waving lights, like stars in motion. Sancho lost breath and the knight was not without fear. The one drew his ass’s halter, the other his nag’s bridle and together they awaited the issue.

The nearer the lights came the larger they appeared, whereupon Panza began to tremble like a man dosed with mercury, and Quijote's hairs rose like bristles, till gathering a little courage he said : ' This must needs be a great and hazardous adventure — one wherein I shall be forced to display all my might and valour.' ' Woe' me ! ' cried Sancho ; ' if this one be concerned with spectres, as methinks looks likely, where will be found ribs to suffer it ? ' ' However spectral they may be, ' asserted the other, ' I'll not allow them to touch a thread of your coat. If once they abused you, 'twas because I couldn't climb the wall. Now we're in the open, where my sword has free play. ' ' But if they bewitch and paralyze you a second time, what will the open country avail ? ' ' Nevertheless, ' returned the other, ' let your heart be brave and the event will show what mine is. ' ' Please God and so I shall. '

The pair, standing a little off the road, anxiously awaited to see what this advancing illumination might portend. Soon they distinguished some twenty men in long flowing shirts, and the sight of them completely razed to the ground the courage of Sancho Panza, whose teeth began to chatter like those of a man with the four days ague. And the chattering increased when they saw them mounted and carrying flaming torches, and that behind them came a litter covered with mourning, attended by six other mounted men clad in crepe down to the feet of their mules, whose slow gait showed them clearly not to be horses. All these mourners were chanting in low and sorrowful tones, and their extraordinary appearance, the unseasonableness of the hour and the isolation of the spot, were indeed enough to fill Sancho's heart with terror and his master's as well and, save in Don Quijote's case, they did, for Sancho at once gave himself up for lost, himself and all his good resolves. His master however experienced just the reverse, for at that moment it flashed before his imagination that here indeed was an adventure right out of his books : the litter was a bier whereon lay some dead or sorely wounded knight whose revenge was reserved for him alone. Without a word he couched pike, secured himself in the saddle and with intrepid air and countenance took his stand in

the road along which the mourners were sure to pass. And when they were now near at hand, he raised his voice and cried :

‘ Attend knights, whoever ye may be, and account for yourselves — whence ye come and whither bound, and name him ye carry on that bier. It looks as if either ye or he were guilty of knavery, and ’tis fitting and necessary that I know which, that I may chastise you for your crime or avenge you for the evil ye have suffered. ’ ‘ We are in haste,’ answered one of them, ‘ the inn is far and we have no time to answer all those questions ; ’ and pricking his mule he passed on. This of course greatly incensed our knight and seizing the man’s bridle he cried : ‘ Stay, I tell you, and be more courteous. Ye shall answer mine inquiries or fight me, one and all. ’ The mule was shy and finding herself held up so abruptly, took fright, throwing her rider back over her haunches. A foot-servant, seeing him thrown, began to revile the occasioner, who now in livid rage with pike on rest fiercely threw himself against one of the mourners and brought him to the ground sorely wounded. He then turned himself loose upon the others and the speed wherewith he attacked and routed them was wonderful to behold. It seemed for the moment as if wings had been lent Rocinante, so lightly and swiftly did he move.

All the shirted fraternity, being cowards and without arms, found it easy quickly to leave the fray and in a second were running with their torches over the plain, like masqueraders on a night of festival and rejoicing. On the other hand they that were enveloped in skirts and gowns, moved less nimbly, and our knight without danger to himself was able to drub them and drive them all off, though much against their wills, for they supposed him not man but devil come to rob them of the corpse. Looking on in amazement at his lord’s exploits, Sancho murmured : ‘ Truly this my master is as valorous and valiant as he says. ’ The master now observed the man that had been thrown (for his torch lay burning at his side), and riding up pointed the pike at his face, calling on him to surrender, else he would pierce him through. To this the fallen one replied : ‘ I am surrendered enough as it is, since my broken leg will not let me move.

If you be a Christian knight, I beseech you to spare my life, else you will commit a great sacrilege, I being a licentiate of the first orders.' 'What in the devil brings a churchman here?' 'What but mine ill-luck, sir?' 'Then a second time and more harshly I threaten you, if you don't answer mine every question.'

'Your worship will be promptly satisfied,' began the mourner, 'for I shall tell you that though I said I had taken the licentiate degree, I am in fact but a bachelor, by name Alonso Lopez and a native of Alcobendas. I am on my way from Baeza with eleven other priests (they that fled with the torches) as escort to the body that lies on that litter — a gentleman that died and was buried in Baeza, whose bones we are carrying to their final resting-place in Segovia, his home.' 'And who killed him?' 'God, by means of pestilence.' 'In that case the Lord has relieved me of avenging his death, which I should have done had another slain him. Since it was He, there's naught to do but shrug my shoulders and be silent, the same as though He had slain me. I am a knight of La Mancha, Don Quijote hight, I would have your worship know, and mine office and profession is to go through the world redressing injuries and making crooked things straight.' 'I don't know how that can be,' said the bachelor, 'since from straight you have turned me crooked, leaving me with a broken leg that won't straighten all the days of my life; and the injury you have redressed in my case is to leave me injured in such a way that I shall remain so for ever. Disaventure rather it has been to meet with one so daft on adventures.'

'Different things have different issues,' replied Don Quijote; 'the mischief, señor bachelor Alonso Lopez, lay in your coming by night, with chanting, mourning surplices and torches burning like things evil and of the other world. I couldn't but fulfil mine obligation to attack you, for had you been very devils of hell, as indeed I from the first supposed you were, still should I have thrown myself upon you.' 'Since thus my fate willed it,' returned the other, 'prithee, sir errant, that have erred so toward me, help me from under this mule, where one of my legs is pinned 'twixt stirrup and saddle.' 'How long did you think to

wait before telling me ? I might have talked on till to-morrow.'

Sancho was now summoned but didn't sweat himself for he was busy plundering a sumpter-mule laden with provisions. First he turned his long cloak into a sack and putting therein all it would hold, he placed it on his ass and hastened, presently, to his master's call. Assisting the bachelor to extricate himself, he mounted him on his mule, handing him his torch. Don Quijote told the poor unfortunate to follow the retreat of his companions, of whom on his part he must ask pardon for the wrong which he couldn't have helped doing them. To this the bachelor replied : ' But let your worship take notice that you are excommunicated for having laid violent hands on sacred things, according to the canon : *Si quis suadente diabolo*, etc.' ' I know not this Latin,' returned his victor, ' but I know well that strictly speaking 'twas not my hands but this pike. Secondly I was not aware that I was offending priests and things of the church, which I regard and revere like the Catholic and faithful Christian that I am. From the first I took you for phantoms and monsters of the other world. But even so, I cannot but recall what befell Cid Ruy Diaz what time he broke the royal ambassador's chair in the presence of His Holiness the Pope : he was excommunicated — yet the good Rodrigo de Bivar bore himself like a noble courageous knight that day.' And Sancho added : ' Would you and your friends know who is the dauntless one that made them what they are, inform them he's no less than Don Quijote de La Mancha, otherwise known as the Knight of Sorry Aspect.' With this the bachelor rode away.

Don Quijote asked his squire what had moved him at this particular time to call him the Knight of Sorry Aspect. ' I'll tell you,' said Sancho ; ' as I stood looking at you a space by the light of your victim's torch, truly your worship had the sorriest aspect ever I beheld — owing no doubt to the exhaustion of this fight or maybe to the loss of so many teeth.' ' To neither, but probably the sage, whose duty it shall prove to be the chronicler of my life, thought it well that I take a professional name, like all the knights of the past. One called himself the Knight of the Flaming Sword, another the Unicorn Knight, a third he of the

Maidens. This one was known as the Knight of the Phoenix, the next he of the Griffin and still another the Knight of Death. By these names and their appropriate insignia their fame was blown throughout the world. Likewise this sage of mine must have put it on your tongue and in your thought to call me the Knight of Sorry Aspect, by which name I think to designate myself from this day forth. The better to square with it I purpose at the earliest opportunity to have depicted on my shield a perfect scarecrow of a figure.' ' 'Twould be a waste of time and money,' counselled the other, 'for without shield or figure they'll call you he of the Sorry Aspect just the same. Believe that I speak the truth, sir, for I promise your worship (and in jest be it spoken) that hunger and lack of molars offer such a speaking likeness that the other may be spared.' The knight smiled at Sancho's pleasantry, yet resolved to have that emblem as soon as was permitted and thereafter to call himself by that name.

Our champion was anxious to see if the body on the litter were a skeleton as the bachelor had said, but Sancho protested : ' Your worhip has just finished one the most to his safety of all the adventures I have seen. These gentlemen, though beaten and put to flight, may come to reflect how they were routed by a single hand, and in their shame may rally and give us a good deal to think about. The ass is as he should be, the mountains are near, hunger presses. There's naught to do but retire with a graceful measure of the feet and, The corpse to the crypt and the living to the loaf, as the saying is. ' Driving his ass before him he called to his master to follow, and the other obeyed without a word, thinking his leader in the right.

After journeying awhile 'twixt two low mountains the pair found themselves in a wide though sheltered valley and here they made their rest. Sancho at once lightened the ass's burden, and stretching on the green, with hunger as sauce, they breakfasted, dined, tead and supped in one meal, satisfying their stomachs with more than one of the panniers of cold meat that the priests, who seldom restrict their rations, had brought on their sumpter-mule. But now another misfortune overtook them,

by Sancho considered the worst one of all, and this was they had no wine to warm their hearts, nor even water to moisten their lips. But seeing that meadow covered with young green grass, the squire, thirst compelling him, said what will be told in the following chapter.

CHAPTER XX

The never-seen and unheard-of adventure that Don Quijote brought to an end with less danger to himself than ever did famous knight in the world

‘**A**LL this grass, sir,’ began the squire, ‘betokens a spring or brook hereabouts that keeps it green. ’Twill be well therefore that we move a bit further till we come to where we may slake this awful thirst of ours; ’tis certainly harder to bear than hunger.’ This counsel prevailed with Don Quijote, who leading Rocinante by the bridle and Sancho by the halter his ass, on which had been placed the remnants of their meal, felt their way slowly up the meadow, for the darkness prevented their distinguishing anything. They had not gone two hundred paces when they heard water falling as if from a great height. Their hearts greatly rejoiced but as they halted to get the direction, a hideous clangour smote their ears, dampening their pleasure, especially that of Sancho, who was by nature timid.

This sound consisted of a regular thud, thud, thud, mingled with the grating of iron and chains, which with the loud roar of the falling water would have inspired fear in the heart of any man, were he not Don Quijote. They had passed into the midst of a grove of tall trees, whose leaves now made a doleful sighing in the wind, and this sougling and the sounds, the darkness and the desolation, made their flesh creep, especially when they found that neither the thuds ceased nor the wind slept nor morning came. But Don Quijote, accompanied by his intrepid heart, leapt upon Rocinante, and embracing his buckler, inclined his lance and said: ‘Sancho friend, you must know that by the

the will of Heaven I was born in this our iron age to restore the age of gold or golden age as it is called. I am he for whom are reserved dangers and great and valiant deeds. I am he, I repeat, that is to revive the Knights of the Round Table, the Twelve of France and the Nine of Fame; that is to efface the memory of the Platirs, Tablantes, Olivantes and Tirantes, the Phœbuses and Belianises, together with the whole herd of famous knights-errant of former times, by achieving, in this mine own, feats of arms so mighty and marvellous as to eclipse the most brilliant of theirs.

‘ Mark well, faithful and loyal squire, the gloom of this night, its extraordinary stillness, the muffled sougning of the trees, the frightful sound of that water we are seeking, which plunges, one might think, from the lofty mountains of the moon, and lastly that ceaseless thud, thud, thud, that so wounds and afflicts our ears. These all together and each by itself are enought to inspire fear and cowardice in the breast of Mars himself—how much more in that of one unused to such hazards and adventures. But these dangers I depict are but incentives and incitements to my courage, for even now my heart bursts in my bosom with desire to close with this one, however difficult it may prove. So tighten Rocinante’s girth a bit and God be with thee. Wait for me three days, no more; if I am not here by that time, returning to our village do me the kindness and favour to go thence to el Toboso and say to that incomparable lady Dulcinea that her captive knight died in attempting things to make him worthy to be called hers.’

When Sancho heard these his master’s words, he began to weep with the deepest, tenderest feelings in the world, but at length managed to say: ‘ Señor, I cannot see why your worship would engage in this dreadful adventure. It is night now, none sees us, we can easily turn aside and avoid this peril, even if we shouldn’t drink in three days. As there is none to observe us, the less will there be any to call us cowards. Besides, I’ve often heard our priest, well known to your worship, say in his sermons that he that seeks danger, perishes therein. ’Twould be foolish to tempt God by engaging in this intemperate enterprise,

from which you can survive only by a miracle, and Heaven has surely performed enough for you lately, in letting you off from being blanketed as I was and in bringing you forth victor, hale and whole, from amongst the many foes that followed the corpse.

‘ Should this not move or soften your heart, let it relent in the thought and knowledge that scarce will you pass out of sight when I from pure terror shall deliver my soul to whoever will take it. I left my country, my children and my wife to come and serve your worship, hoping to be worth more, not less ; but as covetousness they say breaks the sack, so has it broken all my expectations. Just as they were highest about getting that wretched benighted isle, so often promised of your worship, I find that by way of pay and in exchange for it you are ready to leave me in a place miles away from human traffic. By the only God, master, do me not this scath. If you still persist in engaging in this affair, at least put it off till daylight, which the science I learned when a shepherd tells me can’t be more than three hours away, for the Horn’s mouth is over the head and shows midnight in the line of the left paw. ’

‘ When the night is so black that not a star shines, how can you see where this line runs or where the head and mouth are ? ’
‘ Fear has many eyes, ’ explained the other, ‘ and if it can see things under the earth, how much more things above in the sky. Moreover, common sense tells us it must lack little of day. ’
‘ Lack what it may, my son, it shan’t be said of me now or any other time that tears and entreaties swerved me from the duty of a knight. I beg you be still therefore, since God, having put in my heart to engage forthwith in this frightful and unparalleled exploit, will see to my safety and console your sadness. All you must do is tighten Rocinante’s girth and abide where you are, whither I am sure to return, dead or alive. ’

Seeing his master’s resolution and how little his own tears, advice and entreaties availed, the squire decided to employ his cunning and, if possible, compel the other to wait till morn. And so, while tightening the horse’s girth, skilfully and unobserved he wound the halter round the fore-feet, so that when his rider stirred him, the beast only moved by jumps. Seeing the success

of his trick, Sancho said : ‘ Mark, señor, how Heaven, touched by my tears and prayers, ordains that Rocinante shall not budge. If you persist in spurring and striking, you’ll offend fortune and kick against the pricks, as they say.’ The knight was indeed dismayed, for the more he spurred, the less the nag moved, till his rider, not suspecting a ruse, decided to be patient, waiting for morn or at least till the beast would travel. ‘ Since Rocinante can do naught but stand still,’ he remarked, ‘ I am content, Sancho, to wait till dawn smiles, though I weep that she so long delays.’

‘ There’s no reason to weep,’ responded the other, ‘ for I’ll divert your worship till daylight by telling stories, unless you prefer to dismount and, lying on the grass after the manner of knights-errant, snatch a wink of sleep. You will then feel restored when the time comes to enter on the mad feat that awaits you.’ ‘ Whom do you urge to dismount and sleep? am I perchance of those knights that take a siesta in the midst of perils? Sleep you, that were born to sleep, or do what you please, for I shall do whatever most accords with mine aim.’ ‘ Be not vexed, sir, for I didn’t mean to anger you.’ And coming close the squire laid one hand on the pommel of the saddle and the other on the cantle, thus embracing his master’s left thigh. Nor did he thenceforth dare move a finger’s breadth from him, so thoroughly shaken was he by the ceaseless thud, thud, thud.

The knight now called on his henchmann to tell him a tale or two as he had promised, and the other said he would if only his fear at the noises would die down. ‘ But in any case,’ said he, ‘ I’ll pluck up spirit enough to tell a certain tale which, if I can manage to relate it and it doesn’t get away, is the best story in the world. And let your worship attend now, for here I begin. What was, was, and may the good that is to come be for us all, and the evil for him that seeks it. Your worship must know, my lord, that the beginning given by the ancients to their fables was not by chance, but was always a certain maxim of Cato the Roman Qenser, which says, Evil for him that seeks it; which fits our present strait as a ring the finger, to show your worship you should quiet yourself, nor go in search of evil in

any quarter, but quit this place by some other road, since no one forces us to follow this where so many fears assault us.'

'Continue your story, Sancho, and leave the road to me,' commanded his master. 'I say then,' again began the squire, 'that in a village of Estramadura dwelt a goatherd, that is to say, he tended goats, the which shepherd or goatherd, as the story goes, was named Lope Ruiz, and this Lope Ruiz was in love with a shepherdess by the name of Torralva, the which shepherdess Torralva was the daughter of a rich grazier, and this rich grazier...' 'If that's the way you tell it,' interrupted the other, 'saying everything twice over, you'll not have done in two days. Give in without these interruptions, like a man of sense, or drop it entirely.' 'I tell it in the manner all stories are told in my country,' replied Sancho, 'and I know no other way. Nor is it fair to expect me to introduce new customs.' 'Tell it as you please,' returned his master, 'and proceed, for fate wills that I must hear you out.'

'So it came to pass, lord of my soul, that, as I have already said, this shepherd was in love with Torralva the shepherdess — a wild, buxom lass with something mannish about her; in fact she had little moustaches. I seem to see her now.' 'Then you knew her?' 'Nay, but he that told me this tale said it was so absolutely true that when I related it to another, without the slightest hesitation I could affirm and swear I had seen it all. Well then, as the days came and went, and the devil, who entangles all things, was not sleeping, this time he entangled them so badly that the love the shepherd bore the shepherdess turned to loathing and ill-will, and the reason, according to evil tongues, was that she played him little tricks that crossed the line and trespassed on forbidden ground.'

'So strong was the shepherd's distaste that, to get out of her sight, he resolved to leave the country and go where his eyes might not rest on her again. Finding herself disdained by Lope, Torralva straight began to love him more than ever.' 'Tis woman's disposition to disdain those that love them and love those that despise them. Pass on, Sancho.' 'It came about then that the shepherd carried out his resolve, and driving his goats

before set out through the plains of Estramadura bound for Portugal. Learning of this, Torralva followed at a distance on foot and barefoot with staff in hand and scrip round neck, and in the scrip she carried, according to report, a piece of looking-glass and a broken comb and some little bottle or other of paint for her face. But let her carry what she did : I shan't set about to prove it.

' All I shall affirm is that they tell how the shepherd and his flock arrived at the river Guadiana, which at that season of the year was swollen and peeped over its banks. Now at the spot where he stood was neither ferry nor boat nor anyone to carry him and his flock to t'other side. He was considerably distressed at this, since he saw Torralva coming nearer and nearer and knew she would pester him with tears and entreaties. So he kept up his search till he found a fisherman and boat, but the boat was too small to hold more than one person and one goat. Nevertheless Lope bargained with its owner to carry over the entire flock of three hundred. The fisherman stepped into the craft and rowed across with the first goat. Then he returned and took another ; again came back and again went to t'other side with a goat. Let your worship keep count of the number of crossings, for if you miss a single one, the story will come to an end and it will be impossible to relate another word of it. I proceed then and I say that the landing across the river was muddy and slippery, and the fisherman lost a good deal of time every trip. Yet he returned for another goat and another and another.' ' Call them all over,' suggested Don Quijote ; ' don't keep going and coming in this fashion or you won't have finished in a year.' ' How many are over there now ?' asked Sancho. ' How the devil do I know ?' exclaimed the knight.

' There it is, just as I told you,' complained the squire ; ' I asked you to keep an exact account, and now by God I've ended the story and there's no more to be told.' ' How can that be ? is it so essential to know just how many goats have crossed, that if one be skipped, you cannot proceed ?' ' Yes, señor, quite impossible, for when I questioned your worship as to how many goats were on the further side and you answered you

didn't know, instantly quitted my memory whatever remained to be told ; and on my faith 'twas most excellent and pleasing. ' ' Then the story is really ended ? ' ' As ended as my mother, ' replied the squire. ' Of a truth then, you have told the rarest tale, story or history ever man conceived in the world, and such a manner of relating and concluding it won't be seen again nor ever has been seen till now, though I should have expected no less from your sure understanding, somewhat excited doubtless by this unremitting clangour. ' ' Maybe so, ' rejoined Sancho ; ' I can only say there's nothing more to tell, for the tale always ends just where the mistake in the toll begins. ' ' Let it end where it will and welcome. And now let us see if Rocinante can move. ' Don Quijote clapped spurs but the beast only gave a jump and stood still, so firmly was he tied.

Whether 'twas the cold of the morning now approaching, or because he had supped on laxatives, or else, and this seems the likelier, 'twas simply nature, the desire and inclination came to Sancho just then to do what no other could do for him, but so large was the fear that had entered his heart, he dared not budge from his master's side by so much as the black of his nail. Yet to think of leaving undone what he so much longed to do, was equally out of the question. So what to keep the peace he actually did was to drop his right hand from the back of the saddle and deftly and cautiously loosen the single running cord that held up his breeches, which at once fell to the ground, binding his feet like Rocinante's. He next raised his shirt as best he could, exposing his buttocks, no smallish ones, to the night air. And now he trusted that the worst of escaping from his agonising cramps was over. But at once a greater difficulty arose : it seemed to him he couldn't get relief without a loud report, and in fear thereof he gritted his teeth, contracted his shoulders and held his breath all he possibly could. In spite of these precautions however, his ill-luck was such that there escaped a little low noise, quite different from the thunderous one that was causing their great terror.

Nevertheless Don Quijote heard the sound, and said : ' What rumbling is that, Sancho ? ' ' I cannot tell, sire ; something new

I guess, for adventures and disadventures never come singly.' Again the sufferer tried his luck and this time fared so well that without further sound he was delivered of his woful burden. But as his master's sense of smell was no weaker than his sense of hearing, and as Sancho was tightly sewed to him and the vapours mounted well-nigh straight up, some must necessarily have reached his nostrils. Scarce did they arrive when the knight came to the rescue by pressing with his two fingers, and then, in rather nasal tones, addressed his squire: 'Methinks you are hugely frightened, boy.' 'I am indeed, but why does your worship notice it now more than formerly?' 'Because you smell worse, and not of amber.' 'Maybe I do, but the fault is not mine but your worship's, in dragging me about after hours and at this unnatural pace.' 'Remove yourself a few steps,' my friend, quoth the knight, still holding his nose, 'and hereafter bethink you more of your own person and what is due mine. Your constant companionship with me has engendered this over-familiarity.' 'I'll wager your worship thinks I have done something with my person I should not have.' 'Talking will only make it worse,' replied the other.]

In these and similar colloquies master and man spent that night, and when Sancho saw morning approach, with great circumspection he untied Rocinante's feet and retied his own breeches-cord. As soon as the horse found himself free, though nothing spirited himself, he apparently received new life from some outside source, and commenced to paw for, begging his pardon, to caper he knew not how. When his rider perceived him stir, he took it for good omen, thinking he should at once undertake the dread enterprise. As it was day now and objects showed distinctly, he observed that 'twas among tall umbrageous chestnuts they had been enshadowed. He marked as well that the thumping did not cease and as its cause was till not apparent, without further detention he made Rocinante feel the spurs. Before going however, he turned and commanded Sancho to abide there three days at the outside as previously bidden, adding that if at the expiration of that time he hadn't returned, he would know God had been pleased that he should end his

days in that perilous exploit. He again charged his squire with the embassy and message to Dulcinea ; as to pay for services he need not fear, for in a testament drawn before their last setting-out he would find himself amply rewarded for the period of his office-tenure. But if, on the other hand, God delivered him from this forlorn hope safe and scot-free, the other might think of the promised isle as more than a certainty.

Sancho wept anew at these moving words of his good master and resolved in his heart not to leave till the end and conclusion of the whole affair. From this regret and honourable resolution of Panza the author of this history infers that he came of good family, must at least have been full-blooded Christian. His tenderness softened his master somewhat but not so much that he showed hesitancy toward what lay before him. Dissimulating his feelings as he could, he rode in the direction of the sounds. Sancho followed on foot, as usual towing the ass, his constant fellow in both good and evil times. When the procession had proceeded some distance through the chestnuts and other umbrageous trees, they came to a ravine at the foot of a high cliff, over which plunged a mighty rush of water, and near where it fell stood a few rude buildings. 'Twas from these ramshackle affairs the incessant grinding and thumping proceeded. Rocinante taking fright balked, but his master quieted him and little by little rode nearer and nearer, commending his whole heart to his lady, imploring her favour toward this dread act and enterprise, and by the way also commending himself to God not to forget him. Sancho did not quit his side but with outstretched neck kept peering 'twixt Rocinante's legs, to discover if possible what it was that held them in such uncertainty and fear.

They thus had advanced perhaps a hundred paces further when, on doubling a corner, they saw unmistakeably the certain cause of the hideous and to them frightful sound that had kept them in terror and anxiety the whole night through. O reader, if you'll not be aggrieved and annoyed, 'twas naught but six fulling-hammers, pounding away, one after the other. Our knight, on realising this, was overwhelmed, and when Sancho looked up, his head was lowered on his breast in mortification. In turn

he looked at Sancho and saw cheeks puffed out and a mouth full of laughter, almost on the point of bursting. His own feelings had no such sway over him that at the sight of his squire he could refrain from laughter himself, and when the other heard him begin, he broke forth into such a fit of roaring that he had to hold his sides lest they split. Four times he stilled himself and as many burst forth again with the same violence as before. At this the knight wished himself to the devil, especially when he heard his servant mock him saying : ‘ You must know, O Sancho friend, that I was born by the will of Heaven to revive in this our iron age the golden or age of gold. I am he for whom are kept dangers, deeds and mighty feats of arms...’ repeating all or nearly all the speech his master had delivered when first they heard those fearsome blows.

Finding himself made a fool of, our knight felt so cholerick and chagrined that, raising his pike, he dropped two such whacks that had Sancho caught them on his head instead of on his shoulders, his master would have been released from any wage-settlement, unless with his heirs. When Sancho found how heavily he was paying for his fun, fearing lest his master wouldn’t stop there, in real humility he thus pleaded : ‘ Calm yourself, señor ; I was only jesting. ’ ‘ And because you were, I am not. Tell me, merry lad, had this been an adventure of wild peril, instead of fulling-hammers, think you I should not have shown courage enough to attack and achieve it ? Being the gentleman I am, am I perchance supposed to recognise and distinguish noises, and be able to tell whether fulling-mills or not ? Much less should I, that never have seen them in my life, which is the truth, than you, churlish peasant, that were born and brought up among them. Or come, cause these six hammers to be changed into as many giants and let them attack me, one by one or all together, and if I don’t send them head-over-heels, mock me as you choose. ’

‘ Let it be quits, master, ’ urged the squire ; ‘ I confess I went a little too far. But tell me, now we’re friends, and from all adventures may God deliver you as hale and whole as He has from this, was there naught to laugh at ? Wouldn’t it make a

good story, when you think of the great fear we were or at least I was in ? as to your worship methinks you neither feel nor know fear or fright.' ' I won't deny that what occurred was fit subject for laughter, but 'twas certainly not good matter for a story, though all persons are not shrewd enough to know just where to place things.' ' At any rate your worship knew where to place that pike, aiming at my head but, thanks to God and the agility wherewith I dodged, striking my shoulders. But all will come out in the washing, so let that pass. As I have heard say, He loves thee well that makes thee weep ; the more, since a master, after harsh word to a servant, is wont straightway to hand him a pair of breeches. What they hand after blows is beyond me, unless knights-errant give them isles, or kingdoms on the mainland.'

' The dice can easily fall in such a way,' said Don Quijote, ' that all you say will come true. Forgive me the past for you are wise enough to know that a man's first action is beyond his control, and for the future, that you may check and restrain yourself from overmuch speaking reflect on this one thing : that in all the books of chivalry I have read, and they are legion, I never met with a squire that gossiped as much with his master as you gossip with yours. And truly I hold this large fault both in you and in me : in you that you hold me so cheap ; in me that I inspire so little reverence. Think on Gandalin, squire to Amadis and count of Insula Firme. One reads that he spoke to his master cap in hand, inclining his head and bending his body Turkish fashion. What, too, shall we say of Gasabal, squire to Don Galaor, who was so little given to speech and so self-effactive that the whole history, as tedious as true, mentions him but once ?

' You must see from what I say, my son, there's need to distinguish 'twixt master and man, lord and servant, knight and squire. Henceforth we must act with greater respect and not give ourselves rope ; for however I may vent my wrath, 'tis bound to go hard with the pitcher. The rewards and benefits I have promised will come in due course, and should they fail, you are sure to receive wages in the manner already outlined.'

'All you say is well and good,' responded the other, 'but in case the season for the rewards didn't arrive and it became necessary to apply to the wages, how much did a squire to knight-errant earn in the old days? and was his salary reckoned by the month, or by the day as with hod-carriers.'

'My impression is that squires never really were on a salary but looked rather to favours for a living. If I remembered you in the sealed testament at home, 'twas with a sense of the precariousness of this mode of life, for as yet I'm not sure chivalry will succeed in these calamitous times. You yourself should know ere this that there's no more hazardous existence in the world than that of adventurers, and I wouldn't have my soul for petty omissions suffer in the next.' 'What you say of adventurers must be true,' remarked the other, 'since merely the sound of fulling-hammers can startle and confuse the heart of no less valiant an errant than your worship. But henceforth rest assured I shall never open my lips to make light of your affairs but ever to honour you as my master and natural lord.' 'By so doing you shall live long upon the face of the earth, for masters are to be respected only second to parents and like unto them.'

CHAPTER XXI

The noble venture and rich reward of Mambrino's helmet, along with other things that befell our invincible knight

AT this juncture it began to rain slightly and Sancho moved that they pass under cover of the fulling-mills, but these were invested with such abhorrence by Don Quijote that this plan was the last to which he would consent. Instead they took a road leading to the right out onto to another like the one they had travelled the day before. In the near distance Don Quijote descried a man, mounted and wearing on his head something that shone like gold. Scarce had our knight sighted him when he turned to Sancho and said; 'Methinks there's no refrain that hasn't some element of truth, since all are maxims hewn from

experience, the mother of all knowledge. And especially true is the one that says, When one door closes, another opens. My drift is that if last evening fortune slammed in our faces the door of the adventure we were on the track of by putting us off with fulling-mills, she now opens wide another portal to a better and surer one, which if I fail to pass through, mine the blame, since I cannot lay it to mine ignorance of hammers or the darkness of the night. All this I say because, if I mistake not, yonder approaches one that wears the helmet of Mambrino concerning which, you remember, I took a certain oath.'

'Look well to what you say and better to what you do,' counselled Sancho, 'for I wouldn't have other mills finish the fulling of us and knock us out of our wits.' 'The devil take you, man! what have fulling-mills to do with helmets?' 'Nothing, so far as I know,' replied Sancho; 'but by my faith if I could talk as I used to, I might say such words that your worship would see you are mistaken.' 'How can I be, malignant traitor? tell me, see you not yon cavalier approaching on a dapple-grey steed and on his head a golden helmet?' 'What I see and discern is naught but an ordinary man riding a grey ass like mine own with something on his head that glistens.' 'Well, that is Mambrino's helmet; retire and leave him to me and you'll find how without saying a word, to save time, I shall conclude this adventure, and the long-coveted helmet will be mine.' 'I'll attend to the retiring,' rejoined the squire, 'but please God, I say again, that the adventure prove sweet marjoram and no mills.' 'I've already asked you, brother, not to mention even by a thought those fulling-mills, or I swear, and I say no more, to full the very soul out of you.' Sancho held his peace, lest his master make good an oath which he had hurled at him so roundly.

Now these are the facts regarding the helmet, the horse and the cavalier seen of our Don Quijote. In that district were two villages, one of which was so small that it had neither apothecary nor barber, and since its neighbour had, the barber of the larger served the lesser; in which at this time was a man that had need to be bled and another that had need to be shaved, and the barber-surgeon was on his way thither. He carried his

brass basin with him and, since it rained and he would not spoil his hat (which must have been new), in its stead he wore the basin, which being burnished shone for half a league. He rode a grey ass, as Sancho said; and thus it was that Don Quijote pictured a knight, a dapple-grey steed and a helmet of gold, accommodating everything, as he did, to the ill-starred wanderings of his unbridled thoughts.

So it befell that when the poor knight was at hand, our champion without stopping to parley put Rocinante to a gallop, lowering his pike with the evident purpose of driving it straight through him. In mid-career and without slackening the speed of his onset he cried: 'Defend yourself, base creature, or at once deliver of your free will that which is so justly my due.' The barber, beholding this sudden apparition descending upon him before he had the least thought or suspicion thereof, saw no way of avoiding the pike save by falling from his ass. Scarce had he reached the ground when he leapt to his feet more nimbly than a buck, and more fleetly than the wind vanished over the plain.

In his hurried departure Mambrino left his helmet on the ground, whereat Don Quijote was wholly satisfied, declaring that the pagan had with sound judgment imitated the beaver who, on finding himself hard pressed by hunters, bites off that for which his natural instinct tells him he is pursued. He ordered Sancho to pick up the casque, in handing which the squire said: 'By God, 'tis a good basin all right enough: worth eight reals if a farthing.' The knight, placing it on his head, turned it around to find the visor, but as his search was unrewarded, he observed: 'The first paynim to whose measure this famous helmet was forged, must have boasted an uncommonly large head, but worse than that it lacks a face-guard.'

When Sancho heard him speak of the basin as a helmet, he couldn't restrain his laughter, but bethinking him of his master's wrath he stopped in the midst of it. 'Why do you laugh, Sancho?' 'I was thinking what a whopping head he must have had, the pagan owner of that helmet, which looks for all the world like a barber's basin.' 'Do you know what I fear? it has struck me that this famous piece of enchanted helmet by an

extraordinary accident fell into the hands of some unappreciative person who, seeing it of purest gold, ignorantly melted one half that he might realise on it, and with what was left made what looks, as you say, like a barber's basin. For all that, its metamorphosis can make no difference to me that know its true value, and in the first village that boasts a smithy I'll so rehabilitate it that the helmet made by the god of smithies for the god of battles won't surpass, nay, touch it. Till then I shall wear it as best I can ; a half-loaf is better than none and even such an helmet will protect me from a random stone.'

' Unless,' excepted Sancho, ' 'twere thrown from a sling with the force of those thrown in the battle of the two armies, what time they signed the cross on your worship's molars and smashed the cruet containing that blessed balsam that made me vomit my insides.' ' The loss of the balsam doesn't much worry me,' returned the other, ' since as you are aware I have the recipe in my memory.' ' So have I, but if ever I try to make or taste it during the rest of my life, may this be my last hour. More by token I very much doubt whether I shall be placed in a situation to need it, for with all my five senses I intend to keep from wounds or wounding another. As to being tossed in a blanket I've naught to say, for such accidents are not easily prevented, and if they come, all you must do is tuck in your shoulders, hold your breath, close your eyes and let yourself go whither fate and the coverlet send you.' ' 'Tis a poor sort of Christian my Sancho makes, never forgetting an injury. Learn that 'tis the part of noble and generous souls to overlook trifles. What foot was lamed as a result of that incident ? what rib was broken or head pounded that you forgive not this jest ? Jest it was, seen in the proper light, pleasant fun, and had I not so regarded it, I should have returned and wrought greater havoc in your vengeance than did the Greeks for the rape of Helen ; of whom, were she living now or my Dulcinea then, less would be heard ; ' and here he drew a sigh and breathed it toward heaven.

' Let the tossing be set down as fun,' retorted the other, ' since the vengeance cannot be as fact, but I know the kind of fun and fact it was. I know too it can't be erased from my memory any

more than from my shoulders. But bidding this farewell, tell me, your worship, what are we to do with this dapple-grey steed that looks so uncommonly like a common grey ass, left here to shift for itself by that Martino you unsaddled ? From the way he made the dust fly and took the hose of Villadiego, methinks he'll never come back, and by my beard the grey is a good one.' ' 'Tis not my practice to despoil my victims, nor is it knightly to deprive them of horse and mounts, save where the victor, having lost his own, appropriates that of the vanquished as lawful prize of war. This being the rule, Sancho, 'twere better not to take this horse or ass or whatever you choose to call him, for, as soon as his owner sees us gone, he'll return for him.' ' God knows I should like to steal the brute,' complained the servant, ' or at least exchange him for mine, which seems to me the poorer of the two. Truly how strict are the laws of chivalry that don't allow the swapping of one ass for another ! Might I at least swap trappings I wonder.'

' As to that I cannot advise with certainty, but in case of doubt and until better informed, I should say you might make the division were the need extreme.' ' So extreme, that were they trappings for my person, it couldn't be greater.' And sanctioned by this permission Sancho at once changed hoods, as the saying is, decking his beast out in a thousand ways till he made another ass of him. This done, they breakfasted on the remnants of the sumpter-mule's larder and drank of the brook of the fulling-hammers, not looking that way in their loathing of them for the terror they had inspired. And now, all melancholy and angry passions gone, they mounted and rode forth, taking, as mark of chivalry, no particular way. They followed whither led by Rocinante's will, which controlled the wills of Don Quijote and the ass, always trotting after in friendship and good company. They soon were back on the highway and pursued it without aim or object, but as they rode the squire said to his master :

' Señor, is your worship willing that I talk a little ? Since you laid that harsh ban of silence upon me, more than four things have rotted in my stomach, and I don't wish the same fate to overtake one that I now have on the tip of my tongue.' ' Out

with it then, but be quick, for speech to be spicy must be brief. ' Well, what I want to say is that for some days past I've been considering how little is gained by wandering in search of adventures out on these deserts and cross-roads where, though the most perilous occasions are met and surmounted, there's nobody around to see or learn of them. Thus are they sure to sink into everlasting silence, to the hurt of your ambition and the worship they deserve. It strikes me, saving your better judgment, 'twould be more profitable to hire out to some emperor or other or a prince with a war on his hands, in whose service you could show the puissance of your person, your great prowess and greater understanding. When these are seen by our lord, of necessity he'll enrich us, each according to his merits ; nor will there be lacking one to set down in writing your worship's deeds as a memorial for ever. Of mine I say nothing, since they never pass squirely bounds ; though let me state right here, that were it chivalry custom to describe the deeds of the shield-bearers, mine I believe would not be passed in silence. '

' You say not ill, Sancho ; but before things come to this head, 'twill be necessary by way of probation to wander the world over on adventurous quest, for then the knight by his occasional victories may win such name and fame that when he repairs to the court of some great monarch, his works will have gone before, and scarce will the children see him enter the city's gate when all will surround him shouting : ' All hail to the Knight of Phœbus or the Serpent ! ' (or any other device beneath which he has achieved his great feats of arms) ; ' this is he, ' they will cry, ' that single-handed vanquished the huge giant Brocabruno of mighty power ; that delivered the great mameluke of Persia out of his heavy enchantment lasting nearly nine hundred years. ' And so from youth to youth will be blown the praise of his deeds, and the king, hearing the outcry, will step to the window of the royal palace, and seeing and recognising the cavalier by his armour and the device on his shield, he is sure to cry : ' What ho ! ye knights of the court ! sally forth to receive the flower of chivalry, yonder approaching. ' Thereupon all will issue forth, and the king, receiving the heroic adventurer half-way down the

staircase, will closely embrace him and wish him peace, kissing him on the forehead.

‘ His Highness will then lead him to the apartment of the queen, whom he will find with her daughter the infanta, who must needs be one of the most beautiful and discreet maidens that with difficulty can be found in the larger part of the known world. And now ’twill come about that, instantly their eyes meet, each will appear to the other a thing more divine than human, and without knowing how both will be entangled in the inextricable net of love. Dire distress will reign in their hearts, at a loss as to how to communicate and make known their pains and desires. Thence they doubtless will lead him to some richly adorned chamber where, having stripped him of his mail, they’ll fetch a rich scarlet mantle and, looked he well in armour, how much finer in his doublet must he now appear !

‘ When evening draws nigh, he sups with the king, queen and princess, from whom he never takes his eyes, stealing glances at her ; and she does likewise for, as I have said, she’s most discreet. The tables being removed, there enters unannounced an ugly little dwarf, and behind him, between two giants, a beautiful duenna. This turns out to be an adventure arranged by a most ancient sage, wherein whoever succeeds will be accounted the foremost knight in the world: The king will command the company to make trial of the same, but none is successful save, to the great increase of his renown, this unknown stranger ; whereupon the infanta will be overjoyed, considering herself more than rewarded in having raised her thought so high. But the best of it is that this king or prince or whoever he may be is engaged in war to the death with another as powerful as himself, and the stranger-knight, after he has been at court a few days, asks leave to serve him in that strife. The king gives his sanction, in acknowledgment whereof the knight will kiss his hand.

‘ That same evening he bids farewell to his love the infanta through the barred gate of the garden that lies off her bed-chamber (and here ere this he has often spoken with her), with a much-trusted maid-in-waiting as go-between. At this leave-

taking he sighs, she swoons, the maid fetches water, frightened almost to death since morn approaches and for the sake of her mistress's good name she would not be discovered. But the infanta now comes to and through the grating stretches forth her lily-white hands, which the knight kisses a thousand and a thousand times, bathing them in tears. The pair will then plan how they are to inform each other of their good and evil fortunes, and the princess will plead with him not to be absent longer than there is absolute need, which the lover will promise with many vows. He kisses her hands again and takes leave with such deep emotion that he is like to expire.

‘Repairing to his chamber he throws himself on his bed, but cannot sleep from sorrow at parting. At an early hour he goes to take leave but is told, when he has bidden king and queen farewell, that the princess is indisposed and cannot receive him. The knight imagines that she has been made ill by his going : his heart is pierced and he all but betrays his anguish. The confidante, being present, notes all and hurries to tell her mistress, who weeps but recovers sufficiently to confess that as much as anything her anxiety is caused by ignorance of her lover's identity, whether he be of royal house or no. The confidante assures her that such courtesy, valour and gentle bearing could obtain only in a noble and princely personage. The child is eased of her burden and endeavours to rally that she may not arouse her parents' suspicions, and at the end of the second day she again appears in public.

‘The knight in the meanwhile is off to the wars. He fights and conquers the king's enemy, sacks many cities, is victor in countless battles ; returns to court, sees his lady-love by the same means as before, and together they agree he shall ask her in marriage as reward for his services. Alas, the king refuses because he is a stranger. By stealth, however, or otherwise the infanta comes to be his bride and in the end the father considers it a lucky strike, since he hears that the knight is the son of a valiant king of I know not what realm, for it hardly can be on the map. The father dies betimes, the infanta inherits the throne, in two words the knight is crowned king. And now comes the

rewarding his squire and all others that have helped him rise to his present eminence. He marries off the former to one of the maids-in-waiting, the same, doubtless, that served as go-between in their intrigue, the daughter of a noble duke. '

' That would suit me, ' broke in Sancho ; ' fair play say I and no favour. I'll bank on that, for it's to your worship, that styles himself the Knight of Sorry Aspect, that all this is going to befall. ' ' Have no doubt if it, my son, for precisely in that way and by those very steps errants have mounted and still mount to be kings and emperors. Our only need is to find the Christian or pagan king with a war and a lovely daughter on his hands. But there will be time to attend to that afterwards for, as I said, one must achieve fame in out-of-the-way parts first. This too is to be considered : supposing such a king to be found and granting that I have achieved incredible fame throughout the universe, I still don't see how it can be made to appear that I am of the line of or even second cousin to royalty, and the king will be loth to surrender his child till satisfied on this point, however much my deeds of fame deserve her. Indeed I fear that through this lack I may come to lose what mine arm has richly earned. True, I am a gentleman and of known family. I possess landed property and am of the rank that entitles me to five hundred pence in case of injury. And it is quite possible that the sage-author of my life may clear up mine ancestors and find that I am fifth or sixth in descent from a king.

' For I would have you know, Sancho, that lineage is of two kinds. One class in this world derives itself from princes and monarchs but lessens and lessens with time and ends in a point like a pyramid. The other class is composed of those that from obscure beginnings step by step mount to be great lords. The result is that the former were what now they are not and the latter are now what they were not at first. I, perchance, am of those whose origin will prove upon investigation to have been great and renowned, and with this the king, my future father-in-law, must rest content. In any case the infanta will be so far gone in love that despite her father and though she knew me the son of a water-carrier, she'll be sure to take me for lord

and husband. And if not, then comes the stealing and carrying her whither I please, since time or death will reconcile the parents.'

'At this point also,' suggested the other, 'would come in the advice given by certain sharpers, Never seek as a favour what you can seize by force; though even more pat would be the saying, Better a leap o'er the hedge than the prayers of good men. I say this because, in case your father-in-law refuse to hand over my lady the princess, there's naught to do but steal and away with her, as your worship plans. But the deuce of it is that till peace is made and you enjoy the quiet possession of your kingdom, the poor squire will have to whistle for the go-between, unless she sally forth with the infanta. In that event, and until Heaven ordains some other thing, they can weather the hard times together, since his master at the very start will, I take it, offer her as his legitimate spouse.' 'There's none to prevent it,' replied the master.

'Well then, if that's the scheme, there's naught to do but commend ourselves to God and let fortune run what road it will.' 'God guide her as I wish and you require,' said Don Quijote, 'and low let him lie that will not rise.' 'Low let him in God's name,' echoed Sancho; 'as for myself, I'm an old Christian, and to rise and be a count is all my shoulders will bear.' 'And more,' added the other; 'but even so it matters not, for I, being king, can give you the rank I please, without service or purchase by you. Once a count, ever a gentleman, let them say what they will, for by my faith they'll have to address you as Your Lordship, whether they like it or not.' 'What's more,' said Sancho, 'I shall know how to support the tittle.' 'Title is the word, not tittle,' suggested his master. 'That let it be,' accepted the squire; 'I shall fill the bill all right, since once on a time I served as beadle to a fraternity; and the gown sat on me so well everybody said I had carriage enough for a steward. What will it be when I put a duke's robe on my shoulders or dress myself in gold and pearls like a foreign count? 'll wager they'll come a hundred leagues for a look.' 'You'll certainly be a fine sight, but you'll have to shave often, for your

beard grows so tangled and unkempt that unless it feel the razor every other day at least, your origin will discover itself a bow-shot off.'

'What does that signify,' returned the squire, 'except that I must keep in my house a salaried barber, who, if needful, can follow me round like a nobleman's equerry.' 'And how do you chance to know that noblemen have equeries to follow them round?' 'That I shall tell you. In years gone by once upon a time I spent a month at the capital and there I noticed that whenever a certain very little lord, said to be a very great one, took a turn in the streets, a fellow on horseback traipsed after him: wherever he went the other followed like a tail. I asked them why he always went behind rather than before and they answered he was an equerry and that was how equeries rode. And then I learned it so well that I never forgot it.' 'I believe you're right,' admitted Don Quijote, 'and that you can have your barber just as he did his equerry, for customs didn't originate all together nor were they established in a day. You can be the first count always to have a barber in his wake, since to shave one's beard is surely a graver trust than to saddle one's horse.' 'Leave the shaving to me,' said the squire, 'and do you attend to the kingship and making me a count.' 'Agreed,' said his master who, raising his eyes, saw what will be described in the following chapter.

CHAPTER XXII

The liberty given a number of luckless louts that against their wills were being taken where they had no wish to go

CID Hamet Benengeli, the Arabic and Manchegan author, relates in the course of this weighty, high-flown, minute and cheerful fiction of his, that when the famous Don Quijote and his squire Sancho Panza ended the conversation reported at the close of the twenty-first chapter, the former lifted his eyes and saw on the road ahead near a dozen men afoot, strung together

on a chain like beads on a rosary, each one handcuffed besides. Two men on horseback and two on foot formed their escort, the former with firelocks, the latter with javelins and swords. As soon as Sancho descried them he said : ‘ Here comes a chain of prisoners on their way to the galleys by force of the king’s orders.’ ‘ By force, do you say ? is it possible the king employs force against any man ?’ ‘ I didn’t say just that, but that this gang as penalty for their crimes are bound to serve the king in the galleys perforce.’ ‘ Be that as it may, these persons, however taken, are taken by force and not of their volition.’ ‘ Well, what of it ?’ ‘ ’Tis the entering wedge whereby the chance is given me to exercise mine office, which is to redress wrongs and succour the oppressed.’ ‘ But consider, sir, that justice, which is the king’s self, isn’t wronging or injuring these rascals, but is merely giving them their due.’

The chain-gang was now before them and in most courteous terms Don Quijote asked their custodians that they be pleased to tell him the cause or causes inducing them to lead these persons in that manner. One of the horse-guards replied they were galley-slaves, subjects of the king, on their way to the galleys — that was all he had to say and all his inquisitor had a right to know. ‘ None the less,’ asserted our champion, ‘ my intention is to hear the cause of each one’s disgrace ;’ and to this he added other polite phrases that he might move them to tell what he desired. At length the second mounted guard spoke up : ‘ Though we have the register and warrant for each of these wretches, this is no time to produce and read them. Come and question the men themselves — they’ll tell you if in the mood, for fellows of this stripe love naught better than speaking and acting with double tongue.’

With this permission, which he’d have allowed himself had it not been granted, Don Quijote rode up to the leader of the line and asked for what sins he was cutting so sorry a figure. The fellow answered, for being in love. ‘ And for that alone ? if they lead one to the galleys for being in love, I should have rowed in them years ago.’ ‘ My affection was not of that order but for a washwoman’s basket of clean linen, which I embraced so tightly

that, had not justice forced me to drop it, 'twould still be by me. But I was caught in the act, they needed not the rack, the case was done before begun, they stripped my clothes for a hundred blows, to the tubs they cried, for three years beside.' 'And what are the tubs?' 'The galleys,' returned the prisoner — a young chap of not more than four and twenty, who declared himself a native of Piedrahita.

The knight moved on and interrogated the second, who, sad and melancholy, had naught to say for himself; so the first answered for him: 'He goes as a canary, sir; in other words as a musician and singer.' 'And do musicians and singers also have to go to the galleys?' 'Yes, sir, for there's naught worse than singing in the throes.' 'On the contrary I've heard that he that sings scares away trouble.' 'With us 'tis the reverse, for he that sings once, weeps all his life.' 'I don't follow you,' confessed Don Quijote. At this point one of the guards broke in, saying: 'Sir knight, to sing in the throes is the phrase of this godless people for confessing in the rack. Under such persuasion this fellow acknowledged he had been a cattle-stealer and was sentenced for six years in the galleys, besides two hundred stripes which he now wears on his back. He goes ever troubled and despondent because other rogues, both these and those left behind, taunt and humiliate him, holding him of no account because he came out with it and didn't have the stuff to say nay, which has no more letters than yea, they tell him, adding that the culprit that holds his life and death on his tongue and not in proofs and witnesses has an easy chance. And I must think they're somewhere near right.' 'I too,' remarked Don Quijote.

The third man of the crew was now applied to and at once in care-free manner he answered: 'I am to be five years with their ladyships the tubs because I lacked ten ducats.' 'I'll gladly give you twenty,' offered the knight, 'if that will get you out of your trouble.' To this the galley-slave replied: 'This case is like that of a man starving at sea, who has money enough but no place where he may buy food. My meaning is that had I had these twenty ducats at the right time, I could have greased the notary's pen and sharpened the lawyer's wits in such a way that now I

should be sunning myself in the Plaza de Zocodover in Toledo, not travelling this road like a leashed hound. But great is God ! patience and that is enough.'

Don Quijote now passed on to the fourth, a man of venerable aspect with white beard that fell below his breast. He wept when he heard the question and answered not, but the fifth criminal, serving him for a tongue, said : ' This honoured sire will spend four years in the galleys, having already gone the rounds clothed in pomp and on horseback.' ' By that,' suggested Sancho Panza, ' you mean he has been exposed to public shame.' ' Just so, and they gave him this punishment by reason of his having been an ear-agent, a body-agent in fact : all of which simply means that this gentleman goes as a pimp and for having the points and marks of a sorcerer about him.' ' Had you omitted the points and marks,' declared Don Quijote, ' the mere pimp of it wouldn't have warranted his being sent to row in the galleys ; rather he should have been sent as their admiral to command them, for the office of pimp is no common one but properly the business of discreet persons, is entirely necessary to a well-ordered community and shouldn't be engaged in save by those of birth.

' Moreover they should have a supercargo and examiner as do other offices, and a registry of them should be kept as of stock-brokers. Many evils would thus be prevented that will continue so long as the business is in the hands of foolish and ignorant persons — low women with little or no wit, pages and jesters of slight standing and experience, who, when an important affair arises requiring the most delicate handling, permit the crumbs to freeze ere they reach the mouth and know not their right hand from the left. I should like to say more on this subject, showing why they that hold this office under the republic should do so by special appointment. But this is no place to enlarge there-upon ; some day I hope to speak to one that can look to and remedy the trouble. Finally let me say that though it pains me to see these white hairs and venerable visage suffering oppression as a pimp, the fact that he was also a sorcerer reconciles me, for certain I am there are no occult powers in the world to move and influence the will, though simple folk think so. All that

these silly women and cunning charlatans do is to prepare certain poisonous concoctions wherewith they turn men mad, and then say they've forced them to desire, which would be equivalent to exercising power over their wills.'

'No different,' assented the old good-fellow, 'but as a matter of fact, though I can't deny I was employed as a pimp, a sorcerer I never was. And in my pimpery I didn't know I did harm. My sole aim was that everyone should enjoy himself and live in peace and tranquillity without strife or sorrow. Yet this goodwill hasn't prevented my going whence I cannot hope return, such my years and a bladder-trouble that gives me to rest.' So saying he wept anew and Sancho felt such compassion that producing a four-real piece from his bosom he gave it the old man out of charity. Passing to the next Don Quijote was answered with no less but rather more gaiety than before. 'I am here,' said he, 'because I fooled overmuch with two cousins of mine and two not my cousins, as a result of which playing I had such a tribe of kinsfolk on my hands they were past counting. The evidence was all against me, I lacked money and favour, I nearly lost my windpipe, they sentenced me for six years, I agreed, 'tis the punishment of my fault, I am still young, let life last and all will come straight. If your worship, sir knight, have aught wherewith to help us poor wretches, God will repay you in Heaven, and on the earth we in our prayers will ask Him for your life and health that they may continue as long and good as your presence deserves.' This speaker was dressed after the manner of a student, and one of the guards informed them that besides being an easy talker he was a very fine scholar.

Behind all these came a good-looking, cross-eyed fellow of thirty years, fastened somewhat differently from the others. A long chain wound around his body from one foot to a ring about his neck, about which was another ring, nicknamed keep-friend or friend's foot. From this hung two irons with two handcuffs attached to his waist, in which by means of a heavy padlock his hands were so tied that they couldn't reach his mouth nor could he lower his head to them. Don Quijote asked why this one had so many more shackles than the others. The

guard replied that he had committed more felonies than all the others combined ; indeed such and so bold a scoundrel was he that even now they were in continual fear lest he give them the slip.

‘ What such dreadful crimes can he have committed,’ enquired the other, ‘ if they have merited no greater punishment than being sent to the galleys ? ’ ‘ His sentence is for ten years, which amounts to civil death. As to his crimes, you need only be told that this good-fellow is the notorious Ginés de Pasamonte, alias Ginesillo de Parapilla. ’ ‘ Mister deputy,’ interposed the prisoner, ‘ let’s go slow, and not try to refine on names and surnames. Ginés is mine and not Ginesillo, and Pasamonte is my family, not Parapilla as you say. Let every man first look to himself and all will be well. ’ ‘ Speak with less impudence, you arch-thief, or I’ll hush you in a way that won’t please you. ’ ‘ Man proposes, but God disposes,’ returned the slave, ‘ yet sometime some one will know whether my name is Ginesillo de Parapilla or not. ’ ‘ Don’t they call you that, you liar ? ’ ‘ They do now, but I shall see to it that they don’t, or I’ll pluck their — but never mind. Sir knight, if you have aught to give us, out with it and God be with you for you bore me with all your questions into other persons’ lives. Would you know mine, that of Ginés de Pasamonte has been written by his own thumbs. ’

‘ The fellow says true,’ offered the guard ; ‘ he has written a biography that leaves naught to be desired ; the manuscript is at the prison in pawn for two hundred reals. ’ ‘ And I should hope to redeem it though it stood at as many ducats,’ said its author. ‘ Is it as good as all that ? ’ asked Don Quijote. ‘ So good, that deuce take Lazarillo de Tormes and all books of that kidney that have been or ever shall be. Mine rehearses facts, I want you to know, and facts so pleasant that fictions couldn’t match them. ’ ‘ What is the title of the book ? ’ again enquired Don Quijote. ‘ The Life of Ginés de Pasamonte. ’ ‘ And is it finished ? ’ ‘ How can it be when I am not ? it covers the period from my birth down to the time I was last up for the galleys. ’ ‘ So you’ve been there before ? ’ ‘ For four years, in the service of God and the king. But though I know what hardtack and courbash are,

I don't mind going again, since there I shall have ease wherewith to finish my book. In the galleys of Spain there's leisure and to spare. I shan't need much however, for though there's plenty to tell, I know it by heart. '

' You seem clever enough,' ventured Don Quijote. ' And cursed ; but ills ever follow on the heels of genius.' ' And of vice,' the deputy tacked on. ' I urged you, mister deputy, to go slow. The governors didn't give you that staff to maltreat poor fellows on the road but to lead us whither His Majesty commands. If you think not, by the life of me ! but stay — for some fine day the stains you got at the inn yonder will come out in the washing. Let everybody hold his tongue, live well and speak better, and let us jog on, for we've had enough of joking.' The deputy lifted his staff and was about to give Pasamonte an answer to his threats when Don Quijote rode between them, bidding him withhold, since it was natural that one with hands tied should have tongue loose. And now turning to the line of prisoners he said : ' From what you have told me, my dear brothers, I have at least gathered this, that though you are being punished for crimes, the trials you are to undergo are little to your taste and that you go to them with no pleasure, in fact quite against your wills. Moreover, most likely 'twas the cowardice of this one on the rack, the want of money on the part of the second, the little favour possessed by the third, in each case the perverted judgment of the magistrate, that caused your downfall and failure to obtain the justice that was yours.

' Now all this memorialises itself and keeps petitioning, nay, forcing me to exemplify through you the purpose for which Heaven launched me in the world, making me profess the order of chivalry which I now profess and take the vow I have now taken — the vow, namely, to champion the needy and those oppressed by the stronger. But as it's a mark of prudence not to force matters that may be settled peaceably, I am about to ask these custodians that their pleasure may be to unchain and set you free, for there'll not be wanting other men to serve the king and on better occasions, and it seems unjust to make slaves of those God and nature made freemen. How much more does this

appear, gentlemen, if you stop to consider 'tis not yourselves these poor fellows have harmed. Let each answer for his sins in the hereafter. God's in his Heaven and forgets not to punish the wicked and reward the good, nor is it fitting that just men lay heavy hands on those that have worked them no injury. I speak with this assurance since if you comply, I shall have cause to thank you, while if you don't of your own free will, this lance and sword with the valour of mine arm will lead you to do so under pressure. '

' A fool's jest ! ' laughed the deputy ; ' a fine piece of pleasantry is this he has delivered himself of at last. He wants us to leave him the king's prisoners ; as if we had the authority to free them or he to order us ! Let your worship go your way and God be with you. Straighten that basin on your head and don't go looking for three feet on a cat. ' 'Tis you are the cat, the rat and the rascal, ' was hurled the reply, and combining action with word Don Quijote closed with him so instantly that he had no chance to defend himself and one pike-stroke sent him flying. There the fellow lay sorely wounded and fortunately for his opponent 'twas the one that bore the musket. The other guards were completely taken aback by this sudden assault, but the mounted ones, gathering their wits, clapped hand to sword and those on foot clutched their javelins, together making at our knight, who awaited them in perfect composure. And now surely 'twould have gone hard with him, had not the prisoners availed themselves of this opportunity to break the chain that strung them together ; and in attending now to them and now to their attacking foe, at no point were the guards effective. Sancho on his part helped Ginés de Pasamonte, who, being the first to be rid of his chains, immediately made for the fallen deputy. Snatching his sword and musket, by aiming at this one and pointing at that without once pulling the trigger, he left not a guard in all the countryside. Every one of them sought safety in flight, as well from Pasamonte's firelock as from many stones hurled at them by the others, now no longer prisoners.

This outcome was not to the taste of Sancho, who feared the guards would notify the Holy Brotherhood to come, at the sound

of the tocsin, and look for the delinquents. This fear he communicated to his master, advising that they clear out at once and hide in the neighbouring hills. 'You are right,' said Don Quijote, 'but I know of something that should be attended to before that;' and calling the galley-slaves, who by this time had eagerly stripped the remaining deputy to the skin, he addressed them as follows: 'Tis a mark of good birth to render thanks for benefits received, for ingratitude is one of the sins that most offendeth God. I say this since you yourselves, gentlemen, by actual experience can bear witness to the favours received at my hands, and in their requital I wish and 'tis my will that, taking up the chain I loosed from your necks, you walk to the city of el Toboso, and presenting yourselves before the lady Dulcinea and saying that by these her Knight of Sorry Aspect commends himself, proceed to give her a detailed account of this famous adventure and of how it gave you your desired freedom. You then may go where you will and good-luck attend you.'

To this Ginés de Pasamonte replied for them all, saying: 'Tis not in the region of the possible to comply with your request, sir liberator, for we must not be seen on the road in company. Each must take a different way and conceal himself in the bowels of the earth if he can, for the Holy Brotherhood will unquestionably come in our search. What your worship may and fittingly should do is to change this toll and service on behalf of the lady Dulcinea into a certain number of ave-marias and credos, which we will repeat with your worship in our thoughts. They are a thing that can be executed by night or day, at rest or flying, in peace or war. But to imagine that we shall willingly go back to the flesh-pots of Egypt, take up our chain in other words, and set out for el Toboso, is to think it night when it isn't yet ten in the morning: to ask this of us is to ask pears of the elm.'

Don Quijote waxed white with rage at this speech and in reply called out: 'Don Ginesillo de Paropillo, or however you style yourself, you son of a bawd, I swear by all, that I'll make you go alone with chain upon back and tail between legs!' Pasamonte had already gathered that Don Quijote was not

overshrewd, else he'd not have attempted giving them liberty, and naught too patient himself he gave the wink to his comrades, who dropping back a little began to rain so many and such large pebbles that the knight's shield was of slight protection, especially as poor Rocinante gave no more response to the spur than as if bronze. As for Sancho, he fortified himself behind his ass, which served as a bulwark against this driving hail-storm.

The knight shielded himself so poorly indeed that innumerable little crystals struck his body with sufficient force to knock him overboard. Scarce had he touched the ground when the student was upon him, giving him with the basin three or four rat-a-tat-tats on the shoulders and as many more on the ground with it till 'twas nothing but bits. They as well relieved him of a jacket from over his armour and would have appropriated his hose had not the greaves prevented. They then stripped Sancho of his long cloak, leaving him fairly trimmed, and dividing the other spoils of battle made off each in a different direction, more eager to escape the Holy Brotherhood than to take up chains and present themselves before Dulcinea at el Toboso. None but the ass, Rocinante, Sancho and Don Quijote remained : the ass crest-fallen and sad, turning his ears from time to time lest the squall of stones might not be over ; Rocinante lying at full length beside his master — the horse too having been bowled over ; Sancho disfurnished and in terror of the Holy Brotherhood, and lastly the knight himself, hotly incensed that those on whom he had showered favours, upon him should have showered stones.

CHAPTER XXIII

Don Quijote's sojourn in the Sierra Morena, affording one of the rarest adventures of this truthful history

OUR hero, marking the sorry plight he was in, thus addressed his trusty squire : ' I have always heard, Sancho, that to do a rogue kindness is to pour water into the sea. Had I listened to what you said, I had avoided this declension, but it's over with now, so patience and heed for the future. ' ' Your worship will as much take heed as I am a Turk. But since you say this trouble would have been avoided had you listened to me, escape a greater one by listening now. I want you to realise that the Holy Brotherhood have no use for chivalries and wouldn't give two coppers for all the knights-errant in the world, and even now I seem to hear their darts whizzing past mine ears. ' ' You are a coward by nature, Sancho, but lest you say I am stubborn and unheeding, this once am I willing to follow your advice, getting out of the range of the vengeance whereof you stand in such terror, on the condition that never in life or death you say to anyone that I retired from this imaginary danger for other reason than to still your entreaties. Should you ever put another face on the matter, you will lie, and once for all I denounce and call you liar every time you think or speak it. Not a word more, for the very suggestion of my intentional withdrawal before a supposed peril, especially one that like this may have something back of it, tempts me to remain and take my stand not merely against this bugaboo of a Holy Brotherhood but against the brothers of the Twelve Tribes of Israel and the Seven Maccabees, against Castor and Pollux, indeed against all the brothers and hoods there are in the world. '

' Master, to retire is not to flee, nor is delay prudence when the danger outweighs hope. 'Tis the mark of wisdom to take thought to-day for the morrow and not risk all on an hour. And

since I have a little of what they call circumspection about me, though but a countryman and boor, repent no more of taking my advice, but mounting Rocinante if you can (and if you can't, I'll help you), follow whither I lead, for a little bird tells me feet will be more useful now than hands.' Without a word the master mounted and with the squire on his ass in the lead they entered the neighbouring Sierra Morena. Sancho intended to pass through between the hills and coming out on the other side at the village of el Viso or Almodóvar del Campo, hide some days amid the crags thereabouts, thus escaping detection. His resolve was strengthened by finding that the provisions on the ass had come out unharmed from the recent fracas with the galley-slaves; which he took for a miracle when he considered how they pillaged right and left.

Don Quijote was all happiness at finding himself in the midst of the hills, for such places seemed to invite the adventures he rode in search of — there came to his memory the marvellous occurrences that had overtaken knights-errant in similar wild solitudes. Musing on these things he rode along, so intoxicated and transported that he was oblivious of all else, nor did his squire, now they were out of harm's way, have any care save that of satisfying his hunger with what was still left of the clerical store. Seated sideways on his ass woman-fashion he jogged on after his master, emptying the sack and filling his paunch; while thus employed he wouldn't have given a sou to find another adventure be it what it might. But happening now to raise his eyes he saw that the other had halted and was trying to raise something from the ground with the point of his pike. He made haste to help him and as he came up discovered 'twas a saddle-cushion with a large valise attached, half-rotten, in fact quite in pieces from decay; together they weighed so much that it became necessary for Sancho to dismount and give his master a lift. He was told to look and see what the valise contained, and obeying with alacrity, though it was bound by chain and padlock, through the rents and holes soon espied four soft holland shirts, together with other pieces of linen no less delicate than clean, and a little heap of gold crowns tied in a kerchief.

When Sancho beheld these last, he exclaimed : ‘ Blessed be Heaven that has furnished us with an adventure worth something ! ’ Examining further he found a richly bound note-book, which Don Quijote at once demanded, telling his squire he could keep the crowns. Sancho in gratitude kissed his hands and emptying the valise stored the linen away in his pantry-sack. His master on seeing the quantity of things observed : ‘ It looks, indeed I do not think it can be otherwise, as if some traveller had lost his way in these hills and having been attacked and killed by robbers, was brought to this remote spot for burial. ’ ‘ That cannot be, ’ replied the other, ‘ for thieves wouldn’t have left these crowns. ’ ‘ True, ’ agreed the knight ; ‘ and indeed I can’t make out how it happened ? But stay ; belike there’s something in this little book will tell. ’ He opened it and found the first draft of a sonnet, which he read aloud.

‘ The verse shows nothing, ’ declared the squire, ‘ unless by the clue mentioned there the whole reel of the matter may be discovered. ’ ‘ What clue do you mean ? ’ ‘ I thought your worship spoke of a clue. ’ ‘ Chloe, I said, which is the name of the lady of whom the poet complains, and indeed he is something of a poet or I am no judge of the art. ’ ‘ Does your worship know about rimes too ? ’ ‘ Yes, and more than you think, as you’ll see when you carry a letter all in verse to my lady Dulcinea. I’d have you know, squire, that all or most errant knights of former times were great musicians and troubadours, and that these two gifts (or graces ’twere fitter to call them) are bred in the bone of lovers-errant, though I confess their rimes breathe more passion than true poetry. ’ ‘ Read more, sir, for you may yet find something to satisfy us ? ’ ‘ This next is prose, a letter apparently. ’ ‘ The kind you post ? ’ enquired Sancho. ‘ From the way it begins I should judge it a love-letter. ’ ‘ Then let your worship read it aloud, ’ asked the squire ; ‘ there’s nothing I like better than these love-doings. ’ ‘ Willingly, ’ replied his master and read as follows :

‘ Thy broken promises and my broken hopes have led me to a region whence the news of my death will reach thee ere the words of this complaint. O ungrateful heart, thou didst leave

me for one richer, not more virtuous, than I, though if virtue were the kind of riches that could be valued, I know I should not envy another's fortune nor weep mine own disgrace. What thy beauty exalted, thy works have cast down : by that I felt thee an angel, by them I know thee for a woman. May peace pursue thee, prompter of my war, and may Heaven grant that thy husband's guile remain unrevealed that thou mayst not repent thee of thine action and that uncoveted redress may not be mine.'

Don Quijote on finishing said to Sancho : ' There is even less to be gathered from this than from the verse : merely in fact that the writer is a disdained lover.' He now turned nearly all the leaves, some of which were decipherable and others not, but met with nothing but complaints, lamentations, misgivings, fancies and disaffections, favours and discouragements, some ecstatic, others sad. As he ran through them, his squire ran through the valise : not a corner of it or the cushion he didn't rip open, or tuft of wool he didn't comb, lest something escape through want of care or pains — such was the covetousness awakened by the discovery of the crowns. These amounted to over a hundred, and though these were all, Sancho considered himself more than even with the blanket-tossings, balsam-vomitings, stake-benedictions, carrier-cuffs, loss of saddlebags, stripping of his cloak, and all the hunger, thirst, weariness, suffered in the service of his worthy lord.

(Cardenio, a rejected and despairing young suitor, here comes on the scene and tells his story, in the course of which he makes a slighting reference to a certain character in the books of chivalry. Thereupon ensues a scuffle 'twixt him and Don Quijote. Cardenio runs back into the mountains and the main narrative opens again at chapter twenty-five. Here and in a few places still to be met with Cervantes breaks the flow of his history by the introduction of short tales, thinking possibly that they would help float the longer one. They proved, however, a weight and an interruption, as he himself practically acknowledges in the second part, chapters three and forty-four).

CHAPTER XXV

Rare things that overtook the valiant knight of La Mancha in the Sierra Morena, together with his imitation of the penance of Beltenebros

THE pair advanced slowly into the mountain wilderness. Sancho was dying to talk but wished his master to say the first word in order not to override his injunction of silence. At length, unable to suffer the stillness longer, he said to his leader : ‘ Señor Don Quijote, may your worship bestow upon me your blessing and my discharge. I wish to go home to my wife and children, with whom I at least can talk and gossip all I please. To want me to follow you through these solitudes night and day without speaking when I have a mind to, is to bury me alive. If fate pleased to have animals talk these days as they did in the time of Aesop, I could converse with mine ass, saying to him whatever came into my head, and so make the best of it. But ’tis poor business and cannot be borne with patience, this seeking adventures all one’s life and finding naught but kicks, blanketings, brickbats and rib-roasts, one’s mouth sewed up all the while, not daring to say what a fellow has in his heart, just like a dumb man. ’

‘ I catch your meaning, my son. You are dying to have raised the embargo I placed upon your tongue. Consider it raised then and out with what you please, on condition that this immunity only obtains during our passage through these hills. ’ ‘ Very good, and I will begin at once, for God knows what will be. Taking advantage of my passport I ask your worship why in speaking with that fellow we just met you stood out so for Queen Magímasa or whatever her name. What was it to you if the abbot was her lover or not ? Had you but let that pass (and your worship was no judge), the mad one would have continued with his history, and we should have escaped the pebble-tattoo, the kicks and more than a half-dozen of the back-handers. ’

‘ Ah, if you but knew as I know, Sancho, how high and honourable a lady Queen Madásima was, I’m sure you’d say I displayed great forbearance in not smashing the mouth uttering such blasphemies ; for greatly he blasphemes that says or thinks a queen is intimate with a surgeon. The truth is that the leech Elisabad was a most prudent and wise man that served as counsellor and physician to her highness, and to think she was his leman is falsehood deserving severest chastisement. Would you be further convinced that this fellow knew not what he said, remember that he was in a frénzy.’ ‘ Exactly my point,’ said the other ; ‘ it was foolish to heed the words of a madman. For hadn’t fortune favoured you, and had the pebble instead of landing on your breast dropped on your head, sweet fellows we should have been to stand up for my lady, confound her, while he of course would have been acquitted as a lunatic.’ ‘ Against the mad or the sober,’ answered the don, ‘ every knight-errant is bound to defend the reputation of women whoever they be, especially of queens of the station and character of Madásima, whose excellent qualities lead me to hold her in the greatest esteem. She possessed not alone beauty but wisdom, and fortitude under adversities. Of these she had many and the surgeon Elisabad’s counsel and society were of immense help to her in supporting them with reason and resignation. This has led the ignorant and low-minded to think her his leman, but I say again they lie and they will lie two hundred times all that think and say so.’

‘ I neither say nor think it,’ Sancho responded ; ‘ let themselves look out yonder ; with their bread let them eat it. They have rendered account to God ere this whether they loved or no. From my vineyards I come, I have no information ; others’ lives are not my concern. He that buys and lies, feels it in his purse. Naked I was born, I am naked still : I neither win nor lose. Suppose they were lovers, what is that to me ? Many think there are flitches where there’s not even a hook. Who can put gates to the open country ? What’s more, they said of God...’ ‘ May He help me ! ’ cried Don Quijote ; ‘ what stuff is this you roll off ? what have these refrains to do with the subject ? Peace, man, on

your life ; prod your ass and henceforth don't mix with what doesn't concern you. Understand with all your five senses that everything I have done, am doing or shall do is wholly within reason and in perfect accord with the rules of chivalry, of which I have more knowledge than all the knights that ever professed them.' ' Is it a good rule, then, that lets us wander bewildered through these mountains without road or path, hunting for a crazy man, who when caught will most likely wish to finish what he has begun, and that not his story but your head and my ribs, breaking them to pieces ? '

' Again I say hold your tongue,' quoth the knight ; ' for I'd have you know 'tis not so much to find the madman that brings me here as that I would perform a certain exploit to win me perpetual fame and worship throughout the world : a performance that will set the seal on all that can make a knight-errant perfect and renowned.' ' And is it very perilsome ? ' ' No, though we may throw a blank instead of sixes ; it all depends on your diligence.' ' On my diligence ? ' questioned Sancho. ' Yes,' said the other, ' for if you return quickly from where I think to send you, straightway my griefs will end and my glory begin. And since 'tis not fair to hold you longer in suspense, I'd have you know, boy, that Amadis of Gaul was one of the most perfect of all knights-errant. I wrong him in saying one ; he stood alone, the peerless, the lord of the knights of his time. A lean year and month for Don Belianis and all others that say or think that in certain respects he was Amadis' equal, for on mine oath they deceive themselves.

' Now when a painter wishes to achieve fame in his calling, he strives to imitate the originals of the most skilful masters he can find, and the same holds true for all the more important crafts and professions that serve to adorn the state. Thus he that would be deemed prudent and long-suffering must and does imitate Ulysses, in whose person and labours Homer gives us a living example of those qualities. Likewise Virgil in the character of Aeneas showed the goodness of a pious son and the sagacity of a brave and masterly captain. They did not describe them as they were but as they should have been, that we coming after

might emulate their virtues. Amadis similarly was the north, the morning star, the sun, of brave enamoured knights ; and all that fight beneath the banners of love and chivalry must follow his lead. This being the case I consider that the knight-errant imitating him most closely will be surest of reaching chivalric perfection.

‘ Now one of the circumstances wherein this knight’s prudence, might, valour, patience, fortitude and love appeared to advantage, was when, disdained by the lady Oriana, he banished himself to Peña Pobre to do penance under the name Beltenebros — certainly a suggestive title and eminently suited to his chosen life. And since ’tis easier to imitate him in this penance than in cleaving giants, decapitating serpents, slaying dragons, putting armies to flight, scattering armadas and breaking up enchantments, why should I, especially as this region is eminently fitted for penances, let slip an occasion that lays its forelock in my hand. ’

‘ In a word what is it your worship has a mind to do in this God-forsaken spot ? ’ ‘ Haven’t I this minute told you that I wish to imitate Amadis and play the victim of despair, the wild, the furious lover, like the worthy Roland what time he discovered at the spring the marks that compromised Angelica the fair with Medoro. His grief addled his wits and in his frenzy he uprooted trees, roiled brooks, slew shepherds, destroyed their flocks, burned their huts, levelled houses, dragged mares after him and worked a hundred thousand other infamies worthy of record and eternal fame. Though I look not to imitate Roland or Orlando or Rotolando (he was known by the three names) in all his mad acts, words and thoughts, as far as I am able I shall fill out the sketch in the essentials. It may be that in the end I shall content myself with Amadis, who, though mad merely to the extent of tears and wild talk, and not to the point of deviltry, achieved as much fame as the best of them. ’

‘ According to my way of thinking, ’ said the other, ‘ the knights that performed these tricks had some sort of provocation for working penances and pillages, but your whorship, what reason have you to turn stark mad ? what fair one has scorned

you or what marks have you found that lead you to think Lady Dulcinea del Toboso has been trifling with Moor or Christian ? ' ' Just there lies the beauty of it, for no thanks or value attaches to a knight when actually driven to insanity. The thing is to go mad of myself, making my lady wonder, if so I act when dry, what will I do when drenched. Besides, my long separation from her is cause sufficient, since an absent lover, as the shepherd Ambrosio was telling us the other day, fears and experiences every evil. So, friend Sancho, don't waste time in vainly persuading me to abandon so singular, lucky and unheard-of an imitation as I am about to observe.

' Mad I certainly am, mad I shall continue until you return with reply to the letter I purpose to send by you to my gracious lady. If the answer be worthy my constancy, instantly cease my wildness and penance, but if not, mad then in earnest I shall not know I suffer. So in either case only good can result from the dire struggle wherein you leave me, for if in my right mind, I shall enjoy the good you bring, but if bad, I shall not feel it being mad. But tell me, Sancho, have you Mambrino's helmet well in your care ? I saw you pick it up when the ingrate was trying to break it in pieces but could not, so fine its temper.'

' By the living God, Sir Knight of Sorry Aspect, no longer can I suffer patiently or in any way put up with certain things your worship says. Through them indeed I come to think all you say, whether of chivalries, getting kingdoms and empires or of bestowing isles and other favours and dignities after the manner of knights-errant, is naught else but wind and whoppers, or an airy or a fairy-tale or however they are called. For who could listen to your worship calling a barber's basin the helmet of Mambrino for more than four days running, and not think that a man that says such a thing and sticks to it has his brains musty ? The basin is here in my sack, considerably dented to be sure, but I hope to round it out at home and shave me the beard in it, if one of these days God shall let me find myself with wife and children.'

' By the same oath wherewith you began, my son, take note I

swear in return that yours is the dullest understanding ever squire owned or owns in the world. Is it possible, long as you have served me, that you have failed to notice how all an errant's affairs look chimerical, stupid and wild and how with him everything goes by contraries? Not that things are really so, but ever in our midst flits a host of magicians, to alter, disguise and transform our effects, as their pleasure and inclination are to favour or destroy us. Thus what appears to you a barber's basin to me appears Mambrino's helmet and to another some other thing. Indeed the sage my champion showed rare forethought in making what really and truly is his worship's headpiece look to all save myself like a vessel for shaving. Otherwise they'd hunt me down and rob me of it, such is its value. Taking it for a common copper bowl, what do they care, as shown clearly enough when that fellow left it on the ground after trying to smash it, which surely he'd not have done had he known what it was. Guard it, friend, though at present 'tis superfluous, since I am soon to strip me of all armour, standing naked as I was born, if in the penance my pleasure prove to copy Roland rather than Amadis.'

Late in the evening they reached the heart of the Sierra Morena, and there Sancho resolved to pass that night and other succeeding days as long as their stores held out. They therefore took up their rest between two cliffs and amid a grove of cork-trees. But necessity, which, according to those that lack the true faith, guides, adjusts and orders things at will, brought it about that Ginés de Pasamonte, notorious rogue and thief, having escaped his chains by the might and madness of our champion, was also led by proper fear of the Holy Brotherhood to bury himself in these hills, and his fate and fear guided him to the very region whither Sancho and Don Quijote had been led by theirs, and early enough for him to recognise them just as they were falling to sleep. The wicked are ever ungrateful, need furnishes them with temptations, present advantage veils all thoughts of the future. Ginés therefore, being neither appreciative nor principled, ventured to steal Sancho Panza's ass, considering Rocinante worthless equally for pawn or sale. Sancho slumbered,

the thief moved quietly and before daylight was miles away.

Aurora dawned, bringing gladness to the countryside and sadness to Sancho, who, not finding his mount, began the most pitiful weeping and lament in the world. Don Quijote awakened at the sound in time to hear him cry : ‘ O child of my bowels, born in my very house, plaything of my children, pride of my wife, envy of my neighbours, easer of my burdens, indeed the support of half my person, since with the twenty-six farthings you daily earned me I replenished half my store ! ’ Seeing the weeping and hearing the cause, his master endeavoured to console him with the best reasonings at his command, telling him to have patience if he could and promising to make out a bill of exchange, ordering that three ass-colts of the five he had at home be given him. Comforted by this the grateful Sancho dried his tears, choked his sobs and assumed his beast’s burden.

They soon had reached the foot of a high and somewhat isolated mountain, at whose base a gentle rill watered a meadow rich and green and enchanting to the eye, while round about were groves of forest trees, and plants and flowers that made the spot all-beautiful. This the Knight of Sorry Aspect chose as his penance-place. Beholding it outspread before him, in the high-keyed voice of an idiot he cried : ‘ This is the spot I commission and choose, O heavens, for weeping the outcast state wherein you have placed me. Here shall the water of mine eyes increase that on yon little brook, and my deep unending sighs unremittingly stir the leaves of this wildwood, in token of the pain of my persecuted heart. O ye rural deities, whoever ye be that in this uninhabitable wilderness have dwelling, listen to the complaints of a spurned lover, whom long absence and imagined causes of jealousy lead hither to decry the cruel nature of that fair ingrate, the crown and limit of all human grace. Wood-nymphs and dryads, whose lot it is to abide in these mountain-fastnesses with gay and wanton satyrs by whom ye are vainly beloved, let them not trouble your sweet repose, that ye may be unwearied in your attendance.

‘ And thou, O Dulcinea del Toboso, day of my night, glory of my grief, north of my wandering, star of my fortune, so may

Heaven grant all thou seekest, bethink thee of the place and point to which thine absence has brought me, and bestow some favour commensurate with my deserving loyalty. O ye solitary trees, that now shall keep me company in my loneliness, let your boughs manifest by gentle motion that my presence is not distasteful. And do thou my squire, welcome comrade alike in fortune and misfortune, fix well in thy memory what thou seest me do, that thou mayst relate and report it to its cause.' After the delivery of this speech the knight dismounted from Rocinante, in a moment had bridle and saddle off, and giving the beast a slap on the croup said to him : ' Liberty he gives thee that lacks it himself, thou steed consummate in feats as thou art cursed in fortune. Begone where thou wilt, for on thy forehead is writ that neither Astolfo's hippogriff nor the renowned Frontino that cost Bradamante so dear, could have equalled thee in speed.'

Observing this last action Sancho said : ' Good-luck to him that saved us the trouble of unpanneling my Dapple, or there would not be lacking little slaps and things to be said in his praise. But were he here, I shouldn't allow the pannel to be removed : the practices of love and despair don't apply to him, since they do not to his master, which I was while it pleased God. But in truth, Sir Knight of Sorry Aspect, if my journey and your jeopardy are surely to occur, it might be as well to resaddle the horse, in the absence of the ass, and shorten the time of my trip. If I go afoot, I don't know when I shall arrive or return, for, to tell the truth, I'm not much at hoofing it.'

' I promise it shall be as you wish,' replied the other, ' and I think well of the plan, Sancho friend. Three days hence you shall start out and in the meantime I want you to note the things I say and do on her account, that you may relate them precisely as they occurred.' ' What have I to witness more than what I've seen already ?' ' How much you know about it !' returned Don Quijote ; ' why, I have yet to rend my garments, scatter mine armour and bruise my head against these rocks, with more of that stripe that will set you gaping.' ' In God's love, take care how you give those bruises ; 'tis possible to knock your head on such a rock and at such a point that with the very first bruise

this business of the penance will come to a stand-still. Indeed I am almost of the opinion that since these head-raps seem to you essential for the perfecting this exploit, you should be content to give them against water in the brook or something soft like cotton, since the whole affair is make-believe and jest. Leave me the burden of it, for I shall tell my lady that you knocked your head for her on the point of a rock harder than diamond. '

' I appreciate your thoughtfulness, Sancho friend, but these actions of mine are no jest, I'd have you know, but sober earnest, else I should be overriding the rules of mine order, which tell us not to lie under pain of apostacy ; and to do one thing in place of another is the same as lying. Nay, my head-knocks must be genuine and hard, without air of sophistry or pretence. And 'twill be necessary that you leave thread to sew wounds, now that fate has lost us the balsam. ' The ass was the greater loss of the two, since with the ass went thread and all. And I must beg of your worship not even to suggest that cursed potion, the bare mention of which turns my soul, not to say my stomach. Furthermore I ask that we consider the three days allotted to my viewing your idiotic pranks as past and over, for I shall take the pranks as seen and judged and tell wonders to my lady. Write the missive and send me off, for I long to return and deliver you from this purgatory. '

' Purgatory ! say hell rather, or worse if such there be. ' But in hell, ' said Sancho, ' there's no retention, at least so have I heard. ' ' I don't catch your meaning. ' ' No retention, ' explained the squire, ' means that a body once in there can never get out, which won't be true in your worship's case or little shall I have plied my feet, supposing I have spurs to revive Rocinante. Once set me down in el Toboso and before my lady Dulcinea, and I'll give her such reports of your follies and frenzies (for they're all one) that, though I find her tougher than a cork-tree, I'll make her softer than a glove, and with her honey-sweet answer return through the air like any wizard, setting you free from this purgatory, that seems a hell but is not, since there's hope of escape, which there isn't from hell, even as I have just spoken. And your worship will, I think, agree with me in all. '

‘ True, ’ said he of Sorry Aspect, ‘ but how shall we manage to write the letter ? ’ ‘ And the warrant for the ass-colts, ’ added the other. ‘ All will be included. It might be well to write after the manner of the ancients on the leaves of a tree or on tablets of wax, only wax is as scarce as paper hereabouts. But now I have something just as good or even better — the mad-man’s note-book ! You can get it copied on writing-paper in the first village that boasts a schoolmaster, or if not he, any sacristan will do. On no account give it to a notary — that class write a law-hand that Satan himself couldn’t decipher. ’

‘ What about the signature ? ’ enquired Sancho. ‘ Amadis ’ letters were never signed. ‘ Maybe so, ’ admitted the squire, ‘ but the warrant must be, and if it be copied, they’ll say the signature is false and I shall have no ass-colt. ’ To this his master replied : ‘ The warrant will be written and signed in the book itself, and on seeing it my niece will put nothing in the way of its execution. Touching the love-letter, have my signature read thus : Thine till death, The Knight of Sorry Aspect. ’ Twill matter little if it’s writ in a strange hand, for Dulcinea, if my memory serve me, can neither read nor write, nor has she ever seen letter or handwriting of mine. My love and hers has been ever of the Platonic order, amounting on my side to no more than a virtuous glimpse now and then, so seldom indeed that I dare swear to the truth of what I now say, that in the twelve years I have loved her more than the light of these eyes which some day will close in the earth for ever, not four times have I seen her, and I very much doubt if once she was aware of my gaze — such the seclusion wherein her father Lorenzo Corchuelo and her mother Aldonza Nogales have reared her. ’

‘ Ah ha ! ’ exclaimed Sancho ; ‘ and is Lorenzo Corchuelo’s daughter, the one they call Aldonza Lorenzo, the same as my lady Dulcinea del Toboso ? ’ ‘ She is, and she deserves to be mistress of the universe. ’ ‘ I know the wench well, ’ affirmed the squire, ‘ and let me tell you she can pitch the bar with the lustiest swain in the village. Giver of all good, but she’s a lass to be reckoned with — sound as a roach, tough as a nut, and can pull the beard out of the mire of any knight-errant now or to

come that wants her for wife. O the baggage, what marrow she has ! and what lungs ! One day, they tell me, she climbed the village-belfry to call her father's labourers who were sowing in a field half a league off, and they heard her as plainly as if right at hand. But the best of her is there's nothing overnice about her : she has plenty of the coquette and jokes with everybody — there's nothing from which she doesn't get gaiety and a grin. Indeed, Sir Knight of Sorry Aspect, not only can and should your worship play the idiot for her, but with good reason you can be desperate and hang yourself, since all that hear of it will say you did better than well, though the devil come to fetch you.

‘ I'm eager to be off, for 'tis many a day since I saw the wench and by this time she must be changed — a woman's face loses its freshness if she's always in the fields, exposed to sun and weather. To be honest with you, Señor Don Quijote, till this moment I stood in grave ignorance, thinking all the while that the lady Dulcinea was some great princess — at any rate a person of sufficient quality to deserve the valuable presents you have sent her, the Biscayan for instance and the galley-slaves, with many others necessarily, since many must have been your victories ere I became your squire. But all things considered, what good can it do Aldonza Lorenzo, the lady Dulcinea del Toboso I mean, to have the vanquished you send, now or in future, come and bend the knee before her ? It might be they'd find her combing flax on threshing in the barn — they would be mortified and she take them for a huge joke and poke fun at your gift. ’

‘ More than once have I called you a great babbler, Sancho ; and your wit, though dull, bites sharply enough at times. That you may see however what a fool you are and how wise am I, listen to this little tale. A certain widow, fair and free, above all wealthy and winsome, fell in love with a fat young lay-brother, whose superior, hearing of it, said to the good woman by way of pastoral remonstrance : ‘ Madam, I am astonished and not without reason that a lady of your rank, so rich and so beautiful, should be enamoured of so worthless low-lived an ass, when many masters are there in this community, graduates and stu-

dents of theology, among whom your ladyship could choose as among pears, saying, This and not that I prefer.' With great spirit and candour she replied : ' Your reverence, my dear sir, is behind the times and much mistaken if you think I have made a bad choice in that fellow, fool as he seems. For the purpose I wish him he knows as much philosophy as Aristotle, and more.' Likewise, Sancho for the purpose I wish Dulcinea del Toboso she's worth as much as the greatest princess living.

' Moreover, 'tis not to be supposed that all the poets that have praised women under fictitious names, had these women as loves. Think you the Amaryllises, Phyllises, Silvias, Dianas, Galateas and the rest, with whom books, ballads, barber-shops and theatres are crammed, were truly women of flesh and bone, sweethearts of those that praise them now and of old ? Certainly not, for the poets created them to give body to their verse and that themselves might pass for beaux, that could inspire the tender passion in others. Ergo, 'tis enough that I think the deserving Aldonza Lorenzo fair and chaste — her lineage matters little, for none will investigate it with the view of conferring an order upon her and personally I regard her as the most exalted princess in the world. For you should know, squire, if you don't already, that two things above all incite affection : great beauty and good name — which attributes are conspicuously exemplified in Dulcinea, for none is her rival in beauty and in virtue few approach her.

' To sum up then once for all, I make myself believe that all I say of her is gospel, neither more nor less, and I paint her as I picture her both as to beauty and rank. Helen does not equal her nor Lucretia come near, nor any other of the famous women of olden times, Greek, Roman or barbarian. Let men say what they please — if my idealising of Dulcinea shall be censured by simpletons, I shan't be condemned by just judges.' ' Your worship is right,' declared Sancho, ' and I am the ass — ass did I say ! alack that I should put the word in my mouth — never mention rope in a hanged man's house. But now for the letter, and then good-bye, I am off.'

Don Quijote produced the memorandum book, and going

aside he calmly began to write. When he had done, he called his squire and told him he would read the missive aloud that the other might be able to repeat it from memory in case he lost it by the way — such was his ill-luck, anything might be feared. To this Sancho responded : ‘ Write it two or three times there in the book and give it me. I’ll take good care of it, and it’s a mistake to suppose that I can keep the letter in my memory, which is so poor that now and again mine own name slips me. Tell it all the same, since I should like first rate to hear ; it must read as good as print.’ ‘ Listen then,’ said Don Quijote, ‘ for this is what it says :

Missal of Don Quijote to Dulcinea del Toboso

Serene and sovereign lady :

The pierced by the dart of absence, the wounded to the heart’s core, sends thee, sweetest Dulcinea del Toboso, the health himself possesses not. If thy beauty disdain me, if thou be not for me, if thy scorn be still to persecute me, though I be as patient as patient can be, hardly shall I bear up under this affliction, both heavy and prolonged. My good shield-bearer Sancho will give thee, O fair ingrate, fond enemy, full account of what for thy sake I am come to. Shall it please thee to deliver me, I am thine; if not, do what thou wilt, for by my death I shall satisfy thy cruelty and my desire.

Thine till then,

The Knight of Sorry Aspect. ’

‘ By the life of my father,’ exclaimed Sancho, ‘ but that is the loftiest thing I ever heard. Body of me, how you say just what you wish, and how neatly you tuck in The Knight of Sorry Aspect. Verily I believe your worship is the devil himself and that there’s nothing you don’t know.’ ‘ My profession is all-exacting,’ assented the other. ‘ Now then,’ said Sancho, ‘ let your worship write on the other page the order for the three colts, signing in a clear hand which they will recognise at once.’ ‘ That I will,’ said the knight. And when he had it written, he read it to his squire :

‘My dear niece :

By this first of ass-colts please deliver to my squire, Sancho Panza, three of the five I left in your charge, which three colts I promise shall be duly delivered and paid for by the like number received here, and this with his receipt shall be your quittance. Done in the heart of the Sierra Morena, this twenty-second day of August of the present year. ’

‘ Good, ’ said Sancho ; ‘ now sign it. ’ ‘ That is superfluous for three ass-colts, or for three hundred indeed were that the number : my flourish is as good as my signature. ’ ‘ I leave it to your worship ; and now let me saddle Rocinante and give me your blessing. I am off at once without seeing those mad capers, for I shall say I saw you do so many that she’ll have her fill. ’ ‘ This one thing I desire, Sancho, indeed I must ask and command that you see me perform a dozen or two naked. I shall have done with them in less than a half-hour, and when you have seen some with your own eyes, you can safely swear to as many as you wish. I am certain you’ll not describe as many as I think to do. ’

‘ By the love of God, master of mine, let me not see you unclothed ; ’twould grieve me sorely. I shan’t be able to check the tears and I have such a headache from weeping for Dapple last night that I’m in no shape for another outburst. If you insist that I see some of your capers, cut them with your clothes on, and make them brief and to the point, especially as they’ll be wasted on me, and their omission would hasten my return, which must be with the news your worship desires and deserves. If her answer be not as it should be, let the lady get ready, for I swear as solemn an oath as I know that I’ll fetch a good one out of her stomach with kicks and buffetings. For how is it permitted that a knight-errant as famous as your worship should lose his wits without rime or reason for a... ; let the lady not force me, for by God I’ll rattle on and out with it though it spoil the sale. I am a great hand at calling names, though she little knows it or she’d fear me. ’

‘ Upon my soul, boy, one would think you more crazy than I. ’ ‘ Not so crazy but more cross. But setting that aside,

what's your whorship going to live on while I'm gone? will you leap out on the road and rob shepherds like that madman?' 'Rest easy on that score,' replied the master; 'though I had else, I should eat naught but fruits and herbs afforded by this meadow and these trees, since fasting and like austerities are proof of my profession.' Sancho now asked: 'Does your worship know what I fear? it is that I can't find my way back again, this spot is so hid.' 'Fix it well in your memory, for I shall make a point of staying where you see me,' answered Don Quijote; 'or better still, I'll climb yon height to watch for your return. To make it even more certain that you don't miss your way, cut some of the many reeds growing hereabouts and drop them at intervals till you come out on the open plain. They'll serve like the thread in Theseus' labyrinth for your home-journey.'

'That I will,' assented the squire; and cutting a few he asked his master's blessing, and not without tears each bade the other farewell. Mounting Rocinante, whom the knight strongly commended to his care, saying he should look out for him as for his own person, Sancho set out for the plain, strewing the reeds as advised. And so he was gone, though his master importuned him to delay and witness a couple of capers if no more. But now, when he had travelled a hundred paces or so, the squire returned, saying: 'I see, sir, you were right: in order that I may swear with a clear conscience that I observed you act the fool, 'twill be well for me to see you throw a fit or two, though one of the worst is your being here.' 'What did I tell you! wait, boy, and I'll do them in the saying of a credo;' and dropping his breeches, in naught but skin and shirt, the penitent twice kicked his hands in the air, following these with two somersaults and such a display that, to avoid a second, Sancho turned Rocinante, fully satisfied he could swear to his master's idiocy. So shall we part with him until his return — which was not long delayed.

CHAPTER XXVI

**Further antics of the knight, playing the lover in the Sierra
Morena**

COMING to relate what he of the Sorry Aspect did when he found himself alone, the story says that as soon as Don Quijote, clad from the waist up and naked from the waist down, had ended his somersaults and tumblings, finding that Sancho tarried not to see more, he climbed a high cliff, where on the top he stayed to consider the matter that had so often occupied his thoughts, though to no conclusion : namely, whether or no 'twere more feasible and fit to imitate Roland in his lawless vagaries than Amadis in his temperamental ones. In this debate with himself our knight reasoned as follows :

‘ Granting that Roland was the valiant and worthy cavalier they say, what wonder since he was enchanted and none might put an end to him save by sticking a pin through the bottom of his foot, and he all the time wearing seven iron soles ? Yet how slightly his charm availed when Bernardo del Carpio, seeing through all, strangled him at Roncesvalles. But setting aside the question of his courage, let us pass to his loss of reason, for he surely did lose it, as a result of the evidence he discovered at the spring, and the news the shepherd brought him that Angelica had slept through more than two siestas with Medoro, a little curly-headed Moor, page to Agramante. But if he were convinced of this, 'twas no great shakes to lose his head.

‘ And as regards myself, how can I imitate him in his frenzies, unless I share the occasion ? For I am ready to take oath that my Dulcinea del Toboso in all the days of her life has not so much as laid eyes on a Moor as he is in the garb of his race, and is this day as her mother bore her. Obviously I should wrong her if, imagining otherwise, I became demented like the furious Roland. I find that Amadis of Gaul, on the other hand, without going mad or behaving outrageously, acquired as great reputation as a lover as the best of them. Rejected by his lady Oriana, who

enjoined him not to appear in her presence till she willed, according to his history all he did was to hie to Peña Pobre in the company of a hermit and there have his fill of weeping, till Heaven finally came to his rescue at the height of his great grief and need.

‘ If this be true, and it is, why should I go to the trouble of divesting myself further, or why should I harm these trees that have done me none, or muddy the clear water-brooks that at any time will slake my thirst ? Long live the memory of Amadis ! let him be the pattern, so far as is possible, of Don Quijote de La Mancha, of whom ’twill be said what was said of another, that if he failed to achieve great things, he died attempting them. And if I have not been scorned or rejected by my Dulcinea, it is enough, as I said before, that I am absent from her. Come then, all hands to work ! let the deeds of Amadis leap to memory and teach me how I may begin their imitation. I recall that his chief employment was to pray : even so shall I, but what am I to do for a rosary ? ’

But it occurred to our knight how to make one : by tearing off the tail of his shirt and tying eleven knots in it, one larger than the others. This served him during his sojourn in the wilderness and on it he repeated countless ave-marias. But he was still sore troubled for want of a hermit to confess him and give him consolation. He solaced himself however by strolling about the little meadow and writing numerous verses on the barks of trees and in the fine sand, some in praise of Dulcinea and all appropriate to his sorrow. In this exercise, in sighing and in calling on the fauns and satyrs of the wood, the nymphs of the water-brooks and on plaintive tearful Echo, to listen and answer and console him, and in seeking out herbs for his bodily sustenance, he managed to beguile the time of the absence of his squire. But had the latter tarried three weeks instead of three days, the Knight of Sorry Aspect would have grown so unlike himself in appearance, his own mother would have passed him by. Enveloped in poetry and sighs he may safely be left that we may relate what befell his errant squire.

On reaching the high road Panza set out for the one leading to

el Toboso and the next day arrived at the inn where he had met with the blanket-declension. On sighting it he again felt himself sailing through the air, and therefore did not choose to enter, though 'twas an hour when he naturally could and would, being dinner-time, and he longed to taste something hot, it having been cold comfort for many days. This drew him nearer, doubtful whether to enter or not, and at that moment, two persons, coming out, recognised him, and one of them said : ' Tell me, señor licentiate, isn't that fellow on horseback the Sancho Panza that, according to our adventurer's housekeeper, went off with her master as squire ? ' ' It is, and that is our Don Quijote's nag. ' They knew the man this well because they were the village-priest and barber, the same that examined and passed judgment upon the books. They immediately came forward, eager to learn of Don Quijote, and the priest, calling the squire by name, said : ' Friend Sancho Panza, where did you leave your master ? '

Sancho, at once recognising them, decided to conceal the place and plight of him for whom they asked, so said in reply that his master was engaged in a certain place on certain business of importance, which he couldn't discover for the eyes in his head. ' Nay, nay, Panza, ' replied the barber, ' if you refuse to tell us, we shall think, as we do already, that you have murdered and robbed him, since you ride his horse. In short, if you don't produce the nag's owner, it's all up with you. ' ' Threats are of no use with me, ' said Sancho ; ' I'm no man to rob or murder. Let each meet his death through his fate or the God that made him. My master does penance in the heart of these mountains and all very much to his liking ; ' and without a stop Sancho rattled on about the knight's present condition, his past adventures and how he, the squire, was carrying a letter to the lady Dulcinea del Toboso, Lorenzo Corchuelo's daughter, with whom his master was in love down to his lights.

The two were amazed at all this news for, though aware of their friend's perversion they were ever taken aback when they heard of it anew. They asked his squire to produce the letter. The other said 'twas written in a note-book but that his master required him to get it copied on plain sheet at the first place he

came to. The priest said to show it them and himself would copy it in a fair hand. Sancho searched his bosom but in vain, nor would he have succeeded had he sought till now, for 'twas still with his master. When he found he hadn't it his face took on a deathly hue ; again he felt quickly all over his body, and finding it nowhere about him, clutched his beard with both hands and after plucking out half thereof gave his nose and face six punches, bathing them in blood.

The priest and barber asked what had occurred that he treated himself thus cruelly. ' What has occurred but that I have lost in a trice from one hand to t'other three ass-colts, each worth a castle ! ' ' How have you ? ' enquired the barber. ' I've lost the note-book that contained Dulcinea's letter and an order signed by my master in which he directed his niece to give me three of the four or five ass-colts he has at home to make up for the loss of my Dapple. ' The priest tried to comfort him, saying that on meeting with his master he would have him reissue the warrant, this time on paper as was customary and proper ; warrants writ in memorandum-books were never honoured.

With this Sancho took heart and said that in that event the loss of Dulcinea's letter didn't worry him, since he knew it almost by heart and they could transcribe it when and where they chose. ' Repeat it, then, ' said the barber, ' and afterwards we'll put it on paper. ' Panza stopped to scratch his head in order to recall the letter ; first he stood on one foot, then on the other, one moment gazing at the ground, the next at the sky, till at last, having bit off half his finger and kept them long in suspense, he said : ' My God, señor licentiate, the devil take me if I can remember the thing, but it began : ' Serene and scrubbing lady. ' ' Not scrubbing surely, ' said the barber ; ' superhuman perhaps or sovereign. ' ' Sovereign it was, ' answered Sancho, ' and then if I recollect rightly and my memory serve me not ill, it proceeded with : ' The wounded, the wanting of sleep and the pierced kisses your ladyship's hands, hateful and ungrateful one ; ' and then it said something about sickness and health he was sending her and went sliding along till it ended up with, Thine till death, The Knight of Sorry Aspect. '

The two listeners were not a little amused at the squire's excellent memory and gave it generous praise. They asked him twice more to repeat the letter that they might get it by heart and transcribe it at leisure. Sancho thrice repeated it and uttered three thousand new absurdities in the process. He then went on to tell them of their fortunes, keeping quiet however about the blanketing at the inn he now declined to enter. He confided to them also that provided a favourable answer came from el Toboso, Señor Don Quijote was going to put himself in the way of becoming an emperor or at least a monarch — it had all been arranged between them, as a thing easy of accomplishment, such the worth of his master's person and the might of his arm ; and that when that far, the knight was to make a marriage for him his squire, who would in the course of events by that time be a widower, and his new wife was to be a maid-in-waiting to the empress, heiress to a large and rich estate on the mainland, without isles or islands — he had had enough of them.

Sancho said this with so much seriousness, wiping his nose from time to time, and with so little sense, that they marvelled anew : how violent must be the madness of the master to draw in its wake the wits of the man. However, they cared not to free him of his delusion, feeling that so long as it didn't hurt his conscience, 'twere better to leave him where he was, especially as their pleasure in listening to his credulous talk would be so much the greater. They told him to pray God for the welfare of his master, who feasibly and deservedly might become an emperor in course of time, as he had said, or at least an archbishop or like dignitary.

Upon this Sancho replied : ' My masters, if fortune so whirls things round that my sire prefers to be archbishop rather than emperor, I should like to ask what archbishops-errant are in the habit of giving their squires.' ' Usually,' the priest answered, ' some simple benefice or cure, or post of sacristan, which affords a good fixed income plus altar-fees, which commonly bring in as much again.' ' The squire must be unmarried then and should know enough to help read mass ; worse luck to me that am married and don't know the first letter of the A B C. What will

become of Sancho, should his master take it into his head to turn archbishop, and not emperor as is the habit and custom of all errant knights ?'

' Don't worry, Panza friend, ' said the barber ; ' we shall ask and advise your master, nay, we shall lay it before him as a matter of conscience, not to be an archbishop but an emperor, which will come easier to him being more the soldier than the student. ' ' So it would seem to me, ' agreed the squire, ' though I vow he's qualified for any office under the sun, and my prayer with our Lord will be that He shall send him where he can best serve himself and win most favours for his henchman. ' ' You talk like a man of sense, ' said the priest, ' and you will be acting like a Christian. But first we must devise how to deliver him from his present bootless penance. That we may better consider the *modus operandi*, let's enter the inn, the more that it's dinner-time. ' Sancho said they might enter but he would remain outside, telling them afterwards why he refused to go in and why it wasn't fitting that he should. He added a request for something to eat, hot if possible, and barley for Rocinante. They left him and entered, and the barber shortly brought him a smoking-hot dinner.

The two long consulted within as to how they might accomplish their purpose, and at last the priest thought of a plan admirably suited both to the knight's humour and their own scheming. He himself was to go dressed as a maid-errant and the barber was to try and pass himself off as her squire, and so going to their friend, he should represent himself as an afflicted damsel that sought of him a boon, which, as a gallant knight, he could not deny her. This was that he should follow her whithersoever she led, in order to right a wrong done her by a certain treacherous cavalier. She would beseech him as well not to ask her to lift her veil or enquire aught as to her rank in life till he had avenged her on that scoundrel. The priest felt sure Don Quijote would respond to such a call, and thus they would deliver him from his present plight and taking him home see if his aberration admitted of cure.

CHAPTER XXVII

The success the priest and barber met with in their plan, together with other things worthy to be set down in this great history

THE barber did not think ill of the priest's idea ; indeed it so much pleased him that at once they proceeded to execute it. They begged a gown and head-dress of the innkeeper's wife, giving her the priest's new cassock as security. The barber made himself a beard out of a red and grey ox-tail, which served the landlord as holder for his comb. The wife questioned their wish for the use of these things and in few words the priest described the hallucination from which their friend suffered and their plan for getting him away from the backwoods where now he was. The keeper and his wife immediately recognised in this mad person their guest of the balsam, the master of the blanketed squire, and they thereupon related to the priest their experiences with him, not suppressing what Sancho had been so careful to conceal.

The wife then dressed the priest in a manner that left nothing to be desired. She put on him a slashed cloth petticoat with black velvet bands a palm wide, together with a bodice of green velvet bound with white satin, looking, both it and the petticoat, as if made in the time of King Wamba. The priest refused to wear a woman's head-dress, and instead donned his own little quilted night-cap, slipping one of his black silk garters round his forehead and veiling his face and beard with the other. On top of all he placed his hat, which was broad enough to serve for parasol, and wrapping his cloak about him, seated himself woman-fashion on his mule. The barber likewise mounted his, with his red and grey beard reaching to his waist, the beard being nothing more or less, as I have said, than the tail of a pied ox.

The two then bade farewell to all, not forgetting Maritornes,

who promised though a sinner to pray a rosary that God would grant success in their arduous and Christian enterprise. But scarce had they quit the inn when it struck the licentiate that 'twould not become him as a priest to be seen in such a guise, however much depended upon it. He therefore asked the barber to swap rigs, since it was fitter that he, the barber, should play the afflicted damsel, and himself the squire, which would less profane his office. He added that were the barber averse to the change, he was determined not to proceed, though the devil fetched Don Quijote, for he saw that Sancho, whom they now approached, couldn't check his laughter. The barber finally agreed, and when the swap had been made, the priest undertook to tell his friend how he should conduct himself and what to say in trying to induce the knight to quit the wild haunt of his fruitless penance. The barber informed him he could act his part well enough without coaching, and not caring to don the costume till they drew near the knight did it in a bundle. The priest put away the beard and the pair followed the lead of Sancho Panza.

The latter told them about the mad lover they had met in these mountains but said nothing about the discovery of the valise of precious contents, for simple as he was, the fellow was a little covetous. The following day they arrived at the spot where Sancho had deposited his last reed, marking the route to his master, and on meeting with it Sancho told them this was the approach, advising them to assume their disguises if they were really necessary for his master's deliverance. The rescuers had previously informed their guide that the reason of their novel dress was that they might liberate their friend from his miserable mode of life, carefully warning him not to disclose to Don Quijote who they were, nor that he knew them, and that should he question, as he was sure to, whether or not the letter had been handed Dulcinea, he must answer yes, it had, but that as she didn't know how to read, her answer was by word of mouth, saying that she charged him, on pain of her displeasure if he failed, to appear before her instantly. They urged this upon Sancho as most important to him, for by his so speaking and with what they thought to say themselves they felt sure of

returning their friend to a better life and inducing him to put himself in the way of becoming an emperor or monarch of some kind ; that he would ever become an archbishop, his squire needn't have the shadow of a fear.

Sancho heard them through, committing all to memory, and replied that he was grateful for their intention to urge his master to become emperor and not archbishop, for in his opinion the former really could do more than the latter in the bestowal of favours. He suggested that he go first and give Señor Don Quijote his mistress's answer, which alone might be enough to get him out of there. The others thought well of this and agreed to wait till he returned. So the squire plunged into the mountain-gorge, leaving the priest and barber in a smaller ravine where flowed a gentle brook, for which rocks and trees made a cool and pleasant shade.

(Cardenio, the rejected suitor, again appears, and later a maiden Dorothea, whose tale of misplaced affection continues to the middle of chapter twenty-nine).

CHAPTER XXIX

The happy method hit upon for releasing our enamoured knight from his harsh though self-imposed penance

A shout was now heard and the priest and barber recognised the voice of Sancho, who, not finding them in the spot where he left them, was hallooing. They went to meet him and in answer to their inquiries the other described how he had found his master in his shirt, pale, emaciated, dying of hunger and sighing for his love, and that though he had delivered her summons to leave there and visit her at el Toboso, he had answered he should not appear before her beauty till he had done deeds to make him worthy of her favour. The squire now counselled that if this sort of thing went on, his master ran the risk of never becoming emperor, as was his duty, or even archbishop, the

least to be expected of him, and his friends should see what was to be done about it. The licentiate told Sancho not to worry — they would rescue him despite himself. He then related to the young man and woman they had met with during Sancho's absence their plan for restoring the errant knight to his right mind, or at least getting him home. The maiden Dorothea said in reply she could act the afflicted damsel better than the barber, particularly as she had a costume exactly suited to the purpose. They could leave it all to her, for many a book of chivalry had she read and knew well how unfortunate maidens bore themselves when begging boons of errant knights. ' Then there's naught left but to set about it, ' declared the priest ; ' fortune is certainly in our favour, since when least you hoped for it, the door at the end of your troubles swings open, and the path of our enterprise becomes smooth. '

Dorothea then produced from a pillow-case a petticoat of fine woolen cloth, a green mantle equally good, and from a small box she brought forth a necklace and other ornaments. With these she decked herself out till she had all the appearance of a rich and grand lady. She explained how she had brought these things and more from home for emergencies, but that this was her first opportunity to use them. Her high spirits and extraordinary beauty delighted them in the extreme, and they set her lover Don Fernando down as a simpleton for rejecting such charms. The one most intoxicated was Sancho Panza, who thought he had never seen such beauty in all the days of his life — which was true. He was quick to ask the priest who she was and what she did in that God-forsaken country. ' To say the least of her, brother Sancho, this fair maid is heiress in direct male line of the great kingdom of Micomicon, and her mission is to crave of your master a boon, namely, that he avenge her a wrong or outrage done her by a naughty giant. By reason of the renown Don Quijote has gained as a knight throughout the known world this princess has travelled all the way from Guinea to seek him out. '

' A good seeking and a lucky find, ' declared the squire ; ' the more if my master be fortunate enough to avenge this outrage and right this wrong by killing that jade of a giant, and kill him he

will, if he come up with him, unless he be a phantom — against phantoms my master's no good at all. But one thing amongst others I wish to ask of your worship is that in order to check any inclinations which I fear he may have for an archbishopric, you advise him to marry this princess on the spot. That would prevent his taking orders and thus can he easily come to his throne and I to my wishes. I've studied the whole matter in my mind and can see 'twill be far from well for him to turn archbishop on account of me alone, who am no man for the Church, being married. Now that I have wife and children, 'twould be an endless task for me to try to get dispensation to hold office. So, please your worship, it all comes to this : that my master must at once tie up with this lady. As yet I haven't met her grace and cannot refer to her by name.'

' Princess Micomicona is her name, ' the priest informed him. ' Naturally, ' echoed Sancho, ' for many have I known that took their family-name from the town where they were born, calling themselves Pedro of Alcalá, Juan de Ubeda or Diego de Valladolid. The same custom must hold over there in Guinea : queens must take the names of their kindoms. ' ' Quite so, ' said the priest ; ' and as to your master's marriage, I shall do all I can to hasten it ; ' and with this the squire was well content. The other was more than astonished at the man's simplicity, seeing that his master's illusions were so fixed in his mind that he honestly thought the knight would become an emperor.

By this time Dorothea had seated herself on the priest's mule, the barber had fastened on the ox-tail beard and the two bade Sancho lead them to Don Quijote and to remember not to speak to him of his friends, for in secrecy lay the only chance of his ever ascending a throne. Neither the priest nor the young man Cardenio cared to accompany them : Cardenio that Don Quijote might not recall their quarrel, and the priest lest he be in the way. They let the others go ahead, and themselves followed on foot at some little distance. The priest did not forget to instruct Dorothea as to her actions, but she told him not to worry, since all would be done according to the descriptions and requirements of the books of chivalry.

The first group had advanced three-quarters of a league when they discovered the Knight of Sorry Aspect amid his rocks and crags, clothed but not yet in his mail. As soon as Dorothea saw him and was informed by Sancho it was he, she whipped up her palfrey, followed by the well-bearded barber. Reaching the spot, her squire sprang from his mule to receive the maid in his arms, but she in sprightly manner alighted of herself and kneeling before her avenging knight (though he begged her to rise) addressed him in this fashion : ‘ I will not rise, O doughty knight and bold, till thy goodness and courtesy grant me a certain boon, which will redound to thine honour and the glory of thy person. The boon is in behalf of the most aggrieved and disconsolate maiden ever sun shone upon, and if the might of thy strong arm match the lustre of thy immortal fame, thou canst not but favour the unfavoured that has sought thee out, following from afar the scent of thy great name.’ ‘ I will not speak with thee, fair lady,’ replied the penitent, ‘ nor will I hear more of thy condition, till thou dost rise.’ ‘ I cannot rise till the boon I beg is promised of thy courtesy.’ ‘ ’Tis both promised and granted,’ said Don Quijote, ‘ provided it be neither to the detriment nor disparagement of my king, my country or her that holds the key to my heart and liberty.’ ‘ ’Twill be neither to the one nor to the other, my good lord,’ promised the unhappy maid.

At this point Sancho, coming close, whispered in his master’s ear : ‘ Your worship, master mine, can safely grant the lady’s boon, since all it is is to slay a big giant and she’s the mighty Princess Micomicona, queen of the great realm of Micomicon in Ethiopia.’ ‘ Let her be who she may,’ returned the other, ‘ I will do my bounden duty and what my conscience tells me is conformable to the order I profess ;’ and turning to the maid he said : ‘ Let thy beauteousness arise, since I grant thee thy boon.’ ‘ Then what I ask is that thy magnanimous person come at once whither I lead, and that thou pledge me to embrace no other demand till thou hast avenged me on the traitor that, against all justice human and divine, has usurped my kingdom.’ ‘ I agree to all,’ replied Don Quijote, ‘ and from this day forth

thou canst dispel the melancholy that oppresses thee ; thy wilted hopes can revive, for by God's aid and mine own arm thou'lt find thyself restored to thy throne, seated once more in the saddle of thy great and ancient realm despite and in defiance of the villains that would keep thee from it. All hands to work, since danger, the proverb tells us, lurks in delay.'

The afflicted damsel tried repeatedly to kiss his hands, but Don Quijote, ever courteous and considerate, would not admit of it. Rather he made her rise and embraced her with much gentleness. He ordered Sancho to arm him at once and look to Rocinante's girth. The squire took down the armour, which hung from a tree like a trophy, and having seen to the girth armed his master in a trice. When the knight found himself in readiness, he said : ' In the name of God let us go hence in behalf of this high lady.' The barber, on his knees all this time, with difficulty tried not only to conceal his laughter but at the same time keep his beard on, for if that fell, all their hopes fell with it. But seeing now that the boon was granted and observing the eagerness of the knight in setting out on his quest, he arose, and taking one hand of the maiden and Don Quijote the other, they seated her on her mule. Lastly the knight mounted Rocinante, the barber his pack-mule and the party was off.

Sancho was obliged to follow on foot, which renewed in him the sense of the loss of Dapple, yet he bore it with good grace, since he must think that his master was now in the way, and on the point indeed, of becoming emperor, confidently believing he would marry the princess and become king of Micomicon at least. The only thing that really troubled him was the consideration that as this kingdom lay in the country of the blacks, all his subjects would be of that kidney. But he soon hit on a good offset, as he talked the matter over with himself, saying : ' What do I care if my subjects are all black ? can't I pack them off to Spain in a ship, and selling them there for cash buy some title or office and live at mine ease all the days of my life ? Certainly you can, unless you are asleep or haven't the knack to drive a bargain and sell thirty or ten thousand slaves as quick as a flash. My God but I'll make them fly, little or big or as I may ; be they

ever so black, I'll turn them into whites and yellows. Come now, but I was a fool ; ' and Sancho trudged on so busy and happy in his thoughts that he quite forgot the labour of the road.

Cardenio and the priest were watching behind some bushes, not knowing how to join the procession, till the priest, great schemer that he was, hit upon this plan. First quickly cutting Cardenio's beard with some scissors he chanced to have, he next dressed him in his own grey jerkin and black coat, leaving only doublet and breeches for himself, till Cardenio was so transformed he wouldn't have recognised himself in a mirror. The others had now passed them but the two easily reached the high road first, for the brambles and roughness made it harder going ahorse than afoot. They waited in the road at the foot of the hill, and when Don Quijote with his company appeared, the priest stood and stared at him in half-recognition, then came rushing up with open arms, exclaiming : ' In happy hour art thou found, O mirror of chivalry, my good compatriot Don Quijote de la Mancha, flower and cream of gentility, saving strength of the needy, quintessence of knighthood ! ' with this embracing his friend's left knee. But the knight, marvelling at what he heard and saw, gazed attentively at this man, no less marvelling when he recognised him as the priest. He was about to dismount and when the other wouldn't consent, said : ' Señor licentiate, permit me ; 'tis not fit that I go mounted and your reverence afoot. '

' I shall in no wise yield,' answered the priest ; ' remain seated, for 'twas in the saddle your excellency achieved the greatest feats and adventures our age has seen. I, a priest and an unworthy one, am well enough off in mounting the haunches of one of the mules of these gentlemen that journey with you, if they have no objection. I'll pretend I am seated upon Pegasus, or upon the zebra or charger that bore the famous Moor Muza-rague, who to this day lies enchanted in Zulema, the high mount near the great Complutum. ' ' That didn't occur to me, my good father, but I am sure my lady the princess for my sake will be pleased to bid her squire offer your worship the saddle of his mule. He can ride behind, if the beast will allow. ' ' It will, I am certain, ' the princess replied, ' and I'm equally certain there'll

be no need to ask my squire, who is too courteous to suffer that an ecclesiastic go afoot when there's a chance of his riding.'

'Nor will he,' spake up the squire, who instantly dismounting offered the saddle to the priest, who took it without more ado. When the barber came to mount its haunches the mule, which to be plain was a hired one, raised her hind-quarters slightly, giving two kicks in the air with such energy that had her heels landed on the head or breast of Master Nicholas, he'd have given this relief-expedition to the devil. Even as it was he was so taken by surprise that he turned a back-somersault, paying little heed to his beard, which fell from his face. His only hope now was quickly to cover his chin with both hands, complaining his molars were smashed. When the knight observed that amount of beard lying, without jaw or blood, far from the face of the fallen squire, he exclaimed: 'My God, what miracle is this! the beast has whisked the beard from his face as clean as if it had been clipped.' The priest, seeing they risked discovery, promptly seized the ox-tail, and running up to the moaning barber took his head in his lap and clapped the beard on again, muttering certain words over him — a charm for the sticking of beards he said, as they would see. He gave another tightening to the ox-tail and the barber was as well bearded and sound as before. Don Quijote was amazed beyond measure and prayed the priest sometime to teach him those words, since they must be good for other things as well: the fellow's jaw could not but have been lacerated and now it was whole again. 'You speak reason,' the priest assented, promising to teach him the spell at the first opportunity.

All agreed that for the present the priest should ride the mule and that later the two others should take turns, since the inn might still be nearly two leagues. The procession moved again, three mounted, Don Quijote, the princess and the priest, and three afoot, Cardenio, the barber and Sancho Panza. The knight turned to the princess and said: 'Let your highness take the lead whither most it gives thee pleasure.' Ere she had time to reply the licentiate interposed: 'Toward what realm would your ladyship direct our course if not toward the kingdom of Micomicon? Methinks it must be so or I know little of king-

doms.' The princess, ready for all things, understood what her answer was to be : ' Yes, señor, 'tis toward that kingdom my journey lies.' ' In that event,' the priest continued, ' we shall pass through my village, from which your highness will find a road leading to Cartagena where, God willing, you'll find a ship, and if the wind sit fair and the sea be calm and tranquil, in rather less than nine years you'll come in sight of the great lake of Meora, Meotis I should say, which is not much more than a ~~hundred days' journey~~ from your highness' kingdom.'

' Your worship is mistaken, sir, for 'tis not two years since I issued thence, with foul weather all the way, yet have I this early attained the goal of my desires, the lord Don Quijote de La Mancha. The bruit of him reached mine ears the moment I set foot in Spain, and thereby was I moved to seek him, that I might commend myself to his regard, trusting the justice of my cause to the power of his invincible arm.' ' No more,' broke in the knight at this point ; ' an end to my praises I say. I am foe to every form of flattery and though your words be not such, yet do they offend my chaste ears. I mean by this, dear lady, that whether mine arm be mighty or no, whatever strength it has or has not, all shall be given thy service to the very end. But leaving this to its own fit time, I pray the licentiate tell what brought him to these parts alone, without attendants and so lightly clad that it shocks me.'

' As to this I can satisfy you in few words,' replied the priest ; ' you must be told that I and Master Nicholas, our friend and barber, were on our way to Seville to receive certain monies sent by a kinsman that has been many years in the Indies ; no trifling sum either — no less than sixty thousand dollars of tried weight. Well, yesterday as we rode along here, four footpads pounced upon us, stripping us to our beards and bereaving us of those to the extent that the barber was obliged to get a false one and even this youth,' pointing to Cardenio, ' was made a new man. But the interesting thing about it was that, according to report, they that trimmed us were galley-slaves, recently set free almost on this spot by a man so valiant that he routed the commissary and guards. Methinks he was certainly out of his head, else he

was as great a rascal as they, without soul or conscience, since he deliberately loosed the wolf among the ewes, the fox among the hens and the fly amid the honey. He would defraud justice, go against his king and natural lord (for he went against his just commands), rob the galleys of their feet and stir up the Holy Brotherhood, which has lain at its ease these many years. In a word he would do a deed whereby he may lose his soul without help to his body.'

It seems Sancho had told the priest and barber of the adventure of the galley-slaves, achieved by his master with such great glory, and the priest censured it in these strong terms to observe the effect on Don Quijote. But all our knight did was to change colour at every word, nor had he the pluck to acknowledge himself liberator of the ungodly crew. 'These were the ones that robbed us,' concluded the priest, 'and may God of his pity pardon him that let their going to well-deserved punishment.'

CHAPTER XXX

Dorothea's adroitness and other things capable of affording pleasurable diversion

THE priest had scarce ended his story when Sancho exclaimed: 'And faith, señor licentiate, he that did the deed was my master, though I warned him to mind what he was about and that it was a sin to give liberty to men that were being sent up as the worst kind of crooks.' 'Busybody!' cried Don Quijote; 'tis no affair of knights-errant to find out whether the afflicted, enchained and oppressed we encounter on the road, suffer humiliation because of vices or of virtues. Our sole care is to aid them as persons in distress, having an eye to their pain, not to their perfidy. I met with a string, a rosary I might call it, of unfortunate malcontents and I did with them what my religion bade me. Let it be settled yonder, for whoever thinks ill of it here, saving the honoured person and sacred dignity of our friend the priest, I declare he knows little of the idea of chivalry,

that he lies like a whoreson dog and that I'll make him aware thereof with my sword, wherein 'twill be more fully set forth.'

With this our knight braced himself in stirrup and clapped on his head-piece, the barber's basin in other words, which as Mambrino's helmet he carried hung from saddlebow, hoping some day to repair the damage received at the hands of the galley-slaves. Upon this, Dorothea, being a cunning and rather waggish person, fully aware of Don Quijote's fatal humour and that the others save Sancho made merry over it, didn't wish to be behind in the fun, and seeing the knight all wrought up, she said to him : ' Sir knight, let thy worship bear in mind the boon thou'st pledged me, and how in persuance thereof thou canst not engage in other adventure however urgent. Quiet thy breast, sir, for had the licentiate known 'twas thine ne'er-conquered arm that freed the galley-slaves, he would have put three stitches through his lips and thrice bit his tongue rather than say a word to your worship's disparagement.' ' I swear the same before God,' quoth the priest, ' and what's more, I'd have clipped my moustache.'

' I shall be silent, lady,' responded Don Quijote, ' repressing the just rage that had arisen in my breast, continuing in calmness till I render thee thy promised boon. Rewarding me for my good-will, prithee tell me, if it harm thee not, what thy trouble is, and how many, who and what are the persons on whom I must give the deserved and entire vengeance.' ' Gladly,' replied Dorothea, ' if 'twill not weary thee to listen to cares and crosses.' ' In no way,' returned the knight. ' Attend then your worships to my story.' The words were not out of Dorothea's mouth when Cardenio and the barber drew up to her side; likewise Sancho, as much taken in as his master. Having seated herself well in the saddle, with a cough and a few other helpful preliminaries she began in lively manner to tell the following tale :

' First of all I wish your worships to know that my name is'—she hesitated a moment, having forgotten what name had been assigned her by the priest, who came to her rescue by saying : ' 'Tis not at all strange, madam, that your highness is confused and embarrassed in retailing misfortunes, which are frequently of a nature to deprive persons of memory till they can't recall

their own names, even as now when your ladyship forgets that hers is Princess Micomicona, lawful heiress to the great kingdom of Micomicon. With this reminder you can easily call to your suffering mind all that you would tell us.'

'True,' replied the maiden, 'and I believe that henceforth it won't be necessary to prompt me and that I shall reach a safe port with my true story. Well, the king my father, Tinacrio the wise, was deeply versed in the so-called art of magic. He thereby discovered that my mother Queen Jaramilla, would die before he did, but that he too shortly would be obliged to quit the world, leaving me an orphan. Yet this, he said, didn't worry him so much as his certain knowledge that a towering giant, lord of a great island close to our kingdom, who is known as Pandafilando of the Sour Look — though his eyes are normal and are set properly, he always leers as if squinting, and this he does from pure deviltry, to scare people — my father knew, I say, that on hearing of mine orphanage this giant would overrun my kingdom with a powerful host and despoil me of everything, not leaving so much as a little hamlet for my refuge. I could escape all this ruin and disaster by marrying the beast, but so far as he could tell, I would never consent to such an enormity. And therein he spake true — not for a moment has yoking with this giant seemed possible to me, nor with any giant however huge or hellish he should prove.

'My father also warned me not to try to defend myself, even though I saw Pandafilando preparing this invasion; he urged me rather to abandon the country, would I save my good and loyal vassals: opposition to this giant's diabolical power would be vain, he declared, and mine only hope lay in setting out with a few subjects for Spain, where I should find the end of my troubles in the person of a certain knight-errant, whose fame by that time would have extended throughout the country under the name of Don Azote or Gigote, if my memory serve me.' 'Quijote you mean, lady,' suggested Sancho Panza; 'otherwise known as the Knight of Sorry Aspect.'

'The same,' said Dorothea; 'my father described him as tall of stature, lean visaged and with a grey mole with hairs like

bristles on his right side beneath his left shoulder or thereabouts.' The knight on hearing this said to his servant : ' Come, Sancho son, and help me strip. I would see whether or no I am the knight of whom this all-knowing king prophesied.' ' Why would your worship strip ?' asked the maiden. ' To see if I have the mole your father made mention of.' ' No need ', said Sancho, ' for I know your worship has such a mole in the middle of your back ; 'tis a sign of strength.' ' Proof enough,' declared Dorothea, ' for among friends one can overlook trifles, and whether on back or shoulder is of no consequence. Wherever it is there's a mole somewhere, and being all one flesh, that is surely enough. Well, truly my father has proved a good prophet and I certainly have done right in entrusting myself to Señor Don Quijote, who must be the knight the king had in mind, since the marks of his face tally with those of the fame he enjoys, not alone in Spain but throughout La Mancha. Indeed scarce had I landed at Osuna when I heard tell of such deeds that then and there my spirit told me he was my man.'

' How,' questioned Don Quijote, ' did your worship land at Osuna, dear lady, when it is no port.' Ere she could reply the priest took the wheel saying : ' The princess meant us to understand, I think, that after she had landed at Malaga the first place she got wind of your worship was Osuna.' ' That was the meaning I intended to convey.' ' 'Tis clear enough now,' said the priest ; ' please, your majesty, continue.' ' There's no more to tell, save that already I think of myself as queen and mistress of my realm, since this knight of his courtesy and munificence has pledged himself to accompany whither I lead, which will be straight against Pandafilando of the Sour Look, that my champion may slay him and restore me to that of which I was so unjustly deprived. I am sure that all this will come to pass exactly as we wish since my good father Tinacrio the wise foretold it. Also he left written in Chaldean or Greek, neither of which I can understand, a memorial to the effect that should the predicted knight, after he has beheaded the giant, desire my hand, I should at once offer myself as his lawful spouse, giving him possession of my person along with that of my kingdom.'

‘ How do things look now, friend Sancho ? ’ called Don Quijote at this point ; ‘ do you hear what is being said ? what did I tell you ? haven’t we a kingdom to govern and a queen to marry as I foretold ? ’ ‘ I believe you, ’ replied the squire, ‘ and the devil take him that refuses to tie up with this one after he has pricked Señor Pandahilado’s wind-pipe. My, but isn’t she ill-favoured though ! would that the fleas in my bed were like her ! ’ and with this in great glee he cut a couple of capers in the air. He then clutched the bridle of Dorothea’s mule, bringing it to halt, and kneeling before the lady prayed her stretch forth her hands for him to kiss, in token that he acknowledged her his queen and mistress. Who of those, observing the man’s simplicity, could refrain from laughter ? The girl gave her hands and promised to make him a great lord of the realm when Heaven so far favoured her as to restore it to her possession and enjoyment ; for all whereof the squire thanked her in words that again caused merriment.

‘ This, ’ concluded the afflicted damsel, ‘ is my story. It alone remains to inform you that of the persons that escorted me from home none remains save this bearded squire, the others having perished in a violent tornado that swept upon us when already in sight of land ; by a miracle he and I on two planks were washed ashore. Indeed, as you have seen, a miracle and mystery is the whole course of my life. If in telling of it I ’ve laid undue stress on any one point or haven’t been definite enough at another, set it down to the fact that, as the licentiate said, a series of excessive mishaps weakens the memory. ’

‘ They shall not weaken mine, brave and noble woman, ’ declared Don Quijote, ‘ however many I endure in thy service, however great and unparalleled they may prove. Let me confirm afresh the boon I have promised, taking mine oath to go with thee to the end of the world, or until I meet with thy rude persecutor, whose haughty head by God’s aid and mine own arm I purpose to strike off with the edge of this, I cannot call trusty, sword, thanks to Ginés de Pasamonte who carried off mine ; ’ this last was said ’twixt his teeth, but he again spoke out : ‘ And after the giant has been decapitated and thou hast been put into

peaceful possession of thy realm, 'twill be left to thy choice to dispose of thy person wherever most will give thee pleasure, for while my memory is filled, my will enslaved, my mind enthralled by her — I say no more — not for an instant can I contemplate marriage though with a phoenix. '

This decision of his master's so provoked the squire that with loud voice and deep feeling he cried : ' Señor Don Quijote, I swear your worship is out of your head, or how can you hesitate to marry so noble a princess as this ? think you fortune offers such a chance behind every little stone ? Does my lady Dulcinea chance to be more beautiful ? far from it — not by half ; nay, I'd swear she doesn't come up to this princess's shoe. If, master, you go looking for dainties in the bottom of the sea, it's all up with my county. Marry her I say, marry her at once in the devil's name ; take this kingdom that comes to your hand free gratis for nothing, and when you are king, make me marquis or governor, and then let the devil take all. '

The knight could not listen unmoved to such blasphemy of his lady Dulcinea and raising his pike without saying so much as, This mouth is mine, gave Sancho two such whacks as to bring him to the ground, and had not Dorothea called to him to quit, he certainly would then and there have made an end of his squire. After a pause he said : ' Do you think, you carle, that you are to insult me for ever ; and that the sinning is always to be on your side and the pardoning on mine ? Don't imagine it for a moment, you excommunicated wretch, which is what you are, disparaging the peerless Dulcinea. Didn't you know, you farm-hand, you drudge and vagabond, that I couldn't kill a flea save by the might she infuses in mine arm ? Tell me, viper-tongued scoffer, who has won this kingdom, think you, and cut off the giant's head and made you marquis, all of which I consider as good as accomplished, who but the dauntless one of el Toboso, using mine arm as the instrument of her deeds ? She fights and conquers in me and I live, move and have my being in her. O whoreson scoundrel, what an ingrate you are when, seeing yourself raised from the dust to be a titled lord, in return you speak ill of her that brought it about ! '

Sancho still had life enough to hear all his master said and rising rather nimbly fortified himself behind Dorothea's palfrey. From his new position he thus addressed his chider : ' Tell me, sire, if your worship has determined to forego this great princess and her kingdom, what favours will you have to bestow ? that is my grievance. In my opinion 'twere better for the present to pair off with this queen, now she's here as though the sky rained her, and later return to my lady Dulcinea — there must have been kings in the world that kept mistresses. As to beauty, I've naught to say : it must be confessed that I like them both, though Dulcinea I've never seen.' ' How never have seen her, blasphemous traitor ? didn't you but now bring me her message ?' ' I mean I've never seen her long enough to note particularly her beauty and her good parts piece by piece, though I approved of her in the lump.'

' Then I forgive you,' said Don Quijote, ' and do you forgive the injury I offered, for our impulses are not in our hands.' ' So I see,' replied the other ; ' with me ever the impulse is to talk : I can't help saying once at least whatever comes to my tongue.' ' But hereafter, my son, you must mind your words, since the pitcher can go to the well so often — I say no more.' ' Good,' said the squire ; ' God's in his Heaven seeing our tricks, and He'll judge as to which does the greater wrong, I speaking or your worship doing it.' ' Come, no more of this,' said Dorothea ; ' run, Sancho, kiss your master's hand and crave pardon. Henceforth be more careful with your praise and dispraise, speaking no ill of this lady Dulcinea, of whom I know naught save that I am her servant. Trust God and you'll not fail of a situation where you can live like a prince.' Sancho with bowed head begged the hand of his master who calmly gave it and after it was kissed added his blessing.

The knight now said they should go a little in advance of the others, for he must question and converse with him on matters of moment. Sancho followed and when the pair were by themselves, Don Quijote began : ' Since your return, my son, I've had neither time nor opportunity to hear particulars of your errand and the message you brought back. But now that fortune

has granted both time and place, do not refuse me the pleasure of hearing good news.' 'Let your worship ask anything you please, for I'll give everything as good exit as it had entrance. But I must beg of you, master, that in future you be less vindictive.' 'Why do you call it that.' 'Because these last blows were due more to the quarrel the devil stirred up between us the other night than to aught I said just now against my lady Dulcinea, whom I love and reverence like a relic; not that there's aught of that about her, only as a thing belonging to your worship.' 'Drop that on your life,' commanded Don Quijote, 'for it offends. I have pardoned you once and you know the old saying, New sin, fresh penance.'

While thus in converse, they saw approaching on ass-back a man that, as he drew near, looked like a gipsy. Sancho Panza, whose eyes and heart were ever with asses, had scarce descried the fellow when he knew him for Ginés de Pasamonte, and by the thread of the gipsy got at the reel his ass. Sure enough Dapple it was that Pasamonte rode. Not to be recognised and that he might sell the beast, Ginés had assumed the garb of a gipsy, for he knew their language and many more as well as his own. Sancho, seeing and knowing him, at once cried out: 'Hi there, Ginesillo you thief, drop my treasure, leave me my life, meddle no more with my peace, return me mine ass, come here with my comfort, fly, you devil, clear out of here, you sharper, and give back what is not yours.' There was no need for these vituperations for with the first Ginesillo jumped down and running as in a race was gone in a second. Sancho ran up to the ass and putting his arm about his neck said: 'How hast thou fared, my darling, thou Dapple of mine eye, my comrade?' and with this he kissed and caressed the beast as if it were a human being. The ass held its peace and suffered these kisses and caresses without answering a word. The others came up and congratulated Sancho on his find, especially Don Quijote who said that the order for the three ass-colts would hold just the same; for which the squire showed himself most grateful.

While master and man had been talking together, the priest told Dorothea that she had been very clever both with the

brevity of her narrative and its likeness to those in the books of chivalry. She said she had often beguiled her leisure by reading them, but not knowing the different provinces and seaports, at random had made her landing-place Osuna. 'So I observed,' said the priest, and that was why I broke in as I did, hoping to set things right. But is it not surprising to see how credulous this unfortunate man is toward all such stories and lies, simply because they conform to the style and manner of the nonsense in his books?' 'It is indeed,' said Cardenio, 'and so strange and unparalleled that I doubt if there be wit keen enough to create the character in fiction.' 'Another curious thing about it,' continued the priest, 'is that, notwithstanding the absurdities this gentleman utters in connection with his craze, if other matters be introduced, he speaks most rationally, which argues a clear and temperate understanding. Provided his chivalry be not touched upon, he would pass for a man of sound intelligence.'

While these were engaged with their conversation, Don Quijote proceeded with his, saying to his squire: 'Touching our quarrels, Panza friend, let's cast the little hairs into the sea, and tell me now, without thought of grudge or grievance, where, when and how you found Dulcinea? What was she doing? what did you say and what did she reply? what her expression when reading the letter? who copied it for you? Tell me all you think worthy to be known, asked and answered, not adding and perverting to give me pleasure, nor abbreviating and so depriving me thereof.'

'If the truth must be told, sir,' began the squire, 'nobody copied the letter for I had none.' 'Alas, too true; two days after you left I found the little note-book still in my possession, which considerably concerned me, not knowing what you'd do when you found you hadn't it, though I expected you to return as soon as you discovered our oversight.' 'That I should have done had I not noted the letter down in my memory as your worship read it aloud, so I was able to repeat it to a parish-clerk, who copied it so accurately that he said that, though he had met with many letters of excommunication, this was the fanciest missive he had seen in all the days of his life.' 'And have you it still in your

memory?' 'Nay, sire, for the moment I gave it him, I set about forgetting it, seeing it had no further use. If I recall any, it is the Scrubbing, I mean, Sovereign lady, with which it set out, and there at the end, Thine till death, The Knight of Sorry Aspect. Between these I placed more than three hundred my loves, my lifes and mine eyes.'

CHAPTER XXXI

The delightful conversation 'twixt Don Quijote and his squire Sancho Panza, together with other episodes

'**N**AUGHT of what you say displeases me, Sancho, so talk on. You arrived at el Toboso and what was the queen of beauty doing? Very likely you found her stringing pearls or embroidering some device in golden thread for this her captive knight.' 'No, not these; she was winnowing two bushels of wheat out in the corral.' 'Then depend upon it, at the touch of her hand the grains of wheat changed to pearls. Did you notice, friend, whether 'twas white wheat or brown?' 'Twas red,' affirmed the squire. 'Then rest assured that when winnowed by her hands the bread made from this wheat was of the whitest; but pass on. When you handed her my missal, did she kiss it, or place it on her head, or perform other ceremony befitting such a letter? or what did she do?'

'When I arrived, she was hard at it with a sieveful of the wheat; she said to me: 'Lay the letter on yon sack, friend; I can't look at it till I have done here.' 'Cunning woman! she wanted to pore over it word by word by herself. More, Sancho. While at this employment what words did she pass with you? did she enquire about me, and you, what did you reply? come, out with everything; don't leave a drop in the ink-well.' 'She asked me nothing, but I told her all about your worship doing penance for her sake, naked from the waist up and roaming these wilds like a savage, sleeping on the bare ground, not eating off

a table-cloth nor combing your beard, but just weeping and cursing your luck. '

' You did wrong in saying I cursed my luck : I bless it all the days of my life, since it has made me worthy of loving so high a lady as Dulcinea del Toboso. ' ' So high is she, ' offered Sancho, ' that believe me she beats me by more than a hand. ' ' And how did you come to measure with her ? ' ' It was this way : as I helped her with a bag of wheat onto an ass, we stood so close I couldn't help but notice she was the taller by more than a palm. ' ' And did she not adorn and unite her stature with a thousand million graces of person ? or at least you'll not deny me this, Sancho, that while standing there you perceived a Sabaeon odour, an aromatic fragrance, an impossible somewhat, difficult to describe, a fume, an exhalation, like some dainty glove-shop, is it not so ? ' ' What I can vouch for is that I sniffed an odour rather strong and goaty ; it must have been because she was all in a glow from constant exercise. ' ' 'Tis impossible ; you had a cold in the head perhaps or smelt yourself, for I know what would be the scent of that rose among thorns, that lily of the field, that liquid amber. ' ' Maybe you're right, for often I have noticed the odour on myself that then methought proceeded from her worship the lady Dulcinea. But that's nothing so wonderful, for one devil is like another. '

' Tell me, ' continued Don Quijote ; ' now that she has sifted her wheat and carried it to the mill, what happens when she reads the letter ? ' ' She didn't read it, for she didn't know how to read or write, she said. Instead she took and tore it into bits, saying she didn't want another to read it for her, lest the whole village know her secrets ; it was enough that I had informed her by word of mouth both of the love you felt for her and of the outlandish penance you were here undergoing. In the end she told me to say to your worship that she kissed your hands and that she desired more to see you than to write. So she begged and commanded by these presents that you quit your brambles and monkey-shines and at once set out for el Toboso, barring aught else of greater importance, for she longed greatly to see you. She laughed a good deal when I told her how you called yourself the

Knight of Sorry Aspect. I asked her if that chap the Biscayan had put in an appearance. Yes, she said, and was a very decent sort of fellow. But, she added in answer to mine inquiries, none of the galley-slaves had shown up as yet. '

' So far, so good, ' declared the knight ; ' but tell me, Sancho, what jewel did she hand you as you took leave, as reward for the news you brought her ? 'Twas the use and honoured custom among knights and ladies-errant to give their squires, maids or dwarfs, that carried news from their damsels to them or from the knights to their ladies, some precious jewel as thank-offering for the message. ' ' That may well be and a good custom I call it, but all that must have been ages ago, for nowadays it seems to be the thing to bestow upon them bread and a little cheese, which was what my lady Dulcinea handed over the corral-wall as I was leaving ; and more by token the cheese was made from goats' milk. '

' She is liberal in the extreme, and if she didn't give you a golden jewel, it must be that she hadn't one handy. Sleeves are good after Easter, and when she and I meet, I'll make everything right. But do you know what I wonder at ? I feel as if you must have come and gone through the air : you were but a trifle over three days and yet it's more than thirty leagues from here to el Toboso. I fancy that the sage magician, he that is my friend and watches over mine affairs (for of necessity there is and must be one, else I shouldn't be an out-and-out errant), I imagine that this fellow helped you on your way without your knowledge.

' Indeed wizards are there that will take a sleeping knight from his bed and, without his knowing how, he awakes next day more than a thousand leagues from where he fell asleep. Were it not for this, adventurers could not aid one another, as they are wont to do. A knight for example is fighting a dragon or other fierce monster, or another cavalier, in the wilds of Armenia, and is getting the worst of it, is on the point of death in fact, and then, when least he looks for it, there dawns over against him on a cloud or chariot of fire another knight his friend, who a short time before had thought himself in England. He succours his friend and rescues him from death, and the latter that very

evening finds himself home again with good appetite, though the two places are often as much as two or three thousand leagues apart—and all made possible through the zeal and science of the cunning warlocks that keep watch over valiant knights-errant. I do not find it hard to believe therefore that you actually went and returned in this short time, since, as I have intimated, some friendly necromancer could have carried you by flights without your perceiving it.'

'That might well have been,' said Sancho, 'for to tell the truth Rocinante travelled like a gipsy's ass with quicksilver in its ears.' 'Quicksilver there was without a doubt, ay, and a legion of devils besides, for devils are a tribe that travel themselves and make others travel, just as they please and without weariness. But dropping this for the moment, where do you think my duty lies with respect to my lady-love's command that I go and see her? I feel I am bound to comply with her request, yet find myself handicapped by the boon promised to the princess here, for the law of chivalry bids me consider my pledge rather than my pleasure. On one hand my desire to see my lady fair besets and beseiges me, and on the other my given word and the glory of the achievement incite and summon. What I really think to do is to hasten by forced marches against this giant, cut his head off and establish the princess in the peaceful possession of her kingdom, and then at once return to behold the light that illumines my existence. I shall make such explanations that she will come to approve of my delay, seeing that it redounds to her greater glory and fame, inasmuch as all that I have achieved, am now achieving and shall achieve by arms in this life, is alone made possible by the favour she extends to me and by my being hers.'

'Alas,' cried Sancho, 'how damaged is your worship's noddle! Tell me trully, sire, do you mean to take that long trip for nothing and let such a fine rich marriage slip between your fingers when they give you for dowry a whole kingdom, which they tell me is more than twenty thousand leagues around, produces in abundance all the necessities of life and is bigger than Portugal and Castile combined? Peace, for the love of God, and

blush for what you said ; take my advice and (forgive me) get married at the first village that boasts a priest, or better still here is our licentiate who will do as fine as can be. Remember I am old enough to give counsel, and this that I now give is right to the point, for better a sparrow in the hand than a vulture flying, and he that has good and chooses ill, 'twill never come again, complain as he will.'

' See here, Sancho, if you are urging me to marry, that, being made king after killing the giant, I may have the chance to bestow the promised reward, I would have you know that without marrying I can as easily satisfy your longing, for before entering the fight I shall particularly stipulate that when I issue victorious, they shall give as my fee, even if I don't marry, a certain part of the realm, and this I can pass on to whomever I please. And whom but you would you have me hand it to ? ' ' Now you are talking ; sire ; but see to it please that your portion lies along the coast, so that, if the life don't agree with me, I can ship off my black subjects and turn them into what I said. As to your worship, don't bother for the present about seeing my lady Dulcinea. Make haste instead to kill the giant : let's round up that business first, for my God but I cannot but think 'twill yield honour enough and considerable profit.' ' I believe you're right, Sancho, and so far as you exhort me to champion the princess before seeing my sweetheart I shall obey. But take care you tell no one, not even those with us here, of what we have treated and conversed, for if Dulcinea is so modest that she would not have her thoughts known, 'twould not be fitting that I or another for me disclosed them.'

' Then why,' asked the other, ' do you require all those conquered by your arm to go and present themselves before my lady, when this is as good as your signature that you love and wish her well, since they are supposed to knuckle down before her and say they come from your worship to render her obedience ? How then can the thoughts of either of you be hid ? ' ' How silly and simple you are, Sancho ! can't you see that all this redounds to her greater exaltation ? You must know that in this our style of chivalry 'tis deemed great honour for a maiden

to have many knights-errant in her service simply for her being what she is, without hoping for other reward for their many and worthy desires than that she shall deign to accept them as her knights.' 'With that manner of love,' said Sancho, 'the preachers tell us we should serve our Lord, for his own sake, moved neither by hope of glory of fear of punishment. But I would love and serve Him for what He can do for me.' 'The devil take you for a clown, Sancho, but what shrewd things you say at times! one would think you had studied somewhere.' 'I cannot even read,' said the other.

They now heard Master Nicholas calling, for they were going to lay by and drink at a little spring. The knight accordingly drew rein, to the no small relief of his squire, o'er worn with his many lies and fearing lest his master at any time trip him, for though the rogue knew of Dulcinea as a peasant of el Toboso, never had he seen her face to face. They found Cardenio in the clothes Dorothea wore when first met with, and though little to brag of, they cast into the shade those he had shed. All having dismounted, they appeased their hunger to a limited extent by partaking of what the priest had snatched up at the inn.

While thus they were seated about the spring, a boy coming up stopped and looked at them rather curiously, and then rushing up to Don Quijote embraced his legs, beginning to weep and whimper in a very knowing manner: 'Señor, señor, doesn't your worship remember me? look again. I am that boy Andres your worship set free from the holm-oak to which I was tied.' The knight knew him and taking him by the hand turned to his companions saying: 'That your worships may see how requisite knights-errant are in the world to redress the wrongs and injuries worked by the wicked and insolent that dwell therein, allow me to relate how as I passed through a wood the other day I heard loud screams and most pitiful cries as of one in great distress. Driven by my sense of duty I hastened to the spot whence the cries proceeded and found tied to an holm-oak this boy, who now stands before you I rejoice to say, for not in a single point will he as a witness let me lie.

'The lad was, I repeat, tied to an oak, naked to the waist,

and a farmer, his master as I afterwards learned, was scourging him with the reins of his mare. I immediately asked the cause of this outrage. The boor replied that the lad was his servant and certain acts of carelessness on his part bespoke the thief rather than the fool. To this the youth made answer : ' He whips me, sir, because I want my wages. ' The farmer blurted out some kind of pompous excuse, by me heard but not entertained. In short I made him untie the lad and promise to pay him real for real and all perfumed. Is not this true, Andres my son ? Didn't you observe with what authority I commanded and with what humility he promised to carry out all I signified of my wishes and all I imposed upon him as demands ? Speak out, hesitate at nothing ; tell the gentlemen what occurred, that it may be seen and believed what a God-send errants are along these roads. '

' All that your worship has said is true enough, ' the boy replied, ' but the end of that business was very different from what you imagine. ' ' How different ? didn't he pay you at once ? ' ' He not only didn't pay me but as soon as your worship was out of the wood and we were alone, tying me again to the oak he gave me another belting, which this time left me like a flayed Saint Bartholomew. And at every stroke he made a fool of your worship, uttering some jest or pleasantry that would have made me laugh had I been less in torture. In fine he used me so ill that ever since I have been in a hospital, trying to recover from the effects of his cruelty. For all of which your worship may be thanked, for had you kept your road and not come where you weren't wanted, my master would have been content to give me a dozen lashes or so and then paying my wages let me go free. But when your worship abused him without reason, calling him those names, his wrath was roused, and as he couldn't take it out of you, the storm burst upon me to such an extent that I fear I shall never be a man again as long as I live. ' ' My leaving you before you were paid was the cause of the trouble, ' apologised Don Quijote ; ' long experience should have taught me that no boor keeps his word, unless he sees 'tis to his advantage. But remember this, boy, that I swore to hunt this fellow out though he hid in the hollow of a whale. ' ' Which is of no help to me, '

whimpered Andres. ' You shall see whether 'tis of help or not ; ' and saying this the knight rose, ordering Sancho to bridle Rocinante, who was off feeding while they were at their meal.

Dorothea asked her champion what he was preparing and received the answer that he was about to run that farmer down and punish him for this devilish turn, seeing to it that Andres was paid to the uttermost farthing, in spite and in the teeth of all the farmers of the world. Dorothea urged him to forget not that in compliance with his pledge he could not engage in any project till he had settled her little affair, and as he knew this better than anyone, he should calm himself till his return from Micomicon. ' You are right, ' acknowledged her protector, ' and Andres shall have to be patient till then as you say, but I again promise and swear I'll not stop short of seeing him paid and avenged. ' ' These oaths are naught to me, ' returned Andres ; ' the wherewithal to take me to Seville would mean more at present than all the vengeance in the world. If you have aught that I may eat and take with me, give it and God be with your worship and all knights-errant, and may they be as erring toward themselves as they have been toward me. '

Sancho drew some bread and cheese from his store and giving to the lad said : ' Take this, brother Andres, for to all of us falls a share in your misfortune. ' ' And what share falls to you ? ' ' This share of the bread and cheese, for God knows whether I shall miss them or not. I'd have you know, friend, that we squires of errant knights are exposed to biting hunger, bad luck and a thousand other things more easily felt than imparted. ' Andres seized the bread and cheese and finding that was to be all, lowering his head took the road in his hands. It must be stated however that at parting he called to Don Quijote : ' By the love of God, sir knight-errant, should you run across me again, though I am being hacked to bits, don't come to my rescue : leave me to mine evil fate, which won't be so bad but 'twill be made worse by any interference from your worship, whom may God confound with all the errants that ever were born in the world. ' Don Quijote rose to chastise this insolence, but the lad took to his heels with sufficient nimbless to discour-

rage any pursuit, Our adventurer was not a little chagrined ; that he might not be utterly discomfited, the others, though with real difficulty, controlled their amusement.

CHAPTER XXXII

Don Quijote and his company at the inn

THEIR welcome repast ended, the company saddled and mounted, and with naught occurring worth the mention, the next day found them at that inn so especially dreaded and detested of Sancho Panza who, though now loth to enter, couldn't well escape it. The keeper, wife, daughter and Martornes, on seeing Don Quijote and his squire approaching, with manifest pleasure came out to greet them. The knight, receiving their welcome a little coldly, bade them prepare a better bed than last time. The wife replied that, if paid better, she'd prepare one fit for a prince. Her guest promised and they got him a reasonably good one, up there in the straw-loft. He immediately retired, being fairly used up both in mind and body. No sooner was his door shut than the wife made for the barber and seizing him by the beard cried : ' Come, by the Cross, off with my tail ; it's an outrage the way my husband's comb goes kicking about the floor. ' But the barber wouldn't relinquish it till the priest had told him there was no need of further disguise : the barber could tell Don Quijote that when those rogues the galley-slaves trimmed him, he fled to this inn. Should he ask after the princess's squire, they'd say she had despatched him in advance to notify her subjects of her return with their common liberator. So the beard was restored, together with the other borrowed trappings.

The inn-folk could not but marvel at Dorothea's beauty and the youth Cardenio's noble bearing, for whom and all the priest bade them serve as good a meal as their stock allowed, and the keeper in hope of better pay prepared a tolerable dinner. The knight was still sleeping, and 'twas thought better not to waken him,

since sleep just then was a better restorative than food. At their meal, with the inn-folk present, they discussed their friend's derangement and the exigency wherein he had been found. The wife, to balance that, described the scuffle 'twixt him and the carrier and, seeing that Sancho wasn't about, followed with a full account of the tossing, which diverted not a little. The priest chanced to remark that it was his reading books of chivalry had so turned Don Quijote's brain, which caused the innkeeper to reply :

' I don't see how that can be ; in my opinion there's no better reading in the world. I own two or three of these books along with some other writings, and they have been the breath of life, not alone to me, but to many others. In harvest-time during the siesta the reapers are wont to gather here, and as there's always someone that can read, he takes up one of those volumes, while more than thirty of us sit round listening with such pleasure that it keeps off a thousand grey hairs. At least for myself I can say that when they tell about those furious frightful blows the knights deliver, I am seized with a longing to do the same, and I could hear about them night and day. ' And I no less, ' chimed in his wife, ' for I never have a quiet moment in the house except when you are so absorbed in listening that you forget to scold. ' ' True, ' volunteered Maritornes, ' and faith I myself like the dainty things, most of all when they tell about a lady in her knight's arms under the orange-trees, and the duenna standing guard, dying with envy and fright. 'Tis as good as honey to me. '

' And how do these books impress you, young lady, ' said the priest, addressing the innkeeper's daughter. ' On my honour, sir, I can't say. I don't understand much of what they're about. However I listen and to tell the truth like them pretty well. I don't care for the blows my father sets such store by ; give me instead those laments the knights drop into when absent from their lady-loves. Indeed I sometimes weep with compassion for them. ' ' Then would you console them, were it you they wept for ? ' asked Dorothea. ' I don't know what I should do. I only know that some of their sweethearts are so cruel that they call their cavaliers tigers, lions and a thousand other not nice names.

Jesu, what kind of folk can they themselves be, so without soul or conscience that they'll let an honest man die or go mad rather than look at him. I don't know why they should be as prudish as all that. If it's for their honour's sake, let them marry them, which is all the knights are after.' 'Hold your tongue, chit,' interrupted the mother; 'you don't seem ignorant of these matters and girls shouldn't know or say so much.' 'As this gentleman asked me,' the daughter murmured, 'I couldn't but answer him.'

'Come then,' said the licentiate to his host, 'fetch me those books — I want to see them.' 'With all my heart,' replied the other, who soon returned from his bedroom with a small valise and some neatly written manuscript. The first book chanced to be Don Cirongílio of Thrace. Felixmarte of Hyrcania was the next and the third the History of the Great Captain Don Gonzalo Hernández of Cordova together with the Life of Diego García de Paredes. On reading the first two titles the priest remarked to the barber: 'Our friend's housekeeper and niece should be here.' 'I shall do as well for carrying them to the corral,' replied the other, 'or better still we can throw them onto the hearth where burns a good fire.' 'Would your worships burn my books then?' demanded the innkeeper. 'Only these two,' answered the priest, 'Don Cirongílio and Felixmarte.' 'Is it because they are heretics and phlegmatics that you'd have them go to the fire?' 'Schismatics you should say, friend,' volunteered the barber. 'You are right,' accepted the host; 'but if you burn any, let it be the Lives of the Great Captain and Diego García; I'd rather they burn a child of mine than either of the others.'

'But, my dear brother,' counselled the priest, 'these books steeped in falsehood are really the worst kind of trash, while the history of the great captain is a true account of events in the life of Gonzalo Hernández of Cordova, who for his many and great deeds was everywhere deservedly known as the Great Captain — an illustrious epithet and rightly applied to him alone. And this Diego García de Paredes was a gentleman of note of the city of Trujillo in Estramadura, a most valiant soldier and possessing such strength that with one finger he checked a mill-wheel in full

course. Again, when posted with a two-handed sword at the entrance of a bridge, he kept an immense army at bay, and performed other feats which, had another than himself related them with glowing pride in place of the modesty of a gentleman that is his own historian, would have put the Hector's, Achilles' and Rolands' noses out of joint.'

'Go talk with my father,' replied the innkeeper; 'what is that to marvel at — the stopping of a mill-wheel? My God, sir, you ought to read what I read of Felixmarte of Hyrcania, how with a single back-stroke he cut five giants in two as pleasantly as though they had been the bean-pod friars little children make. And another time he hurled himself against a prodigious army numbering one million, six hundred thousand fighting men, all armed cap-a-pie, and sent them flying like a flock of ewes. And how shall I praise Don Cirongilio of Thrace, who was that bold and reckless the book says, that once as he was sailing up a river and a fierce serpent leapt from the water, he jumped on its scaly back, squeezing its neck so tightly that the dragon's only hope was to drop to the bottom, carrying the determined knight along with it. When they arrived down there, he found himself mid palaces and gardens wondrously beautiful. The serpent was straightway transformed into an old greybeard, who told him things as were never heard. Why, sir, should you listen to this book, you'd go mad with pleasure. Two figs for your Great Captain and Diego Garcia.'

On hearing this Dorothea whispered to Cardenio: 'Our host lacks little of making an under-study to the Knight of Sorry Aspect.' 'So it seems to me,' ~~assented Cardenio~~; 'it is clear he believes that all in these books is truth and barefoot friars couldn't persuade him otherwise.' 'Be assured, brother,' the priest now ventured to the innkeeper, 'there never in the world existed a Felixmarte of Hyrcania, a Don Cirongilio of Thrace or any of the knights the books of chivalry prattle of. 'Tis all the idle creation of wits with time on their hands, hatching these stories that others like your reapers may be amused. I am willing to take mine oath that such knights never lived and such feats and follies never happened.' 'To another dog with

that bone ! as though I didn't know how many make five and where the shoe pinches. Don't try to feed me with pap : I am no chicken. A good joke, isn't it, for you to urge that everything in these books is either false or foolish, when they're published with the license of the royal council — as though they were persons to let a heap of lies be printed, with battles and enchantments enough to drive you out of your senses !'

'I have before told you,' replied the priest, ' that these books were written for the diversion of our idle thoughts. Even as chess, tennis and billiards are suffered in well-ordered states for the benefit of those that either don't wish or aren't obliged or are unable to work, so license is given for the printing of these books, on the perfectly natural supposition that none is so ignorant as to think them true. Were it fit occasion and did the present company demand it, I could set forth what decent books of chivalry should contain if they are to be of profit as well as of pleasure. I trust the time will come when I can communicate my ideas to one in a position to remedy matters. In the meantime, mister innkeeper, endeavour to be persuaded — take your books and resolve whether they be truth or falsehood and much good may they do you. God forbid that you go lame on the same foot your guest Don Quijote now halts on.' ' Never that,' the innkeeper assured him ; ' I shan't go so far as to turn knight-errant, for I clearly see that things are not as they were when those famous knights are said to have roamed the world. '

Sancho had entered the room in the midst of this conversation and stood puzzled and thoughtful over what he heard, chiefly that knights-errant were no longer in vogue and that all the books of chivalry were nonsense and lies. He resolved, however, to wait and see how his master's present trip resulted, and if naught like what he expected came of it, he'd quit him and return to his old job, his wife and his children.

(The next two chapters are occupied with the novel of The Impertinent Paul Pry, matter entirely irrelevant to the main narrative, which gains by its omission).

CHAPTER XXXV

The wild and wonderful battle 'twixt Don Quijote and
some sacks of red wine

THERE still remained a little of the novel to be read when Sancho Panza burst into the room exclaiming : ' Hurry, sirs, and help my master, for he's in the midst of the stoutest and bloodiest battle ever I laid eyes on. By the living God, with one slash he cut my lady the Princess Micomicona's enemy the giant's head clean off like a turnip.' ' What are you talking about, man ? ' returned the priest ; ' are you crazy ? How the devil can this be when the giant is two thousand leagues from here ? ' At this moment they heard a furious noise in the room above and Don Quijote shouting : ' Hold, thief, brigand ! hold, scoundrel ! now I have you where your scimeter shall avail you naught.' It sounded as if he were making stout hacks at the wall, and again the squire cried : ' Don't stop to listen, but quick, and either help my master or break up the fight, though 'twill be too late — the giant is surely dead by this time all right, giving account to God for his wicked life, for I saw his blood running over the floor and his head tumble off as big as a wine-sack.' ' May I die,' quoth the keeper, ' if Don Quijote or Don the devil hasn't used his sword on one of the sacks of red wine there at the head of his bed. This must be the blood the good man says he saw.'

They all now rushed into the room and found Don Quijote in the strangest guise in the world. His only apparel was his shirt which barely covered his thighs in front and was three inches shorter behind. His legs were lank and long, hairy and none too clean. On his head perched a little greasy red cap belonging to the innkeeper and wound about his arm was that bed-blanket so utterly loathed (for reasons best known to himself) by Sancho Panza. In his right hand he held his drawn sword, wherewith he was thrusting in every direction, crying out as though actually

at close-quarters with a giant. The remarkable thing about it was his eyes were shut : he still slept and was dreaming this battle. His imagination had become so intoxicated with the forthcoming adventure, he dreamt he had reached the kingdom of Micomicon and was already at it with his foe. He had hacked away at the wine skins, believing them the giant, till now the room was running over with the ruddy liquid.

The innkeeper in a flaming rage threw himself on his knightly guest, beginning to pound him so heavily with closed fist that had not Cardenio and the priest rushed to the rescue, the giant would have won the day. Yet with all this the poor gentleman did not waken till the barber threw a large bucket of cold well-water on his body. Though this brought him to, he still didn't realise his plight, and Dorothea, be it said, observing how light and short his garb, of her own accord withdrew from this conflict 'twixt her champion and her foe. As for Sancho, he looked all over the floor for the giant's head and not finding it declared : ' Now am I certain this place is enchanted from beginning to end, for once before on the spot where now I stand they gave me many a thump and jab without my knowing whence they came nor was anyone visible, and now has disappeared that head which with these very eyes of mine I saw drop off and the blood spout from the body as from a fountain.' ' What blood and what fountain, you enemy of God and his saints ? ' cried the keeper ; ' don't you see, you rogue, that they're naught but the gutted sacks with all their wine swimming in this room ? May I see the soul that gutted them swimming in hell ! ' ' All I say is,' returned the squire, ' that through not finding this head my luck will be that my county will melt like salt in water.' Sancho awake was worse than his master asleep, so possessed was he by the promises that had been made him.

Seeing the density of the squire and the havoc wrought by his master, the innkeeper despaired, and swore they wouldn't get off this time without paying the reckoning : that the privileges of chivalry shouldn't avail them from footing both accounts, even to the buttons ripped off the damaged skins. The priest took Don Quijote by the hands, and he believing he had finished that

adventure and was now in the presence of the princess Micomicona, knelt before him saying: 'Thy majesty, noble and fair one, can live from this day forth without fear of harm from this misbegotten monster, and as well am I now free from my promise, since by the aid of the Most High and the favour of her through whom I live and breathe, I have fulfilled it.' 'Didn't I tell you?' said Sancho on hearing this; 'I wasn't so drunk after all. The giant is salted down all right; we're safe on the bulls; no fears for my county!' Who could help laughing at the mummeries of master and man? and laugh they did, all save the landlord, who wished himself to the devil. In the end the barber, priest and Cardenio managed to get Don Quijote into bed again and there they left him sleeping, with signs of utter fatigue.

(The novel of *The Impertinent Paul Pry* is now finished and in the next chapter Cardenio and Dorothea meet their respective loved ones, Lucinda and Don Fernando. A general reconciliation takes place and the history proceeds).

CHAPTER XXXVII

**The history of the famous infanta Micomicona continued,
together with other pleasant incidents**

SANCHO overheard the foregoing with no slight disappointment, seeing all his hopes for a title vanish in smoke. The fair princess Micomicona had changed into Dorothea and the giant into Don Fernando; and his master all the while sleeping the sleep of the just. He alone was the wronged, the unlucky, the sad one, and with heavy heart he repaired to Don Quijote who was just awakening. 'Sleep on, Sir Sorry Aspect, sleep all the sleep you will, and take no thought of butchering any giant or restoring the princess to her kingdom, for all is over and done.' 'That I can well believe, for but now I engaged with the giant in the bloodiest and most outrageous battle ever I hope to experience in all the days of my life. With one back-stroke,

swish, I tumbled his head to the earth, and so much blood poured forth that streams as of water ran along the ground.' 'As of red wine you might better say, for you must know, master, if you don't already, that the dead giant is naught but a hacked pig-skin, the blood twenty-four gallons of red wine from its belly, the lopped-off head the jade that bore me, and the devil take all.'

'What are you talking so wildly about, you fool? have you lost your wits?' the other rebuked him. 'Let your worship rise, and you'll see for yourself the pretty mess you've made, and what's more we shall have to pay for it. You will see too how the queen is converted into a private lady called Dorothea, together with other events which, if you dip into them, will surprise you.' 'The other time I told you, Sancho, that everything that happened here was a thing of enchantment, nor would it be strange if it were the same now.' 'All of which I could easily swallow, had my blanketing been of that breed, but instead 'twas a thing as true as you live. I saw this very innkeeper take hold of one corner and toss me skywards with much mirth and muscle and with as much one as t'other. Though simple and a sinner, I hold that when you recognise people, 'tis not enchantment but a good deal of black and blue, and hard luck besides.' 'Enough for the present,' Don Quijote assured him, 'for God will bring it all straight in the end. Hand me my clothes and let me get out of here; I would behold these transformations and other matters you tell of.'

Sancho gave him his apparel, and during the time of his dressing, the priest was relating to Don Fernando and the other new comers at the inn the story of his friend's madness and the artifice they had employed for getting him away from Peña Pobre, where he imagined the disdain of his lady-love had placed him. He told them as well of the adventures Sancho had described, by all of which they were both amazed and amused, for it seemed to every one the strangest delusion mind distraught could hold. The priest added that since Dorothea's good-fortune had upset their former plan, they must think up another that would get their friend home. Cardenio proposed that instead they continue with their present scheme with Lucinda in the place of Dorothea.

‘ By no means, ’ declared Don Fernando ; ‘ I wish Dorothea to keep on in her disguise ; this gentleman’s village can’t be far and I am anxious to assist in his relief. ’ ‘ ’Tis no more than two days hence, ’ stated the priest. ‘ And were it more, ’ replied the other, ‘ I should be happy to travel them with such a worthy purpose. ’

At this moment the knight appeared, in full array of arms, with the battered helmet of Mambrino on, embracing his shield and leaning on his pike. Don Fernando and the others were spell-bound by the extraordinary presence of the man, his pale gaunt face half-a league long, his job-lot of arms and grave courtly manner. They silently waited to see what he would say, and at last, with much dignity and repose, directing his eyes toward the lovely Dorothea, he began :

‘ My squire informs me, most fair one, that thy rank has been reduced and thy identity transformed : in short that from the queen and great lady thou wast, thou hast been converted into a damsel of no degree. If the wizard king thy father be guilty of this, fearing lest I might not give the due and necessary aid, believe me he did not and does not know half his art, being little versed in the traditions of chivalry. Had he studied and examined them as closely and deliberately as I, he’ld have learned that knights of less than my renown have again and again achieved more difficult successes. ’Tis no great feat to kill a paltry giant, however formidable he may be. Indeed a short time since I found myself in the company of one, and — but I prefer to be silent lest they tell me I lie. Time, the revealer of all things, will say it for me when least we expect it. ’

‘ You found yourself with no giant but with two wine-skins, ’ broke in the landlord. But Don Fernando told him to hold his tongue and not interrupt his guest, who proceeded saying : ‘ I beg of thee therefore, noble and disinherited lady, that if thy father for the reason assigned worked this metamorphosis in thy person, do thou put no trust in him, since not in the world is there peril through which my sword won’t cleave a way, and shortly by that stroke whereby I tumbled thine enemy’s head to the ground, shall I place thy country’s crown on thine. ’ The

knight here made an end, waiting for the princess to reply, and she, knowing Don Fernando's determination that the trick of taking the poor man home should be persisted in, with playful seriousness began :

‘Whoever told thee, valiant knight of Sorry Aspect, that I had been converted and transformed, didn't speak truly, for I am the same to-day as yesterday. Certain lucky strikes have made slight variations in me to be sure, for they have given me the best of all I desire but on no account have I ceased to be what formerly I was, and I still intend to avail myself of the might of thy bold invincible arm. And so, my lord, let thy goodness again honour my father, regarding him as prudent and sagacious, since by his science he discovered the right and easy way to repair my disgrace. I feel however that were it not for thee, never should I have met with my recent good-fortune. That I speak the truth, most of the gentlemen here will bear witness. On the morrow we shall again set forth — to-day we couldn't get far — and I leave to God and the spirit in thy breast my further expected deliverance.’

Thus spake the cunning Dorothea, and on hearing her Don Quijote turned to his squire and said rather bitterly : ‘I take mine oath, Sanchuelo, that you are the greatest rascalion in all Spain. Didn't you just tell me, you vagabond thief, that this princess had become a girl named Dorothea, and that the head I believed I had cut from a giant was the jade that bore you, along with a lot of other nonsense that put me into worse confusion than I have known in all the days of my life ? I swear —’ and here he looked upward and gritted his teeth, ‘I shall make such an end of you as will put salt in the brain-pan of all the lying knight-errant squires that ever will be.’ ‘Let your worship calm yourself,’ replied Sancho ; ‘maybe I was mistaken with regard to the conversion of my lady the princess Micomicona, but in the matter of the giant's head — certainly in the hacking of the skins and the blood being naught but red wine — by God I was right, for the skins still lie there sorely wounded at the bed's head, and the red wine has made a little pond of the room. If you don't believe me, wait till the eggs come to be fried, that

is when master innkeeper hands in his bill, looking for damages. For the other I rejoice that the lady queen is as she was, since my share will come to me as to every neighbour's son.'

To this his master returned: 'Sancho forgive me; you are naught but a scatter-brain. But come, enough of this.' 'Enough, not a syllable more,' echoed Don Fernando; 'we'll pass the evening in pleasant converse and on the morrow, as the princess advises, we'll all set out in your company, as we wish to witness the valiant and unheard-of deeds our knight is to perform in the progress of his great undertaking.' 'It is I that shall wait upon and accompany you,' replied Don Quijote, 'since I am more than grateful for the favour shown and the good opinion entertained toward me, and this shall I endeavour to justify or let it cost me my life, and more, if more be possible.'

The night had now set in and under the direction of Don Fernando's attendants the landlord had used his best pains in preparing a supper. They all sat down to a long table as in a refectory, since the inn didn't boast a round or square one. The seat of honour was given to Quijote who, at last consenting, desired that the lady Micomicona sit by him, her champion and protector. Lucinda and Zoraida sat next to Dorothea, while opposite sat Don Fernando and Cardenio with the captive and other gentlemen at their side, and the priest and barber next the ladies. It was a happy gathering and their pleasure was heightened when Don Quijote, moved by the same impulse that occasioned his mid-dinner address to the goatherds, again interrupted his eating and began:

'Truly, friends, if you reflect upon it, great and unbelievable things do they witness that profess the order of errantry. For who of living men, entering in at the gate of this castle and beholding us here, could believe that we are what we are? who would imagine that this lady at my side is the great queen we all know her to be, or that I am that Knight of Sorry Aspect that is trumpeted abroad by the mouth of fame? There can be no doubt that this art and exercise surpasses all that men have hitherto discovered — and so much the more is it esteemed as it is the more exposed to perils. Away with all that hold letters more glorious than

arms, for whoever they be, to them I say they know not whereof they speak. Their main tenet is that the workings of the spirit are of a higher order than those of the body upon which, they say, the calling of arms solely depends — as though 'twere a kind of porter's job where great strength is the only requisite, and as though in this profession which we its followers call arms were not included such acts of prowess as demand the highest intelligence, or as though the spirit of the warrior that undertakes the command of an army or the defence of a beleaguered city were not as actively engaged as his body. Does it perchance pertain to physical strength to know and conjecture the enemy's intent, designs, stratagems; the surmounting of difficulties or the prevention of certain ruin? Surely not, for all those are matters of the understanding, wherein the body plays no part.

' If then we are agreed that arms no less than letters requires intelligence, next let us see which of the two vocations, that of the writer or that of the warrior, is the more arduous — which knowledge we shall arrive at by a survey of their several aims. That calling is to be the more highly esteemed that has the nobler end as its moving life. I speak not now of divine letters, whose sole endeavour is to lead souls to Heaven — such a sublime aim can yield to no other. But the end and goal of human letters is to regulate distributive justice, to give every man his due and to see to it that good laws are observed — an object generous and noble to be sure and worthy great praise, yet not so glorious as the aim of arms, which is peace — the greatest good to be desired of men in this life. Thus the first good-tidings that came to mankind was the song the angels sang in the sky that night which is now our day, Glory be to God in the highest and on earth peace, goodwill toward men. And the salutation the blessed Master of Heaven and earth taught his disciples and chosen few when they entered a house was, Peace be upon this house, and many another time He said to them, My peace I give you, or, My peace I leave with you, or, Peace be unto you — a precious gift indeed, given by such a hand: a jewel without which there can be no happiness, neither in Heaven nor on earth.

' This peace is the proper end of war and therefore of arms.

Granting this and that ~~thereby the aim of war is higher than the aim of letters~~, let us compare the ~~bodily labours of the writer and of the warrior~~, and see which are the more arduous.' Our knight proceeded in his discourse with such rational sequence that none of his listeners could have supposed him mad. Instead, since all were of the rank of gentlemen, who follow arms from birth, they heard him with entire absorption. So he continued : ' Now the student's trials are, first of all, poverty ; not that all are poor, but I wish to put their case as forcibly as I can, and in saying they suffer poverty, it seems to me I couldn't assign them a harder lot, for he that is poor is denied all the comforts of life.

' This poverty the student experiences in several forms : to-day in hunger, to-morrow in cold, again in nakedness and at times all three together. Yet his hunger is not so great but that he gets something to eat, though it may come a little later than usual or from the tables of the rich or, and this is the greatest humiliation of all, he may have to go to the soup, as they call it. Nor is there ever lacking a neighbour's fireside or chimney-corner, which, if it doesn't warm, at least dulls the winter's edge. The night they pass comfortably enough, sleeping under cover. I need not mention such trifles as their limited stock of shirts and shoes, their thin threadbare clothing and their tendency to overeat when some happy chance sets a banquet before them. For along this rough uneven road stumbling, falling, rising but to fall again, they reach their goal at last, and when they have escaped these Syrtes, Scyllas and Charybdises, many of them to our knowledge have been borne on the wings of fortune and set down to rule and govern the world. Now is their hunger become feasting, their cold refreshment, their nakedness fair raiment and their rush-mats damasks and fine linen. All these are rewards due their steadfastness through trials — trials, however, that seem small when compared with those of the warrior, as I shall now proceed to show.'

CHAPTER XXXVIII

Don Quijote's subtle discourse concerning arms and letters

‘**E**VEN as in the student's case we began with his poverty and its effects,’ continued Don Quijote, ‘let us examine now whether the soldier as regards worldly goods be any better off. Instead we shall find him poorer than poverty itself, since he is dependent on miserable pay that comes late or never, and on plundering, to the considerable peril of life and conscience. At times indeed the scantiness of his apparel is such that a slashed doublet serves for both shirt and uniform, while in mid-winter on the open plain he must needs protect himself from foul weather with naught more substantial than the breath of his mouth which, contrary to all nature in coming from an empty place, comes forth cold. But let him wait till night comes, atoning for these discomforts by the bed it allows him. This, if he behave, will never sin in over-narrowness, for he can quickly measure on the ground as many feet as required, and without fear of rumpling the sheets toss to his heart's content.

‘And now let us suppose the time come for taking his professional degree, in other words the day of battle is at hand whereon he is to receive his doctor's cap, made of lint to stop a bullet-hole through his temples it may be or that has crippled an arm or a leg. Should this luck fail him and merciful Heaven bring him through well and alive, he finds himself in his old poverty still and is obliged to engage in several battles more and be victor in all ere he can better himself — and a miracle of this kind is rare indeed. For tell me, friends, if you've given it thought, how many fewer have been advanced by war than have perished therein? Surely you'll aver there's no comparison: that they that have fallen in war cannot be reckoned while they that have profited thereby can we set down in three figures. The

reverse is the case with men of letters, who by fees or emoluments all manage to keep afloat. So then, even as the soldier's toil is the greater, is his reward distinctly less. Against this it may be said that it's considerably easier to reward two thousand writers than thirty thousand warriors : the former can be given offices native to their profession while soldiers can be satisfied only out of their lord's treasury. But this difficulty serves rather my side of the case.

' Leaving this aside however, for egress from such a labyrinth is difficult, return we to our main thesis, the innate superiority of arms over letters, a matter still to be proven, so forcible are the arguments advanced on either hand. Letters for example makes this further claim, that without them arms would perish, for even war bows to laws and laws are of the profession of the lettered. To which arms makes answer, that letters in return could not thrive without arms, since by arms are commonwealths protected, kingdoms preserved, cities defended, roads made safe and seas swept of pirates. In short were it not for arms, republics, kingdoms, cities and the paths of earth and ocean would be exposed to the chaos and savagery incident to war that persists unchecked in the abuse of its privileges and power.

' Secondly, 'tis a maxim with us, that what costs more is and should be the more esteemed. To attain to recognition in letters costs time, vigils, hunger, nakedness, swimings in the head, dyspepsia and other allied ailments, already partially referred to. But gradually to become a good soldier costs all these, and in so much greater degree there's no comparison, since at every step he risks his life. What fear of want or poverty can be likened to the fears of the soldier that, being on guard in the ravelin or cavalier of some beleaguered fortress, hears the enemy mining toward him, yet can on no account fly from this imminent peril? The most he can do is to inform his captain, hoping that he will countermine, but there in any case must he stand, expecting any moment to fly without wings sky-high and come willy-nilly down again.

' If this danger appear but slight, let us see whether it is equalled or surpassed when two galleys attack prow-on in mid-

ocean. Lashed and locked together they leave but two feet of beak-head for the soldier to stand upon, but he, though finding as many ministers of death confronting him as there are cannon not a lance-length off on the opposing ship, and though conscious that a slight misstep will land him in Neptune's bottomless gulph, none the less, impelled by the thought of glory, bravely attempts to force a passage, making himself target to all that artillery the while. But what is chiefly to be admired is that scarce has one fallen whence he cannot be raised till the end of time, when another takes his place, and should this second likewise drop into the jaws that await him, another succeeds and another, without pause between — spirit and daring unrivalled in all the exigencies of war.

‘ Happy and blest were those ages that knew not the dread fury of those devilish instruments of siege (whose inventor, I like to think, is in hell, paying the price of his diabolical creation) that have made it possible for infamous and cowardly arms to worst a puissant knight. Without his knowing how or whence and at the very moment when dauntless ardour most animates his intrepid heart, along comes a random ball discharged by one that mayhap fled in terror at the flash of his infernal machine, whose shot however ends and stills in a second the intellectual being of one that deserved to enjoy it for years to come. When I reflect upon such a possibility, I am tempted to regret that I undertook this calling in an age so despicable as this wherein we live : not that I fear hazards, of whatsoever kind, but it gravels me to think how powder and shot may remove the chance of becoming famous and renowned by arm and sword-edge throughout the known world. But Heaven's will be done, and if I succeed, I shall loom the larger in men's minds even as the perils to which I exposed myself were more hazardous than those faced by errants of old. ’

Don Quijote delivered this long harangue while the others ate. Not once did it occur to him tho satisfy his hunger, though now and again Sancho encouraged it, saying that afterwards would be time to say all he desired. Fresh pity was awakened in his audience in observing how one, apparently of fine understanding

and a clear and fertile reasoner, should go to pieces when he came to discuss his benighted chivalry.

(Here follows the Tale of the Captive, the Story of the Muleteer and other inconsequent episodes and not till chapter forty-six is the narrative proper resumed).

CHAPTER XLVI

The enchantment of our gallant knight

Two days were passed at the inn by this illustrious company, and now that it seemed time to depart, they bethought themselves of a plan that would make it possible for the priest and barber without troubling Dorothea and Don Fernando to carry Don Quijote to their village to attempt his cure. Accordingly arrangements were made with an ox-carter that was passing to carry our knight home and in the following manner. They first built a cage of wooden poles, large enough comfortably to hold their friend. Next, at the priest's instance and counsel, Don Fernando, Don Luis' servants, the officers of the Holy Brotherhood and the innkeeper disguised themselves, some in one fashion, some in another, that the champion might suppose them persons other than he had seen in this castle. They then softly stole into the room where he lay sleeping, at rest from his recent toil. Forcibly seizing him as he lay there all free and far away from such accident, they bound him hands and feet, so tightly that when he awoke with a start he could not move or do aught but be thunderstruck at the many strange faces about him. He instantly believed the suggestion of his relentless disordered fancy, which was that these were phantoms of that charmed castle, and that he too was certainly under a spell, since he could neither threaten them nor defend himself — precisely as the scheming priest had anticipated.

Sancho alone of the company was in his right mind and clothes. Though only a little short of sharing his master's obses-

sion, he recognised these counterfeit persons well enough, but dared not open his lips till he saw the upshot of this seizure of his lord, who said as little as the servant and for a similar reason. The upshot of it was that bringing in the cage, they shut him therein, nailing the bars too well to be loosened, and lifted the whole upon their shoulders. As they were about to leave the room, there was heard a soul-subduing voice, at least as much so as the barber could make it, saying :

‘ O Knight of Sorry Aspect, let not the prison where thou art confined disturb thee, being required for the speedier conclusion of the adventure to which thy great chivalry has committed thee. All will be accomplished when the raging Manchegan lion and the white Tobosan dove lie down together, having first bent their proud necks to the easy yoke of matrimony. From this rare union shall issue to the light of day brave whelps, to emulate the ravening claws of their doughty sire. And this shall come to pass ere the pursuer of the fugitive nymph twice visits the starry signs in the swift course of nature. And thou, most noble and obedient squire that ever bore sword or beard or sense of smell, be not dismayed or concerned at seeing the flower of knight-errantry borne off before thine eyes, for soon, if so it please the Moulder of the world, thou’lt be so exalted as not to know thyself, nor shall the promises made by thy good master go unfulfilled. I assure thee, on behalf of the sage Fraudiana, that thy wages shall be paid, even as thou’lt see in the outcome. Follow in the wake of the spirited and spell-bound knight, for ye both must go where both shall stay. God be with you, as I may not say more, returning whither I alone know.’

Toward the end of this prophecy the barber raised his voice to such a pitch and then lowered it to so soft a piano that even those party to the trick began to believe what they heard. The prisoner was consoled by the special prediction (to him the gist of the whole prophecy) that he was to be united in the bonds of holy matrimony with his beloved Dulcinea del Toboso, from whose happy womb were to leap forth whelps, his sons, to the everlasting glory of La Mancha. With this firmly fixed in mind he keyed his voice and with deep sigh complained :

· O thou, whoever thou art that have predicted such happiness for me, prithee ask from the sage magician that has my fate in charge that he let me not perish here ere I see such rare and blessed promises realised. Could that but be, I shall count the pangs of this charnel-house my glory ; these chains shall be as comfort and this bed not the hard battle-field but a soft and happy bridal-couch. Touching my squire and his recompense, I trust to his good nature and conduct not to desert me in good or evil fortune, for should it come to pass through his or my baleful star that I had not the power to bestow the isle I promised or its equivalent, at least his wages shall not fail, for in my testament I have left written his portion, not becoming his many and good services but mine own straitened means.' At this Panza meekly inclined his head and kissed his master's two hands—he couldn't kiss one since they were tied together. The phantoms again raised the cage to their shoulders and marching out placed it on the waiting ox-wagon.

CHAPTER XLVII

The amazing method of the knight's enchantment, together with other notable events

WHEN Don Quijote found himself cooped up in a cage and on an ox-cart, he murmured : ' Many and ponderous are the histories of knights-errant I have read, but never have I seen or heard of enchanted knights carried this fashion or at the speed these lumbering beasts promise. We are wont rather to be shot through the air with passing swiftness, in a dusky cloud or chariot of fire, or mounted on some hippogriff or other. To be drawn on an ox-cart ! by the living God, it puts me to confusion. However, it may be that modern chivalries and enchantments are to take a different road from that followed by the ancient. As I am a new knight in the world and the first to revive the long-since-forgotten exercise of chivalry, belike new modes of enchantment and new methods of transporting the enchanted

are come into vogue. How does it strike you, Sancho son ? ’

‘ I don’t know how it does, ’ replied Sancho ; ‘ I’m not so read up in errantry writings as is your worship. Nevertheless I’m willing to take an oath that not all these apparitions are Catholics. ’ ‘ Catholics, my father ! and how could they be when every blessed one is a devil fantastically disguised for the pupose of placing me here. If you don’t believe me, touch and feel them, and you’ll find their bodies unsubstantial air. ’ ‘ My God, sir, but I have touched them and this devil that goes there as fine as you please is rolling in flesh and has another property quite unlike a certain one they tell me devils possess. I’ve heard they all smell of brimstone, sulphur and other vile odours, but this one smells of amber half a league off. ’ Sancho referred to Don Fernando, who as a gentleman was highly perfumed. ‘ Don’t let that surprise you, Panza friend, since devils are knowing ones, you must understand, and though bad odours are ever about them, they don’t smell at all, being spirits. If they do smell, it must be something pretty rank for, carrying hell with them wherever they go and having no relief from their torments, inas-much as sweet odours may be considered pleasant and refreshing, they cannot possibly smell sweet. If this particular one smells of amber as you say, either you are mistaken or he’s putting you on a false scent that you may not know him for a devil. ’

Such was the dialogue that passed ’twixt master and man, till Don Fernando and Cardenio, apprehensive lest Sancho grasp their deception, being already at its heels, resolved to shorten the leave-taking. Calling the innkeeper aside, they bade him saddle Rocinante and pannel the ass — which was done. The priest in the meantime had negotiated with the Holy Brotherhood at so much per day to accompany them as escort. Cardenio hung the shield from Rocinante’s saddlebow on one side and the basin on the other, and beckoned Sancho to mount Dapple and lead his master’s steed by the bridle, stationing the officers on either side with their muskets. But before the ox-cart began its journey, the innkeeper’s wife, daughter and Maritornes came out to bid Don Quijote farewell, simulating grief at his disgrace ; whereupon our knight delivered himself of the following :

‘ Weep not, my good ladies ; these calamities are proper to those that profess what I profess. Had troubles not come upon me, I should have no fame as an errant. Such crises play no part in the affairs of knights of little name and fame, of whom is none to take thought ; in the lives of valiant knights, yes, that they may be envied of their virtue and valour by many princes and other cavaliers who by iniquitous means strive to destroy the good ones. But in every case virtue has such power in herself that despite all the necromancy known even to Zoroaster its first inventor she’ll come forth triumphant out of every danger and give forth light in the world as does the sun in the sky. Forgive me, fair ones, if through heedlessness I’ve done you aught of wrong : wittingly and willingly never have I wronged man or woman. And lastly pray that God draw me from the distress into which I have been plunged by the instrument of some crooked-willed magician, for if once I escape this charnel-house, there shall not escape my memory the favours done me in this castle, which I shall acknowledge and requite as they deserve. ’

While the palace-dames were thus engaged, the priest and barber bade Don Fernando and his company farewell, and now mounting they set out after the cart, both wearing masks lest their friend recognise them. The order of the procession was as follows : first came the ox-cart driven by its owner with the armed officers on either side ; then Sancho Panza on his ass leading Rocinante by the bridle ; last of all and with calm and serious air rode priest and barber with faces covered, on heavy mules and at a pace no faster than what the slow advance of the oxen permitted. Don Quijote was seated in the cage, hands tied and feet extended, resting against the grating, silent and patient as, not a man of flesh, but a figure in stone. Slowly and silently they journeyed for well nigh two leagues when they came to a dale that seemed to the Jehu an excellent place to rest and feed his yoke, but on his consulting with the priest and barber, the latter suggested that they go just a bit further round the hill, where he knew of a still richer meadow ; and they again moved on.

The priest, turning his head, now noticed that close behind them rode six or seven well-equipped horsemen. These soon

overtook our party, since they did not travel with the ease and leisure of oxen, but rather like men on canons' mules and with the intent of passing the siesta at an inn that appeared in the distance less than a league away. These diligent ones saluted our snail-paced friends, and one of them, who was in fact a Toledan canon and master of the others, on seeing the long procession of cart, constables, Sancho, Rocinante, priest and barber, and above all the knight encaged and confined, could not but ask the reason of such transportation, having concluded from the badges of the officers, that here was some highway-robber or other culprit whose punishment fell within the jurisdiction of the Brotherhood. The constable to whom the question was put replied : ' Ask him, sir, for we cannot satisfy you.' Don Quijote, overhearing question and answer, thereupon addressed the newcomers : ' Your worships, gentlemen, are versed in knight-errantry perhaps ? If so, I may tell of my undoing ; otherwise there's no reason why I trouble myself. '

By this time the priest and barber, seeing the travellers in conversation with their prisoner, came forward that they might answer inquiries in such a way as to cloak their scheme from detection. The canon, speaking for the others, was saying to our knight : ' Indeed, brother, I know more of books of chivalry than of Villapando's Elements of Logic. If this be the only condition, you can safely tell what you wish. ' ' God's hand ! ' exclaimed Don Quijote ; ' in that event I'd inform you, sir knight, that I've been placed enchanted in this cage through the envy and fraud of scurvy magicians, since virtue is more persecuted of the evil than beloved of the good. A knight-errant I, none of those whose deeds fame never troubles to immortalise in her memory but one of their number rather that despite and in the teeth of this very jealousy and of as many magi as Persia ever gave birth to, in defiance of all the Brahmins of India and the gymnosophists of Ethiopia, write their names in the temple of eternity, as pattern and ensample to future knights, that they may see the steps they must take, would they reach by their arm the utmost pinnacle of fame. '

' Señor Don Quijote speaks the truth, ' broke in the priest at

this point ; ‘ he goes enchanted in this carry-all not for his own sins or shortcomings but through the ill-will of those whom virtue galls and valour chafes. Behold before you, sir, the Knight of Sorry Aspect, of whom you may have heard, for his great feats and gallant deeds shall be writ in imperishable brass and eternal marble — the more because envy wearies herself in depreciating and malice in effacing them. ’ When the canon heard both the imprisoned and the free man talk in this lofty style, he was ready to cross himself in wonder, not knowing what had befallen him, and his whole company were no less amazed. Their confusion was trebled when Sancho, having drawn nigh to listen, ventured to add : ‘ I may please or displease you by what I say, gentlemen, but the truth of all this is that my master Don Quijote is as enchanted as my mother. He has his faculties, eats, drinks and performs the other necessary functions as other men do and as he did himself yesterday ere they cooped him. Why would they have me believe him enchanted, when I’ve heard plenty of people say that the enchanted neither eat nor sleep nor talk, and my master, if you let him, will outtalk thirty lawyers. ’

Then turning to the priest Sancho continued : ‘ Tut, tut, father, do you think I don’t know you ? can you suppose I don’t see through these new enchantments ? I know you well enough, however your face be concealed, and I know what you’re about, however your tricks be disguised. The short of it all is that where envy reigns, virtue cannot thrive, nor liberality and meanness travel side by side. Bad luck to the devil ! had not your reverence come on the scene, by this time my master would have been husband to the infanta Micomicona and I at least a count, since naught less could be expected from my master’s goodness and the greatness of my services. Now do I see the truth of what they say hereabouts, that fortune travels faster than a mill-wheel and that he that was up yesterday is down to-day. I grieve for my wife and children, for just when they might and should expect to see the old man enter the house-gate a governor or viceroy of some isle or kingdom, here he comes a common postillon. All this I say, father, merely to bring home to your paternal conscience the ill turn done my master, that you may watch out lest

God lay at your door both this imprisonment and the postponement of all the good and helpful things he might be accomplishing. '

'Come, snuff me those candles,' put in the barber at this point; 'do you belong to your master's fraternity? By the living God, I see you'll have to keep him company in this cage and be as enchanted as he, since his erring and errantry rub you a little. 'Twas an unlucky moment when you became impregnated with his promises, an unlucky hour when there entered your muddle the island you set hopes on.' To this Sancho returned: 'I am not, nor am I a man to be, pregnant by anyone, by the king himself whoever he be. Though poor I am an old Christian and owe no man. If I desire islands, others desire worse. Each is the son of his works and being a man I can come to be pope; then why not governor of an isle — the more that master can win so many he'll be short of persons to whom to give them. Look how you speak, mister barber; shaving beards is not the whole of life, and one Peter differs from another. I say this since we all know who you are; 'tis no use to throw loaded dice with me. As to my master's enchantment, God knows the truth of the business, so let it rest where it lies; stirring will only make it worse.'

The barber preferred not to continue the conversation lest Sancho by his plain-speaking disclose what he and the priest so much wished concealed, and in the same alarm the priest asked the canon to ride ahead a little that he might reveal the mystery of the cage, together with other things sure to interest him. The canon assented and he and his party were all ears to what the priest had to tell of the character, life and obsession of Don Quijote. In a few words he informed them of the origin of his craze, the course of events down to his present imprisoning and their plan of taking him home in the trust of finding some remedy. The canon and his followers marvelled afresh at this aberrant history and the former said in return: 'I certainly believe, sir, that these so-called books of chivalry are injurious to the welfare of the state. Led by an indolent showy taste I have, I confess, read the first few chapters of nearly all printed, but

I never could get myself to read one through, for they all looked alike to me — none better than another. In my opinion these books fall under the category of the so-called Milesian or nonsense fables, whose sole aim is to amuse rather than instruct, unlike the apologue fables which both edify and entertain.

Moreover, though their main intent is to amuse, crowded as they are with so many and such inordinate absurdities, I know not how they can. For all intellectual pleasure arises from the contemplation of the inherent beauty and harmony of things placed before one by the eyes or by the imagination : nothing distorted or inconsequent can afford real delight. What beauty then, I ask, or what proportion of parts to whole or of whole to parts, can be present in a book or fable wherein a lad of sixteen uses his sword on a towering giant and cuts him in two as if of sugar-paste ? Again when they would paint us a battle, they represent the enemy at a million fighting men with only the hero of the tale opposing, yet in spite of ourselves we are asked to believe that this solitary gentleman, relying on the valour of his single arm, carried off the victory.

What too shall we say of the freedom a queen or empress hereditary allows herself in the arms of some strange or strolling cavalier ? Again, whose fancy, unless it be utterly unformed and undisciplined, can be tickled on reading about a great towerful of knights that sails the seas like a ship under fair wind, this evening off Lombardy and on the morrow at the shores of Prester John of the Indies, or some other land untreated of by Ptolemy and unknown to Marco Polo ? If the apology be made that the authors of these books are writing fiction and are therefore not bound to the letter, mine answer is that fiction is fine in proportion to its semblance to truth — is more delightful according as it moves in the realm of the possible.

Tales of fiction must in other words be wedded to the understanding of the reader — should be so constructed as to reconcile impossibilities and smooth out rough places, holding the attention through the elements of surprise, suspense and a bewitching of the mind. So will admiration and pleasure walk hand in hand. But failure awaits him that flies verisimilitude,

wherein in literature lies perfection. I have yet to see the book of chivalry whose plot conforms in all parts, the middle corresponding to the beginning, and the end the natural issue of both. Instead they introduce so many unrelated members one might think they would present us with a chimera or other monster, rather than with a symmetric whole. Inflexible in style, incredible in story, in love lascivious, in courtesy uncouth, tedious in battle, childish in prattle, outlandish in travel: in short, devoid of every artistic excellence, they should be banished from a Christian state as things of no conceivable benefit.'

The priest listened most attentively to these words of the canon, who seemed to him in all he said a man of clear understanding and sound judgment. In return he informed him how, having himself an ill opinion and hatred of books of chivalry, he had burned the many belonging to Don Quijote, naming those he had condemned to the flames and those whose lives he had spared. This greatly amused the canon, who declared that for all he had spoken ill of these books, he allowed them one advantage, namely the scope they offered the gifted nature to exercise itself, presenting as they did a wide and spacious field where the pen might run ad libitum, describing storms and shipwrecks, skirmishes and battles; portraying a valiant leader with all appropriate qualities, showing him prudent in forestalling the wiles of the enemy and eloquent in inciting or restraining his own troops; ripe in deliberation, rapid in resolve and brave in biding his time as in pushing the attack.

'The writer of books of chivalry can depict now a tragic episode, now a pleasant surprise; on one side a woman most beautiful, virtuous, modest and wise, and on the other a Christian knight, courtly and courageous. He may contrast a rude and reckless bully with a well-tutored prince, gentle but firm. He may present the humble loyalty of vassals side by side with the greatness and liberality of their lords. On one page he can show himself the astrologer, on the next a well-informed cosmographer, at times a musician, again a statesman, and occasions there will be where he can even play the necromancer if he choose.

‘ His narrative may deal with the craft of Ulysses, the piety of Aeneas, the valour of Achilles, the downfall of Hector, the treachery of Timon, the friendship of Euryalus, Alexander’s liberality, Cæsar’s courage, the clemency and truth of a Trajan, the fidelity of a Zopyrus, the wisdom of a Cato — in fine he may treat of all the virtues that go to perfect an illustrious man, attributing them all now to a single character, now portioning them among many. If in addition the writer have charm of style and a fertile fancy and aim at the truth, he may well weave a web of such bright and varied colours that its beauty and perfection will realise his noblest dreams, affording both delight and discipline. The very freedom permitted by these books allows the author to be tragic and comic, lyric and epic (which may be written in prose also), enabling him to display all those qualities that unite in the sweet and winning arts of oratory and poesy.’

CHAPTER XLVIII

The canon pursues the subject of books of chivalry, together with other matters worthy of his wit

‘ **I** quite agree with your worship, señor canon,’ said the priest, ‘ and the authors of these books are the more to be censured in that they have written haphazardly, without respect to rules of art, whereby they might have become as famous in prose as the two princes of Greek and Latin poetry in verse.’ ‘ I am bound to confess,’ said the canon, ‘ that I was once tempted to write a book of chivalry that should preserve all the characteristics I just enumerated, and if the truth must be known, I actually did write more than a hundred pages. To test the same and see if it answered my requirements, I showed the manuscript to persons devoted to this sort of reading, to learned intelligent men as well as to the ignorant whose only pleasure is in listening to nonsense; and from all I received flattering approval. However, I proceeded no further, both because the tale seemed to accord not with my

calling and because I find there are more fools in the world than wise men ; and though the lauding of the few outweighs the laughter of the many, I was unwilling to submit myself to the senseless judgment of the giddy crowd that in the main would be one's reading public.

' But what chiefly stayed me and the idea of ever finishing the book was an argument drawn from the style of comedies now in vogue, running something like this : If modern comedies, whether based on fact or on fiction, though acknowledged to be trash and things lacking both head and feet, are yet relished by the crowd and though far from being so are by it deemed excellent, till authors and managers alike confess that the reason of their worthlessness is solely popular taste ; and if on the other hand it is true that writers of artistic plays with well-constructed plots satisfy a mere handful of critics, failing to reach the masses ; and granting last of all that 'tis better to earn a living from the many than recognition from the few — then, said I to myself with this book of mine, it follows that I should scorch mine eyebrows in holding to the acknowledged rules and in the end be left like the tailor of el Campillo.

' I have, nevertheless, frequently endeavoured to persuade authors of the fallacy of such reasoning, telling them they'd draw larger audiences and achieve more lasting fame by staging well-contrived and not fictitious comedies ; but so case-hardened are they that neither proof nor reason will deliver them from their faith. I remember to have said to one of these obstinate fellows : ' Tell me, can't you recall that a few years back there were produced in Spain three tragedies written by a well-known poet of these kingdoms, which held the audience in admiring and pleasurable suspense, the simple no less than the wise, the vulgar as well as the educated, and that these three plays netted a larger sum to the actors than any thirty of the best that have been produced since ? '

' ' Certainly I do, ' replied the manager in question ; ' you refer to Isabella, Phyllis and Alexandra. ' ' The same, ' I answered ; ' and granting as you must that they observed the rules of art, tell me if by keeping to them they suffered at all or were thereby

prevented from giving general satisfaction. The fault, ' I went on, ' lies not with the crowd that it wants rubbish but with those that know not how to produce better. The Ingratitude Revenged wasn't rubbish, nor was any to be found in Numantia, The Merchant Lover or The Kind Foe or in many others, to the fame and renown of their gifted authors and to the pecuniary advantage of those that presented them. ' I suggested other considerations and altogether I think I left the fellow a little disconcerted, though not sufficiently convinced to be delivered of his error. '

' Your talk, señor canon, ' interposed the priest, ' stirs in me afresh my disapproval of present-day drama — an animadversion that is quite equal to mine opposition to books of chivalry. According to Cicero the drama should be a mirror of life, a pattern of a people's manners, an image of the truth; whereas modern comedy is a mirror of absurdities, a pattern of a people's follies and a picture of licentiousness. What greater stupidity can there be than for a character that in the first scene of the first act is but a child in swaddling-clothes, to appear as a bearded man in the second scene; or to represent an old man as in the vigour of his youth, a youth as a weakling, a lacquey as an orator, a page as a counsellor, a king as a porter and a princess as a kitchen-wench ?

' And what shall I say of their practice with regard to the time wherein the action of a piece takes place, save that I've seen a comedy in which the first act opens in Europe, the second in Asia and the third closes in Africa; had there been four acts, the last would undoubtedly have been set in America, that all four quarters of the globe might have been cared for? If the basis of the drama be the imitation of life, how can a man of even moderate intelligence be satisfied when in a play of King Pepin's or Charlemagne's time the leading character is Emperor Heraclius, who is seen entering Jerusalem bearing the Cross and winning the Holy Sepulchre like Godfrey of Bouillon — the two events in reality being centuries apart? or when, though the play is supposed to be based on fiction, they introduce historical facts and episodes in the lives of persons living at different times, not

with any semblance of nature and with obvious and most unpardonable blunders ? And the worst of it is that ignoramuses say that this sort of thing is perfect — that to ask for else savours of fastidiouness.

‘ And if we turn to divine comedies, what do we find ? There the dramatists represent miracles not only apocryphal but shockingly conceived. They attribute to one saint the miracles of another and make bold to introduce these marvels as they call them into the secular drama as well, merely because it suits them or in order that the know-nothings may gape and come to the performances. Now all this depreciates truth, belittles history and is to the disrepute of Spanish genius ; for foreigners, who carefully observe the laws of comedy, regard us as crude and uncultivated, beholding the absurd extravagances of our stage.

‘ Nor is it enough to answer that since the chief reason why well-ordered republics allow the drama is that it affords harmless amusement to the community, turning it now and then from the unhealthy tendencies of idleness, and since this result is achieved by any play good or bad, there’s no occasion for restraining authors and actors by laws insisting on good plays only. As a matter of fact, this object would be realised far more perfectly by good than by bad plays, since an audience that has witnessed an unified and wholly artistic piece will leave the theatre delighted by its humour, disciplined by its truth, with minds enlarged by its issues, wits sharpened by its logic ; enlightened by the theme, made wiser by example, their whole moral being will be made militant against vice and at one with virtue : all of which desirable effects will a good play bring about in the soul of the spectator, however lifeless and untutored he may be. Of all impossibilities the greatest is that a well-constructed play shouldn’t give far more pleasure and satisfaction than one poorly-constructed, which most acted to-day are.

‘ Yet the fault lies not entirely with the authors, some of whom know too well their error and how they may be saved, but now that plays are a commodity, they say and with truth that actors buy only those of a certain cast, and the poet tries to adapt himself to what the purchaser demands. That you may be con-

vinced of this, consider the infinite plays a certain most happy genius of these kingdoms has composed, all with such grace and spirit, of such elegant verse, clever dialogue and sentiments, and finally with such lofty periods and general elevation of style, his renown fills the world. Yet in his desire to satisfy the taste of actors, not all his plays have attained their possible perfection. And other dramatists are there that write so carelessly that after the first performances of their compositions the actors are obliged to leave town in fear of being brought to court, where indeed many have appeared for offering things prejudicial to certain crowns and noble families.

‘ Now all these annoyances, and many others I haven’t named, would cease if there were a sensible intelligent person at court whose business it was to examine all plays before their production, not only in Madrid but throughout Spain : no district-magistrate could permit a play to be given that hadn’t his seal and signature. The players would send the manuscripts offered them to the capital for license, and if the plays were approved, they could act them in safety. Authors would write more thoughtfully and with greater pains, knowing that their compositions must pass the rigid examination of one that knew his business. We should thus get good plays and their mission in life would be most felicitously accomplished. The entertainment of the people would be secured, the good opinions of the wits of Spain, the interest and safety of the actors and the sparing of legal procedures. Should another official or the same be asked to examine new books of chivalry, doubtless some would appear with the excellences your worship speaks of, enriching our literature with a deposit of noble sentiments and casting the old books into oblivion, for the new would afford harmless amusement not alone to the idle but to the busiest of men — and rightly, for the bow cannot always be bent nor can weak human nature sustain itself without a certain amount of wholesome recreation.’

The priest and canon had arrived at this point when the barber came up and said : ‘ This is the place, señor licentiate, where it seemed to me the oxen might find fresh and abundant cropping while we took our siesta.’ ‘ Good,’ replied the priest, and

turning to the canon he told him of their plan. The canon said he would remain also : he was attracted by the lovely dale that opened before them and wished to enjoy further converse with the priest, toward whom he was greatly drawn, thus learning Don Quijote's history more in detail. He sent servants on to the inn, not far from their resting-place, bidding them bring enough dinner for all. One of them replied that the sumpter-mule, which must have already reached the tavern, had sufficient, but they needed barley for their beasts. 'Leave them there then,' directed the canon, 'and fetch hither the one with the provisions.'

While the above was passing, Sancho, seizing this opportunity to converse with his master without constant interference from priest and barber, whom he regarded in the light of spies, drew near the cage and said : 'Señor, for the relief of my conscience I would tell you the truth concerning your enchantment, which is that these two fellows prowling round here with covered faces are the priest and barber of our village. What I think is that they've invented this trick of carting you off from pure envy, seeing your worship surpassing them in deeds of fame. Regarding this as true, it follows you're not enchanted but hoodwinked and made a fool of. As proof whereof I would ask a question, and should you answer in the way I think likely, you'll be able to put your finger on this ruse and see you aren't enchanted but merely upside down in your wits.'

'Ask me what you please, son Sancho, for I'll keep answering to your heart's content. But as to our escort being the priest and barber, our fellow-townsmen and acquaintances, though it might easily so appear, don't for a minute think such the case. What you must think and realise is, that if they seem what you say, 'tis simply because my enchanterers have assumed their form and semblance (they easily take on any shape they choose) that you may think as you do and thus be cast into a labyrinth of doubts from which you can't deliver yourself though you found the thread of Theseus. A further object would be to confuse my understanding as well, making it impossible for me also to solve the difficulty. If on the one hand you say the priest and barber attend me and I on the other find myself in a coop, knowing as

I do that no human agency, unless 'twere supernatural, has strength sufficient to confine me therein, what would you have me say or think, save that the method of my enchantment transcends all others ever I encountered in histories of errant and spell-bound knights ? So quickly still that suspicion ; they are as near to what you say as I am to being a Turk. Touching your catechism of me say on, since I shall answer from now till morning. '

' Our Lady bless me ! ' cried the other ; ' can your worship be such a numskull and lack-wit as not to see I tell the simple truth : namely that malice has a larger share than magic in your enchantment and downfall ? But since you won't take my word for it, I would prove to your face that you are under no charm. If not, answer me this, and may the good Lord deliver you from this pickle and may you find yourself in my lady Dulcinea's arms when least you expect it. ' ' A truce to your prayers, man. Out with your question, for I say I shall make answer at once. ' ' What I ask, then, and should like to know, is that you tell me without swelling or smothering any part thereof, but in perfect truth, as is to be expected and as is the custom of all that profess arms like your worship under the title of knight-errant — ' ' I give my pledge not to lie in the smallest particular, ' interposed the other ; ' out with your question, for you gall me with so many blessings and prayers and prologues. ' ' Counting then on my master's truth and consideration, since it bears on the matter in hand, my question is this (and I ask it in all respect) : Since your worship was first cast, and as it seems to you enchanted, in this cage, have you perhaps had the wish to relieve yourself in greater or less, as the phrase goes ? ' ' What do you mean by greater or less, Sancho ? make yourself clearer, would you have a direct reply. ' ' Can it be that your worship doesn't understand greater or less when children at school are nursed on it ? Then my question is, have you had the desire to do what can't be helped ? ' ' Ah, now I understand, boy, and mine answer is yes, many times, and this minute too. Get me out of this scrape or there'll be the deuce to pay. '

CHAPTER XLIX

The little parley 'twixt Sancho Panza and his master
Don Quijote

'**A**h ah ! now I have you ! ' cried Sancho ; ' that is the thing I yearned to discover, though it cost me life and soul. Come then, master, can you deny what is said hereabouts when a person is off the hooks : ' I wonder, ' they say, ' what can be the matter with so-and-so. He doesn't eat or drink or sleep, or answer questions intelligently ; the lout must be enchanted ? ' From which one concludes that all that eat, drink and sleep not, nor perform those functions I referred to above, are enchanted ; but not so those that have the desires your worship has, who drink when they offer you, eat when there's food before you and answer all questions. ' ' Your deduction is allowable, ' replied Don Quijote, ' but many are the modes of enchantment, as I have before declared, and it might be that with the years some have been substituted for others : that to-day the custom holds for the enchanted to act precisely as I do, though they behaved very differently of old. There's no disputing of customs and no reliable inferences are to be drawn from them. I know for certain that I am an enchanted being, which is enough to keep my conscience light. 'Twould indeed weigh heavily upon it did I think I was letting myself lie in this cage charm-free out of sloth and cowardice, cheating the many, in sorrow and in want, of the help and relief of which at this very moment they may stand in sorest need. '

' For all that, ' advised the other, ' methinks 'twould be to your greater use and fruitfulness, did your worship try an escape from this cell. I guarantee on my part to do all I can to help, mounting you again on your good Rocinante ; belike he's enchanted too, he seems so crestfallen and sad. We can then try our hand at adventures again, and should we meet with bad luck, there'll still be plenty of time to return to the cage, wherein by the law

of a good and faithful squire I swear to closet myself with your worship, should you be so unfortunate or I so foolish as to fail.' 'I am happy to do as you suggest, brother Sancho, and when the critical moment comes for setting me at liberty, shall obey your every order ; but you then will see how mistaken you are in your theory of my downfall. '

The errant knight and ill-faring shield-bearer had now arrived where the priest, canon and barber, having alighted, were awaiting them. The carter at once unyoked his oxen, letting them graze over that green and quiet mead, whose freshness would have bewitched, not persons already so much so as our errant, but those as knowing and appreciative as his squire, who now asked the priest to give his master a short recess, otherwise the cage wouldn't be as sweet as Señor Don Quijote's decency required. The priest catching his meaning said he would grant the desired favour, though he feared the knight on finding himself free, returning to his old grooves, would be lost to them for ever. 'I'll go bail for him,' replied Sancho. 'So will I, every one of us,' declared the canon, 'especially if he give his word as a knight not to desert till 'tis our pleasure.' 'I do so give it,' said Don Quijote, who had been listening ; 'the rather because he that is enchanted as I, can't do with his person as he pleases ; his enchanter may make him like a statue stand for three centuries, and should he start to run, the other will send him back flying.' So they could safely set him free, he said, the more that it was to their advantage. Otherwise, unless they kept their distances, he could not but offend.

The canon here took Don Quijote's hand, though they were tied together, and on his good faith and worth they released him, to his exceeding joy. His first move was to stretch himself, the next toward Rocinante, whose haunches he twice slapped, saying : 'I still trust in God and his blessed Mother, O flower and mirror of steeds, that we shall soon find ourselves where we both long to be, thou with thy master on thy back, and I mounted on my charger, following the calling for whose sake God sent me into the world.' So saying he retired with Sancho to a remote spot whence he shortly returned much eased and more eager

than ever to put into practice whatever his squire ordained. The canon stared at him in amazement, considering the pitch of his folly — how gallantly he rode in ordinary converse, yet lost his stirrups the moment they encroached upon the dangerous ground of chivalry. And so, after all had sate them down upon the green turf, waiting for the provisions, the ecclesiastic was moved by compassion to say to our knight :

‘ Can it be, sir, that the false and foolish stories of chivalry have so mastered and impaired your reason that you truly believe yourself enchanted, together with those other things, as far as is falsehood from fact ? how is it possible that any human understanding should come to believe there once existed that swarm of Amadisès ; that deluge of famous knights, Emperors of Trebizond, Felixmartes of Hyrcania, palfreys, maidens-errant, serpents, monsters, giants, unparalleled adventures ; such a variety of enchantments, battles without number, terrific encounters, all manner of garbs ; so many princesses, squires turned counts, merry dwarfs, love-missals ; all that billing and cooing ; so many valiant women ; in short the whole crazy fabric of the books of chivalry ? I confess that as long as I forget that they are all false and flimsy, I like them well enough, but when it comes over me what they really are, I am ready to fling the best of them at the wall or into the fire if one be burning, as cheats and impostors beyond the pale of human tolerance, as propagators of a new sect and mode of life and as preachers of false doctrines that make the ignorant believe their rubbish.

‘ Indeed these books make bold to befuddle the faculties of gentlemen of good birth and intelligence, of whom your worship is an example, since through them you’ve been brought to such a pass that it’s necessary to carry you caged on an ox-cart, even as they carry lions and tigers from place to place, exhibiting them for money. Come, sir ; take pity on yourself : return to the bosom of discretion and make good use of all Heaven gave you, employing your happy genius in reading that will redound to the benefit of your conscience and the increase of your honour. If your nature be wholly inclined to books of action and true chivalry, study the Book of Judges, where you’ll find great

realities, deeds veritable as valiant. Portugal had a Viriatus, Rome a Cæsar, Carthage a Hannibal, Greece an Alexander, Castile a Fernan Gonzalez, Valencia a Cid, Andalucia a Gonzalo Fernández, Estramadura a Diego Garcia de Paredes, Jerez a Garci Perez de Vargas, Toledo a Garcilaso and Seville a Don Manuel de Leon — the reading of whose brave exploits can engage, edify and fill with admiration the finest of intellects. So is it reading worthy the good understanding of your worship since from it, sir, you will grow learned in history, enamoured of virtue, enlightened in all better feelings, bettered in manners, brave without rashness, prudent without cowardice. And all will be to God's honour, your own profit and the glory of La Mancha whence, I am informed, your worship takes birth and origin. '

Don Quijote listened with fixed attention, and now that he saw the canon was done, after regarding him for some time, he delivered himself of the following: 'Methinks, sir, that the father of your discourse was the wish that I believe there never were knights-errant in the world, that all books of chivalry are false, offensive and a burden to the state, and that I have done ill in reading them, worse in believing and worst in emulating them by undertaking as I have the almost impossible profession of knight-errantry, the love of which they inculcate. Moreover, you deny the existence of Amadis of Gaul or of Greece, together with all the other knights wherewith such books are crammed. 'Exactly my position,' nodded the canon. 'Your worship said further that these books had done much harm in that they had quit me of my judgment and landed me in a jail; and that 'twere better that I face about and shift my reading to books more true, more delightful and more informing. 'I certainly did. 'In that case my own opinion is that the one bewildered and bewitched is yourself, since you blaspheme against a thing so universally accepted and so implicitly believed in that he that like your worship denies it deserves the fate you would mete out to these books when they repel you. To try to persuade us that Amadis and the other knightly adventurers never lived, is like arguing that the sun gives no light, frost no chill, the earth no nourish-

ment. What mind can move another to believe there's no truth in the story of Princess Floripes and Guy of Burgundy, nor in that of Fierabras at the bridge of Mantible, back there in the time of Charlemagne ? To such a man I would swear them as true as that 'tis now day. If these stories be lies, then there never lived a Hector or Achilles, the Trojan war is but a myth, the Twelve Peers of France the same, together with England's King Arthur, that still lives in the form of a raven and whose return is hourly expected of his people.

' Indeed they might as well say the history of Guarino Mezquino is all gossip, along with the quest of the Holy Grail ; that the loves of Tristan and Isolde are apocryphal ; the loves too of Guinevere and Lancelot, when persons live that can almost remember their confidante the duenna Quintañoa, the best wine-mixer in Great Britain. I myself recollect that my paternal grandmother used to say to me when she saw some dame with the traditional head-kerchief : ' Yon woman, my child, looks like the duenna Quintañoa ; ' from which I naturally conclude she must have seen her or her portrait. Then too who can deny the truth of the tale dealing with Pierres and the fair Magalona, when to this day in the royal armeria may be seen the pin wherewith the gallant Pierres guided his steed through the air ? it's a trifle larger than a cart-pole, and close to it lies Babieca's saddle. Again at Roncesvalles may be seen Roland's horn, big as a great beam. From all this we may infer that there did once exist the Twelve Peers, Pierres, the Cid and the other knights of the order commonly termed adventurers.

' I suppose they'll tell me there was no such errant as the valiant Lusitanian, Juan de Merlo, who in the Burgundian city of Arras fought with Monseigneur Pierres, the famous lord of Charny, and later in the city of Basle with Monseigneur Enrique de Remestan, emerging victorious from both encounters, covered with honour and renown. They might as well dispute the verity of the adventures and achievements in war of the valiant Spaniards Pedro Barba and Gutierre Quijada (from whose family I am descended in the direct male line), who in Burgundy vanquished the sons of Count of San Polo. I shall hear too that

Don Fernando de Guevara never went on an adventure-quest to Germany, where he had it out with Messire George, knight of the house of the duke of Austria. They would try to persuade me that the jousts of Suero de Quiñones, of Honourable Passage fame, and the various sallies of Sir Luis de Falces against the Castilian knight Don Gónzalo de Guzman were practical jokes ; together with many another deed done by Christian knight in these and foreign realms, all so well vouched for and to be relied upon that he that doubts then must be totally bereft of reason and common sense.'

The canon was astounded by this medley of truth and fiction ; likewise by the mass of information Don Quijote possessed concerning all things connected with knight-errantry. In reply he said : ' I cannot deny, Señor Don Quijote, that there may be some truth in what your worship has maintained, especially as regards the Spanish errants. I also grant you the existence of the Twelve Peers of France, though I am under no oath to believe they performed all the exploits ascribed to them by Archbishop Turpin. They simply were knights selected by the French kings, called peers because supposed equal in worth, rank and prowess. They formed a kind of religious order like the modern ones of Santiago and Calatrava, wherein 'tis assumed that the recipients are valiant knights of worth and birth. As we speak nowadays of a knight of Saint John or of Alcántara, so then they spoke of a knight of the Twelve Peers, because that particular number of heroic hearts was chosen for this military order.

' That there once lived a Cid and a Bernardo del Carpio there can be little doubt, but a grave one as to just what they performed. As to Count Pierres' pin, which you say stands close to Babieca's saddle in the royal armeria, I confess my sin in that either from ignorance or near-sightedness, though I saw the saddle, I failed to notice the pin, large as you say it is.' ' There it stands beyond question,' asserted Don Quijote : ' more by token they say it is kept from rust by a cow-hide sheath.' ' Maybe it is, but by mine order I don't remember to have seen it. Granting that it is there however, I still am not bound to believe the histories of all the Amadisés and of the whole mob

of knights folk gossip about, nor is it fitting that a man like your worship, so respected, of such good parts and endowed with so excellent an understanding, should take stock in so many extravagant fairy-tales as are recorded in these imbecile books.'

CHAPTER L

Sharp altercation 'twixt the canon and Quijote, together
with certain other incidents

'A good jest indeed!' chuckled Don Quijote to the canon's diatribe: 'books that are printed with the royal license and the approbation of those to whom they are submitted; books read with pleasure by old and young, rich and poor, scholar and greenhorn, cavalier and commoner, by every class, in short, of whatever rank or condition — these to be lies! and this though they bear every mark of probability, giving the father, mother, country, kindred, time, place and achievements, step by step and day by day, of every knight they blazon abroad. Tut, tut, sir, speak not such blasphemy, believing that I advise like a man of sense when I say, read them and you will find what pleasure you receive.'

'For tell me, can there be anything more engaging than to see yonder, stretching before us as it were, a great lake of boiling pitch, with schools of serpents, snakes, lizards and sundry species of fearsome wild beasts swimming hither and thither, while out of the midst thereof issues a plaintive voice saying: 'O knight, whosoever thou art that standest gazing on this wild water, wouldst thou win the fair fortune that rests beneath, display the mettle of thy doughty breast, leaping into the black and fiery cauldron. Else shalt thou not be found worthy to behold the noble wonders hid in the seven castles of the seven fays lying beneath this murky waste.'

'Scarce does the knight hear these stirring words when, without

giving the matter thought, regardless of the danger, without even so much as removing his heavy arms, commending himself to God and his lady he plunges into the midst of the seething pool, and when least he expects it, still ignorant of his fate, finds himself amid flowery fields wherewith the Elysian are not to be compared. The sky seems more translucent there — the sun to shine with lovelier radiance. A still forest charms his sight with its green umbrageous verdure, while the sweet natural song of the many, many little painted birds, hopping among the interlaced branches, delights his ears. Hard by he discovers a gentle brook whose pure crystalline waters murmur over many pearly-white pebbles and fine sands lying like sifted gold. Above he sees a fountain made of parti-coloured jasper and polished marble; below, another rustically fashioned in studied disorder, composed of little mussel-shells and the white and yellow spiral mansions of the snail, mingled with fragments of shining crystal and emeralds — a composite work of art that seems, in copying nature, to surpass her.

Suddenly there rises before him an impregnable castle or gorgeous palace with walls of solid gold, diamond turrets and jacinthine gates. So wondrous is its structure that, built entirely of rubies, pearls, diamonds, carbuncles, gold and emeralds, its workmanship is still more rare. After all this what more could one desire than to see issue from the gate thereof a bevy of maidens in gay and gorgeous attire which, if I undertook to describe, I should never have done. Their apparent leader takes the bold knight by the hand and silently leads him within the splendid palace or castle. Stripping him as naked as his mother bore him, she bathes him with tepid water, anoints him with sweet-smelling oils and clothes him in a shirt of softest sendal all perfumed, while another throws o'er his shoulders a mantle said to be worth at the very least a city, or even more.

‘What a great thing when they tell how then they conduct him to another chamber where our knight finds the tables set out so lavishly that it takes away his breath! how for his hands they pour water distilled from amber and sweet-scented flowers! how they seat him upon marble! how the damsels in serving him

preserve a marvellous silence ! how they fetch him such a variety of dainties so temptingly prepared that the appetite is at a loss which to choose ! And then, while he eats, to hear the music and song that hover about him, proceeding from he knows not where ! And so, his repast ended and the tables removed, they leave him reclining on the dais and (as was the custom) picking his teeth maybe, when lo ! a maid far fairer than any of the first enters by the chamber door, and taking her seat beside, tells him the name of that castle, how she's enchanted there, and other things that hold the knight in suspense and fill the reader with admiring delight.

' I don't care to enlarge further, since from what I have said may be seen how it matters not at what page of what errant's history one opens, one is sure to be diverted and surprised. Let your worship do as I say : read these books through and you'll find that they banish melancholy and sweeten a soured nature. For myself I may say that since I am become knight-errant, I find myself valiant, courteous, noble-minded ; liberal, gracious, bold gentle, patient ; one that has undergone hardship, duress and enchantment. Though a short time since I was thrown into a cage like an idiot, I purpose by mine arm's might and Heaven's favour, if fortune cross me not, in a few days to find myself king, where I may manifest the gratitude and liberality courted in my breast. For the poor man cannot show himself generous though he be so in the highest degree. Mere inclination to bestow favours is a dead thing, like faith without works, and I therefore could wish that fortune soon offered occasion whereby I might reveal the goodness of my heart by conferring benefits on my friends, in particular on my squire, poor Sancho here, the best fellow in the world. To him I should give a county, promised these many days, but which, I fear, he lacks the capacity to govern. '

Sancho, overhearing these words of his master, at once exclaimed : ' Rest not, Señor Don Quijote, but strive to win this county, as surely promised by your worship as expected by me, for I give my word there'll be no lack of capacity to govern the same. And were there, I've heard tell of men in the world

that farm lords' estates, at so much a year, taking all the trouble of running things, while the lord sits with outstretched legs enjoying his rent, and no worry. That's what I shall do, not stand haggling over trifles : at once get clear of the whole, spend my rent like a duke and let the world wag. ' ' That would answer very well, brother Sancho,' advised the canon, ' so far as enjoyment of the revenue is concerned, but the lord of a province has also to administer justice, where ability and sound judgment are needed, and above all a firm resolve to unearth the truth. If at the beginning these be lacking, the middle and end fare ill, and God as frequently rewards the honest intentions of the simple as He frustrates the evil designs of the shrewd.' ' I know not these philosophies,' replied Sancho ; ' I only know I would I had the county, since I can rule it as soon as I get it. I have as much soul as the next and as much body as the best of them. I should be as much king on my estate as every man on his, and being that I should do as I liked, and doing as I liked I should do my pleasure, and in pleasing myself I should be satisfied, and when a man is satisfied, nothing more is wanted, and there's an end. So let the thing come. God be with you and let us see ourselves, as one blind man said to another.' ' These aren't bad philosophies, as you call them,' agreed the canon, ' though a good deal still might be said in this matter of counties.' Here Don Quijote spoke up : ' I know not what more there is to say : I simply follow the example set me by the great Amadis of Gaul, who made his squire count of Insula Firme. With no scruples of conscience therefore, I can bestow the same title on Sancho Panza, one of the best squires that ever served knight-errant.'

The canon was left amazed at all this consistent nonsense (if nonsense may be so termed), both at the manner in which Don Quijote narrated the adventure of the lake and at the firm hold the concerted falsehoods of his books had taken, and last but not least he marvelled at the ingenuousness of Sancho Panza in fixing such eager hopes on the promise of his master. The servants had now returned with the sumpter-mule, and making a carpet and the green grass serve for table, in the shade of some

trees they sat them down and there had their meal, that the carter, as has been said, might not lose for his oxen the advantage of the grazing.

(There is a short interruption here for the entrance of a goatherd and his tale).

CHAPTER LII

The rare adventure of the penitents, brought to a happy issue by Don Quijote de la Mancha though at the expediture of some sweat

Now this year it so happened that the clouds refused the earth their wonted showers and all the villages round about were organising processions, rogations and penances imploring God to open the hands of his mercy and send rain. With this object the people of a hamlet hard by were marching to a shrine at one side that dale, and as our knight beheld their penitential garb, not stopping to think of the many such he had seen before, he imagined here was an adventure that concerned him alone. In this opinion he was confirmed by his belief that the image draped in mourning was some lady of rank abducted by these low-lived brazen-faced cowards.

Thus persuaded our champion promptly seized Rocinante, who equally with the oxen had been grazing, removed the shield and bridle from the saddlebow, had him bitted in a trice, begged his sword of Sancho, mounted, embraced the target and thus addressed his companions : ' Now will you see, O worthy company, how imports it that in the world are men that profess the order of errant knighthood. Now, I repeat, you will be able to judge, by the liberation of the good woman borne captive there, whether or no adventurers should rightly be esteemed.' With this he dug heels into Rocinante (for just then spurs he had none) and at full gallop (not once do we read of Rocinante's reaching a run) rode to meet the penitents. The priest, canon and barber

did their best to restrain him, but without success. Nor were more availing Sancho's cries of : ' Whither, whither, Señor Don Quijote ? what the deuce drives you to attack our Catholic faith ? Mind, damn it all, 'tis a procession of penitents and the lady on the stretcher is the most blessed image of the Virgin without stain. Mind what you're about, sire, for this time of a truth it may be said ye know not what ye do. '

Sancho exerted himself to no purpose : so bent was his master on assaulting these draped figures and releasing the lady in black that he heard not a word, nor would he have turned for a king's summons. Arriving before the procession he checked his steed, already quite willing to subside, and in harsh impetuous manner called : ' Ye that hide your faces, for no good reason perhaps, halt and hear what I say. ' The bearers of the image rested, and one of the four ecclesiastics chanting litanies, observing the strange visage and sorry get-up of the knight, together with the leanness of his nag, said in reply : ' If you have aught to say, brother, be brief, for these in our train are flagellating themselves by way of penance, and we cannot and must not delay, unless your message can be told in two words. ' ' In one ; it is this : that you instantly set free that fair one, whose tears and sad looks clearly betoken you carry her against her will, after having done her some scandalous outrage. I, that was born into the world to redress such injuries, shan't suffer one step in advance till you have given the desired and deserved liberty. '

All that heard him utter this manifesto, knowing he must be a madman, burst into laughter, which was as powder in inflaming the wrath of Don Quijote, who now without another word drew sword and made for the carrying-frame. One of the bearers, leaving his share of the load to his companions, seized a brace upon which the stretcher occasionally rested, and though a sword-cut from his adversary cut off more than half thereof, with the remaining third he dropped such a wicked rap on the shoulder of the knight's sword-arm that, unable to defend himself with his shield, he suffered a miserable fall. Sancho Panza, who had now arrived, all out of wind from running, seeing his master's discomfiture, called to his assailant to stay

the blows, since that was naught but a poor enchanted errant that had never harmed anyone in all the days of his life. What stayed the churl however was not Sancho's outcry but the sight of Don Quijote who moved neither hand nor foot. Supposing him killed, the fellow hastily tucked up his tunic under his girdle and fled across the fields like a deer.

By this time the knight's companions came up to where he lay, and the processionists, seeing them advancing on the run, particularly the officers with their cross-bows, made a stand round the image as if expecting trouble. With raised hoods the penitents with their scourges and the priests with their candle-poles awaited the attack, fully determined to defend themselves or even take the offensive if need be. But fortune decreed better, for our village-priest was recognised by one among the processionists, and thus the panic of the two squadrons was allayed. Our priest in two sentences explained Don Quijote, whom the penitents now crowded around to discover if dead. There, on his master's body, they found Sancho Panza, making the most pitiful and comical lament ever heard, wailing with tears : ' O rose of chivalry, to think that with just one cudgel-blow should be ended the course of thy richly employed years ! O honour of thy line, honour and glory of La Mancha, indeed of all the world, which lacking thee will fill with scoundrels, no longer in fear of horse-whipping for their deviltries ! O liberal above all the Alexanders, since for only eight months' service thou hast given me the best island the sea encircles and surrounds ! O thou humble with the proud and arrogant with the humble, thou that takest dangers by storm, acquainted with humiliation, enamoured without cause, emulator of the good, thou scourge of the wicked, thou foe of the mean ! in short a knight-errant, which leaves nothing more to be said ! '

With this his squire's lamentation the knight came to ; his first words were : ' He that from thee lives apart, sweetest Dulcinea, endures by that act greater misery than these. Friend Sancho, help me mount the enchanted cart, for with this shoulder in pieces I may not press the saddle of my steed. ' ' Here am I, ' responded the other, ' and let us, my master, go to our homes

in company with these gentlemen who wish you only good, for there we can plan another sally that will result in greater profit and greater fame.' 'You say well,' sighed his lord, 'and sound wisdom will it be to let pass the baleful influence of the stars now in the ascendant.' The canon, priest and barber seconded this good resolve and lifted the knight to his old position on the cart. The processionists formed and took up their pilgrimage; the officers not caring to go further, were paid off by the priest. The canon too went his way, leaving only the priest, barber, Don Quijote, Sancho and the good Rocinante, who had suffered all things as patiently as his sire.

The carter reynoked his oxen and with our knight resting against a bundle of hay set out at the usual pace on a road pointed out by the priest. At the end of six days they reached Don Quijote's village, which they entered about noon on a Sunday, with the village-folk all in the plaza through which the cart had to pass. Every one ran to get a look inside and what was their astonishment on finding their fellow-townsmen there. A small boy ran to notify the housekeeper and niece of the arrival of their master and uncle, pale, emaciated, stretched in an ox-cart on a bundle of hay, and pitiful it was to hear their lamentations, the buffetings they gave themselves and the curses they heaped afresh on those abominable books of chivalry — all of which they repeated when Don Quijote entered at the gate.

Sancho Panza's wife came running at the news of our adventurer's return, knowing her husband had accompanied him in the office of squire. On finding him her first question was was Dapple well. 'In better health than his master,' replied Sancho. 'Thanks be to God that has given me this blessing! But tell me, friend, what good things have you brought back from your squires? what petticoat for me and what little shoes for the children?' 'Nothing of that,' replied her husband, 'but things of greater pith and moment.' 'Good enough, let's have a look at them, dearie. I wish to cheer my heart, sad and upset all the ages you have been away.' 'Wait till we are home then; rest content for the present, and should it please God that we take the road again in quest of adventures, you'll see me made a count

or governor of an isle — not the kind that grow around here but the best that can be found.' 'So Heaven grant, for we need it enough; but tell me more about them, husband, for isles are new to me.' 'Honey is not for the ass's mouth; in time you'll see, and won't you be surprised to hear vassals address you as Your Ladyship!'

'What are you talking about, man — ladyships and vassals and isles?' enquired Juana Panza — such was the name of Sancho's wife (they weren't kinsfolk but in La Mancha wives are wont to take their husband's surnames). 'Don't be in such a hurry to know everything at once; it's enough that I tell the truth and let it rest at that. Only let me say in passing that for an honest man there's no better sport than being squire to a knight-errant-seeker-of-adventures. To be sure most of those they find don't pan out as one might hope: out of every hundred ninety-nine have a twist on them — in saying which I speak from knowledge, for from some I have emerged in a blanket, and knocked out of shape from others. But for all that it's a fine thing to go looking for experiences, crossing mountains, prying into woods, climbing over rocks, dropping in at castles and putting up at taverns at one's will and with devil a farthing to pay!'

While passed this colloquy, the knight's niece and housekeeper had received him at his house door, stripped him of clothes and laid him on his ancient bed, he all the while staring vacantly, not knowing where he was. The priest charged the niece to spare no pains in making her uncle comfortable and ever to be on the alert lest he again escape them. He told the women the story of the rescue, at which recital they raised anew their lamentation and a second time anathematised the books of chivalry, imploring Heaven to plunge the authors of such lies and extravagances into the bottom of the abyss.

The pair were left on pins and needles lest their master and uncle give them the slip the moment he found himself better, but though it fell out as they feared, the present author hasn't succeeded in finding, at least in authentic writings, record of the deeds our knight performed on this his third sally, though he has

sought with pains and diligence. This much only has fame preserved in the memories of La Manchan folk — that the third time their favourite son left home he journeyed to Saragossa, and there took part in the famous jousts, acquitting himself in a manner worthy his valour and resolute mind.

PART II

PROLOGUE

GOD help me, illustrious or belike plebeian reader, how anxiously must thou be looking to this prologue, expecting me to abuse, trim and anathematise the author of the false Don Quijote, him reputed conceived in Tordesillas and born in Tarragona. Alas, I cannot give thee this satisfaction for, though injury is wont to waken wrath even in the meekest breasts, mine must be the exception. Thou wouldst have me name him ass, idiot, shameless creature; this, however, I am far from doing. Let his sin be his punishment, with his bread let him eat it and there let it rest. The only thing I felt was his calling me old and maimed, as though 'twere in my power to stay Time's passing and as though I received my maimedness in some tavern-brawl and not in the noblest occasion seen of past or present, the noblest the future e'er may hope to see. If my scars shine not in strangers' eyes, at least they are respected by those knowing their origin; for better looks the soldier dead in battle than alive in flight. So firmly do I hold this that it here and now they offered me such an impossibility, rather would I be found in that mighty action, than not and free of wounds. The scars a soldier wears on his face and breast are stars rather, leading others to a heaven of honour and the hope of deserved praise. Let it be considered too that one writes not with grey hairs but with the understanding, which is wont to better itself with age.

I also take it ill that he calls me envious and then proceeds to explain as to a dullard what envy is, when of the two kinds I truly know only that which is sacred, honourable and pure, and I have therefore no mind to abuse a priest, especially if he be a familiar of the Holy Office. If he said this on behalf of whom he seems to say it, he is wholly deceived, since I worship that man's genius and admire his work and his virtuous unfaltering zeal. Yet am I grateful to this gentlemanly author for thinking my novels more satirical than exemplary, while admitting their excellence; which they would want did they not partake of the nature of both. I seem to hear thee say I go gently in this matter and am quite content within the bounds of my submission, as if conscious that afflictions may not be heaped upon the afflicted. And indeed that which this gentleman

suffers must be grave, since he dares not appear in the open field beneath the clear sky, but conceals his name and disguises his dwelling-place as if guilty of high treason. If thou perchance meet with him, say I bear no ill-will, knowing as I do the temptations of the devil and that one of the greatest is believing one can write and publish a book certain to win as much fame as money and as much money as fame. In confirmation thereof prithee tell him in your best wit and manner the following tale :

• In Seville dwelt a certain madman that hit upon the strangest vagary and notion ever such an one conceived. Every dog he could catch in the streets or elsewhere, he would hold by its fore-legs between his own and raising its hind ones would fit a cane-tube sharpened at the end, and then blow the cur up till he made it round as a ball. Keeping it in this position he would give it two little slaps on its belly before he let it go, saying to the bystanders (who were always many) : ‘ Your worships see how little it is to fill a dog.’ So your worship may know little it is to fill a book.’

And if that tale please him not, dear reader, tell him this, likewise of a madman and a dog : ‘ In Cordova dwelt another lunatic, whose habit it was to carry on his head a marble slab or other heavy stone. Approaching any heedless cur he would drop it on him, plump, whereat the dog in his terror would not cease yelping and howling for three streets. One day he chanced to approach a pointer, owned and greatly beloved by a hat-maker. The stone dropped, struck the dog on the head, the brute gave a howl, his master saw and felt, and rushing out with a yard-stick left not a whole bone in the body of the idiot, at whom with every stroke he cried : ‘ What, my pointer ? you rascally cur ! Didn’t you see, you heartless wretch, that my dog was a pointer ?’ and dinning the word in his ear he let him go, pounded to a jelly. The idiot learned his lesson and for more than a month kept off the streets, but at length appeared again with his little game and a still heavier weight. He approached the first dog as usual, but looking him over from head to tail, neither dared nor cared to drop his burden, saying : ‘ ’Tis a pointer, go slow !’ In short he insisted that every dog he met, though mastiff or terrier, was a pointer, and so never let fall his stone.’

Thus perchance will it fare with this historian, that he’ll no longer have the effrontery to let fall the weight of his wit in books which, being bad, are harder than rocks. Tell him too, touching his threat to rob me of my profits by his book, that I don’t care a farthing,

and I answer in the words of the famous farce *La Perendenga* : ' Long live the alderman my master, and Christ be with us all.' Long live the great Conde de Lemos, whose Christian charity and widely known liberality keep me on my feet against all the blows of my scant fortune. And long live the supreme benevolence of His Eminence of Toledo, Don Bernardo Sandoval y Rojas, presses or no presses and though there be printed against me more books than there are letters in the couplets of Mingo Revulgo. Without adulation or flattery from me these two princes have of their own goodness done me service whereby I count myself richer and happier than if fortune herself had led me to her summit. Honour is ever possible to a poor man, but never to a vicious ; poverty may obscure but cannot efface nobility of nature. Virtue of herself gives light which, though through vents and chinks of penury it shine, comes to be valued of high and noble spirits and is by them favoured.

Tell him no more, even as I have no more to tell thee, save that thou shalt regard this second part of *Don Quijote* as cut by the same hand and from the same cloth as the first. In it I offer our hero continued, concluded and in his grave, lest any dare revive him. Sufficient is the witness of his past ; sufficient too that a responsible person should twice have given thee his shrewd follies, without asking that they be entered into again. A surfeit even of good things grows wearisome, while a dearth, though of things bad, wins a certain esteem. I was forgetting to say that thou mayst soon expect the *Persiles*, which I am now finishing, together with the second part of *Galatea*.

CHAPTER I

The priest and barber interview Don Quijote with regard to his infirmity

IN the second part of this history, being the third sally of Don Quijote, Cid Hamed Benengeli relates that the priest and barber refrained from calling on our knight for almost a month, lest they quicken the past in his memory. Occasionally however they dropped in on the niece and housekeeper, urging that their master be given nourishing food, such as would benefit mind and brain, whence, there was reason to believe, proceeded the whole trouble. The women replied that they would persevere in these their attentions with all possible diligence and care, for they could see that their master now and then showed signs of once more being himself. On hearing this news the visitors were more than delighted and congratulated themselves on the success of their plan in carrying him home enchanted on the ox-cart, as described in the last chapter of the first part of this great as true history.

So our friends resolved to wait upon Don Quijote and judge for themselves as to his recovery, though, deeming it hardly possible in so short a time, they agreed not to refer even remotely to errant arms, lest they risk reopening a wound that must still be tender. Accordingly they called and found the knight sitting in bed, clad in green baize jerkin and red Toledan night-cap so dry and colourless himself that one might take him for a mummy. He received them very cordially, and on their asking after his condition answered rationally with well-chosen words both with regard to himself and his past illness. In the course of conversation they came to treat of ways and means in matters of state, amending this abuse and condemning that, reforming one custom and ~~banishing~~ another, each of the three setting himself up as a late-born lawgiver, a modern Lycurgus or brand-new

Solon. In short they remade the republic as completely as if they had put it in a forge and drawn forth quite another. And upon all these matters Don Quijote spake with such sense that his two inquisitors couldn't but believe him again clothed and in his right mind.

The niece and housekeeper were present at this interview and could not sufficiently thank their God, when they saw their master so sound in reason. But the priest, changing the first intent of not harking back to chivalry, would now make a thorough test of their friend's recovery, whether apparent only or real. And thus from one thing to another he came at last to tell of the news from the capital : among other things how 'twas considered certain that the Turk was lowering with a powerful armada, though his designs were not yet known, nor where the great storm was likely to burst. Almost every year, the priest explained, this peril calls us to arms ; now all Christendom was alert, and His Majesty had provided for the defence of Naples, Sicily and the island of Malta. ' His Majesty,' remarked Don Quijote, ' has acted like a politic warrior in fortifying his dominions aforetime, that the enemy may not find him unprepared. But if my advice were listened to, I could suggest to our sovereign a certain precautionary measure, at this time furthest from his thoughts. '

Scarce had these words left his mouth when the priest exclaimed to himself : ' God hold thee in his hand, my poor Don Quijote, since surely thou art falling from the height of madness to the abyss of simplicity ! ' Though sharing the priest's apprehension, the barber ventured to enquire what was this measure he deemed so advisable ; belike it resembled other impertinent counsels so freely offered to princes. ' Mine, goodman shaver, would not prove impertinent but quite the reverse. ' ' I intended no discourtesy,' apologised the other, ' but experience shows impossible, absurd or injurious to king or realm all or most expedients proposed to His Majesty. ' ' My remedy,' the knight assured him, ' is none of these. Rather 'tis the best, simplest, most practicable and immediate that any projector could devise. '

‘ Your worship is long in declaring it, ’ remarked the priest. ‘ I little care to reveal it now to you two and in the morning have it whispered in the ears of the royal council and another gather the fruit and guerdon of my labour. ’ ‘ As for me, ’ quoth the barber, ‘ I give my word here and before God not to repeat a syllable of what your worship may say, to king, Roque or earthly man : an oath I borrow from a ballad belonging to the priest, in the preface of which the king is informed of the thief that stole a hundred doubloons and his ambling mule. ’ ‘ I’m not acquainted with the tale, ’ replied Don Quijote, ‘ but I trust the oath because I know that señor barber is a man of honour. ’ ‘ Were he not, ’ said the priest, ‘ I’d go bail and vouch that in this instance, on penalty of sentence and costs, he’d not speak more than a dummy. ’ ‘ And who will answer for you, father ? ’ ‘ My profession, which is to keep secrets. ’

‘ Body of me ! ’ thereupon exclaimed the knight, ‘ what has His Majesty to do but publicly summon on a given day all knights-errant at present roaming over Spain, for should but a bare half-dozen appear, amongst them might be one that single-handed could destroy the Turk’s entire armament ! Follow me, gentlemen, in what I am about to say. Is it perchance unheard of for a solitary knight to crush an army of two hundred thousand men as if of sugar-paste and joined at one throat ? nay, tell me, how many histories abound with these marvels ? Farewell Quijote, not to mention others, were famous Don Belianis or any of the innumerable line of Amadis of Gaul now alive, for were the Turk faced with one of them, I’d not answer for the consequences. God however will take care of his people and send one that, if not so bold as adventurers of old, will be no less chivalrous. He understands me and that is enough. ’ ‘ Woe’s me, ’ cried the niece, ‘ may they kill me if mine uncle doesn’t wish to turn knight-errant again ! ’ ‘ Knight-errant must I die, let the Turk lower or rise when he pleases and powerfully as he may, but again I say God knows my meaning. ’ Upon this the barber said : ‘ Allow me, your worships, to relate a little episode originating from Seville, which I am anxious to rehearse to you all because it fits the occasion like a glove. ’

His host gave permission, the priest and others their attention and the barber began :

‘ His kinsfolk placed a certain madman in the Seville madhouse through his having lost his wits. He was a graduate in common law at Osuna but many held that though it had been at Salamanca, none the less he’d have been crazy. At the end of several years confinement he made himself believe that he was again in his right mind and writing the archbishop to this effect craved release from his present misery. Through God’s mercy he had entirely recovered his former wits, he declared, though his kinsfolk, to enjoy his property, still kept him confined and even to his death would insist despite the truth that he was mad.

‘ Moved by his many and coherent letters the archbishop bade one of his chaplains learn from the madhouse-superintendent whether or not what the the lawyer wrote was so ; furthermore to speak with the inmate himself and if he appeared sane, procure his release. The chaplain complied and in answer to his questions the superintendent said the party was certainly still crazed : though frequently he spoke like a person of considerable intelligence, at the end he never failed to deliver himself of ideas that both in quantity and quality equalled in folly his previous good sense, as by conversing with him would be discovered.

‘ The chaplain desired to make the test and closeting himself with the fellow talked with him an hour or more, in all which time the graduate said nothing vapid or strange ; indeed he spoke with such perception that the chaplain was forced to believe him wholly restored. Among other things the latter said that the superintendent was against him that he might not lose the hush-money constantly sent by his kinsmen, that he should still be reported mad, though with lucid intervals. The curse in his misfortune was a considerable property, to enjoy the fruits whereof his enemies wronged him by denying that our Lord had shown this mercy of turning him from beast to human being. In short he brought the superintendent under suspicion, made his kinsfolk appear godless, covetous wretches, and himself so quick and clever that the chaplain decided to take him along and let the archbishop himself put his finger on the truth.

‘ In this good faith the good chaplain asked the superintendent to see that the man’s clothes were returned. The other again warned him that the fellow was still unquestionably mad, but this advice was wasted on the chaplain, and the superintendent seeing it was at the archbishop’s orders had the lawyer dressed in his fine clothes. On finding himself in his right mind and rid of his crazy weeds our friend prayed the chaplain to let him out of love bid farewell to his companions there. The chaplain said he would accompany him and see the other inmates, so they and several others went upstairs to where they were confined. The graduate first approached the cell of a raving fellow, who chanced just then to be tractable and quiet, and thus addressed him : ‘ See if there is aught I can do for you, brother, for I am going home, now that God through his infinite goodness and mercy and through no desert of mine has been pleased to restore me to sanity. Yes, I am myself again, for with Him all things are possible. Put your hope and trust in the Father, for, even as He has returned me to my first estate, so will He you to yours, if you trust Him. I shall make a point of sending you dainties, which be sure to eat, for I’d have you know what I, that have been through the mill, think about these matters, and that is that all our wild ways come from empty stomachs and heads full of air. Take courage, man, for dejection in misfortune shortens life and hastens death. ’

‘ This little lecture was overheard by another inmate whose cell was just opposite, and this fellow, raising himself from an old rush-mat where he lay stripped and bare to the skin, in loud voice now questioned who it was that was leaving so sane and sound. ‘ It is I, brother, ’ the graduate replied, ‘ for there’s no need of my remaining longer ; for which I give infinite thanks to Heaven that thus has greatly favoured me. ’ ‘ Take care, sir, and let not the devil deceive thee, ’ returned the lunatic ; ‘ ease thy foot : abide here and avoid being sent back. ’ ‘ I’m certain I am sane, ’ declared the graduate, ‘ nor will there be reasons why I again should pray for indulgence. ’ ‘ Thou well ! ’ quoth the madman ; ‘ never mind, let it pass and God be with thee. But I swear to thee by Jupiter, whose majesty I represent on earth,

that for the crime Seville commits this day in releasing thee as a man of right mind, I shall heap such punishment upon her that the memory thereof will abide for ever and ever, amen. Rest assured that I can do it too, thou miserable grovelling graduate, for I am Jupiter the thunderer, that hold in my hands the blasting bolts wherewith I can and am wont to threaten and devastate the world ! But I purpose to chastise this ignorant people in quite another way : by not raining hereabouts for three whole years, counting from the day and hour whereon this curse is pronounced. Thou free, thou sane, thou cured ! and I mad, I gone astray, I in confinement ! why, I should as soon think of raining as of hanging myself. ’

‘ The bystanders listened attentively to these vociferations, at the end of which our graduate, turning to the chaplain, seized him by the hands saying : ‘ Fear not, sir ; don’t attend to what this fool has spoken, for if he is Jupiter and will not rain, I, that am Neptune the father and god of waters, will rain as often as I choose and there’s need. ’ The superintendent and the others laughed, to the no small confusion of the chaplain who finally said : ‘ For all that, Mister Neptune, ’twill never do to ruffle old Jupiter. For the present stay where you are and some day with more time and better opportunity we’ll return for you. ’ They stripped the fellow, he remained in the madhouse and my story is ended. ’

‘ So this is the tale, mister barber, that fitted so like a glove to the present occasion that you couldn’t forbear telling it ! ’ exclaimed Don Quijote ; ‘ well, well, goodman shaver, and how blind is he that can’t see through a sieve ! But can you not have seen that comparisons ’twixt any two wits or warriors, fair ones or families, are ever odious and ill received ? I, barber friend, am not Neptune god of the sea, nor do I try to make others believe me sane when I am not. My sole aim in life is to convince the world of its error in failing to revive that blessed age when flourished knights-at-arms. These depraved times however don’t deserve the fortune enjoyed of those days when wandering adventurers assumed the defence of kingdoms, the championship of maidens, relief of orphans and minors, chastisement of the

proud and reward of the humble. Nowadays most knights rustle in damasks, brocades and other rich stuffs rather than in the mail of their armour. What cavalier now sleeps in the fields exposed to the rigour of the elements, armed cap-a-pie? Not one, nor are there those that, without drawing feet from stirrups, leaning on their lances snatch but a wink of sleep, like the errants of old. No, not one that, sallying forth from this wood say, passes through yon mountain-range, and there measuring the barren shore of the ever-changing tempestuous sea finds a little bark without oars or sail, mast or tackle, wherein with intrepid heart he leaps, abandoning himself to the implacable surge, that now mounts him to the skies and now sinks him low as the abyss; but he, facing the almighty storm, when least he expects it finds himself three thousand and more leagues distant from where he embarked, and leaping forth on a remote and unknown shore meets with experiences worthy to be inscribed not on parchment but on bronze.

‘ With us, on the contrary, sloth triumphs over industry, ease over labour, vice over virtue, vanity over valour, and the theory over the practice of arms, which only in the errants of the golden age truly lived and were splendid. Or tell me, who more honest and brave than the famous Amadis of Gaul? more wise than Palmerin of England? more reasonable and accommodating than Tirante the white? who more gallant than Lisuarte of Greece or more slashed and a better fencer than Don Belianis? Who, pray tell, was more intrepid than Perion of Gaul or better at facing dangers than Felixmarte of Hyrcania? who more sincere than Esplandian or more rash than Cirongilio of Thrace? who bolder than Rodamonte or more prudent than king Sobrino? who ever lived more the dare-devil than Rinaldo or more invincible than Roland? and last of all who more the courteous gentleman than Ruggiero, from whom the dukes of Ferrara are descended, according to Turpin in his cosmography?

‘ All these, father, and many another I might name, were knights-errant, the rose and expectancy of arms. These, or such as these, I could wish to be they that would answer the summons, for in that event His Majesty would find himself well

served and avoid much waste, while the Turk could go pull his beard. But now I'll stay where I am, since the chaplain doesn't call me. Should Jupiter not rain however, here am I, that will rain when I please. I say this that master basin may be sure I comprehend him.' 'Believe me, Señor Don Quijote,' protested the barber, 'I didn't mean it that way, and since my intention was good, so may God help me, your worship shouldn't resent what I said.' 'I am the best judge as to whether I should resent it or not,' the knight returned; whereupon the priest spoke up: 'Though I've scarce unsewed my lips as yet, I prefer not to be left with a certain scruple that scratches and gnaws at my conscience, born of what Señor Don Quijote has just been saying.' 'Your reverence,' replied Don Quijote, 'has leave for more than that and so certainly may confide your scruple; a pricking conscience is no peace.'

'With this permission then, I'll say I find it impossible to persuade myself that this motley crew of errant knights referred to by your worship were truly persons of flesh and bone living in the world. On the contrary I fear that it's all fiction, fable and falsehood, dreams told by men awake or better to say half-asleep.' 'This is another error many have fallen into, and I have repeatedly laboured with all sorts of persons and on many and divers occasions to bring this most general illusion face to face with the light of truth. Sometimes I have failed, again succeeded, supporting all I have said upon truth's shoulders. Which truth is so certain that I am ready to say I have seen Amadis of Gaul with these very eyes: a man of great stature, fair skin, handsome though blackish beard, in bearing neither stern nor gentle, of few words, slow to anger and promptly appeased. In the same manner, such as I imagine them to have been, I could paint and describe all the knights-errant that figure in the history of this world, simply from mine intuition that they were what their biographies profess. From the deeds they performed and the natures they betrayed could reasonably be constructed visages, colouring and statures.'

'How tall do you think the giant Morgante to have been?' enquired the priest. 'Opinions differ as to whether or no there

ever were giants in the world, but Holy Scripture, which cannot contain one atom of falsehood, shows there must have been, giving us the story of the ever-so-tall Philistine Goliath, who stood seven cubits and a half, an unconscionable height. In Sicily moreover have been found shank and shoulder-bones large enough to be fastened upon giants as tall as a tower — geometry puts this beyond a doubt. Nevertheless I can't state precisely how tall Morgante was, though I imagine he couldn't have been colossal, for in the story where particular mention is made of his deeds I find he frequently slept under cover — if he could squeeze into a house, obviously his bulk was not inordinate.'

'That certainly follows,' assented the priest who, in his enjoyment of this extravagance, now asked his friend concerning the features of Rinaldo of Montalvan, and of Don Roland and the other Twelve Peers of France, all of whom were errant-knights. 'I should hazard that Rinaldo had broad features, ruddy complexion, eyes quick and rather prominent, that he was an excessive spit-fire and a friend of thieves and reprobates. I always picture Roland, Rotolando or Orlando (known to history under the three names) as of medium height, broad-shouldered, a trifle bow-legged, of swarthy skin, auburn beard and hairy body generally, with a savage look about him and though not much of a talker, cultured and courteous withal.' 'If that was his appearance,' observed the priest, 'no wonder Angelica the fair disdained and quitted him for the gentle spirit, gaiety and manners of the little beard-budding Moorish lad with whom she took up, showing her good taste in craving Medoro's softness over Roland's severity.'

'This Angelica,' explained Don Quijote, 'was a coarse woman, roving and fickle to boot, and left the world as filled with her badness as her beauty. She scorned a thousand men of noble birth, a thousand warriors, a thousand wisemen, putting up at last with a little smooth-faced page without riches and with no name other than a reputation for gratitude, entitled thereto by the loyalty he bore his friend. The great singer of the girl's attractions, the famous Ariosto, not daring or not caring to

sing her lot after her vile surrender, since they couldn't be things exceeding in purity, bade her farewell with the lines :

How she obtained the sceptre of Cathay,
Some bard with defter quill will sing the lay.

Doubtless this was a kind of prophecy, especially as poets also go by the name of seers or diviners. The truth thereof is now made evident, for since then a famous Andalusian poet has wept and chanted her tears, and another rare and renowned Castilian has sung her beauty. '

' Tell me, Señor Don Quijote, ' here interposed the barber, ' among so many that have praised Angelica, has there been none to satirise her ? ' And the other said : ' I can well believe that had Sacripante or Roland himself been poets, she'd have had a scrubbing ere now, for it's only natural that poets, disdained and refused by their real or imaginary lady-loves, by those in short whom they elect mistresses of their thoughts, should take vengeance in satires and libels ; though such vengeance surely is unworthy generous breasts. But so far no defamatory lines against the lady Angelica have come to my notice, though she turned the whole world upside down. ' 'Tis very strange, ' said the priest. Just then they heard the niece and housekeeper (who had left the conversation) making a great to-do in the corral, and our friends hastened to see what was the trouble.

CHAPTER II

The notable struggle 'twixt Sancho Panza on one side and niece and housekeeper on the other, together with further rare incidents

THE history goes on to tell us that the outcries heard by Don Quijote, priest and barber came from the housekeeper and niece, who were berating Sancho Panza. The squire was fighting his way in to see the master, while the women were holding the door against him and calling out : ' What does the vagabond

want here ? Go home, thief, since you it is and none else that steals master away and carries him off into the backwoods !' And to this Sancho returned : ' Housekeeper of Satan ! the stolen and carried through the backwoods is I, not your master. He it is that drags me off through these worlds and you are sadly mistaken. 'Twas he enticed me from home with catchpennies, promising me an isle, which still I look for. ' ' May the cursed thing choke you, mischievous fellow ! ' retorted the niece ; ' what's an isle anyway — something to eat, glutton that you are ? ' ' Not to eat, but to rule and govern better than four cities, and more profitable than four justiceships at court. ' ' All the same, ' declared the housekeeper, ' you can't get in here, you sack of corruption and bundle of malice. Go and govern your house and till your farm, and leave off pretending isles and islands. '

The priest and barber were delighted by all this, but Don Quijote, fearing lest Sancho rip open and expose a sack of mischievous blunders, touching on things not clearly to his master's credit, called to him, bidding the two women hush their racket and let him in. Sancho entered and the priest and barber took leave, despairing of their friend's recovery, seeing how set he was in his roving thoughts, how drunk with the folly of his halting chivalries. In so many words the priest said this to the barber : ' You'll see friend, that when least we expect it our gentleman will be off for another flight. ' ' I shouldn't wonder ; yet I am not so amazed at the madness of the knight as at the simplicity of the squire, clinging so tenaciously to his island that I question if any number of disillusions could wrest it from his skull. ' ' God help them both, ' said the other ; ' let us be on the watch that we may see what comes of this crazy combination of master and man. It's as if the two had been cast in one mould — the lord's infatuation without the servant's gullibility wouldn't be worth a sou. ' ' So I think, ' said the barber, ' and gladly would I know what the pair are treating of at this moment. ' ' Depend upon our hearing from the niece and housekeeper, for theirs are not natures to resist eavesdropping. '

Don Quijote shut the chamber-door behind Sancho and himself,

and when they were alone, the one said to the other : ‘ Much it grieves me, Sancho, that you said and still say I was the one that drew you from your cottage, though knowing I didn’t abide in my castle. Together we sallied forth — we lodged and travelled side by side ; one luck and one lot pursued us both. If they blanketed you once, they belaboured me a hundred times. Hence I carry off the honours.’ ‘ And rightly,’ said the other, ‘ for, as you yourself say, disasters are more congenial to errants than shieldbearers.’ ‘ You are mistaken, Sancho, for the saying is, *Cuando caput dolet* — ’ ‘ I understand no other tongue than mine,’ interrupted the squire. ‘ I mean to say that when the head suffers, all the members suffer with it, and I, being your lord, am your head and you that are my servant are my body. The ill I receive must be your pain as well, and your ills will likewise grieve me.’

‘ It must be as you say, master, but that time they tossed me, a member, in a blanket, my head was behind the wall watching me wing the air and not suffering a twinge. Now since the limbs are bound to sympathise with pain in the head, so the head should feel for pain in the limbs.’ ‘ Do you mean to suggest that I didn’t suffer when I saw them toss you ? If you do, neither speak nor think it, for I felt more pain in my spirit on that occasion than you in your body. But putting this aside, for the opportunity will come when we can consider and settle it, tell me, friend, what says the village of me ? in what opinion do the common people hold their townsman ? in what the hidalgos and in what the knights ? What think they of my valour, my achievements and my courtesy ? What do you hear said anent mine undertaking to restore to the world its already forgotten order of chivalry ? In fine, boy, I would that you repeat all that has reached your ears regarding me, without adding aught to the good or subtracting from the evil. ’Tis the part of loyal vassals to represent the truth to their lords in her own image and person, not letting adulation add to or foolish awe detract from her proper form. I would have you know, Sancho, that were the truth presented to princes stripped of the guises of flattery, the times would be different and other ages be held more iron-bound than ours,

which I believe the golden of modern times. Profit by what I say, friend, in order that wisely and well-meaningly you may place in mine ears the facts concerning which I have questioned you.'

'This I'll do most willingly, master mine, provided your worship won't take offence at what I say, since you wish me to repeat things stark-naked, with no more clothes on than when they came to me.' 'In no wise shall I take offence,' promised the knight; 'you may speak freely without circumlocution.' 'Then the first thing on my list is that the common folk take you for an out-and-out idiot and me for no less. The hidalgos say that, not content to remain among the gentry, you prefixed the Don and all of a sudden advanced yourself to a cavalier, though owning but four small vineyards, two yokes of land and not a whole shirt to don to your name. The cavaliers say they don't want hidalgos to go rivalling them, especially squireling gentry that smear their own shoes and stitch their black stockings with green silk.' 'This,' observed Don Quijote, 'cannot apply to me, who always walk forth in my best of clothes and never look patched. Shabby I may be, but shabby from the wear and tear of arms than of time.'

Sancho proceeded: 'Concerning your worship's valour, courtesy, achievements and general project, opinions differ: some say mad, but a pretty fancy; others brave but unlucky; still others, courteous but cavalier. Indeed opinion goes knocking at so many points as to leave neither of us a whole bone.' 'Observe, Sancho,' said the other, 'that where virtue exists eminently, 'tis persecuted. Few or none of the famous great ones of old escaped calumny. Julius Caesar, most spirited, wise and valiant captain that he was, they set down not only as ambitious but unclean both in dress and manners. Alexander, whose deeds gained him the epithet of the great, is said to have had marks of the drunkard upon him. They even tell me that Hercules, he of the many labours, was lascivious and soft. Don Galaor, brother of Amadis of Gaul, 'tis whispered was excessively quarrelsome and of his brother that he was a whimperer. Among such scandalous vilification of good men, that of me may surely pass unheeded, when 'tis no more than you have mentioned.'

‘ That’s the deuce of it, body of my father ! ’ exclaimed Sancho. ‘ Then is there something to come ? ’ ‘ The tail is not skinned yet, ’ said the squire ; ‘ what I’ve told so far is but cakes and cookies, and would you know the rest, I’ll straight fetch one that will tell all without skipping a copper. Last night arrived Bartholomew Carrasco’s son from having received the bachelor’s degree at Salamanca and when I went over to bid him welcome, he told me that a history of your worship was in print under the title, That Imaginative Gentleman Don Quijote de La Mancha. He says I’m mentioned under my real name of Sancho Panza ; also Dulcinea del Toboso, together with other things that occurred just ’twixt you and me, which makes me cross myself with wonder as to how the chap that wrote the book could have known them. ’

‘ I am sure, ’ said our knight, ‘ that the author was some cunning magician, since from them naught of what they would write is concealed. ’ ‘ But how can he be cunning and a magician when, according to this fellow Samson Carrasco, he signs himself Cid Hamet Berengena (egg-plant). ’ ‘ ’Tis a Moorish name, ’ observed the other. ‘ I dare say, said Sancho, ‘ for I’ve heard that most Moors are fond of berengena. ’ ‘ You must have mistaken the surname of this Cid, Cid being as you know Arabic for sir. ’ ‘ Maybe I have, and would your worship like me to fetch this bachelor lad, I’ll reach him quickly as a bird. ’ ‘ ’Twill give me great pleasure, friend. This news holds me in suspense and not a morsel will agree with me till I am made acquainted with all. ’ ‘ I am off then, ’ said Sancho ; and leaving his lord, he went in search of the bachelor, with whom he shortly returned and ’twixt the three a most diverting colloquy ensued.

CHAPTER III

**The diverting interview between Don Quijote, Sancho Panza
and the bachelor Samson Carrasco**

DON Quijote remained gravely pensive, staying the bachelor Carrasco, from whom he was to hear these tidings of himself which, according to Sancho Panza, were now printed and blown abroad. It was difficult to be persuaded that such things could be : that, ere the blood of his enemies was dry on his sword, they would have the record of his noble chivalries in print. Some sorcerer, friend or foe, through his power of enchantment, might, he fancied, have given them to the press : if friend, to vaunt them, setting them above the most signal achievements of errants of old ; if foe, to belittle them, setting them below the vilest performances ever writ of baseborn squire. Yet he was forced to confess that deeds of shieldbearers were never recorded, and in any case, were this story of his life genuine, as the story of a knight how could it be aught but high-flown, conspicuous, transcendent and true !

From this our adventurer received a little solace, but the reflection that an author with the title of Cid must be a Moor unsettled him again, since no truth could be expected from Moors, all of whom are charlatans, humbugs and impostors. He feared lest his love-affair had been treated indelicately, with the result that his lady's virtue would be questioned and herself made light of. He could but hope that the historian had made clear the loyalty and unselfish love which he, her devoted one, had ever preserved, rejecting queens, empresses and damsels of all degree and holding in check his impulses and inclinations.

Rapt and enwrought in these and other conjectures he was found by Sancho Panza and Samson Carrasco, who were received nevertheless with marks of great courtesy. The bachelor, though Samson in name, was of only moderate bulk, though a good

deal of a bully ; colourless in complexion but clever in understanding. He boasted some four and twenty years, a round face, flat nose and large mouth : signs all of a touch of mischief and a liking for jokes and jests, as was evinced in this visit with Don Quijote, before whom he now knelt saying : ‘ Prithee your grace’s hand, Señor Don Quijote de la Mancha, since by the habit of Saint Peter I wear, though I possess the first four orders only, your worship is one of the most famous knights-errant that have been or shall be on all the rotundity of the globe. Blessed be Cid Hamet, the historian of your heroic exploits, and thrice blest the scholar that with such pains has translated them from the Arabic into our vulgar tongue for the general enlightenment of all people. ’

Don Quijote made the bachelor rise, saying : ‘ Then it is true there exists a history of me, composed by Moor and sage ? ’ ‘ So true, sir, that already more than twelve thousand copies have, I understand, been issued. Should you deem it impossible, let Portugal, Barcelona and Valencia speak, for there were they printed. ’Tis rumored that an edition is soon to appear at Antwerp and I am persuaded there’s not a nation or tongue that won’t have its translation. ’ Upon this the knight replied : ‘ One thing among others that should content a gifted and virtuous man is seeing himself with good name in print and volume in the literatures of the world — I say with good name because with bad any death were preferable. ’ ‘ If it be a question of report, ’ said the bachelor, ‘ your worship singly bears away the palm from all knights-errant, since the Moor in his tongue and the Christian in his take care to depict your gallantry to the very life : your heroism in facing danger, your patience in adversity, sufferance in disaster as in wounds, and the purity and restraint of your highly Platonic courtship of the lady Doña Dulcinea del Toboso. ’

‘ Never did I hear the Don given Dulcinea, ’ exclaimed Sancho at this point ; ‘ she was simply the lady Dulcinea del Toboso ; already the history is astray. ’ ‘ Not a momentous error, ’ returned Carrasco. ‘ Certainly not, ’ seconded Don Quijote ; ‘ but tell me, sir bachelor, by which of mine exploits is most store set ? ’ ‘ On

that point,' the other replied. 'there are as many opinions as there are tastes. Some cry up the adventure of the windmills supposed by your worship to have been Briareuses and Gygeses; others the adventure of the fulling-mills; this person swears by the description of the two armies that later proved flocks of sheep; another by the incident of the corpse borne to Segovia for burial. One tells us that the galley-slave episode bears the bell, while another stands out for the affair of the two Benedictine giants, followed by the bout with the doughty Biscayan.'

'Tell me, señor bachelor,' asked Sancho, 'do they mention the set-to with the Yanguesans when it pleased our good Rocinante to look for tidbits in the sea?' 'The sage left nothing in the ink-well: he tells all and touches upon everything, even to the capers our good Sancho cut in the blanket.' 'In the blanket I cut no capers — in the air, yes, and more than I liked.' 'In my belief,' commented Don Quijote, 'not in the world is there human history without ups and downs, especially those that treat of chivalries, which can never be a series of uninterrupted triumphs.' 'Yet some readers of the book,' argued the bachelor, 'say the authors would have favoured them had they passed over a few of the infinite whalings Don Quijote was made to receive.' 'Tis right there the truth comes in,' asserted Sancho. 'In common fairness, however, they might have hushed them up,' declared Don Quijote; 'none is bound to set forth events that in no way effect the essence of the story, particularly when likely to bring the hero into contempt. Verily Aeneas stood not so pious as Virgil paints him, nor Ulysses so cunning as Homer describes.'

'Of a surety,' assented Samson; 'yet 'tis one thing to write as poet and quite another as historian. The poet may speak or sing of things not as they were but as they should have been, while on the historian 'tis incumbent to present incidents not as they should have been but as they actually occurred, without letting the truth suffer one tittle either way.' 'If then this Mister Moor was in for telling the truth,' suggested Sancho, 'we can be sure that among my master's maulings are to be found some of mine — they never took the measure of his worship's should-

ers without measuring me the whole body. But why marvel at that when, as master himself declares, the members must partake when head hath any ache.' 'You sly one!' quoth tke head; 'never to let your memory fail when you don't wish.' 'Even did I wish to forget those taps and raps, it wouldn't be listened to by the weals, which my ribs still preserve fresh and tender.' 'Enough, Sancho; don't impede the bachelor, whom I crave to proceed with his account of what this history says of me.' 'And of me,' added Sancho, 'for they tell me I am one of the chief parsonages therein.' 'Personages, not parsonages, Panza friend,' remarked the bachelor. 'What! another word-tripper? at this rate we shan't have done in a life-time.'

'May God blast mine,' quoth Carrasco, 'if you aren't the second character in the book, and some there are that count it more to hear from you than from the finest, though others say you're altogether too credulous as to the government of that isle, proffered by Señor Don Quijote here.' 'The sun still shines on the wall,' commented the knight, 'and when Sancho is a little older, with the experience that comes with age he'll possess greater fitness and capacity as a ruler than he now commands.' 'By God, sir, the isle that I couldn't govern with my present years, I couldn't with those of Methusalem. The mischief is not that I lack wit to rule the post but that it keeps its whereabouts unknown.' 'Leave it to God,' advised his master, 'and all will be well and maybe better than you imagine, since not a leaf stirs save by his will.' 'True,' said Samson, 'and if so it pleased Him, Sancho wouldn't fail of a thousand isles to govern, let alone one.' 'I've seen governors not far from here,' averred the squire, 'that in my opinion didn't reach the sole of my shoe, yet are they called Your Honour and are served on silver.' 'Such, however,' reasoned Samson, 'aren't governors of isles but of much more tractable affairs; they that govern isles must at least know the cardinal rules of grammar.'

'I'd get along with the carding,' argued Sancho, 'but I pass on the grammar, for I don't know what it means. But leaving this government business in the hands of God to send me where I may best serve Him, let me tell you, señor bachelor, how

pleased am I to hear that the author has so spoken of me that what he relates doesn't give offence, for on the faith of a good squire had he told things unbecoming the old Christian I am, the deaf would hear of it.' 'That would be working miracles.' 'Miracles or no miracles, let every one mind how he speak or write of his fellow-beings — not dash off the first thing that comes into his head.'

'One of the crimes charged against this history,' continued the bachelor, 'is that the author inserts a novel entitled *The Impertinent Paul Pry* — not that the story is poor or ill-told, but because it has nothing whatever to do with the occasion or with your worship's life, Señor Don Quijote.' 'The son of a dog has jumbled the cabbages and baskets all in a heap, I'll bet,' swore Sancho. And his master: 'Something tells me that my historian is no sage but some bungling busybody, that in heedless haphazard fashion set about writing it, result as it might, like the Ubedan painter Orbaneja who, in answer to an inquiry as to what he was painting, replied, Whatever it turns out. Once he painted such a sorry-looking cock, 'twas fond necessary to subscribe in Gothic, This is a cock. A gloss, similarly, will be found essential to the elucidation of my history.'

'On the contrary,' declared Samson, 'tis all so obvious as to present no difficulties whatever. Children turn its leaves, the young pore over it, men and women conceive and old folk commend it. In short so well is it thumbed, read and inwardly digested of all classes that no sooner do they glimpse some lean nag than they cry, There goes Rocinante. Pages in particular are its devotees: no lord's antechamber is without its Don Quijote. If some lay it down, others snatch it up; some beg, others battle for it. In fine this history is one of the most pleasurable and least prejudicial pastimes ever met with, for throughout can be found neither the suggestion of an obscene word nor a thought less than Catholic.'

'To write in other fashion,' observed its hero, 'would be writing not truth but falsehood, and historians that make matter out of lies should be burned at the stake with counterfeiters. I can't imagine though what moved the author to make copy

of novels and irrelevant tales when there was so much of myself to write of. Doubtless be abided by the proverb, Of straw or of hay, 'tis a bed either way. But of a truth the bare record of my thoughts, tears, sighs, my worthy aims and ends would fill a tome larger than or at least as large as the writings of el Tostado. Indeed, sir bachelor, I opine that for composing histories or any other book, excellent judgment and ripe wit are indispensable : to write with grace and understanding is the part of genius. The wittiest figure in comedy is the fool, since he that would act the part cannot be one. History by nature is a thing divine, for 'tis bound to be true, and where truth is, God is also. None the less there are those that toss off books like fritters. '

' There's none so bad but it contains some good, ' observed the bachelor. ' Beyond a doubt, ' assented the knight ; ' it frequently happens however that authors enjoying considerable and deserved praise for their writings in manuscript, altogether lose it, damage it seriously at least, when they give them to the press. ' And Samson : ' The reason is that printed works can be read at leisure and the faults stand out. The greater his reputation, the more closely are an author's writings examined, since recognised men of genius, great poets and illustrious historians, are always or at least usually envied of those that take a special pleasure in criticising their labours, though nothing have they of their own to show. ' ' Not strange, ' said the other, ' when we see how many divines, worthless in the pulpit themselves, are quick to detect the excesses of other preachers. ' ' Quite true, and I could wish such censors to be more considerate and less overnice, not confining themselves to the moles of the bright sun they grumble at, for though Homer does nod at times, it must be remembered how long he kept awake that we might possess the brightness of his labours with the least possible shade. It may well be, moreover, that what seem to these critics blemishes, are in reality moles that heighten the beauty. Truly, he that gives his writings to the press, incurs a most serious risk, for of all impossibilities 'tis most impossible to please every one. '

' That which deals with me must have satisfied few indeed, '

ventured Don Quijote. ' On the contrary, ' explained the bachelor, ' there being an infinite number of blockheads in the world, their name is legion that revel in your history. To be sure some severely criticise the author's poor memory, forgetting to tell us who the thief was that stole Sancho's Dapple. No direct information is given and that he was stolen is left to be inferred. What's more, we find the squire remounted on the little beast without its having reappeared. The point is also made that the chronicler forgot to tell us what Sancho did with the hundred crowns he found in a valise in the Sierra Morena. No further allusion is made and many would like to know what became of them or how they were spent. This is considered one of the most serious omissions. '

To these words of the bachelor Sancho replied as follows : ' Señor Samson, at present I am not for going into tales or explanations, for a spasm in the stomach has overtaken me and unless I doctor it with two quaffs of old musty, 'twill pin me on Saint Lucy's thorn. This same musty I have at home, mine old woman awaits me ; dinner ended, I'll be back and answer any question you or anybody else may ask, both as to the loss of the ass and the fate of the hundred crowns ; ' and without another word or waiting for one he was off. Don Quijote pressed the bachelor to stop and take penance with him, the other yielded, a brace of young pigeons was added to the menu, chivalry formed the topic of discussion, Carrasco followed his host's humour, the banquet came to an end, they slept the siesta, Sancho arrived and the previous talk was resumed.

CHAPTER IV

Sancho Panza satisfies the doubts and questions of the bachelor Samson Carrasco, together with other accidents worthy to be known and recorded

SANCHO returned to his master's house and taking up the former thread of discourse said : ' As to that which Señor Samson was asking, namely that he was anxious to hear by whom, how or when mine ass was stolen, I reply in these words. The night we entered the Sierra Morena, when we were fleeing the Holy Brotherhood after the misventurous adventure with the galley-slaves and the one with the corpse they were carrying to Segovia, my master and I hid in a coppice, and there, he leaning on his lance and I seated on my Dapple, weary and sore from our recent collisions both of us fell asleep. I in particular slept so soundly that whoever he was found it possible to come and prop me up on four stakes, which he placed one at each corner of my packsaddle so as to leave me riding there while he drew the ass out from underneath and I not know it. '

' That is simple, ' said Don Quijote, ' nor is it the first occurrence, for the same happened to Sacripante when at the siege of Albraca the famous thief Brunelo led his horse out from under him. ' ' Morning dawned, ' continued Sancho, ' and no sooner did I stretch myself than the stakes gave way and I came to the ground with a mighty fall. I looked around for Dapple but could not see him. Tears hurried to mine eyes and I uttered a wailing such that, if the author of our history haven't inserted it, you may be sure he has omitted a good thing. At the end of I know not how many days, when riding in the company of her ladyship Princess Micomicona, I saw mine ass and on it, in the guise of a gipsy, Ginés de Pasamonte, that humbug and vile rascal my master and I set free from his chain. ' ' The oversight wasn't just there, ' remarked Samson, ' but before this, before the ass turned

up, Sancho is spoken of as mounted upon him.' 'On that point,' said Sancho, 'I am at a loss what to say; either the historian was deceived or the printer was careless.'

'So it must have been,' agreed Samson; 'but what became of the hundred crowns?' 'They vanished: I spent them on myself, my wife and the children. 'Tis they that make the old woman bear so patiently the callings and quests I have followed in the service of my master Don Quijote, for had I come back at the end of all that long time without Dapple or doit, I could have looked for rough weather. If there be more to learn, here I am, ready to answer the king himself, though 'tis nobody's business whether I took or didn't take, whether I spent or didn't spend, for were the whalings received by me on these voyages to be paid for in money, even though valued at only four farthings apiece, another hundred crowns wouldn't pay for half. Let each keep his hand in his bosom and not try to make out that white is black and black white, for every man is as God made him, and oft times a great deal worse.'

'I'll take care,' said Carrasco, 'to warn the author, in case he should print the history a second time, to bear in mind what our honest Sancho says, for 'twill raise the work a good span higher.' 'Are there other emendations to be made in the text, señor bachelor?' enquired Don Quijote. 'Very likely,' was the answer, 'but nothing probably of equal importance.' 'And does the author promise a second part perhaps?' 'Yes, he promises it, but says he hasn't as yet found it nor does he know who has it, so we are uncertain whether 'twill appear, both on that account and because some say second parts have never been successes. Moreover, others say enough has been heard of Quijote and his affairs. So 'tis doubtful if more will come to us, though some, more sunny than saturnine, exclaim: 'More Quijotedom! let Don Quijote charge and Sancho Panza chat, however it turn out, we'll be content with that.'

'And where does the author stand?' 'Where? why, immediately he finds the history, for which he is searching with unusual diligence, he'll give it to the press, moved more by thoughts of profit than of praise.' Upon this Sancho exclaimed:

‘ Is it to penny and profit he is looking ? ’twill be a wonder then if he succeed, for all will be hurry, hurry, hurry, as with the tailor on Easter Eve ; things done hastily are never done tastily. Let Mister Moor or whoever he be look to what he does, since I and master will furnish him with rubble enough by way of adventures and other turns to make not only a second part but a hundred. The good man must fancy we’re asleep in the straw here ; let him just hold up our feet to be shod and he’ll see on which one we go lame. My meaning is that if my master would take my advice, we should this moment be off in the country, redressing grievances and righting wrongs, as is the custom and practice of worthy errants. ’

Sancho had scarce ended when neighs of Rocinante reached their ears, whereupon Don Quijote, considering this a good omen, determined to make another sally in three or four days. Announcing his intention to the bachelor he sought his advice as to where his journey should begin. The other’s opinion was that he should go to the kingdom of Aragon, in particular to the city Saragossa, where at the festival of Saint George was soon to be held a celebrated tournament, wherein he could gain renown above all knights of Aragon, equivalent to gaining it above all knights of the world. He praised his determination as most honourable and valiant but urged him to proceed with greater circumspection when it came to engaging in perils, since his life was not his own, belonging as it did to all that in distress had need of his aid and protection.

‘ That is what I say, Señor Samson, ’ averred the squire at this point, ‘ for my master attacks a hundred armed men as does a greedy ragamuffin half a dozen melons. Body of me but you’re right, señor bachelor, for there are times to attack and times to withdraw, and it needn’t always be, Santiago and close Spain ! What’s more, I’ve heard it said, by my master himself I believe, if I mistake not, that ’twixt the extremes of timidity and temerity lies the mean of valour. If that be true, I wish him neither to retire without reason nor charge when the odds urge otherwise. But above all would I impress this upon him, that if I am to be his squire, it must be conditioned that he shall attend to all the

fighting and that I shall attend to his person only in the matters of cleanliness and provision : in these I'll lay the dust in his path. For to think that I shall draw sword against villainous churls with steel hood and battle-axe, is to think topsy-turvy. I, Señor Samson, have no hopes of achieving fame as a man of valour, but solely by proving myself the best and trustiest squire that ever served knight-errant. And should my master, obliged thereto by my many and good services, see fit to hand over one of the many islands his worship says are to be met with hereabouts, I shall greatly be his debtor. Should he fail me however, I am as they bore me and one mustn't live in reliance on other than God. Moreover, my bread will taste as well or perhaps better without rule than with, for how do I know but in these governments the devil may have prepared some catch for me to trip, fall and break my grinders ? Sancho was I born and Sancho I expect to die. If Heaven of its own accord and without much risk or solicitude on my part should rain an isle or something similar upon me, I am not so stupid as to fling it away, for as well is it said, When they hand thee the heifer, hurry with the halter, and, When good-luck comes, put it in thy house. '

' You have spoken like a professor, brother Sancho,' declared Carrasco ; ' howbeit, trust in God, and in your master to give you not merely an isle but a kingdom,' ' More is the same as less,' replied Sancho ; ' I mean to say to Señor Carrasco that my master won't be throwing whatever he gives me into a sack full of holes, for I've taken my pulse and find that for ruling isles and governing kingdoms I am in perfect health, and he has been informed of this before to-day.' ' But look, Sancho ; office changeth manners and it might be, finding yourself governor, you wouldn't recognise your own mother.' ' So it would be with those born in the marshes, but not with them that have their souls lined with old Christian fat four fingers deep as I have. Nay, consider my nature, if it be likely to show ingratitude toward any man.' ' God let it rest as it will,' said Don Quijote ; ' we shall see when the government comes, which even now methinks I have between mine eyes. '

He then prayed the bachelor, if perchance he were a poet, to

favour him with a few lines conveying the farewell he was about to take of his lady Dulcinea del Toboso. At the beginning of each line he urged him to place a letter of her name, so that, when all was written, the first letters should spell Dulcinea del Toboso. The bachelor replied that though not one of the famous poets of Spain who, according to account, numbered three and a half, he would write the verses. One great difficulty stood in his way, he said, namely that the letters of her name were seventeen, and if he wrote four stanzas of four lines each, one letter would be unprovided for, and if of five lines, called decimas or roundelays, he would be three letters short. However he would endeavour to tuck in the extra letter the best he could and thus have four four-line verses include the magic name. 'It must certainly be done,' said Don Quijote, 'for if it be not there as plain as daylight, no woman will believe 'twas for her the stanzas were intended.'

This was therefore agreed to ; also that the sally should take place in eight days. The knight charged the bachelor to keep it secret, especially from the priest, Master Nicholas, niece and housekeeper, lest they frustrate his virtuous and valerous resolve. Carrasco promising took leave, requesting Don Quijote to keep him informed, so far as he had leisure, of his good or evil fortunes. Thus they parted and Sancho returned home to make the necessary preparations for the journey.

CHAPTER V

The wise and witty colloquy 'twixt Sancho Panza and his wife Teresa, together with other passages worthy of happy record

COMING to write the fifth chapter of this history, the translator says he deems it apocryphal, for in it Sancho speaks in a manner transcending his slender genius, uttering such clever things that the translator cannot believe he originated them. Bound however by the obligations of his office, he could not omit the chapter, and so proceeds as follows :

Sancho hurried home so jocund and jubilant that his wife noticed his pleasure a bowshot off, so clearly that she called : ' What have you, Sancho friend, that makes you happy ? ' And he answered : ' God willing, I should be glad not to be so happy as I seem, wife dear. ' ' I don't understand you, husband, and I can't guess what you mean when you say that, God willing, you would be glad not to be happy. Fool that I am, I can't think who gets pleasure from not having it. ' ' Well then, Teresa, I am merry because my mind is made to return to the service of my master Don Quijote. He intends to sally forth a third time in quest of adventures and I shall sally with him, for so wills my necessity and the hope that cheers me with the thought of finding another hundred crowns like those already vanished. Yet it saddens me to part from you and the children. If God would only let me eat dry-shod and in my house, and not drag me over crooked paths and cross-roads — and He could do it at little cost by merely willing it — my pleasure would naturally be more lasting and sure ; now 'tis mixed with sorrow at our parting. Rightly therefore did I say that, please God, I should be glad not to be so happy. '

' See here, husband, ' returned Teresa ; ' ever since you became a limb to a knight-errant, you talk in such roundabout ways there's no understanding you. ' ' 'Tis enough if God does, wife, for He's the understander of all things ; so much for that. And now, sister, look after Dapple these next three days, that he may be fit to bear arms. Double his ration, see to the packsaddle and the other tackle, for 'tis not to a wedding we are going but round the world, to settle little accounts with giants, dragons and other monsters, and to hear whistles, roars, howls and bellowings. But all that would be flowers of lavender, were there no set-tos with Yanguesans and enchanted Moors. ' ' I can easily believe, husband, that squires-errant don't eat their bread for nothing and I shall keep praying our Lord at once to deliver you from all such misventures. '

' Let me tell you, wife, ' now confided the other, ' that did I not expect to find myself governor of an island before long, I should fall dead on the spot. ' ' Nay, nay, husband, let the hen

live though it be with the pip. Live on say I and let the devil take as many governments as there are in the world. Without one you came from your mother's womb, without one you have always lived and without one you will go or be carried to the grave, when God shall be pleased. How many are there in the world that live without a government, yet do not cease to exist and be counted in the number of the living. The best sauce in the world is hunger, and as that never fails the poor, they always relish what they eat. But if by any chance you find yourself with a government on your hands, see to it, Sancho, that you do not forget your wife and children. Remember that Sanchico has just turned fifteen, and if his uncle the abbot mean to fit him for the church, it's time he should go to school. Remember too that Mari-Sancha your daughter won't die if we make her a wife. And indeed a daughter ill-wived looks better than one well-kept.'

'By my troth,' replied Sancho, 'if God get me any sort of government, I mean to marry our daughter so high that they can't reach her without calling her Your Ladyship.' 'Not so, Sancho,' returned Teresa; 'it will be much better to marry her with an equal, for if from wooden clogs you lift her into high shoes and out of her hodden-grey petticoat into silk hoop and farthingale, changing Molly and thou to Madam So-and-so and Your Ladyship, the child won't be able to find herself, and at every turn will fall into a thousand blunders, showing the thread of her plain homespun.' 'Tut, fool; she need only practise two or three years and after that her rank and dignity will fit her like a glove. And if not, what does it matter? let her be My Lady, and let come what come may.'

'Stick to your station, Sancho,' advised Teresa; 'don't hope to rise higher, heeding the proverb that runs, Wipe your neighbour's son's nose and fetch him to your house. A pretty thing 'twould be, wouldn't it, to marry our Molly to some great count or cavalier, who, when the humour took him, would set her down as a greenhorn, calling her bumpkin and daughter of clodhoppers and spinning-jades. Not while I live, husband, have I brought up my Molly for this. Bring home the money, Sancho, and leave the marrying to me. There's Lope Tocho, Juan Tocho's

boy, a hale and hearty lad, and we know him, and I am certain he has no unfriendly eye on the girl. With him, our equal, she will be well wived, and we shall always have her under our eyes and all be like parents and children, grandsons and sons-in-law, and the peace of God and his blessing shall be in our midst. So don't go marrying her in those courts and great palaces where they won't understand her, now she know what to make of herself.'

'Come here, fool,' quoth Sancho, 'you wife of Barabbas. Why, without rime or reason, would you hinder me marrying our daughter to a man that will bring me grandchildren they'll call Don? Listen, Teresa, I've always heard mine elders say that he that can't use his luck when it comes, mustn't complain when it passes him by. Now that it is calling at our door 'twould be foolish not to let it in, and while the wind blows fair let us make the most of it.' (It was for this manner of speaking, as well as for what Sancho says below, that the translator of this history holds this chapter apocryphal). 'Tell me, crazy,' continued the husband, 'won't it be well for me to slip into some fat governorship that will lift us out of the mud, and wed Mari-Sancha with whom I please? You will see how they address you as Doña Tereza Panza and how in church you take your seat on a rug with cushions and hangings, despite and in defiance of all the born ladies of the village. No, no, stay as you are without growing bigger or less like a tapestry figure. But let's speak no more of this; only Sanchica will be a countess, whatever you think.'

'Do you know all you say, husband? I am sure this countship will be my daughter's ruin. Do what you will, make her duchess or princess if you please; only let me tell you once again it won't be with my consent or wish. I was ever the friend of equality, brother, and I don't like to see people put on airs for nothing. Teresa they gave me at baptism, Teresa pure and simple, without borders or fringes or additions of Don or Doña. Cascajo was my father's name, and though through being your wife they call me Teresa Panza, Teresa Cascajo is what by rights they should call me. But kings go as laws will, and I am content with my name as it is without a Don on top of it to make it weigh more than I

can carry. Nor would I give them cause to say, when they see me tricked out like a countess or governor's wife : ' See what airs the slattern gives herself. Only yesterday she was not above spinning her flax and going to mass with the tail of her petticoat over her head for a mantle, and to-day she struts in her farthingale, with brooches and fine airs as if we didn't know her. ' So long as God keeps me in my seven or five or as many senses as I have, methinks I shan't let myself be caught that way. But you, brother, go and be your government or isle as airy as you please, for by the life of my mother neither I nor my child will stir one step from this village. A good wife has a broken leg and stays at home, and let the girl that would be chaste, by keeping busy keep the feast. Go with Don Quijote to your adventures and leave us to our disaventures, which God will better for us as we are good ; though I don't know who gave him the Don, which neither his parents nor grandparents ever had before him. '

' There's a devil in your body, I tell you, ' quoth Sancho ; ' God help you, woman, and how many things have you been stringing together without head or tail ! What have broken china (cascajo) and brooches and proverbs and airs to do with what I am saying ? Come now, stupid blockhead — and that's what you are, since you don't understand me and run away from good-luck — had I said that our daughter was to throw herself from a tower or was to wander through these worlds the way the infanta Doña Urraca threatened to, you'd be right in not yielding to my wishes. But if like a flash and in less than the twinkling of an eye I get her a Doña and My Lady for her back, drawing her from the stubble for you and putting her on a pedestal under an awning in a room with more velvet cushions (almohadas) than were Moors among the Almohades of Morocco, why won't you consent and agree with me ? ' ' Do you know why, husband ? Well then, 'tis because of the saying, He that covers thee, discovers thee. Over the poor man all eyes hasten, but on the rich man they fasten, and if this rich man once were poor, then they curse and call him boor. There's no stopping these backbiters, who throng our streets like swarms of bees. '

' Listen, Teresa, and hear what I have to tell, for perhaps you

haven't heard the like in all your born days. And now I shall not speak from myself, but all that I am about to say are opinions of the father that preached last Lent in this village, who said, if my memory serve me, that all present things for the moment before our eyes appear and remain fixed in the memory much more vividly and intensely than things of the past.' Again the translator remarks that such words as these lead him to consider this chapter apocryphal, being beyond our Sancho, who, however, continued saying : ' Whence it happens that when we see someone tricked out in fine attire with a parade of servants, in spite of ourselves are we moved to respect him, even though at that moment we recall some former low estate, of poverty or family, for that is all past and gone and we only think of what is now before our eyes. Moreover, if he that fortune led from the gutter of his low degree to the height of prosperity — these were the father's very words — be well-mannered, liberal and courteous toward all and make no attempt to rival born noblemen, rest assured none will remember what he was, Teresa, since all will respect him for what he now is — save the envious, from whom naught that succeeds is safe. '

' I know not what you mean, husband, ' declared Teresa ; ' do what you would and don't break my head with your speechifying and rhetoric. If you are revolved to do what you say — ' Resolved, you mean, not revolved, ' suggested the other. ' Don't begin to wrangle with me now, husband. I speak as it pleases God and tell my tale as it comes. All I advise is that you take your son Sancho along with you, if you've set your heart on a government, to teach him how to handle the thing, for 'tis well that sons inherit and know their fathers' trades. ' ' As soon as I get it, ' promised the other, ' I'll send for him by post and money to you, which I shall be sure to have, for there's always somebody to lend to governors when short. Dress the boy up so as to hide what he is, setting him off for what he is about to be. ' ' Do but send the money and I'll dress him like a palmetto. '

' We are agreed then, ' moved the father, ' that our daughter is to be a countess ? ' ' The day I see her one I shall think I am burying her. But again I say do what you will, for with this care

are women born into the world, to obey their husbands thick-headed though they be ;' and with this she began to weep as if Sanchica lay dead and buried before her eyes. Her husband consoled her by saying that though bound to make the girl a countess, he'd postpone it as long as he could. With this their talk came to an end and Sancho returned to Don Quijote to arrange for their sally.

CHAPTER VI

What passed 'twixt Don Quijote on one side and the niece and housekeeper on the other, being one of the most important chapters in the whole history

WHILE the above dispute was waging between Sancho Panza and his wife Teresa Cascajo, not wholly idle were our knight's niece and housekeeper, whom a thousand indications led to suspect that their uncle and master had in mind to break away a third time and return to the exercise of his for them disastrous chivalry. They used all means in their power to dissuade him from such unholy thoughts, but 'twas preaching in the desert and hammering cold iron. Among other things the housekeeper represented : ' In truth, master, unless your worship keep even foot and abide quietly at home, and quit roaming over mountain and vale like a lost soul in agony, looking for things they call adventures but I calamities, I'll have to petition and cry to God and the king that some remedy be found.' To this the knight responded :

' What God will say in answer to your plaint, mistress, I have no means of knowing. Equally am I at a loss as regards His Majesty, though I am sure that were I king I should excuse myself from noticing the countless impertinent memorials daily presented. Not the least of the annoyances to which rulers are put is the need of hearing and replying to each and every one. I would not that my affairs be added to their burden.' But again the housekeeper said : ' Tell us this, master, are there no knights

at His Majesty's court ? ' ' Yes, ' replied the other, ' many and 'tis just and fitting that there should be, both to set off the pomp of princes and for the glory of royal majesty. ' ' Then shouldn't your worship be of those that serve their king and lord by standing and waiting in his court ? '

‘ No, friend, for all knights cannot be courtiers, nor can or should all courtiers be adventurers : both must continue in the world. Though all are knights, great is their difference. Courtiers, without quitting their chambers or passing the palace-threshold, range the world over on a map and the devil a farthing to pay ; neither suffer they heat nor cold, hunger nor thirst. But we that are out-and-out adventurers, exposed to the sun's heat, the air's cold and all the weather's inclemencies, by night and by day, afoot and ahorse, measure kingdoms with our steps. And not alone painted enemies but those of flesh and blood do we face, attacking them at every possible danger-point, regardless of trifles and laws of the duel : whether or no the other's lance or sword be a trifle too short, whether or no he have relics or similar concealed fraud upon his person, whether or no the sun be parted and portioned, together with all other formalities that are the order in single combat, unknown as they are to you but not to me.

‘ You must understand moreover that the good errant, though he espy ten giants with heads that not alone touch but pierce the clouds and whose feet are the highest towers, with arms like masts of great and powerful ammirals and every eye a stupendous mill-wheel only more fiery than a glass-furnace, yet the knight, I say, must on no account show fear. Rather with easy bearing and intrepid heart must he hasten to the encounter and if possible in one little moment vanquish and put them to rout, though they come armoured with the shells of a certain fish reputed harder than diamond and in place of swords brandish trenchant Dasmascus knives or steel-tipped iron clubs, such as I have observed more than twice. All this have I said, housekeeper, that you may see the difference 'twixt knight and knight. And 'twould be well if the prince lived not that didn't set higher value upon this second or rather first kind of knights-errant

who, as we read in their histories, number men that have been the salvation not of one only but of many kingdoms.'

'Ah, sir!' here broke in the niece, 'do but bethink you that all you say of errants is a delusion and a snare, and that their histories, should they not be burned, deserve at least to have put upon them a sanbenito or other mark to brand them as infamous and corruptors of good manners.' 'By the God of my life!' quoth Don Quijote, 'were you not mine own niece and very sister's daughter, I'd give you such a dressing down for this blasphemy 'twould echo through the world. How do you say? can it be that a mere chit scarce equal to a dozen lace-bobbins dares wag her tongue against and decry the histories of knights-errant! What would Señor Amadis say, hearing such talk! He, to be sure, would pardon you, being the most submissive and courteous of his time and a great protector of maidens besides, but such a knight might have heard you that at his hands you'd have fared ill — not all were gallant and gracious. Some indeed were unpardonably rude and insolent, for not every one that calls himself knight and gentleman has the truth on his side. Some are of pure gold and some of alloy, and though all may look the part, not all can stand the probing. Base fellows there are that pride themselves upon presenting the appearance of gentlemen, while others of noble birth apparently would give their all to appear of the vulgar. Those rise by ambition or virtue; these sink through indolence or vice; and there's need of knowledge and discernment to distinguish between them, so equal in name, so distant in deed.'

'God help me!' exclaimed the niece; 'how do you know so much, uncle? why, if need and occasion arose, you could mount a pulpit and go preaching through the streets, and yet you can fall into a blindness so absolute, an absurdity so apparent, as to believe yourself stout of heart though aged, forceful though infirm, rectifier of evil though bending with eld, and above all a knightly gentleman though not one, for though the gentle can be knights, how can the indigent?'

'Much reason is there in what you say, niece, and yet I might tell things, à propos of families, 'twould amaze you. Not to mix

divine affairs with human I refrain ; yet notice this, friends, and give me strict attention. The families of this world may be reduced to four kinds : they are these, the first, though of humble origin, may yet grow prominent even to the height of greatness. The second, that had good beginnings, have preserved and still preserve themselves as originally they were. Still others, though likewise of no mean origin, have ended like a pyramid in a point, having lessened what they were at first till they come to naught, as doth the pyramid, whose point as respects its base cannot be considered. And last of all are those, the common and plebeian classes, the most numerous of all, who without good inception or decent middle will continue nameless to the end. Of the first the Ottoman house may well serve as instance, for from an humble unknown shepherd, its founder, it has risen to its present glory. To the second belong the many princes that, having inherited titles, preserve them as they were, content to live peacefully within their borders. Of those of ample origin but final eclipse there are thousands of examples : all the Pharaohs and Ptolemys of Egypt, the Cæsars of Rome, not to mention the whole tribe of countless princes, monarchs, lords — Medes and Assyrians, Greeks and barbarians — all of whom have ended in nothing, in a point, themselves and their founders. None of their descendents is now to be found, and if found, 'twould be among low and humble surroundings. As to the plebeian class I need only say that they serve to swell the number of the living : their importance merits no other fame or praise.

‘ From all this I would have you infer, you children, that great is the confusion with regard to family lineage, and that only they are truly great and illustrious that are so by the goodness, bounty and liberality of their deeds. I insist on goodness, bounty and a generous mind, because the vicious great man is greatly vicious while the mean rich man is a niggardly beggar. For the pleasure of possessions is not in hoarding but in spending, and that not wilfully but with judgment. To the poor man and gentle no way is open to reveal his birth save virtue and by being friendly, well-mannered, courteous, considerate and obliging ; not proud, arrogant, backbiting. Above all must he be charitable,

since two farthings gladly given the poor man will show one as liberal as he that bestows alms to the sound of the bell. There'll be none, not even a stranger, that seeing him adorned with these virtues will not regard him as of good estate. Indeed 'twould be strange otherwise, for praise has ever been virtue's meed, nor are good men at any time exempt from having good spoken of them.

' There are two ways, daughters, whereby men come to wealth and honour : by letters and by arms. Born under the planet Mars I incline rather to the latter — am bound as it were to keep to that road, though all the world prove adverse. 'Tis vain for you to weary yourselves attempting to turn me from wishing what Heaven wishes, fortune ordains, reason demands and above all my will craves. For though knowing as I do the innumerable labours attendant upon chivalry, I also know its multitude of blessings. I am aware that the path of virtue is narrow, and broad and spacious the highway of vice. But I realise too how different their goals ! for the way of vice, though wide and easy, ends in death, but the straight and difficult path of virtue leads to life, and not the life that perishes but that which is eternal. Hence the truth of our great Castilian poet :

By these rough thorny ways
To Heaven's high seat ascend ;
Whoever from them strays
Ne'er sees his journey's end. '

' Alas and alas ! ' exclaimed the niece ; ' mine uncle is poet as well ; he knows it all, he can do everything. I vow that would he be a mason, he could build a house like a cage. ' ' I promise you, niece, that did not these knightly thoughts of mine consume all my faculties, naught could I not do — no toy, in particular bird-cages and toothpicks, that could not emerge from my hands. ' Just at this point they heard someone calling, and on their asking who it was, Sancho Panza replied 'twas he. At once knowing the voice the housekeeper ran to hide herself that she might not see him, such was her abhorrence of that man. The niece opened the door, Don Quijote received him with open arms, and when the pair had closeted themselves, there occurred another colloquy, over which the preceeding has no advantage.

CHAPTER VII

The interview 'twixt master and man, together with other
most remarkable occurrences

WHEN the housekeeper saw the door shut behind Sancho Panza, she immediately surmised what this secret council portended : she felt sure that thence would issue the plan for a third sally. Donning her scarf, full of dismay and with heavy heart she sought out the bachelor Carrasco, hoping that he, being a well-spoken man and her master's new friend, might persuade him to abandon so wicked an emprise. She found him pacing the patio of his house and approaching fell at his feet, all in a glow and all in grief. When Carrasco saw her distress and excitement, he said : ' What is this, woman ? what has befallen you ? one would think you were about to give up the ghost. '

' 'Tis nothing, Señor Samson, only my master is breaking out, he surely is breaking out again. ' ' And where is he breaking, woman ? has he broken some part of his body ? ' ' He's breaking through the door of his madness. I mean to say, señor bachelor of my life, that he's about to sally forth another and a third time on a world quest of what he calls his good ventures, but don't ask me why, since the first time they brought him home slung across an ass, cudgelled to bits ; the last on an ox-cart, shut and imprisoned in a cage, where he let himself believe he was enchanted. He looked so woebegone his mother that bore him wouldn't have known him : gaunt, yellow, with sunken eyes ; so that to restore him to something like himself I've used more than six hundred eggs as God knows and all the world and my hens that will not let me lie. '

' This I can easily believe, ' assented the bachelor ; ' so good, plump and well-trained are they, they wouldn't say one thing and mean another though they burst. So then, woman, naught has

befallen nor calamity come upon you save that which is feared Señor Don Quijote is soon to bring about ?' ' That alone, sir.' ' Then don't worry, but go home in peace and prepare me something hot for dinner, and on your way repeat the prayer of Saint Apollonia, if you know it. I shall be there in a trice and you shall see marvels.' ' Woe's me ! Saint Apollonia's prayer say you ? that would serve had master the pain in his grinders, but 'tis all in his wits.' ' I know what I say, housekeeper ; go your way and don't attempt to argue, for I am a bachelor of Salamanca you know and you can't prattle (*bachillear*) beyond that.' So the housekeeper departed and the bachelor went in search of the priest, in order to devise what will be told in due time.

When Don Quijote and Sancho were closeted together there passed the following conversation, which the history relates with great fidelity and care. Said Sancho to the other : ' Master, I have reverted my wife to letting me go whithersoever your worship would carry me.' ' Converted you should say, Sancho.' ' Once or twice before, if my memory serve me, have I asked your worship not to mend my words provided you understand my matter, and when you don't, call to me and say, Sancho, or, The devil, I can't understand you. And if I don't at once make myself clear, then I am fossil enough to let you correct me.' ' Sancho, I don't understand you — I don't know what ' I am fossil enough ' means.' ' It means,' explained Sancho, ' I am man enough.' ' Still more am I at a loss.' ' If you can't understand me, I don't know how to say it differently, and God be with you !' ' Ah ! now I have it. You tried to say you were docile enough, meaning sufficiently tractable to take what I tell you and do as I bid you.' ' I'll wager you understood me from the beginning — that you hoped by confusing me to hear two hundred other blunders.' ' Maybe I did,' acknowledged the master ; ' and now tell me what it is Teresa says.'

' Teresa says that I should make sure with your worship : let papers speak and beards be still, for a bargain's a bargain and one take better than two I'll give thees. And I say that a woman's counsel may be poor, but he that scorns it is a boor.' ' I say so

too,' agreed Don Quijote; 'speak on, friend, for to-day you talk pearls.' 'It's a fact, as your worship knows better than I, that all of us are subject to death and that to-day we are and to-morrow not, and the lamb goes as soon as the ram and none can count more hours of life in this world than it pleases God to give him. For death is deaf, and when she knocks at the doors of this our life, she's always in a hurry: nor prayers nor resistance nor mitres nor sceptres detain her, according to report and hearsay and what they tell us in these pulpits.'

'All that is true enough,' assented the knight, 'but I still can't make out what you're driving at.' 'My meaning is,' confessed the squire, 'that your worship should allow me certain fixed wages every month during the period of my service, said wages to be paid out of your estate. I am no friend to favours, which come ill or late or never; so may God help me with mine! In a word I would know just what's coming to me, little or much though it be. To one egg the hen adds another, and many littles make a mickle, and while aught is gained, naught is lost. Of course if it came to pass, though this I neither expect nor believe, that your worship handed me the promised isle, I am not such an ingrate or such a stickler but that I'd let the rent of such an isle be taken into account and be deducted from my wages, cat for cat.' 'Friend Sancho, at times a cat (cata) is as good as a rat (rata).' 'I catch your meaning, master. I should have said rate (rata) and not cat, I'll bet. But what does it matter, as long as you fathomed me.'

'So deeply did I fathom you friend, that I struck the very bottom of your thoughts and know the very white you aimed at with the innumerable shafts or your refrains. Believe me, Sancho, I should gladly agree to wages for you, had I found in any of the errant histories one instance that through some little chink would reveal how much squires were wont to earn per month or per year. But though I have read all or most of such narratives I don't remember to have heard of any knight that settled fixed wages on his squire. Rather their shield-bearers served them in expectation of favours, and when least they looked for it, if luck went with the masters, the squires found themselves rewarded

with an isle or its equivalent, or in any case were given a title and Your Lordship.

‘ If with these hopes and inducements, Sancho, you are pleased to return to my service, well and good, but to think that I shall remove the ancient custom of errantry from its stays and hinges is to think topsy-turvy. Take yourself home, my friend, and declare my resolve to Teresa. If she and you are willing to depend upon favours, nothing could be better as I say, but if not, we’re friends now as before. If the dovecote lack not grain, ’twill not fail of pigeons, and observe, my son, that a good hope is better than a bad holding and a good claim than bad pay. I speak in this manner that you may see how I can rain proverbs as well as you, Sancho. In fine let me say that if you are not ready to lean upon rewards and run the same chances that I run, may God be with you and make you a saint, for I shan’t be wanting squires more obedient and solicitous and not such gluttons and talkers. ’

When Panza heard this firm resolve, his sky darkened and his heart-wings fell, for he had fully believed that his master wouldn’t do without him for all the fortunes in the world. While he was thus chap-fallen, not knowing what to think of it all, entered Samson Carrasco and with him niece and housekeeper, anxious to hear by what arguments he would persuade their master to abandon his adventurous quest. The famous wag approached and embracing the knight as on his first visit raised his voice saying : ‘ O flower of knight-errantry ! O resplendent light of arms ! honour and mirror of the Spanish nation ! may God Almighty and so forth, as He is elsewhere more particularly set forth, grant that the person or persons that strive to let and hinder your third sally lose themselves in the labyrinth of their desires, and may that which they so wickedly design ne’er come to pass ! ’

And turning to the housekeeper he said : ‘ The lady here no longer need repeat Saint Apollonia’s prayer, since I can see ’tis the definite resolve of the spheres that Señor Don Quijote again effect his novel and noble intent. Greatly should I wrong the dictates of my conscience did I not suggest to and urge upon

this knight that he longer stay the power of his puissant arm, the virtue of his heroic mind, when by delay he neglects the righting of wrongs, the protection of orphans, the honour of maidens, the favour of widows and the support of married women, together with other things of the same stripe, all of which touch, pertain to, are dependent upon and in keeping with the order of knight-errantry. Come, dear Señor Don Quijote, beautiful as brave, to-day rather than to-morrow let your worship and highness set out. Should aught be needed for the undertaking, here am I with purse and person, and should it be requisite that I serve you as squire, I should esteem it my great good fortune.'

Here Don Quijote, turning toward Sancho, said: 'Didn't I tell you, boy, I should have squires to spare? Note who offers himself for that post: none but the extraordinary bachelor Samson Carrasco, unfailing joy and delight of the patios of the Salamanca schools, sound of body, quick of foot, silent, endurer alike of heat and cold, hunger and thirst, together with all other qualities desirable in the henchman of an errant knight. Yet Heaven forbid that I, following mine inclination, shake or shatter the column of letters and the vase of science, or fell the lofty palm of the good and liberal arts. Let this modern Samson remain in his fatherland, and honouring it bring honour on the grey hairs of his ancestors, while I with some squire or other will be content, since Sancho does not deign to join me.'

'I do deign,' pleaded Panza, deeply moved and with eyes of tears; 'never shall it be said of me, When bread's all gone the company's withdrawn. Nay, I come of no ungrateful stock, for every one, especially my townfolk, knows who the Panzas before me were. Moreover I have come to learn and appreciate by good deeds and kind words the desire your worship has to show me favour. If I bargained more or less about my wages, it was to satisfy my wife, for once she takes it into her head to press a point, no mallet drives the hoops of a cask the way she drives the doing of her pleasure. But after all man must be man and woman woman, and since I am a man wherever I please, I please just now to be one in my house, spite whom it may. So there's

naught left but for your worship to make your will with the codicil in such a manner that it cannot be provoked, and begin our journey at once, that the soul of Señor Samson may not suffer, who says his conscience prictates to him to persuade your worship to sally forth through the world a third time, and again I offer to serve you faithfully and loyally, as well and better than all the squires that ever served adventurers in past or present times.'

The bachelor was indeed amazed at Sancho's manner of speaking, for though he had read the first history of his master, he didn't dream that he was as delightful as there portrayed. But now when he heard him speak of will and codicil that couldn't be provoked, he believed every word he had read, admitting him to be one of the most unconsciously droll figures of our time. Indeed he went so far as to say that the whole world couldn't duplicate two such crack-brains as this master and man; who now embraced and were friends. With the advice and approval of the great Carrasco, their present oracle, they decided to set out in three days, during which there would be time to prepare for the journey and procure a complete helmet, which Don Quijote deemed indispensable above all else to their proper equipment. Samson offered him one (for he knew that a friend of his who owned one would not refuse it) more dingy from rust and mould than clear and bright for polished steel.

The curses showered upon the bachelor by niece and housekeeper cannot be set down. They tore their hair, clawed their faces and after the manner of hired mourners of old raised a lamentation over their master's departure as though 'twere his burial. Samson's purpose in persuading our knight to issue forth anew was to effect what the history later sets forth, all with the approval of the priest and barber, in whom he confided his plan. In short, during those three days Don Quijote and Sancho provided themselves with what seemed well to have along, and Sancho having appeased his wife and Don Quijote his niece and housekeeper, at nightfall, unseen of any save the bachelor, who desired to accompany them a half-league on their way, together they set out to el Toboso, Don Quijote on his good Rocinante

and Sancho on his ancient Dapple, the saddlebags well stocked with things having to do with provender and a purse filled with money for emergencies. Samson embraced the knight in bidding farewell, praying he should send word of his good or evil fare, that he might cheer himself with the latter or grieve at the former, as the laws of their friendship did demand. Don Quijote promised, Samson returned to the village and the pair followed the road leading to the great city of el Toboso.

CHAPTER VIII

The fortunes of Don Quijote while en route to his lady-love Dulcinea del Toboso

‘**B**LESSED be mighty Allah,’ exclaims Hamet Benengeli at the opening of this eighth chapter; ‘Blessed be Allah,’ he thrice repeats — adding that he utters these thanksgivings because at last he sees Don Quijote and Sancho out on the plain and the readers of this pleasant history can now breathe freely, knowing that the deeds and drolleries of master and man are about to begin. He urges us to forget the past chivalries of this imaginative gentleman and turn our eyes toward those to come, which here open up on the road to el Toboso, as the others on the plain of Montiel; nor is it much that he prays, considering what he promises. And he begins by saying :

Scarce was Samson gone when Rocinante began to neigh and Dapple to bray, which their owners deemed good sign and happy omen, though if the truth be told the sighs and brays of the ass were longer and louder than the neighs of the nag, wherefrom Sancho gathered that his fortunes were to surpass and o’ertop his companion’s. Whether he founded his belief on some judicial astrology known to him, I cannot say, for the history doesn’t declare. Possibly not, for he has been heard to remark, when he chanced to trip or stumble, that he wished he had stayed indoors, for naught came of tripping and stumbling but torn

shoe and broken ribs ; and fool that he was, in this he wasn't so far astray.

The errant was the first to speak : ' Friend Sancho, the night comes on apace and darker than we need, if we are to reach by dawn the city of el Toboso, whither I am resolved to go before engaging in further adventure. There I trust to receive the blessing and godspeed of the peerless Dulcinea, whereby I think and am certain to master and issue victorious from every perilous occasion, for naught in this life makes errants more valiant than the favour of their lady-loves. ' ' So I understand, ' replied Sancho, ' but I fear 'twill be difficult to speak with her or see her alone, at least so as to receive her blessing, unless she chucks it over the wall of the yard where I saw her when I carried the news of the monkey-shines your worship was playing up there in the bowels of the Sierra Morena. ' ' Did you take them for yard-walls, Sancho, those over or through which you beheld that never-adequately-praised gentle-breeding and beauty ? They couldn't have been other than galleries, corridors or porticos, or whatever you prefer to call them, of rich and royal palaces. ' ' Maybe so, but to me, if my memory serve me truly, they looked like nothing so much as mud walls. '

' Yet let us go thither for, so that I see her, 'tis one to me be it through walls or windows, chinks or garden-grating : whatever ray of the sun of her beauty strike mine eyes, 'twill so illumine mine understanding and so fortify my heart as to leave me a paragon, peerless in wisdom and valour. ' ' As to that, sire, when I beheld this sun of a Dulcinea, 'twasn't bright enough to send out rays at all. It must have been, since her grace was winnowing wheat, that the thick dust she raised gathered like a cloud before her face to obscure it. ' ' What ! ' cried the other ; ' will you persist in saying, thinking, believing and maintaining that my lady was winnowing wheat — an employment and exercise so totally unlike what persons of quality are and should be accustomed to, born and brought up as they are for occupations and pastimes that declare their noble birth a bow-shot off ?

' Clearly, O Sancho, you forget the poet's line describing the tasks plied by the four nymphs in their crystal mansions. They

raise their heads above the golden Tagus and seat themselves in the meadow green to work the rich stuffs there unfolded by the gifted poet : all are of gold, silk and pearls, wrought and woven together. Of such sort my lady's task must have been, but the jealousy harboured toward my fortunes by some ill-minded enchanter alters and perverts all things that give me pleasure into shapes unlike their own. Similarly in this narrative of my deeds now said to be in print, if the author be magician and foe, I fear he has set down some things for others, mixing one truth with a thousand lies, rejoicing in incidents that obstruct the flow of true history. O envy, thou root of countless ills, thou canker of the virtues ! all other vices carry with them something I know not what of delight, but thou bringest naught but contempt, bitterness and rage. '

' I say so too and I fear that in this legend or history of us, which the bachelor says he has seen, my reputation goes shuffling first this way then that, sweeping the streets as they say ; though on the word of an honest man I never spake ill of an enchanter nor have I sufficient goods to be envied. To be sure I'm a trifle tricky and bear some marks of the rogue, but all is covered and concealed under the great cloak of my simplicity, always natural and unaffected. If for naught else than my believing, as I ever do, firmly and entirely in God and all that the Holy Roman Catholic Church holds and teaches, and for my mortal hatred of the Jews, the historians ought to be easy on me and treat me well in their writings. But let them say what they will : naked I was born, I am naked still, I neither win nor lose. And if I find me in a book bandied from hand to hand about the world, what fig care I ! Let them write of me as they please. '

' What you say, Sancho, puts me in mind of what befell a famous modern poet that wrote a malicious satire against all the court courtezans, save one of whose standing he wasn't certain. But she, finding herself out of it, complained to the author, asking what he had seen in her that he didn't list her with the others — let him enlarge the satire, putting her in the supplement, or look to himself. The poet, obeying, recounted of her things even duennas wouldn't repeat, but the woman, now that

she was famous ~~though~~ through infamy, was wholly satisfied. Of a piece with this is the story of the shepherd that set fire to and destroyed the famous temple of Diana, accounted one of the seven wonders of the world, merely that his name might live. Though it was ordered that none should make mention of him by spoken or written word, that his aim might be thwarted, 'tis thought it was one ~~Frostratus~~.

‘ The incident of the great emperor, Charles the Fifth, and a certain gentleman at Rome is another case in point. The emperor was anxious to see the celebrated temple of the Rotonda, or temple of all the gods as it was called in ancient times but now, serving a better use, is known as the temple of all saints. And indeed of all pagan edifices in Rome it has come to us least despoiled, more than any other bearing witness to the glory and grandeur of its builders. 'Tis shaped like a half-orange, is very large and well-lighted though boasting but one window and that a round sky-light at the top. As the emperor was surveying the temple through this opening, the Roman gentleman stood near indicating the fine points and beauties of this spacious and wonderful edifice. At last turning from the sky-light he said to the emperor : ‘ Sacred Majesty, I was tempted a thousand times to close with your Royal Highness and hurl us headlong, that everlasting report of me might stalk abroad in the world. ’ ‘ In not giving way to so devilish an impulse, ’ responded the other, ‘ you have earned my lasting gratitude, but that your loyalty may not again be put to test, henceforth never speak to me or appear in my presence. ’ With this he gave the man a handsome present and sent him away.

‘ I am trying to make clear, Sancho, how forceful a motive is this thirst for fame. What was it, think you, that hurled Horatius, armed cap-a-pie, down from the bridge into the depths of the Tiber ? what burned the hand and arm of Mutius ? what drove Curtius to leap into the boiling gulf that suddenly burst forth in central Rome ? what was it that, in the face of all auguries, made Cæsar cross the Rubicon ? And in modern times, what scuttled the ships and left those valiant Spaniards, led by most courteous Cortez, high and dry in the new world ? All these and

other and great deeds are, were and will be monuments to that fame which mortals thirst for as a reward and as part of the immortality which their actions deserve, though Catholic Christians and knights-errant should look more to future glory eternal in the heavens than to the vanity of fame realised in this present transitory world, since this latter renown, though it long endure, must end at last like the world itself at its appointed time.

‘ Therefore, O Sancho, our labours must not pass beyond the bounds set us by the Christian religion we profess. In slaying giants we are to slay pride ; envy must be laid low by generosity and gentle spirit, and wrath by a calm and quietness of mind ; gluttony and drowsiness by long vigils and fasts ; lust and lasciviousness by our faithfulness to those whom we have made mistresses of our thoughts, and sloth must we leave behind by travelling through all quarters of the globe, keeping an eye out for occasions that can and will make us not alone Christians but famous cavaliers. These are the means whereby is attained that high praise an honest fame confers. ’

‘ All that your worship has said till now, ’ began Sancho, ‘ I’ve had no trouble in understanding, but just at this point arises in my mind a doubt from which I would that you absorb me. ’ ‘ Absolve, you would say, Sancho ; but tell it cheerfully and I’ll do the best I can. ’ ‘ Then tell me, master, these Julys and Augusts and other brave gentlemen you named that are dead, where are they now ? ’ ‘ The pagans in hell no doubt, and the Christians, were they true ones, are either in Purgatory or Paradise. ’ ‘ Well and good, ’ said Sancho, ‘ but let me know this : the tombs where lie the bodies of these fine fellows, have they silver lamps before them and are the walls of their chapels adorned with crutches, winding-sheets, periwigs and wax legs and eyes ? or how are they adorned ? ’

‘ The tombs of the pagans were usually sumptuous temples. The ashes of Julius Cæsar were placed on top a pyramid of surpassing size, now called Saint Peter’s needle. For the Emperor Hadrian there served as sepulchre a castle as large as a good-sized village, to which they gave the name *Moles Hadriani*, now known as the Castle of San Angelo. Queen Artemisia buried her

husband Mausolus in a tomb considered one the seven wonders of the world ; but none of these burial places nor any of the many other pagan tombs were adorned with winding-sheets or other offerings and tokens to show that those buried therein were saints. ' ' To that I am coming, ' replied Sancho, ' but first tell me which is the greater achievement, to bring a dead person to life or to kill a giant ? ' ' It goes without saying — to raise the dead of course. '

' Now I have you, ' chuckled Sancho, ' for the fame of them that bring the dead to life, that give sight to the blind, straighten the cripple and heal the sick, and before whose tombs lamps are burning and whose chapels are filled with devout people kneeling and worshipping their relics, their fame I say will be a better kind both for this world and the next than that which is or may be left by all the pagan errants and emperors that ever lived. ' ' I grant you that also. ' ' This fame I am speaking of, ' continued the squire, ' these favours, prerogatives or however you call them, are enjoyed by the bodies and relics of saints, and they with the sanction and approval of our Holy Mother Church have lamps, tapers, winding-sheets, crutches, paintings, periwigs, eyes and legs, to deepen devotion and enhance their Christian fame. Kings carry the bodies and relics of saints on their shoulders, kiss scraps of their bones and enrich and adorn their oratories and favourite altars with them. '

' And what would you conclude from all this ? ' ' That you and I ought to be saints so as the sooner to get this fame we're after. Why, 'twas only yesterday or the day before, and indeed 'twas but a short time back, they canonised or beatified a couple of little barefoot friars, and now 'tis held a great privilege just to kiss and touch the iron chains wherewith they previously had been bound and tortured ; they're regarded with deeper veneration so they tell me than Roland's sword that stands in the armeria of our royal sovereign, God keep him. You can see, master, it pays better to be a little humble friar, no matter what you order, than an errant and valiant knight. In other words two dozen scourges weigh more with God than two thousand lance-strokes, though driven at giants or monsters and dragons. '

‘ All you say is true, Sancho, but not all of us can be friars and many are the paths whereby God leads his own to Heaven. Chivalry is a religion and saintly knights are there in glory. ’ ‘ True, ’ replied Sancho. ‘ yet have I heard say there are more friars than errants there. ’ ‘ Because greater their number here below. ’ ‘ There are many adventurers. ’ ‘ Many, but few deserving the name of knight. ’

In these and similar conversations they passed that night and the next day, with naught befalling them worthy of record, which fact lay lie a great weight on Don Quijote’s heart. But at dusk the second day the great city of el Toboso flashed into view, considerably raising the knight’s spirits and casting down those of his squire, so ignorant of where Dulcinea had her dwelling, having never in his life seen it, any more than his master. Both therefore were excited, one at the prospect of an interview, the other at not knowing what to do when his master sent him ahead. Our hero planned to enter the place in the dark, so the interval was spent amid some oaks on the outskirts. When the hour arrived, they entered the city, where befell them things worthy the name.

CHAPTER IX

Herein is recounted what herein will be read

TWAS on the stroke of midnight, a trifle more or less, when Don Quijote and his squire Sancho left the wooded country and entered el Toboso. The town was all quietness, since its inhabitants lay with outstretched leg. The night was somewhat overcast but Sancho would have preferred total darkness that its obscurity might serve him as excuse. Nowhere was any sound save the barking of dogs, which stunned the ears of the knight and appalled the heart of his henchman. Now and again an ass brayed, pigs grunted, cats miaued — the various noises being intensified by the general stillness. The enamoured errant took all for happy omen, and found heart to say to Sancho : ‘ Lead on, son Sancho, to the palace of Dulcinea, for she, it may be, is still

awake.' 'By the light of the sun to what palace shall I lead? when I saw her grace 'twas in a tiny house.' 'Probably she had retired for the nonce to a small apartment of the palace to solace herself with her handmaids as is the use and custom of fine ladies and princesses.' 'Master,' demanded the squire, 'if in spite of me your worship still would have my lady's house a castle, is this an hour to find the door open? or would it be wise to give loud knockings and put the whole household to confusion and alarm? Is it to our mistresses' houses we are going, the way rough fellows do, who come and call and enter in, no matter how late?'

'Let's first make sure of the castle,' advised his señor, 'and then I'll say what next will best be done. And look, boy, either I see poorly or that large mass and shadow yonder is the place.' 'Then let your worship lead; maybe it is, though were I to see it with both eyes and touch it with both hands I should believe it as I believe 'tis now day.' The knight led the way but having advanced some two hundred paces perceived the building was the parish-church and not the castle, and said: 'Tis the church, Sancho.' 'So I see, and God grant we don't come upon our burial; 'tis no good business to be prowling around grave-yards at this time of night, the more as I told your worship if I mistake not, that the home of her grace was down a blind-alley.'

'His curses on you, fool! where have you seen castles or royal palaces down alley-ways? 'Señor, to every land its own customs: maybe it's one in el Toboso to build palaces and other great buildings down blind-alleys. So prithee let me hunt through these streets or alley-ways, for possibly at some corner or other I shall stumble on this castle, which may I see eaten by dogs for dragging us to the devil this way.' 'Show respect to the property of my lady-love,' counselled Don Quijote; 'let us keep the feast in peace and not throw the rope after the bucket.' 'I'll bridle this tongue of mine,' promised Sancho, 'but with what sort of patience can I bear that your worship expects me, who saw your lady's house but once, to recognise it always and find it at midnight, the more that your worship too is helpless that must have seen it thousands of times?' 'You'll

drive me distracted, Sancho. Come here, heretic ! haven't I told you a thousand times that in all the days of my life I never set eyes on the peerless Dulcinea nor once crossed the threshold of her palace ? that I am enamoured from report only, from her great reputation for beauty and cleverness. '

' I hear it now,' replied the other, ' and I say that since your worship hasn't ever seen her, neither have I. ' Impossible ! ' cried Don Quijote ; ' you certainly told me you saw her winnowing wheat, what time you brought her answer to the letter I sent. ' Don't mind that, sir, for I'd have you know that my sight of her and the answer I brought were also by report. I know as well who the lady Dulcinea is as I know how to give a slap to the sky. ' Sancho, Sancho ! ' blazed the knight ; ' there are times for jesting and times when jests fall flat and loathsome. Just because I say I neither have seen nor spoken to my heart's mistress is no reason you should say the same, when you know the reverse to be true. '

The pair were in the midst of this logomachy when they observed a man approaching with two mules. From the noise made by the plough dragging on the ground they conjectured it must be some peasant risen before dawn to go to his work. So it was and as he trudged along, he chanted the ballad beginning :

Ill did ye fare, ye men of France,
In that wild chace of Roncesvalles.

' May I die, if aught good befall us to night, Sancho,' said Don Quijote ; ' do you hear what this countryman is singing ? ' ' I hear,' said Sancho, ' but what has the chase of Roncesvalles to do with our affairs ? he could chant the ballad of Lacainos and 'twould make no difference, so far as we're concerned. '

The peasant was now at hand and Don Quijote said to him : ' Can you tell me, my friend, and may God give you fortune, where stand the palaces of the peerless princess, Doña Dulcinea del Toboso ? ' ' I am a stranger, sir, and have been but a few days here in the hire of a rich farmer whose soil I till. In this house opposite live the village-priest and the sacristan, either or both of whom could inform you, since they keep a list of inhab-

itants. My impression is that el Toboso doesn't boast a princess, though there are many ladies of such importance that any of them may be one in her own house.' 'Among them it must be I shall find her concerning whom I ask.' 'Most likely, but God be with you for the day is at hand,' returned the swain, pricking his mules nor waiting to be questioned further.

Sancho, observing how his master was puzzled and ill at ease, seized this opportunity for saying: 'Señor, the day comes apace and 'twill not be prudent to let the sun find us in these streets. We would better leave the city and when your worship is hid in a neighbouring wood, I'll return in the daytime nor leave a stone unturned in my search for the house, castle or palace of my lady. I should be pretty good-for-nothing didn't I find it, and when found, I'll communicate with her grace, telling where and how you hide expecting her, and to you I'll give means and directions for an interview without risk to her honour and good name.' 'In a few words, Sancho, you have spoken a thousand sentences. The counsel you have just given I relish and accept. Come, my son, let's look for my hiding-place, that you may return to seek out, find and talk with my lady-love, from whose discretion and courtesy I look for favours more than miraculous.' As Sancho was only too eager to get out of the town ere the lie of the letter to his master in the Sierra Morena be discovered, their departure was immediate. Some two miles out they found a forest or wood and there the knight hid himself during his squire's journey to the city, on which embassy there befell things demanding further attention and credulity.

CHAPTER X

The trick devised by Sancho for the enchantment of Dulcinea, together with other passages whimsical as true

COMING to relate what is told in this chapter the author says his wish was quietly to omit it lest he be not believed, since Don Quijote's madness here passes the limit and farthest bound of the worst imaginable cases — indeed it passes two bowshots beyond. Nevertheless, though with fear and misgiving, he transcribes it precisely as things occurred, not adding to or subtracting from the history an atom of its truth, nor yielding one jot to the charges of lying that may be made against him. And he did right, for truth, though finely spun, will never break, outtopping falsehood as oil does water. Proceeding with the narrative he says :

As soon as Don Quijote was ensconced in the forest, wood or thicket outside great el Toboso, he bade his squire return citywards nor reappear till he had spoken on his behalf with his lady, praying that she be pleased to let herself be seen of her captive knight and deign to bestow her blessing, that he might thereby hope to attain a happy fulfilment of all his engagements and difficult designs. Sancho promised to obey, bringing him as good answer as he did the first time. ' Go, my son, ' concluded Don Quijote, ' taking care lest you be dazzled by the light of that sun of beauty wherefor you make search, happy above all the squires of the world ! Note down in your memory and let it not escape thence, how she receives you, whether she colours when you state your errand, whether she is quickened and nervous when she hears my name.

' Note too whether she rises from her ottoman (should you find her seated in the sumptuous chamber proper to her authority), or, if you find her standing, see whether she doesn't rest first on one foot, then on the other. Tell me if she repeats her answer two or three times, if she changes from gentle to severe,

from severe to loving ; if she raises her hand to smooth her hair though not disordered. In fine, my son, observe her every action and movement ; which if you faithfully report, I shall divine what's hid in the secret places of her heart, bearing on her attitude toward my passion, For you should know, Sancho, if you don't already, that 'twixt two lovers their actions and motions when the beloved is named are most faithful messengers of what is transpiring within. Go, friend, and may better fortune than mine attend you, bringing you more success than I fear and look for, while I abide in the cruel solitude wherein you leave me.'

'I'll go and come quickly,' promised Sancho ; ' let your worship cheer up this little heart of yours, which can be no bigger than a hazel-nut. Consider the proverb, A stout heart breaks bad luck, and, No flitches are, where there are no hooks, and how also it is said, The hare leaps where least he is looked for. I mean by all this that though in the night we failed to find the castles or palaces of Dulcinea, now that 'tis day I think to find them when least I expect, and when found, leave the lady to me.' ' Verily, my son, you are ever so pat with your proverbs, so may God grant me better fortune in my desire.' With this Sancho wheeled about and pricked his Dapple, leaving his master mounted, braced in stirrups and leaning on his lance, at bay with sad and troubled fancies. There too we shall leave him and accompany Sancho Panza.

No less troubled and sad was the squire setting out than the knight remaining : so anxious was he indeed that scarce had he left the wood when, turning to see that his master was out of view, he alighted from Dapple and seating himself at the foot of a tree began to commune with himself saying : ' Be kind enough to tell us, brother Sancho, whither your worship is bound ; look you perchance for some lost ass or other ? ' ' Not at all.' ' Then for what ? ' ' To say the least of her I am looking for a princess and she the sun of beauty and the whole sky combined.' ' And where think you to find this wonder of wonders ? ' ' Where ? why in the great city of el Toboso of course.' ' Good ; and on whose behalf do you run this errand ? ' ' On

behalf of the famous knight Don Quijote de la Mancha, he that redresses wrongs, gives the thirsty to eat and the hungry to drink.' 'That sounds very well but know you her house?' 'My master says 'tis some royal palaces or other, or a haughty castle.'

'Possibly you've seen the lady once upon a time?' 'Neither I nor master have e'er set eyes on her grace.' 'Then wouldn't you think it well and wisely done if the Tobosans, finding that you had come to pester their ladies and allure away their princesses, pounded your ribs with bare sticks till they left no whole bone in your body?' 'They certainly would be right unless they bethought them in time that I acted under orders and that :

Friend, as a messenger you came
And therefore shall not meet with blame.'

'Don't trust to that, my son, for Manchegans are as choleric as cunning and take jokes from none. My God, if they scent you, I promise you hard times.' 'The devil, man, let the bolt fall yonder ; not if I know it shall I look for three feet on a cat for another man's pleasure, the more that looking for Dulcinea in el Toboso is like hunting for Maria in Ravenna or the bachelor in Salamanca. 'Tis the devil I say that has got me into this scrape and nobody else.'

This conference occurred between himself and Sancho and the upshot was that as it broke up he declared : 'Come now, all things have remedy save death, beneath whose yoke, in spite of ourselves, all must pass when life is over and done. A thousand proofs have been submitted that this my master is as mad as they make them and that even I am not so far behind. Indeed I, since I follow and serve him, am more fool than he, if the proverb be true, Tell me the company you keep and I will tell you what you are ; and that other, Not with whom thou art bred but with whom thou art fed. Mad, then, as he is, and with a madness that is wont to take some things for others, calling black white and white black, as appeared when he said the windmills were giants, the friars' mules dromederies and the flocks of sheep hostile armies and much more to the same tune, it won't be so

difficult to make him believe that a peasant woman, the first I come across, is the lady Dulcinea. And if he don't, I can swear she is, and if he swear back, I'll take a second oath, and if he keep it up, so will I and mine eye will not leave the mark, come as it will. Perhaps by mine obstinacy I shall end this sending me on embassies, when he sees the bad news I bring. Or maybe he'll think, and this is more likely, that some naughty enchanter, of those he says wish him ill, has changed her looks to make him mischief and trouble.'

With this last thought Sancho became more at ease, feeling the job good as done. He waited till afternoon that sufficient time should seem to have elapsed for his trip to and fro. And so well did things fall out that when he rose to mount Dapple, he saw approaching from the city three peasant-women riding three he-asses or she-asses — the author doesn't state which, though the latter is more probable, being the usual mount of country-women, but, as 'tis of small concern, there's no reason we should stop to enquire. To be brief, as soon as Sancho saw the peasants, he galloped back to his master, whom he found sighing and uttering a thousand love-laments. When the knight saw him he exclaimed: 'What news, Sancho friend? shall I mark this day with white stone or black?' 'Better mark it with red chalk, sir, as they do the college lists, to be more plainly seen.'

'Tis good news, then, you bring me?' 'So good that your worship has only to spur Rocinante and ride into the open to behold the lady Dulcinea with two of her maidens coming to wait upon you.' 'Blessed be God what do you say? remember and don't deceive me nor with false cheer try to ease my veritable sorrow.' 'Why should I try to deceive, especially when you are so near to learning the truth? Spur on, sire; come, and you will see the princess our mistress on the way, all dressed up and adorned — in short just like the lady she is. Her damsels and she are a blaze of gold, they look like corn-cobs of pearls and besides are covered with diamonds, rubies and brocades more than ten-folds thick. Their hair hangs loose upon their shoulders like so many sunbeams that go playing with the wind, and above all they come mounted on three piebald whacknees, the

finest sight conceivable.' 'Hackneys you should say, Sancho.' 'There's small difference 'twixt whacknees and hackneys. But let their mount be what it may, coming they are, the showiest ladies you could ask for, especially my lady the princess Dulcinea, who makes one faint.' 'Come then, Sancho son, and as reward for this unexpected as 'tis good news I grant you the best spoil won in the next adventure. If this be not enough, yours are the three fillies my three mares give me this year; they're in foal on our town-meadow as you know.' 'I choose the fillies, for the spoils of our next adventure aren't very certain.'

By this time they found themselves out of the wood and near the three peasant-girls. Don Quijote's eyes followed the road to el Toboso and seeing only the three grew nervous, asking Sancho if 'twere outside the city he left them. 'How outside?' cried the other; 'have you your eyes in the back of your head perchance that you fail to recognise her among these at hand, resplendent as the sun at noon?' 'Naught can I see, squire, save three peasant-women on three asses.' 'Now God deliver me from the devil!' quoth the other; 'and is it possible that three hackneys or however you call them, as white as the snow, should look to you like asses? As the Lord liveth, may they pluck out my beard if such be the truth.' 'Friend Sancho, it's as true that they are he or she-asees as that I am Don Quijote and you Sancho Panza; at least so they appear to me.'

'Peace, señor, speak it not; snuff those eyes of yours and come and make obeisance to the lady of your thoughts that already draws nigh;' and saying this he advanced to meet the three women. Dropping from his Dapple he seized one of the three asses by the halter and kneeling said. 'O queen, princess and duchess of beauty, may your haughtiness and majesty be pleased to receive in your grace and good-will your captive cavalier that stands there like marble, utterly puzzled and pulseless at finding himself before your magnificent presence. I am his squire Sancho Panza and he the wayworn knight Don Quijote de La Mancha, otherwise known as the Knight of Sorry Aspect.' Don Quijote was now on his knees beside Sancho, staring with bulging eyes and bewildered look at her his squire

called queen and lady. As he could see only a peasant-girl and not a very good-looking one at that (a flat nose on a round face), in his confusion he dared not open his lips.

The peasants were equally dumfounded at seeing two such unlike men kneeling before and holding back their companion. But she, annoyed to the point of anger, broke the silence by saying : ‘ Bad luck to you, get out of the way and let us pass on for we’re in a hurry.’ And Sancho replied : ‘ O princess and universal lady of el Toboso, how does your magnanimous heart not soften at seeing the prop and pillar of errantry kneeling before your sublimated presence?’ To which one of the others retorted : ‘ Whoa there, my father-in-law’s ass, till I curry-comb you. Look how these dandiprats come to poke fun at us poor country-girls, as though we knew not how to crack jokes as well as they. Go your way and let us go ours ; ’twill be better for you.’

‘ Rise, Sancho,’ sighed Don Quijote, ‘ for I see that fortune, not yet sated with my sorrows, has blocked all roads whereby comfort might come to this wretched soul I bear in my flesh. But O thou crown of all imaginable excellence, thou limit of all human grace, sole consolation of the afflicted heart that adores thee, now that an evil enchanter persecutes me, placing clouds and cataracts in mine eyes and perverting thy peerless beauty and features into those of a poor peasant, unless he have at the same time changed mine into those of a wild beast to appear hateful in thy sight, fail not to look softly and lovingly upon me, detecting in this knee-bending and submission which I make to thy hidden beauty the humility wherewith my soul adores thee.’

‘ Tell that to my grandfather!’ retorted the wench ; ‘ I’m no woman to listen to love-jabber. Clear the road and we’ll thank you.’ Sancho stood aside to let her pass, overjoyed at being well out of his entanglement. She that had done duty for Dulcinea no sooner found herself free than she pricked her whackknee with her pointed stick, making her dash over the meadow, till the jenny, feeling the extraordinary sting, began to cavort, at length landing her ladyship on the ground. When this was seen of Don Quijote, he hastened to assist her and Sancho to adjust

the girth and pannel, which had slipped beneath the beast's belly. When this was secured and the knight was about to lift his enchanted lady-love back onto her seat, she took a quick run and clapping both hands on the jenny's haunches, more lightly than a falcon landed astride.

'By Roque!' exclaimed Sancho; 'if the lady our mistress isn't nimbler than a hawk! I swear she can teach the most dexterous Cordovan or Mexican to mount jennet-wise. With one leap she sailed over the crupper and without spurs now makes her hackney run like a zebra. Nor do her damsels stay behind: all are travelling like the wind.' Such was the case, for seeing Dulcinea mounted again the others pricked after and all shot off like a flash, not turning their heads for more than half a league. Don Quijote followed them with his eyes, and when they had passed beyond sight, he turned to his squire and said: 'How does it look to you, Sancho, that I am so little loved by enchanters? Observe how far their hatred and malice extend in that they have chosen to rob me of the comfort of seeing my lady fair in her proper form. Verily was I born an ensample of the unfortunate: to be the butt and mark whereat the arrows of adversity might take aim and shoot. You must also remark, friend, that they weren't content, the traitors, to alter the appearance of my Dulcinea, but they must change and transform her into a figure so low and ugly as that peasant, and in addition robbed her of one of the special charms of ladies of rank — the lovely fragrance that comes from their always being amid sweet amber and flowers. For I must confess to you, that when I came to lift Dulcinea onto her hackney, as you call what seemed to me a she-ass, I got such a whiff of raw garlic as to smother and poison my very soul.'

'Dogs that ye are!' quoth the squire; 'O dismal and ill-minded enchanters, may I see you strung up by the gills like pilehards on a rush! Much is it that ye know and much is in your power, but much much more do ye do. It should have sufficed to turn the pearls of my lady's eyes into cork-tree gall-nuts, her tresses of purest gold into bristles of a red bullock's tail; in short to turn all her features from fair to foul were

enough without meddling with her odour, since by it at least we might have guessed what lay beneath that ugly rind. Though to speak by the card, I noticed no ugliness but only beauty, which culminated in a mole on her right lip like a moustache, with seven or eight red hairs growing out like golden filaments and longer than a span.'

'In that case,' said Don Quijote, 'according to the relationship among moles, those of the face and those of the body, the girl must have another on the broad of her thigh on the same side as the one on her face. But hairs of the length you describe are rather long for moles.' 'All I can say is there they were as if born with her.' 'I'll believe it, friend, since nature gave nothing to Dulcinea that was not perfect and complete. Indeed had you discovered a hundred moles like that you speak of, on her they were not moles (*lunares*) but moons (*lunas*) and brightly shining stars. But tell me, Sancho, that which seemed to me a pack-saddle, which you adjusted, was it a flat or a side-saddle?' 'Neither, but one with high pommels and cantle with a field-covering worth half a kingdom it was so rich.' 'Alas that I should have missed it all!' sighed the knight; 'again I say and I'll say it a thousand times that I am the most unfortunate of men.' The rogue of a Sancho had difficulty in concealing his laughter when he heard these misconceptions of his master whom he had so artfully deceived. At length, after further talk, they mounted and took the road to Saragossa which they hoped to reach in time for the religious festival annually held in that illustrious city. Ere they arrived however, there befell them many fresh and important adventures worthy of record and reading, as in due course will be seen.

CHAPTER XI

The surprising adventure that overtook Don Quijote in connection with the cart or car of the Cortes or Death

As he rode along our knight sate very sad, musing on the vile turn the enchanter had done him in turning his lady Dulcinea into a mean country-wench — the viler in that he saw no way of changing her back. These thoughts carried him so far that unwittingly he let the reins slip from his hands, and Rocinante, appreciating his liberty, at every step delayed to crop the green grass wherewith those fields abounded. Sancho at length aroused him from his reverie by saying : ‘ Griefs, master, were made not for beasts to be sure but for men, but if men overgrieve, they become beasts. Control and be yourself again, señor, and take Rocinante’s reins. Cheer and rouse yourself, showing the gallantry all adventurers should possess. What devil is this ? what fit is upon you ? are we here or in France ? May Satan fetch all the Dulcineas in the world, since the well-being of a single knight-errant imports more than all the enchantments and transformations on the earth.’

‘ Tut, tut,’ said the other in a voice not too faint, ‘ peace I say and blaspheme not the charmed woman for whose misfortune and calamity I alone am to blame — from the envy the wicked bear me has been born her loss.’ ‘ I say so too,’ sighed the other ; ‘ who saw her then and sees her now, ’tis any heart would weep I trow.’ ‘ You of all men can say this, friend, since you beheld the entire perfection of her loveliness — the enchantment neither confused your sight nor hid her beauty. Against me and mine eyes only did its poison set. Yet you too had a false idea of her, telling me, if I remember rightly, she had eyes like pearls. Such eyes belong rather to a fish than a fair one. Mine own feeling is that Dulcinea’s must have been green emeralds, large and full, with two celestial arcs as brows. Take these pearls from

her eyes and give them her for teeth ; doubtless you were excited and misnamed them. '

' Very likely ; her beauty dazzled me as her ugliness dazed your worship. But let us commend ourselves to God that knoweth all that must come to pass in this vale of tears, this naughty world of ours, where aught can scarce be that's not mixed with corruption or fraud and guile. The thing that most distresses me, however, is wondering what steps must be taken when you down some giant or other cavalier, commanding him to present himself before the beauty of the lady Dulcinea. Where's he to find her, this poor giant or this poor and miserable defeated cavalier. I seem to see them like staring dummies wandering through the town, looking for my lady whom, should they meet her on the street, they wouldn't recognise any more than they would my father. '

' Yet it may be, ' suggested the other, ' that the enchantment won't reach to her obscurity to the eyes of vanquished and presented giants and cavaliers. From one or two of the first I conquer and send we shall get evidence on this point by ordering them to return and give account of all that befell. ' ' Allow me to say, master, that what you propose appears to me capital, for methinks by this artifice we shall come to know what we wish. And if it turn out that she's hid from your worship only, the misfortune is more yours than hers ; and knowing she has health and peace we, going our way and making the best of it, will soon become reconciled, looking for our adventures and letting Time deal with hers, for he's the best physician both for these and for other and more serious complaints. '

The knight was prevented from replying by the appearance of a long open cart without tilt or covering that suddenly came out onto the road, freighted with the most diverse and extraordinary personages and figures imaginable. He that guided the mules and served as charioteer was an ugly demon, while the next creation that presented itself was very Death though with a human countenance. Near him stood an angel with painted wings ; at his side, an emperor with a crown that feigned gold, while at Death's feet rested the god Cupid, lacking the customary

bandage over his eyes but with bow and arrow-filled quiver. A knight there was in full armour, save that for morrion and helmet he wore a hat stuck with plumes of divers colours. Besides these were others of differing garbs and faces, and the whole, coming so suddenly, a little startled Don Quijote and wholly petrified the heart of his squire. But soon the former was all happiness again, bethinking him that a fresh and perilous adventure was here offered, and in this mind and with a heart resolved to meet whatever risk, he took his stand before the car and in loud and threatening terms cried out :

‘ Charioteer, driver, devil or whoever it is I address, be quick to tell me who you are, whither bound and what the crew in your coach, which more nearly resembles Charon’s bark than any common conveyance. ’ Stopping his car the devil calmly replied : ‘ Sire, we are players in the company of Angulo the Artful. This morning, being the Octave of Corpus Christi, in a village behind yon hill we acted the auto of the Cortes of Death, which we are to repeat this afternoon in a village just visible ahead. As the distance is short, we are travelling in costume, saving ourselves the trouble of undressing and dressing again. That youth there takes the part of Death; the other, of an angel; that woman, who is the wife of the manager, is the queen; then come the soldier and the emperor, while I, who usually take the leading roles in our company’s performances, in this one play the devil. Being he, I am equal to everything, and so, would your worship know aught else of us, out with it and I shall be able to answer without delay. ’ ‘ On the word of a knight-errant, ’ declared Don Quijote, ‘ when first I beheld this car, I imagined that some great adventure presented itself, but now I can only say that if one would be disillusioned, ’tis necessary to touch appearances with the hand. Go your way with God, good people, and hold your festival, resting assured that should you seek aught wherein I may be of service, it shall be done with pleasure and goodwill by one that from boyhood was devoted to masques and in his youth was spellbound by the drama. ’

While they were thus engaged, chance willed that a certain member of the company, clad as a fool and hung about with

many bells, approaching Don Quijote began to flourish a stick, beating the ground with three ox-bladders fastened to the end thereof ; at the same time this merry-andrew kept leaping in the air, sounding the bells. The wicked vision so startled Rocinante that in his master's spite he took the bit 'twixt his teeth and started for a cross-country run at a greater speed than the bones of his anatomy ever promised. Sancho, fearing lest his master be thrown, dropped from Dapple and in all haste went to his rescue. But by the time he reached the spot, the errant was lying on the ground with Rocinante by his side : the usual outcome of the nag's high spirits and the knight's imprudence.

Scarce had the squire in his hurry left his mount when the demoniacal dancer of the bladders leapt on Dapple, and striking him therewith, more by fear and noise than by pain of blows made him fly o'er the plain toward the village where the festival was to be held. Sancho looked first at Dapple's flight and then at his master's downfall, not knowing to which of the two needs to address himself, but in the end, as in a good squire and faithful servant, the love he bore his master outweighed his affection for the ass, though every time he saw the bladders rise and fall on Dapple's haunches he felt the toils and terrors of death, preferring that those blows fall on the apples of his own eyes than touch the smallest hair of the tail of his ass. With this double anxiety he came to where Don Quijote lay, decidedly worse off than he wished. Helping him back onto Rocinante he cried : ' Señor, the devil has made away with the ass.'

' What devil ?' asked Don Quijote. ' He of the bladders,' was the answer. ' Then I'll recover it though it and the thief be hid in the deepest and darkest dungeons of hell. Follow me, boy, for the car travels slowly and with its mules I mean to make good the loss of your mount.' ' There's no need, master ; let your worship cool down, for it looks as if the devil had quit the little beast who is returning to its crib ;' which was true, for the devil, taking a fall with Dapple, in imitation of the knight and Rocinante, was footing it to the village, while the ass was returning to its owner. ' Nevertheless,' said Don Quijote, ' 'twill be well to visit the demon's rudeness on some member of the car, though it be the

emperor himself. ' ' Drop that from your head, sir, taking my advice, which is never to meddle with players : they're a privileged lot. I've seen an actor tried for two murders and go scot-free. Your worship must know that as they're a merry crew and give pleasure, every one is on their side, protects, helps, and cherishes them, especially companies having royal charters, of whom all or most in dress and make-up look like princes. '

' Say what you will, ' replied the other, ' that play-devil shan't go off boasting, though the entire human race take his side. ' Saying which he set off for the car, now near the village, crying as he went : ' Hold there, rest yourselves, merry and festive ones, for I hope to show you how are to be treated the asses and animals that serve as mounts to errants ' squires. ' So loud were his cries that the car-folk heard and understood, and surmising his object from his oratory Death at once leapt to the ground, followed by the emperor, the devil-charioteer and the angel, nor did the queen and the god Cupid remain behind. All supplied themselves with stones and waited in a row to receive our knight at the points of their pebbles. Seeing their brave squadron, their arms raised and ready to let fly, Don Quijote drew rein, endeavouring to think how he might attack them with less danger of person.

Sancho had now arrived and finding his master about to advance against the well-formed battalion cried : ' 'Twould be nothing short of madness to attempt such a thing. Consider, sire, that against that brook-soup, and there's plenty of it, there's not a defensive armour in the world, unless one were to crouch and hide inside a bronze bell. It should also be noted that 'tis more foolhardiness than valour for one lone man to meet an army led by Death, where emperors fight in person and to which both good and bad angels lend aid. Should this not move you, be moved by knowing for certain that among them all, though there appear to be kings, princes and emperors, not one of them is truly a knight-errant. ' ' There, Sancho, you have hit on what can and should alter my intent. It is neither permissible nor possible for me to draw sword against undubbed knights, as I have often told you, but do you avenge Dapple's wrong if you wish, while I aid

from afar with cries of caution or encouragement. ’

‘ There’s no cause for wreaking vengeance on anyone, señor, since ’tis not the part of good Christians. What’s more, I’ll arrange with mine ass to place his injury in the hands of my will, which is peacefully to live such days as Heaven alloteth. ’ ‘ If that be your resolve, Sancho the good, Sancho the wise, Sancho the Christian and Sancho the sincere, let’s quit these phantasms, and seek again for lovelier and better-qualified adventures, for methinks this country is of a character not to fail in many and most marvellous. ’ He then turned about, Sancho went to meet his Dapple, Death and his flying squadron mounted their car, and thus happily ended the adventure of the car of Death, thanks to the wholesome counsel given by Sancho Panza to his master ; to whom next day with an errant and enamoured knight befell another no less breathless than the preceeding.

CHAPTER XII

**The rare adventure that befell the gallant Don Quijote with
the brave Knight of the Mirrors**

THE night that followed the day of the encounter with Death was spent by Don Quijote and his squire under some tall and star-proof trees, after the former, at Sancho’s persuasion, had eaten of the contents of Dapple’s store. During the meal the servant said to his lord : ‘ What a fool I had been, sire, had I chosen as a present the spoils of the first adventure your worship achieved rather than the fillies of the three mares. Verily, verily, a sparrow in hand is worth more than a vulture flying. ’ ‘ But consider, Sancho, that had you let me make an assault as I wished to, to you would at least have fallen the empress’s crown of gold and Cupid’s painted wings, for I should have stripped them off willy-nilly and placed them in your hands. ’ ‘ The sceptres and crowns of play-emperors, ’ declared the squire, ‘ are never pure gold but brass-foil merely or tinsel. ’

‘ True, ’ confessed the knight, ‘ and rightly are the trappings

of the stage never real but always feigned and simulated like comedy itself, toward which I would that you be well-disposed, Sancho, and toward those likewise that perform and those that compose dramas, since all are instruments of great good to the republic. At every step they hold a mirror wherein is seen to the life the goings-on of our human existence : there's no representation that portrays so vividly both what we are and what we should be as actors and the stage. Or tell me, have you never seen a comedy where are introduced kings, emperors and popes, knights, ladies and many others ? One plays the bully, another the villain, this one the merchant, that the soldier, one the witty fool and and one the foolish lover, yet when the performance is over and their costumes cast, all are equal.' ' Yes, such a play have I seen,' said Sancho.

' The same thing,' continued the other, ' occurs in the comedy and commerce of this world, where are emperors and popes, all the characters in fact that could be produced on the stage, yet when the play ends, which is when life is over, Death strips them of their distinguishing garbs and they lie down equal in the grave.' ' Brave comparison ! ' exclaimed Sancho ; ' though not so new but that I have heard it many, many times ; as in the game of chess where, while the game lasts, each piece has its particular office, but finished, all are jumbled together and put in the bag, which is like stowing life away in the grave.' ' Every day, Sancho, you grow less simple and more wise.' ' That's because I have to some extent become infected by the wisdom of your worship, for soil that of itself is sterile and dry, by manuring and cultivation bears good fruit. In other words intercourse with your worship has been manure fallen on the sterile soil of my dry wit, and cultivation is the time I serve and commune with you. With these two I hope to give such lawful fruits of myself as may not slip or tumble from the paths of the good-breeding whereon you have been guiding this parched wit of mine.' The knight smiled at his squire's showy speech, though what he said of his improvement seemed to him true, for occasionally Sancho spoke in a manner to amaze ; albeit when he attempted argument or fine phrasing, he always or usually fell

headlong from the height of absurdity down to the depths of ignorance. Where he showed himself most retentive and skilful was in introducing proverbs, fit as they might, as will have been seen and noted in the course of our chronicle.

In this and other discourse they passed a great part of that night, till there came to Sancho the desire ~~the~~ to drop the curtains of his eyes, as he expressed it, and stripping Dapple he let him gaze his fill. He refrained from doing the same for Rocinante, following his master's express command that while they wandered in the country and slept in the open, the steed should never be stripped — it being an ancient usage established and observed by errants, to remove the bridle and hang it from the saddlebow, but to part saddle and horse? never. Sancho acted accordingly, but otherwise gave Rocinante equal liberty with Dapple, for the friendship 'twixt the pair was so unique and strong that tradition handed down from father to son says that the author of this true history devoted special chapters thereto but that regarding the decency and decorum essential to so heroic a narrative he omitted them. Occasionally forgetting himself however, he tells us that no sooner were the animals by themselves than they began to scratch each other till, wearied or sated, Rocinante would reach his neck over the other's, nay, more than half a yard beyond and both gazing stedfastly on the earth would continue in that attitude three days at a stretch, or at least such time as they were undisturbed by man or hunger.

They tell me that the author went so far as to compare their relationship to that of Nisus and Euryalus and to that of Pylades and Orestes. If this be true of these two pacific brutes, the security of such regard may easily provoke the universal wonder and confusion of men, who so little know how to keep friends, one with another. Wherefore it is written :

Friend and friend no more appears,
Tourney reeds are turned to spears ;

and so also it is sung :

Now friend looks black upon his friend.

And let it not seem that the author in contrasting the friendship

of these animals with that of men, went out of his way, for many a lesson have we learned from dumb beasts and received many things of value at their hands — the clyster, for example, from the stork, vomit and gratitude from dogs, vigilance from cranes, from ants providence, continence from elephants and loyalty from the horse.

In, short, then, Sancho went fast asleep at the foot of a cork-tree and his master dropped into a doze near a stout evergreen-oak ; but only a short time had elapsed when a sound at his back awoke the latter. Leaping to his feet with a start he stood trying to discover whence it proceeded and at length made out two men on horseback, one of whom, throwing himself from the saddle, said to the other : ‘ Dismount, friend, and unbridle the steeds, since this place seemingly abounds both in pasturage and in the silence and solitude required of mine amorous thoughts.’ To say this and to stretch himself on the ground was the work of a moment, his armour resounding as he threw himself down.

Don Quijote knew from the fact that he was mailed that he must be a knight-errant and approaching the sleeping squire he pulled him by the arm, and when with no little trouble he had awakened him, he whispered : ‘ Sancho brother, we have an adventure.’ ‘ God make her a good one,’ yawned Sancho ; ‘ and where is her grace, this adventuress?’ ‘ Where, my son ! turn your eyes and look, for you’ll see oustretched there a knight-errant who, I opine, isn’t overhappy, since I saw him drop from his steed and fling himself on the ground like one in despair, his armour crackling as he fell.’ ‘ And what leads you to think this an adventure?’ ‘ I don’t mean that it’s already one but rather a beginning, for they all open thus. But hark ! methinks I hear him tuning a lute or viol, and since he is spitting and clearing his throat, he must be about to sing.’ ‘ True enough ; no doubt he’s in love.’ ‘ Every errant is,’ said Don Quijote ; ‘ but let us listen, for by this thread we shall arrive at the secret of his thoughts — out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.’

Sancho was on the point of reply but the voice of the Knight of the Wood, neither very good nor very bad, prevented him. The pair listened to his song which the knight soon ended with

an Ah ! that seemed wrung from the depths of his heart, but after a short pause in plaintive voice of languishment he said : ‘ O most beautiful and ungrateful woman, most serene Casildea of Vandalia ! how can it be that thou sufferest this thy captive knight to be consumed and to perist in endless wanderings and harsh and bitter labours. Is it not enough that I made all the knights of Navarre, Leon, Tartesia, Castile and finally all the knights of La Mancha, confess thee fairest on earth ? ’ ‘ That is not true, Sancho, ’ whispered Don Quijote ; ‘ for I am of La Mancha yet never have confessed nor could nor should confess a thing so disparaging mine own love’s beauty. He raves as you see, but listen, if perchance he declare himself further. ’ ‘ No doubt he will, ’ said Sancho, ‘ for he looks as if he might complain a whole month through. ’ But this was not to be, for the Knight of the Wood, overhearing them, dropped his lament and rising said in clear but courteous tone :

‘ Who goes there ? who are you ? of the happy or the afflicted ? ’ ‘ The afflicted, ’ answered Don Quijote. ‘ Then come hither with the assurance that you come to sorrow and affliction itself. ’ Don Quijote, seeing he was answered so amiably and courteously, drew near, followed by Sancho. The knightly lamenter took our errant by the arm saying : ‘ Sit you down, sir knight, for that you are one that profess adventures is sufficiently proved by your being in this place, where solitude and evening dew, fit cover and couch for wayfaring knights, keep you company. ’ To this Don Quijote made reply : ‘ A knight I am and of the order you name, and though in my heart sorrows, humiliations and troubles find their own and native dwelling-place, they have not banished thence my compassion for the misfortunes of others. Yours, I gather from your song, are of love, the love I take it you bear that fair ingrate named therein. ’

Already they were seated on the hard ground side by side in good peace and fellowship and not at all as if at break of day they were to break each other’s head. ‘ Perchance, sir knight, ’ asked he of the Wood, ‘ you also love ? ’ ‘ Per-mischance, ’ replied the other, ‘ though loss born of misplaced affection should be deemed favour, not misfortune. ’ ‘ True, provided her frowns

don't unsettle the reason and understanding. When disdain becomes excessive, it looks like vengeance.' 'Never have I been frowned on by my lady;' declared Don Quijote. 'Never, echoed Sancho, who stood hard by; 'she's meek as a yearling lamb, softer than a chunk of lard.'

'Is this your squire?' asked the stranger. 'It is,' replied Don Quijote. 'I've never before met with a shieldbearer that made bold to interrupt his master. At least here's mine, big as his father, yet it cannot be proved that he ever oped his lips while I was speaking.' 'But I,' spoke up Sancho, 'have oped mine and am ready to ope them before another as good as or even — but let it rest, for 'twill only prove worse for the stirring.' The squire of the Wood now took Sancho by the arm saying: 'Let us two go where we can have as long a squire-talk as suits us, leaving these gentlemen to relate at swords' points the histories of their loves, for 'tis certain the day will catch them and even then they won't have done.' 'Good,' agreed Sancho, 'and I'll tell your worship who I am, that you may judge whether or no I am to be named with the most talkative squires going.' They thereupon withdrew and 'twixt these servants there passed a conversation as droll as that 'twixt their lords was serious and grave.

CHAPTER XIII

The adventure of the Knight of the Wood continued, together with the novel, witty and delicious colloquy of the two squires

By themselves sat knights and squires, these telling of their lives, those of their loves. The history first records the chat of the servants and then takes up that betwixt their lords. And thus it states that, withdrawing a little from the others, the squire of the Wood said to Sancho: 'A hard life we lead and live, sir, we squires to errant knights. Verily we eat our bread in the sweat of our brow, which is one of the curses God laid

upon our first parents.' 'As well might it be said,' added Sancho, 'that we eat it in the chill of our bodies : for who endures more heat and cold than the miserable shieldbearers of errant chivalry ? Less ill would it be however if we truly did eat, since with bread all sorrows are less. As it is, sometimes a day or two goes by without our breaking fast save on the blowing wind.' 'All that can be borne or forborne,' said the other, 'in hope of reward, for if the errant be not particularly unlucky, 'twon't be very long before his squire finds himself favoured with a lovely government, of an island at least or with a decent countship.'

'I've told my master,' replied Sancho, 'that I'd put up with an isle and he is so noble and generous that he has promised it many, many times.' 'I,' said the other, 'will consider myself paid with a canonry, and master has already bespoken one.' 'How is that ? your master must be in the church line, if he can do such favours for his faithful squires. Mine is merely a layman, though I mind me how certain shrewd though methought ill-intentioned persons urged him to try for an archbishopric. He, however, would be emperor or nothing, though I trembled all the while lest his fancy turn toward the church, since I did not consider myself capable of holding benefices therein. Though I appear a man, I would have your worship know me for a beast when it comes to joining the clergy.'

'Your worship is surely mistaken in this matter,' declared the other, 'for insular governments are not all they should be. Some are twisted, some poverty-stricken, some melancholy, and indeed the proudest and healthiest carry a load of discomforts and cares, which the unlucky dog to whose lot it falls must shoulder. 'Twould he far better if we that profess this accursed servitude returned home, employing ourselves in occupations more delightful, hunting or fishing let us say, for what squire in the world is so poor as not to own a nag, a couple of hounds and a fish-pole, wherewith to enjoy himself in the country round about ?' 'I possess all these,' said Sancho ; 'true I boast no nag, but I own an ass worth double my master's Rocinante. Your worship will scoff at the value I set on Dapple (dapple

being the little one's colour), but God send me a bad Easter and let it be the first that comes if I swapped him for the other though they gave me to boot four bushels of barley. Nor shall I want greyhounds, for there are enough and to spare in my town, and better sport in hunting lies when someone else the fare supplies. '

' But to be open with you, ' returned the squire of the Wood, ' I plan and purpose to quit the orgies of these knights and take me home to raise the little ones, of whom I have three like orient pearls. ' ' And I two that could be presented to the pope to his face, ' declared Sancho ; ' especially my girl whom, please God, I am bringing up, though against her mother's wish, to be a countess. ' ' And how old is she ? ' ' Fifteen, a couple more or less, ' replied the other, ' but she's tall as a lance and fresh as an April morning, and has the strength of a porter besides. ' ' These are qualities not only for a countess but for a nymph of the greenwood, ' replied the other ; ' ah, the whoreson quean, what pith the rogue must have. ' To this outburst Sancho somewhat testily replied : ' Neither she nor her mother is a quean, nor shall they be such, please God, while I live. Speak with more respect, sir : such words ill sort methinks with one raised among knights-errant, who are courtesy itself. ' ' How little you understand the business of compliments, mister squire. Can you be unaware that when a horseman in the ring gives the bull a good thrust or when anyone does anything well, the crowd calls out, Well done, whoreson dog, well done ? So though this phrase of mine seemed abusive, 'twas really exceptional praise. Disown the sons and daughters, sir, that don't do works bringing their parents into similar recognition. '

' I do disown them, ' replied Sancho, ' and with this understanding of the phrase you can hurl a whole brothel at me, my children and my wife, for all they do and say more than merits this attention. And that I may see them again, I pray God to deliver me from mortal sin, and 'twill be the same should He draw me from this dangerous post of squire, whereinto I've run this second time, cozened and enticed by a purse containing a hundred crowns, found by me in the heart of the Sierra Morena,

for the devil is ever putting a bagful of doubloons before mine eyes, here, there, and where not but over yonder. At every step I seem about to pick it up and taking it home in mine arms, invest it and collect the interest and live like a prince. With this in mind I am eased and lightened of the toils I suffer with this fool of a master, who has more of the idiot than the knight about him, I know. '

' As to that, ' replied the squire of the Wood, ' covetousness bursts the sack they say ; but if it be of madmen you speak, there's none greater than my master, for he's the kind of whom they say, Others' cares kill the ass. He turns fool that another knight may recover his wits and looks about for what, when found, may rise and hit him in the snout. ' ' Is he in love then ? ' ' He is and with a certain Casildea of Vandalia, the rudest and best roasted young lady to be met with in the world. But 'tis not upon the leg of my lady's rudeness that he limps : other greater designs are rumbling in his belly and he'll out with them before many hours. ' ' There's no road so level but has its dip or rise, ' observed Sancho ; ' in other houses they cook beans to be sure, but in mine whole cauldronfuls. Folly will have more messmates and hangers-on than wisdom ; but if it be true as is commonly said that friends in trouble our welfare double, I can get consolation from your worship, that serves a master as foolish as mine. '

' Foolish but a fighter, ' replied the squire of the Wood, ' and more roguish than either. ' ' Not so with the one I serve, ' said Sancho ; ' there's naught of the rogue about him. He has a soul clean as a pitcher : he knows not how to do ill to any, but good to all and bears no malice. A child could make him believe it night at noonday, for which simplicity I love him like the skin of my heart and cannot think of quitting his service, no matter how many his freaks. ' ' For all that, brother and señor, if the blind lead the blind, both risk falling into the pit. Better for us if we beat a quick retreat back to camp, for they that seek adventures don't always find good ones. '

Sancho was spitting a curious kind of dry sticky saliva and when this was observed and considered by the woody and com-

passionate squire, he said : ' 'Twould appear that from our much talking our tongues cleave to the roofs of our mouths ; but I have a loosener, and a fairly good one, hanging from my saddlebow ; ' and rising he soon returned with a large bottle of wine and a meat-pie half a yard long, no exaggeration, for its basis was a tame rabbit so large than in lifting it Sancho took it for a goat, no little one either, and at the sight thereof he exclaimed : ' And do you carry this with you, sir ? ' ' And why not ? am I one of your wool-and-water squires ? I carry better store on my horse's crupper than a general on the march. ' Sancho fell to without waiting to be asked and all in the dark swallowed mouthfuls as big as knots in a tether, saying :

' Your worship is indeed a true and loyal squire, hale and sound, grand and lavish, as witness this banquet which, if it hasn't come here by enchantment, looks so. You are not as I am, mean and miserable, carrying naught in my saddlebags but a bit of cheese crusty enough to brain a giant. Four dozen carob-beans keep it company, together with as many filberts and other nuts, thanks to master's poverty and the opinion he holds and the rule he keeps that knights should nourish themselves on dried fruits and herbs of the field. ' ' On my faith, brother, my stomach wasn't made for choke-pears or thistles or the roots of the forest. Let our masters dine on that fare with their opinions and chivalric rules and eat what these enjoin. For myself I carry panniers and this bottle that hangs from my saddlebow whether they say yes or no. Such a mistress is she and I love her so, that few minutes pass without my giving her a thousand hugs and kisses. ' Saying this he handed the bottle to Sancho who, raising it to his mouth, a quarter-hour sat gazing at the stars. When he had done, he let his head fall to one side and sighing deeply said : ' O the whoreson rogue and how catholic she is ! ' ' There, see how you called the wine whoreson to its praise ? ' ' I acknowledge that I confess I realise 'tis no dishonour to call anyone whoreson with the understanning 'tis by way of compliment. But tell me, señor, by the life you love best, is this wine of Ciudad Real ? ' ' O rare gauger ! ' answered he of the Wood ; ' verily 'tis none other and has several years to its credit besides. '

‘ Let me alone for that, ’ said Panza ; ‘ don’t put it beyond me to track its country down. Is it no good gift, sir squire, my possessing such a strong and native instinct in the matter of wines that have I but one smell of any whatsoever I can tell you its country, kind, flavour and age, the changes it has yet to pass through and all other circumstances pertaining to it ? But that’s nothing wonderful seeing I’ve had in my family on my father’s side the best two wine-tasters La Mancha has known in years. As proof thereof listen to what I shall tell. They gave the pair some wine from a cask, asking their opinion as to its quality and condition, whether good or bad. One of them tasted it with the tip of his tongue, the other merely smelt of it. The first said it tasted of iron ; the second that it was even stronger in leather. The owner said the cask was clean and no ingredient had been added that would make it taste either of leather or of iron. None the less the celebrated tasters persisted they were right. Time went on, the wine was sold and when they came to clean the cask, in it they found a small key fastened to a leathern thong. By that your worship may judge if one descended of this breed can give opinion in such cases. ’

‘ For that very reason, ’ said he of the Wood, ‘ let us quit this search for adventures and while we have cakes let us not look for cookies, returning to our huts where God can find us if He will. ’ ‘ Until my master arrive at Saragossa, ’ declared Sancho, ‘ I shall continue in his service. After that he and I can come to some understanding. ’ In the end the two squires talked and drank so much that sleep found it necessary to tie their tongues and temper their thirst — for them to moderate of their own accord was out of the question. And so, both seated beside the nearly empty bottle, with half-eaten cuds in their mouths, they fell asleep, where we shall leave them, in order to relate what passed ’twixt the Knight of the Wood and him of the Sorry Aspect.

CHAPTER XIV

A further continuation of the adventure of the Knight
of the Wood

AMONG the many declarations that passed between Don Quixote and the Knight of the Forest, the history tells us that he of the Wood said to the other : ‘ In short, sir knight, I would have you know that my destiny, or better say my choice, forced me to be enamoured of the peerless Casildea of Vandalia : I call her without peer for none she has in size, rank or beauty. This Casildea rewarded my chaste thoughts and moderate desires by compelling me to spend my time, as his step-mother did Hercules, in many and all kinds of dangers, promising me at the end of each that at the end of the next I should attain my hope. These labours have gone on linking themselves to such an extent that now they’re past count, nor can I tell which will be the last that will mark the beginning of the end of my worthy wishes. One time she ordered me to challenge that famous Seville giantess, the Giralda, who is as mighty as if made of bronze and without stirring from one spot is the most changeable and volatile woman in the world. I came, I saw, I conquered her, made her quiet down and know her place (since only north winds blew for over a week).

‘ Time was when my love bade me weigh those ancient stones, the valiant bulls of Guisando — a task more fittingly to be commended to porters than to knights. On another occasion she bade me fling myself into the pit of Cabra, a frightful and unheard-of peril, adding that I should bring up a minute description of all that lies hid in that dark abyss. I checked the Giralda’s motion, I weighed the bulls of Guisando, I threw myself headlong into the cavern and revealed the secret of its depths, and my hopes are still as dead as can be, and my love’s command and disdain are as alive as ever.

‘ To conclude, her last bidding was that I scour all the provinces of Spain and cause all knights-errant wandering therein to confess that she alone bears the palm of beauty before all living, and that I am the most puissant and enamoured knight in the world. In pursuance of her charge I have vanquished many knights that made bold to contradict me, but that which is most proud and precious to my memory is having defeated in single combat that most famous knight Don Quijote de La Mancha, bringing him to acknowledge that fairer my Casildea than his Dulcinea. I consider that by that victory alone I have worsted all knights living, since this Quijote has defeated every one, and to me, having worsted him, his glory, fame and honour are transferred, and

The more the vanquished boast of fame,
So much the more the victors claim.

Already his innumerable achievements have fallen to my account and are mine.’

Don Quijote was dumfounded by these words. A thousand times was he ready to give him the lie, had it on the tip of his tongue in fact, but restrained himself as he could that he might make the other confess the falsehood with his own mouth. So he calmly made reply : ‘ As regards your having conquered most of the errant knights of Spain or even of the whole world I have naught to say, but that you overcame Don Quijote de La Mancha I very much doubt. Possibly another looked like him, though to be sure very few do.’ ‘ What do you say ? by the sky that covers us, I maintain that I fought, overcame and utterly reduced that Don Quijote — a man tall of stature, of withered countenance, lank and tawny limbs, hair ’twixt black and grey, nose aquiline and a trifle hooked, and the moustaches heavy, black and drooping. He takes the field under the name of the Knight of Sorry Aspect and has for squire a peasant named Sancho Panza. He presses the flank and curbs the rein of a famous steed Rocinante, and finally the lady of his will is a certain Dulcinea del Toboso, once known as Aldonza Lorenzo, even as I call mine Casildea of Vandalia from her name Casilda and her being of

Andalusia. If all these signs suffice not to establish the truth of my boast, here is my sword, which will make incredulity itself believe. '

' Quiet, quiet, sir cavalier, ' said Don Quijote, ' and listen to what I am about to tell you. You must know that this Don Quijote is the best friend I have in the world — such a friend that I may say I hold him in the place of mine own person — yet by the very exact and certain signs you give, I cannot doubt 'twas he you overcame. I could see with mine eyes and touch with these very hands that he couldn't have been the same were it not for one thing — that he has many enchanter-enemies : one in particular persecutes him beyond bearing. Some one of these undoubtedly assumed his appearance and let himself be vanquished so as to defraud the real Quijote of the renown gained for him by his high chivalries through the known quarters of the globe. In confirmation thereof you may as well know that not two days past these very magicians altered the figure and person of the fair Dulcinea del Toboso to those of a vile country-wench. Similarly must they have transformed her lover. If this be not enough to let you enter into the truth of what I say, here stands that very Don Quijote, that will sustain it with arms, on foot, horse or any way you please. '

So saying, rising to his feet, our champion grasped his sword and awaited the choice of the Knight of the Wood, who with a voice equally unruffled replied : ' Pledges never worry the good paymaster. He that once, Señor Don Quijote, vanquished you transformed, may well hope to lay you low in your proper person. But inasmuch as it ill fits that knights enact their feats of arms in the dark like footpads and ruffians, let us wait till day that the sun may shine upon our works. And this be the condition of the combat, that the vanquished be at the will of the victor, said victor to use him as he pleases, provided that what he commands be proper for a knight to obey. ' ' I am more than satisfied with these terms and conditions, ' replied Don Quijote. With this they went in search of their squires, whom they found snoring, in the same postures as when sleep overtook them. Their masters awakened them, bidding them find their

steeds at once, for at sunrise they were to engage against great odds in unique and bloody battle. Sancho was troubled and frightened, fearful of his master's safety by reason of the prowess possessed by the Knight of the Wood as set forth by his squire. But without saying a word the two servants went in search of their flock, for ere this the three horses and Dapple had smelt one another out and stood close together.

On the way the squire of the Wood said to Sancho : ' You must know, brother, that in Andalusia 'tis the custom among fighting men, when they're godfathers to a fray, not to stand with folded hands while their godsons are engaged. I speak of this as notice to us that while our masters fight, we as well may fall to and knock each other to splinters.' ' This custom, mister squire,' replied Sancho, ' may run and pass over there with bullies and fighters such as you speak of, but with squires of errants, never ! At least I've not heard my master speak of such a custom and he knows all the knightly rules by heart. Moreover, though I granted that such a stipulation was expressed, yet should I refuse to comply therewith. Rather am I ready to pay the penalty that would be placed on pacific squires like myself, for it wouldn't exceed a couple of pounds of wax, I'm certain. That quantity am I glad to donate, for 'twill cost me less than the lint necessary for restoring my head, which I think of as already split in two. What's more, the fact that I have no sword and never in my life used one makes fighting impossible. '

' I know a good way out of that difficulty. I have here two linen bags of the same size : do you take one and I the other and we'll have a bag-fight with equal arms.' ' So let it be and welcome,' said Sancho, ' for such a combat will serve to dust rather than wound us.' ' Not exactly that, for inside the bags, that the wind may not take them, we must put half a dozen nice round pebbles, of the same weight, and then we can bag each other without harm or hurt.' ' Body of my father ! ' quoth Sancho ; ' look what sable-skins or balls of carded cotton he chooses that we may not crack our nuts and pulverise our bones ! But though they were filled with silk-cocoons, depend upon it, dear friend, there's no fighting for me. Let them fight and have their fill but let us drink

and live on still, for time will take care to make an end on us without our looking for sauces to finish off our lives before their appointed day, when they will fall like ripe fruit. '

' For all that, fight we must if but half an hour. ' ' Fight we will not, ' quoth Sancho ; ' I at least won't be so ungrateful or discourteous as to pick a quarrel however small with whom I have eaten and drunk ; the more, being without choler or anger, how the devil in cold blood can I ? ' ' For that too I have a remedy, for ere we begin I'll gently come up to your worship with three or four buffets, sufficient to lay you at my feet. With these your wrath will be wakened though it slept sounder than a dormouse. ' ' Against that short-cut I know another quite as good. I'll hold a big stick and ere your worship awakens my wrath I with cudgellings will put yours so soundly to sleep 'twon't waken this side the other world, where I am known for a man that won't let his face be handled by anyone. Let every man watch his own shaft ; thought for us all 'twould be wiser to let angers sleep, for none knows the soul of another and he that goes for wool comes home shorn and God blessed peace and cursed dissension. If a baited cat, run down and hard pressed, turns lion, I that am a man, God knows what I'd turn into. And from this time forth, mister squire, I warn you that all the hurt and harm resulting from a quarrel I shall charge to your account. ' ' Well and good, ' replied he of the Wood ; ' God send us daylight and we shall thrive. '

Already a thousand varieties of little painted birds had begun their chirping in the trees and by their diverse and happy songs appeared to greet and welcome the new-born Aurora, that came through the doors and balconies of the east, unveiling the beauty of her face and shaking from her hair an infinite number of liquid pearls. Bathing in this gentle moisture the flowers like her seemed to bud and shower these fine white jewels. The willows shed sweet manna, the fountains laughed, the water-brooks murmured, the woods rejoiced and the meadows gloried in her coming. But no sooner did her light make it passible to distinguish objects than the first one that met the eyes of Sancho Panza was the nose of the squire of the Wood, so large that its shadow

well-nigh covered his body. In fact it is said to have been a monstrosity, hooked in the middle, rough with warts and corpse-hued like an egg-plant. It hung two fingers below his mouth, and its size, colour, warts and curvature made his face so hideous that Sancho began to quake in all his limbs like a child with epilepsy. Then and there he resolved in his heart to take two hundred buffets rather than that his wrath should be waked to fight with this fiend.

On his part Don Quijote looked at his antagonist and found him with helmet on and visor down so that he couldn't see his face, but he observed him to be thick-set and not very tall. Over his armour he wore a surcoat or cassock that shone like finest gold, and sprinkled over were many broken bits of sparkling glass that made him sightly and showy to a degree. From his helmet-crest nodded a bunch of green, yellow and white plumes. His lance, that stood against a tree, was long and thick and tipped with an iron over a span long. Each of these details was observed and noted of Don Quijote, who made of it all that this knight must be one of great prowess. Not for this, however, was he afraid like Sancho Panza; instead with calm courage he thus addressed the Knight of the Mirrors:

'If your great keenness for fighting, sir cavalier, have not spent your sense of honour, to it I appeal that you raise your visor a little that I may see if the bravery of your face correspond with that of your mind.' 'Whether you come off victor or vanquished from this fray,' replied he of the Mirrors, 'you'll have time and opportunity more than enough to see me. If now I do not meet your wish, 'tis because I should do the fair Casildea grave wrong, methinks, in wasting the time I delayed to raise my visor before I brought you to confess what you know to be my claim.' 'But surely you'll have time while we are mounting to tell me if I am that Quijote you said you worsted.' 'To that we make reply that you look as like him as one egg another, but if as you say he is the victim of enchanters, I dare not affirm the same.' 'This is enough,' replied the other, 'to make me sure of your mistake, but to deliver you wholly from it, let our steeds be brought, for in less time than you would waste in raising your

visor, if God, my lady and my arm avail, I shall see your face and you will see that I am not the vanquished knight you think me.'

With this they cut short their speeches and mounted. Don Quijote turned Rocinante to measure the course before riding to meet his adversary, who did the same, but the former hadn't gone twenty paces before he heard the latter calling to him, and each returning half-way, the Knight of the Mirrors said: 'Remember, sir knight, the condition of this contest in that the vanquished is at the disposal of the victor.' 'Of that I am aware,' replied the other, 'provided that what is asked do not pass the bounds of chivalry.' 'Tis so understood.' At this moment the amazing nose of the other's squire was observed of Don Quijote, who was no less overcome by the sight than Sancho — in fact, he took him for some monster or one of a new breed of men in the world.

Sancho, seeing his master go off to measure the course, didn't care to remain behind with nosey, fearing lest with but a single passage at arms 'twixt that nose and his own his fighting powers fail him and he by force or fright be stretched on the ground. So he followed his master, holding one of Rocinante's stirrup-leathers. But when it came time to turn about, he said: 'Prithee, master dear, before you turn to meet your man, help me climb this cork-tree, whence better than from the plain I can view this gallant combat.' 'Rather, methinks, you would climb the staging that the bulls may be seen in safety.' 'To tell the truth,' replied Sancho, 'that squire's outrageous nose scares me from abiding below.' 'Indeed it is such an one,' confessed the knight, 'that were I not what I am, I too should be afraid. So come and I'll help you climb where you say.'

While Don Quijote stayed to boost his squire up the cork-tree, the Knight of the Mirrors measured as much of the course as he deemed suitable, and thinking his opponent had done the same, without waiting for sound of trumpet or other signal he turned his steed (which by the bye was no nimbler or handsomer than Rocinante), and in full career, amounting to a half-trot, came to meet his enemy. Finding, however, that he was engaged with

Sancho, he drew rein, coming to a halt in mid-course, whereat the animal, having reached his limit, was duly grateful. Don Quijote, thinking his foe descending, dug deep his spurs into Rocinante's lean flanks, so stimulating him that for this once, according to the history, he is known to have galloped a bit — on all other occasions 'twas pure trotting. With this never-before-seen fury he arrived at the spot where the Knight of the Mirrors was digging his horse up to the buttons, though failing to stir him a finger from where he stood becalmed.

At this opportune time and juncture he of the Sorry Aspect came down upon his adversary, embarrassed with his steed and busy with his lance, which he either could not or had no time to place in its rest. Our own knight, overlooking such trifles, with free hand and free from danger struck the other with such force that he bowled him, much against his will, over his horse's crupper, and with such a fall that moving neither hand nor foot he seemed dead. The moment Sancho saw him drop he slipped from the cork-tree and came at double-quick to his master, who, having dismounted, stood over the Knight of the Mirrors, and unlacing his helmet to see whether he were really dead and to give him air were he alive, he saw — who shall say what he saw without striking astonishment and wonder in his hearers? — he saw, says the history, the very face, figure, features, physiognomy, effigy and visage of the bachelor Samson Carrasco; and seeing it he exclaimed :

‘Hurry, Sancho, and see what you will see and not believe. Quick my son, and behold what magic, what wizards and enchanters, can do.’ Sancho drew near and beholding the face of Samson Carrasco commenced to cross himself a thousand times and bless himself as many more. All this period the unhorsed knight gave no sign of life and at length Sancho said : ‘Señor, I am of the opinion that, be he alive or be he dead, 'twere better to point and put your sword down the gullet of this that appears the bachelor Carrasco, for thereby you may in him slay one of the enchanters your enemies.’ ‘No bad advice,’ said his master, ‘for of enemies, the fewer the better.’ Drawing sword he was about to carry out Sancho's suggestion when the squire of the

Mirrors, having removed the nose that made him so unsightly, came running and shouting :

‘ Mind what you do, Señor Don Quijote, for he that lies at your feet is the bachelor Samson Carrasco your friend and I am his squire.’ ‘ And the nose ?’ said Sancho. ‘ Here in my pocket ;’ and putting his hand into his right one the other produced a nose made like a mask of cardboard and varnish and of the formation already described ; and when Sancho came to study the man more closely, he cried in loud and amazed voice : ‘ Holy Mary and blessings on me, if this isn’t Tomé Cecial my neighbour and friend !’ ‘ And what of it ?’ replied the unnosed squire ; ‘ yes, he I am, friend and fellow Sancho Panza, and shortly I’ll tell you the channels and cheatings whereby I came hither. But for the present I pray and beseech your master not to touch, harm, wound or slay the Knight of the Mirrors whom he holds at his feet, since he is none other than the reckless and ill-advised bachelor, Samson Carrasco our fellow-townsmen.’

At this the knight of the Mirrors came to, whereupon Don Quijote pointed his naked sword at his face and commanded : ‘ You are a corpse, knight, if you don’t confess that the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso has the advantage in beauty over Casildea of Vandalia. Moreover you must vow, if from this fray and fall you issue with your life, to go to the city of el Toboso and present yourself before her presence on my behalf that she may do her greatest pleasure with you. If she leave you to your own, you must seek me out again — the trail of my deeds will guide you — and relate to me your faring : conditions which, in conformity with those we agreed to before our battle, are within the limits of knight-errantry.’ ‘ I grant you,’ sighed the fallen knight, ‘ that the ripped and dirty clog of the lady Dulcinea is better than the ill-combed but clean beard of Casildea, and I promise to return from her presence to yours with a complete and detailed account of all you ask.’

‘ As well must you confess and believe,’ added the other, ‘ that the knight whom you vanquished was not and couldn’t be Don Quijote de La Mancha, but another like him, even as I confess and believe that you, though looking like the bachelor

Samson Carrasco, are not he but another, and that mine enemies have given you his features to stay and soften the fury of my wrath and that I may make fair use of the glory of this victory.' 'I acknowledge, agree and think as you think, judge and feel,' replied the crippled cavalier; 'let me rise, I pray, if the shock of my fall permit such a thing, for I am badly off.'

Our champion helped him rise as did also Tomé Cecial his squire, from whom Sancho not once took his eyes or ceased to ask him things the replies to which gave certain token that he was Tomé Cecial as he said. But the deep impress his master's words had made on Sancho, that the enchanters had changed the Knight of the Mirrors into Carrasco, would not let him credit the truth to which his eyes attested. So master and man abode in the deception to the end, when he of the Mirrors and his shield-bearer, crossed and cross, took leave, hoping to find some place to plaster and bind the former's ribs. Don Quijote and Sancho set off on their road to Saragossa, where the history leaves them, stopping to inform us concerning the Knight of the Mirrors and his overnosed squire.

CHAPTER XV

The identity of the Knight of the Mirrors and his squire

EXULTANT beyond measure was Don Quijote, glorying in the victory he had wrested from so valorous a knight as he deemed him of the Mirrors, from whose chivalrous word he expected to hear whether or no the enchantment of his lady fair persisted, since such a knight vanquished was bound to return, under penalty of not being one, and relate all that had befallen at her hands. But our adventurer thought one thing and he of the Mirrors another, though just then he had no thought save where to get plastered.

The history informs us that when the bachelor Samson Carrasco counselled Don Quijote to return to his broken-off chivalries, he did so only after consulting with the priest and barber as to

what means should be taken to bring the poor gentleman to abide quietly at home and not disturb himself in his questionable quests. And it was deliberated and resolved upon by the common vote of all and the particular persuasion of Carrasco, that they let him sally forth, since it appeared impossible to check him, but that Samson in knightly accoutrements sally after and picking a quarrel with Quijote vanquish him, which would be easy enough, and that the terms and agreement of the combat be that the vanquished remain at the mercy of the victor. The idea was that when the other had been whipped the bachelor had only to command him to retire to his village and home and not issue forth inside of two years or until ordered. It was certain that Don Quijote, once vanquished, would implicitly obey under penalty of forfeiting his knighthood. They hoped that in this period of enforced rest either his vainer thoughts would be set aside or some fitting remedy be found to cure him wholly.

Carrasco accepted the charge and merry hair-brained Tomé Cecial offered himself as squire. Samson donned the armour already described and Tomé fitted to his natural nose the false one of cardboard that he might not be recognised. They followed in the wake of Don Quijote, almost had a hand in the adventure of the car of Death and finally overtook the pair in the wood where befell all that the heedful reader has witnessed. And had it not been for his extraordinary aberration, which forced Don Quijote to believe the bachelor not the bachelor, the latter would have been estopped from graduating as licentiate for ever, not finding even nests where he hoped to find birds.

Tomé Cecial, seeing how ill they had compassed their desire and what a sorry ending this was to their journey, said to the bachelor : ' Surely, Señor Samson Carrasco, we have met with our deserts. Easy is it to plan and launch a thing but hard enough to see it through. Don Quijote is mad, we sane, yet he goes off sound and laughing and your worship remains behind sad and broken. Let us consider then, which is the madder, he that is so because he cannot help it or he that turns fool of his own free will. ' To this Samson replied : ' The difference is that he that is mad of necessity must remain so, while he that is fool from

choice can turn back again when he pleases.' 'In that case,' said the other, 'I that turned fool from choice when I elected to become your squire, now would quit that post and return home.' 'To this I assent,' replied Samson, 'but to think that I shall go to mine before I have pounded that Quijote to bits is to think topsy-turvy. And henceforth my motive won't be my wish for his recovery but for my revenge. The great pain in my ribs won't admit of deeper charity.' Thus the pair talked on till they came to a village with a bone-setter, by whom the unhappy bachelor was attended. Tomé Cecial left him brooding on his vengeance, of which the history will speak in due time; for the present it must make merry with Don Quijote.

CHAPTER XVI

Don Quijote and a discreet gentleman of La Mancha

WITH all the joy and pride above referred to Don Quijote pursued his journey, imagining that by reason of this last victory he was now the most valiant errant of his time. He considered as happily achieved all the adventures that were to befall him in the future, looked down upon enchantments and enchanters and quite forgot the countless drubbings experienced in the course of his chivalries: to wit, among others, the stoning that whisked off half his teeth, the ingratitude of the galley-slaves and even the brazen Yanguesans with their shower of stakes. In fact if he could find method, manner or means of disenchanting Dulcinea, he promised himself not to envy the finest fortune actually experienced by or possible to the most adventurous errant of old.

The knight was high in these ecstasies when Sancho said to him: 'Isn't it strange, señor, that I keep before mine eyes that immeasurable outlandish nose of my friend Tomé Cecial?' 'And do you think, Sancho, that the Knight of the Mirrors was by any chance the bachelor Carrasco and his squire Tomé Cecial your friend?' 'I don't know what to think. I only know that no

other than himself could have given the tokens he did of my wife and children, and that face, when the nose was off, was the face of Tomé Cecial, as I have seen it in our village many times, for there was but a wall 'twixt his house and mine; the tone of the voice too was all one.' 'Let us reason of this, Sancho: tell me now, what consideration would induce the bachelor Samson Carrasco to come as knight-errant, armed with arms offensive and defensive, and fight with me? Am I his enemy perchance, or have I given him cause for ill-will? Am I his rival or does he adopt the profession of arms out of envy of the glory I gain thereby?' 'What shall we say then, sir, of the appearance of this knight, whoever he was, tallying so exactly with the bachelor Carrasco, and that of his squire with my old friend Tomé Cecial? If 'twas enchantment-work, as your worship says, weren't there in the world two others they could look like?'

'All is the craft and design of the ill-minded magicians my persecutors,' declared Don Quijote; 'anticipating I should be victor, they took care that the vanquished knight should show the face of my friend the bachelor, that the friendship I bear him might come 'twixt the edge of my sword and the rigour of mine arm, assuaging the righteous anger of my heart, so that he that tried through deceit and fraud to quit me of my life should be left with his. As proof whereof you know by experience that won't deceive you or let you lie, how easy it is for enchanters to swap faces, making the ugly fair and the fair ugly. Not two days have passed since through your own eyes you saw the beauty and fine bearing of the peerless Dulcinea in their entire and native likeness, while I beheld them in the plainness and vulgarity of a coarse country-wench with cataracts in eyes and a strong odour to the breath. When there exists a perverse enchanter unfeeling enough to cause so dire a transformation as was that, what wonder that he produced this of Samson Carrasco and your friend, that he might snatch the glory of victory from my hands. Yet am I content, for whatever shape mine enemy took, his victor am I still.' 'God knows the truth of all things,' replied Sancho who, knowing that Dulcinea's transformation was of his own crafty contrivance, didn't incline to these his

master's brave theories, yet dared not oppose them lest he out with his secret.

The pair were in the midst of their dilemma when a man mounted on a handsome flea-bitten mare rode up from behind. He wore a loose travelling-cloak of fine green cloth slashed with tawny velvet with a cap of velvet as well. His mare's trappings, also of velvet and green, were for country riding, with high pommel and cantle. His buskins were of green and gold and from a broad baldrick of the same hung a Moorish scimeter. His spurs were not gilt but green-lacquered, so bright and burnished that, matching his caparison, they looked more beautiful than if of purest gold. Reaching our friends the traveller saluted courteously and spurring his mare was about to pass on, when Don Quijote called to him: 'Worthy sir, if so it fall that your worship goes our road and is in no hurry, I should esteem it a favour did you lend us your company.' 'Indeed,' the other replied, 'I shouldn't have forged ahead had I not feared your horse might be excited by the presence of my mare.' 'You may safely draw rein,' volunteered Sancho, 'for Rocinante is the chastest and best mannered beast in the world. Never on similar occasions has he done aught out of the way, and the only time he did transgress, my master and I paid sevenfold. So again I say your worship may stop if it please you, for though they presented your mare 'twixt two plates, I warrant you our steed would look the other way.'

The traveller drew rein, gazing with astonishment at the features and fashionings of our knight, who was riding without his helmet, which Sancho carried on the pommel of Dapple's saddle like a valise. But if he in green studied Don Quijote, much more did Don Quijote study him, taking him for a man of parts. One would have set his age at fifty or thereabouts; his grey hairs were few; his features aquiline; his expression 'twixt cheerful and grave; in a word his dress and bearing showed him a man of real substance. What the Green Knight thought of ours was that he'd ne'er beheld his like before. He marvelled at the steed's tenuity, the rider's tallness, his lean sallow face, his arms, bearing and composure — a spectacle unseen in that

land for long ages. Don Quijote promptly noticed the attention wherewith the traveller eyed him and reading his wish in his wonder and being most courteous and thoughtful toward all, before he could be asked the question, he met it half-way, saying :

‘ This my figure beheld of your worship, being as it is most original and out of the running, ’twouldn’t amaze me did it amaze you. But it will no longer, when I say I am one of those knights that folk say go adventuring. I pledged my estate and left my peace and native land, throwing myself into the arms of fortune to take me where most she might be served. My hope was to revive the already dead knight-errantry, and at last after many days, tripping here, stumbling there, falling headlong yonder and picking me up again in still another place, I have achieved a great portion of my desire, succouring widows, protecting virgins, favouring wives, orphans and minors : the peculiar and natural office of knights-errant. Thus by reason of my many and courageous and Christian deeds it has been my desert to be published abroad in all or most of the nations of the earth. Thirty thousand copies of my history have been issued and ’tis in the way of being printed thirty thousand thousand times if Heaven prevent not. To sum up in few words or even in one, I am Don Quijote de La Mancha, known also as the Knight of Sorry Aspect. Though self-praise doth make vile, I am forced to indulge therein at times, namely when no other is around to take my place. And so, gentle sir, neither horse nor rider nor shield nor squire nor job-lot of arms nor sallow face nor slender figure henceforth need surprise you, now that you know who I am and the profession I follow.’

Our knight on saying this fell to silence and the one in green was so slow as to seem unable to reply. But at length and at last he said : ‘ You succeeded in reading my wish in my wonder, sir knight, but you failed to rid me of surprise at your appearance. Though you said the knowledge of your identity would produce that result, such is not the case : rather I marvel the more. What ! can errant knights be abroad in the world to-day and can there be histories of veritable chivalries in print ? I cannot

persuade myself that the man lives that favours widows, champions virgins, befriends wives and succours orphans, nor would I dream of it had I not with mine own eyes seen your worship. Thank Heaven, by means of this history of your true and noble chivalries, will be cast into oblivion the countless ones of feigned adventurers, wherein the world abounded, though they corrupted good manners and were greatly to the prejudice and disparagement of legitimate historical narrative. '

' Much might be said,' replied Don Quijote, ' as to whether the histories of knights-errant were feigned or no.' ' Why, who doubts it?' ' I do,' returned the other; ' but let it rest for the present; if our journey hold, I hope by God's grace to convince you of your mistake in going with the stream of those cock-sure these stories are false.' From this last remark the traveller suspected our knight to be some crazy fellow and waited for more words from him to confirm this idea. But Don Quijote prayed him to tell his story, now that his own condition and manner of life had been revealed; whereupon he of the green cloak began;

' I, Sir Knight of Sorry Aspect, am a gentleman, native of a certain village where, God willing, we shall dine to-day. I am more than moderately well off and my name is Don Diego de Miranda. I live my life with my wife, my children and my friends. My pastimes are hunting and fishing, but I keep neither hawk nor hound, merely tame partiges for decoy and a saucy ferret or two. In my library I have about six dozen books, some in our mother-tongue, others in Latin and a few historical works and books of devotion. Those dealing with chivalries have never crossed my threshold. I read the profane books, provided they be decent, more than the religious, for their style pleases and their invention holds the interest, though in Spain there are few enough. I dine frequently with my neighbours but more often they are my guests. My table is neat and well provided. I take no pleasure in scandal and allow none in my presence. Neither peer I into others' lives nor meddle with their affairs. I hear mass once a day, share my goods with the poor, but make no display of good works, hoping to shut my heart against hypocrisy and pride: foes that artfully insinuate themselves into the most

watchful understanding. I try to conciliate those whom I know at variance, am devoted to Our Lady and trust always in the infinite mercy of the Lord our God.'

Sancho listened attentively to this recital of the man's mode of living, and since it seemed to him a good and holy one and that he that led it must be able to work miracles, he threw himself off Dapple and quickly seizing the traveller's right stirrup, devoutly and almost with tears kissed his feet again and again. When the gentleman observed this action, he said: 'What are you doing, brother? what kisses are these.' 'Let me kiss, I pray, for your worship is the first saint on a side-saddle I have seen in all the days of my life.' 'I am no saint — a great sinner indeed; your simple-heartedness shows 'tis you that must be good.' Sancho returned to his mount, having drawn a smile from his master's deep melancholy and struck new wondement in Don Diego. Don Quijote asked the gentleman how many children he had, adding that the ancient philosophers, though deprived of the true knowledge of the deity, were right in fixing the summum bonum in the gifts of nature for one thing, in those of fortune for another, in possessing many friends and in being the father of many and good children.'

'I, Señor Don Quijote,' was the reply, 'have but one son, and if I had him not, perhaps should consider myself the happier: not that he's a bad boy but because he's not so good as I could wish. He is eighteen now and for six years has been at Salamanca, learning Greek and Latin, and when I thought it time for him to turn to other sciences, I found him so drunk with that of poetry (if that may be termed a science) that it was impossible to get him to take up the law, which was my preference, or theology, the queen of all sciences. I should like him to be an ornament to his line, for we live in an age when our kings richly reward letters, provided they be virtuous and worthy — letters without virtue are pearls on a dunghill. He spends his whole time in satisfying himself whether Homer in such a verse of the Iliad wrote well or ill, if Martial was indecent or not in an epigram or just how certain lines of Virgil are to be construed. In brief his whole life is given either to these poets or to Horace,

Persius, Juvenal and Tibullus. Of the modern Spanish writers he makes little account, yet for all this apparent coldness his thoughts just now are occupied in making a gloss upon four lines sent him from Salamanca, relating, I believe, to some literary joust.'

And Don Quijote replied : ' Children are part and parcel of their parents' bowels, and hence, good or bad, we must love them as we love our own life-giving souls. 'Tis our duty to lead them from infancy along the paths of virtue, good-breeding and good and Christian manners, that when they become older they may be a comfort to our declining years and a glory to their descendants. As to forcing them to study this or that science, I hold it unwise, though there's no harm in trying to direct them. Especially when the student doesn't have to study to earn his bread, being fortunate enough to have parents given him by Heaven that make provision therefor, I feel that they should let him pursue the science that he most affects. Even poetry, though less useful than pleasure-giving, does not, like certain other interests, harm its devotee.

' Poetry, gentle sir, may be likened to a young and tender maiden, one beyond all measure fair, whom many other maidens have it as their charge to enrich and beautify. These are the other sciences and she is served of them and all draw light from her. But this beautiful mistress doesn't care to be handled or dragged through the streets or be published abroad at corners of squares or in the purlieus of palaces. She is formed of an alchemy of such virtue that he that knows how to touch her will turn her to purest gold of inestimable price. But he that possesses her must keep her within bounds, not letting her run into lampoons and disgraceful sonnets. Nor is she to be vended about, save in the garb of heroic poems, mournful tragedies and light artificial comedies. She mustn't let herself fall into the hands of charlatans and the ignorant vulgar, incapable of knowing or appreciating the treasures which in her are enshrined. But don't think, sir, that by vulgar I mean simply lowly plebeians, for every ignorant person, even a lord or prince, can and should be so styled. The poet that with the qualities I have outlined holds fast to his art,

shall be famous and his name honoured by the civilised nations of the world.

‘With regard to that other remark of yours, that your son sets little store by the poetry of his mother tongue, I am inclined to think him at fault, and for this reason : the great Homer wrote not in Latin but in Greek because he was a Greek, nor did Virgil write in other than his native tongue. In fine all the ancient poets wrote the language they sucked in with their mother’s milk and didn’t seek out foreign ones to express the worth of their conceits. This custom, therefore, should rightly be followed by all nations, and the German poet shouldn’t be thought less of for using his own medium, nor the Castilian nor the Biscayan. I imagine that your son is put out not so much with the poetry of the vulgar tongue as with the poets that are Spanish and nothing else, many of whom are ignorant of other literatures and sciences wherewith to embellish, quicken and fortify their original inspiration. Even in this he may be wrong, for true it is as they say, that the poet is born : in other words he comes forth a poet from his mother’s womb and with this heaven-given faculty without further study or discipline composes things that justify him that said, God is in us. I maintain moreover that the poet by nature that avails himself of art will be a better poet than he that strives to be one through art alone. The reason is clear, for art doesn’t better but perfects nature, and when the two wed, a poet of poets is born.

‘Let this then be the conclusion of my discourse, that you allow your son to go whither his star leads him, for being the good student he must be and having happily already mounted the first rung in the ladder of the sciences, that of the languages, by them of himself shall he reach the top of humane letters, which greatly become a gentleman of leisure and are as much an ornament and honour as are mitres to bishops or robes to learned jurists. Chide your son should he write lampoons on the characters of others : punish him and destroy them. But if he write satires after the manner of Horace, satirising vices in general and with all the Horatian refinement, lend him your praise, for the poet is permitted to write against envy and to speak ill of the

envious in his verses (likewise with the other sins of men) so long as he remain impersonal. There are poets that for the sake of uttering one spiteful saying would risk being banished to the isles of Pontus.

‘ Finally, if the poet be chaste in his living, no less will he be in his lines : the pen is the tongue of the soul : as are the thoughts engendered there, so will the writer’s poems appear. And when kings and princes find this miraculous faculty in the minds of wise, earnest and good men their subjects, they esteem, honour and enrich them, and even crown them with the leaves of the tree lightning strikes not, in token that they so honoured and crowned are to be held inviolable. ’

The gentleman of the green cloak was deeply moved by this discourse, so deeply that he soon had lost consciousness of the other’s dementia. In the midst of the conversation, finding it little to his liking, Sancho left them to get a drop of milk from some shepherds that, not far away, were milking their ewes. But just as the traveller, delighted with Don Quijote’s perception and sound sense, was about to resume the argument, the latter, raising his head, saw a wagon flying the king’s colours approaching, and believing it some new adventure, shouted to his squire to fetch the helmet. Sancho, heeding the call, left the shepherds and spurring Dapple hurried to his lord, whom a crackbrained and frightful incident now befell.

CHAPTER XVII

The extreme limit reached by or possible to the unparalleled valour of Don Quijote, together with the happily achieved adventure of the lions

THE history relates that when Don Quijote shouted to Sancho to fetch his helmet, the latter was in the act of buying curds and being a little excited by his master’s hurried call, not knowing what to do or wherein to carry them, not to lose what was paid for, he poured them into the knight’s headpiece, returning

with his welcome present. As he drew near, his master called : ' Come, friend, hand over the helmet, for either I know little of adventures or the one I see ahead should and does demand that I take arms.' He of the green cloak turned his eyes every way but saw naught save a wagon with two or three small flags, indicating that it carried royal treasure, and this he suggested to Don Quijote. But the latter wouldn't hear of it, thinking and believing as he did that all that befell him must be more adventures and still more, So in reply he said : ' Forewarned, forearmed : naught is lost by being on guard. Experience has taught me I have enemies seen and unseen and I know not when, where, at what moment or in what shape they'll attack me. '

Turning now to Sancho he asked him to hand up the headpiece, and the servant, failing a chance to pour out the curds, was forced to deliver the helmet as it was. The knight received the same and oblivious of contents hastily clapped it on his head. As the curds were pressed and squeezed, the whey trickled down his face and beard, whereat in panic he cried : ' What is this, squire ? one would think my brain was softening, my wits melting, indeed that my whole body was in a great sweat. If this last be the case, I swear 'tis not from fear, though certain that the pending adventure will prove terrifying. Quick with something wherewith to wipe me, for this copious ooze blinds mine eyes.' Sancho not speaking gave a cloth and with it thanks to God that his master hadn't discovered the truth.

The errant wiped his face and removing the helmet to see what kept his head so cool, discovered those little white balls, and lifting them to his nose exclaimed : ' By the life of my Dulcinea del Toboso, these are curds, placed here by you, traitor, rascal, ill-bred squire.' But with great calmness and dissimulation Sancho replied : ' If curds they be, hand them over and I'll eat them. Nay, let the devil eat them, since he must have put them there. Am I so bold as to soil you worship's headpiece ? a fine guess, indeed. In faith, sire, by the light God gives me, methinks I too have enchanters that persecute me as your worship's limb and creature. They must have put that filth there in order to turn your patience to wrath and make you pound my ribs once again.

But ah ! those fellows jumped for nothing this trip, since I trust my master's good sense : he will reflect that I have neither cheese nor milk nor aught like them about me, and that had I, 'tis mine own stomach and not his helmet I should place it in.' 'All may be as you say,' acquiesced the other.

The gentleman saw and wondered, the more when Don Quijote, having wiped his head, face, beard and last of all the helmet, donned it again, and bracing himself in stirrup, reaching for his sword and grasping his lance, said : 'Let come what come may, for here am I with heart enough to close with Satan !' The wagon of the colours was now at close range, without escort save the carter on one of the mules and a man seated behind. Our knight stationed himself in front saying : 'Whither go ye, brothers ? what wagon is this ? what carry ye and why these flags ?' To which the carter replied : 'The wagon is mine, it carries two high-mettled lions in a cage, sent by the governor of Oran as a present to His Majesty, in token whereof these royal flags are flying.' 'And are the lions large !' 'So large,' returned the guard at the cage-door, 'that their equal have never before passed over from Africa to Spain. I am a lion-tamer and in my time have brought over many of the savages but ne'er one like these. They are male and female : the male's in the front division of the cage and the female here behind. Not having eaten to-day they're hungry, so please your worship get out of the way. 'Tis necessary quickly to reach the place where we shall give them dinner.'

Don Quijote smiled a little at this and said : 'Lion-whelps to me ? to me lion-whelps and at this hour of the day ? then by God the gentlemen that send them shall see whether I am one to be scared by lions. Come down, good fellow ; open me the cage, since you're the keeper, and set free these beasts, for in the middle of the plain I'll let them know who Don Quijote de La Mancha is, despite and in defiance of the enchanters that send them against me.' 'Ah, ha !' murmured the traveller ; 'at last our good knight has discovered himself : the curds methinks have mellowed his skull and ripened his wits.' Sancho now came up saying : 'For God's sake, sir, see that my master doesn't

close with these beasts or the rest of us will be torn to patches.' 'Is your master that crazy?' 'Not crazy but headstrong.' 'I'll turn him,' the traveller replied; and approaching Don Quijote, who was pressing the keeper to open the cage, he said: 'Sir knight, errants should deal in adventures promising a favourable outcome, not in those that flatly deny it, since valour that trespasses on the region of temerity is foolhardy rather than brave. More by token these lions are not attacking you nor dreaming of it, but are merely going as a present to His Majesty and 'twill not be well to let or hinder their journey.' 'Begone, sir,' exclaimed our Don Quijote, 'and amuse yourself with your tame partridge and saucy ferret, and leave each to his own affairs. This is mine; I know whether they come against me, the goodmen lions;' and turning again to the keeper he called: 'I swear, don rascal, if this very instant you open not that cage, this lance will pin you to your wagon.'

The carter, seeing the resolve of that armed phantom, said to him: 'Good sir, be pleased for charity to let me unyoke the mules and place myself and them in safety, before the lions are loosed, for were they to kill them I should be bankrupt the rest of my life: they and this wagon comprise my estate.' 'O man of little faith! descend and unyoke or what you will, for soon shall you see your labour vain — that you could have dispensed with all your care.' The carter alighted and quickly unyoked, and now the keeper cried out: 'Be ye my witnesses, as many as are here, that against my will and under compulsion do I open the cage and set free the lions, and that I protest to this gentleman that all the harm and hurt done by these beasts shall be set down against him, with my wages and dues besides. Your worships, sirs, had best take to cover before I open; I know I am myself secure.'

Again Don Diego urged our knight not to think of this mad act, nothing more nor less than tempting Providence, but again Don Quijote made answer that he knew what he did. The gentleman still prayed him to look well, since he was surely misled. 'If then,' said our knight, 'your worship cares not to witness this tragedy, at it seems to you, spur your grey mare and get out

of harm's way.' On hearing this Sancho in tears begged him to quit this exploit, in comparison wherewith the windmills and the terrific one of the fulling-mills, in short all his other attempted deeds, were but cakes and cookies. 'Consider, sire, that here's no enchantment business nor aught like it for, looking through the cracks of the cage, I saw the paw of a real lion and should say that such a lion to have such a paw must be bigger than a mountain.' 'Your fear would make it seem bigger than half the earth. Retire, Sancho, leave me, and if I die, you know our ancient compact : hasten to Dulcinea ; I say no more.'

To these the knight added other things, killing all hopes of his forsaking this imbecile intent. He of the green cloak would have opposed him, but, seeing how unequal his arms, he deemed it poor judgment to tackle a crazy man, no less than which Don Quijote now appeared. The latter again urged the keeper to make haste, and renewing his threats forced the traveller to spur his mare, Sancho his Dapple and the carter his mules, all endeavouring to get as far away as possible ere the lions broke loose. Sancho wept his master's end, which he deemed now at hand in the lions' claws. He cursed his luck and called the hour names wherein the thought of returning to his service first occurred to him, but neither for weeping nor lamenting did he cease to whip Dapple, putting more and more space 'twixt the wagon and himself.

Now that the others were out of the way, the keeper for the last time suggested and requested what he had previously urged and asked of Don Quijote, who replied that he heard him and that that he needn't trouble with further suggestions and requests for all would bear little fruit, and suggested in turn that he make haste. The minutes spent by the keeper in opening the first cage were spent by the knight in considering whether 'twere better to enter the fray afoot or mounted, deciding in the end on the former lest Rocinante take fright. Dismounting he threw away his lance and having embraced his shield and bared his sword, with measured step and marvellous heroism moved to his post at the fore, commending himself in the meantime first with his whole heart to God and then to his lady Dulcinea.

It should be said that ~~coming to this passage in his true history~~ the author lets himself go, saying: 'O strong and courageous beyond all exaggeration Don Quijote de La Mancha! O mirror wherein may be seen all the heroes of the world! O second and new-born Don Manuel de Leon, glory and honour of all Spanish knights! With what words shall I describe this most breathless achievement or by what art shall I make it credible to future generations? What praises will not sort and square with thee, hyperbole though they be beyond all hyperbole? Afoot, alone, fearless, heroic, with single sword and that none of your cutting dog-blades, with buckler of no very clean and shining steel, thou art watching and lying in wait for the two most savage lions e'er born in Afric jungle! Let thy deeds speak thy praise, doughty Manchegan, for here I leave them at their height, lacking words to glorify them.'

Here the outburst ends and the author, resuming the thread of his narrative passes on, saying that the keeper, observing our knight in position and that there was no escape from freeing the male lion, opened wide the door of the first cage, where the beast now appeared of amazing size and hideous terrific aspect. His first move was to rise and turn round, extend his paws and give himself a good stretch. Next he opened his mouth for a leisurely yawn and with two hands'-breadth of tongue licked the dust from his eyes, laving his whole face. This done he poked out his head, looking all about with blazing eyes: an act and attitude sufficient to frighten temerity itself. But Don Quijote gazed at him fixedly, desiring that he leap from the wagon and attack, in which scrimmage the knight expected to crumble him to bits: to such a height did his new-under-the-sun idiocy carry him. But the generous lion, more courteous than proud, indifferent to all this blustering and nonsense, having looked first one way then another as has been said, turning his hind-quarters to his foe, with great phlegm and sluggishness again lay down in the cage.

Upon this our hero bade the keeper pester and drive him out. 'That I absolutely refuse to do,' replied the keeper, 'for if I provoke him, the first he'll claw to pieces will be myself. Let

your worship be content with the achievement as it stands, since it wants nothing in point of valour : don't tempt fortune a second time. The lion's door is open : 'tis in his power to issue forth, but since so far he hasn't availed himself of this freedom, he won't all day. There can be no further question as to your worship's stout-heartedness, and according to my way of thinking no brave champion is bound to do more than challenge his foe and await him in the open field. If his opponent delay, on him the stigma rests, and he that held himself in readiness attains the wreath of victory.' ' True, friend ; close the door, and be my witness in the best manner known to you of what you have seen me perform here. 'Twere well to make clear how you set the lion free, that I was ready for him, that he didn't come forth, that I kept my stand, that he still delayed within and at length lay down ; I owe no more. Enchantments avaunt ! and God prosper justice, truth and true chivalry. Lock him up as I said, while I signal to the fugitives to return and hear from your lips of this achievement.'

The keeper did as bidden and the knight, placing on his lance-point the cloth wherewith he had wiped the curd-drippings, shouted to the others who, looking back at every step, kept up their flight, all in a body with the traveller bringing up the rear. Sancho was the first to notice the signal and exclaimed : ' May I die if my master hasn't vanquished the savage roarers ; look how he signals.' They stopped, and assuring themselves that 'twas no other than the knight, little by little, as they grew less fearful, came to where they could distinctly hear his voice calling. In the end they arrived at the wagon, and as they came up the champion said to the carter : ' Brother, you may yoke your mules and continue your journey, and do you, Sancho, give him two gold crowns for the keeper and himself as recompense for their delay.' ' Cheerfully,' replied Sancho ; ' but what of the lions ? are they dead or alive ?'

The keeper thereupon reviewed in detail the progress of the combat, exaggerating to the best of his ability the puissance of Don Quijote, at sight of whom he said the cowed lion neither cared to nor dared leave the cage, though the door was open

some time, and that by reason of his telling the knight 'twould be tempting Providence to provoke the beast to come out, which was what he wished, very reluctantly and in the face of his real desire he consented that the door be closed. 'What think you of this, Sancho? can enchantments avail against true valour? Wizards may rob me of fortune but of resolve and courage — never.' Sancho counted out the crowns, the carter yoked his mules, and the keeper, kissing Quijote's hands, promised to tell of that brave deed to the king in person. 'And in case His Majesty enquired who achieved it, 'suggested our adventurer, 'you shall say the Knight of the Lions, since henceforth I desire that the title I have borne until now, namely he of the Sorry Aspect, be changed, altered, transformed and made over into this other, following in this the ancient custom of errant knights, who renewed their names as often as they wished or occasion suggested.'

The wagon went its way and Don Quijote, Sancho and the traveller of the green cloak followed theirs. All this time the latter had not spoken, so absorbed was he in marking and noting the deeds and words of this gentleman, whom he took for either a sane man gone mad or a madman turned sane. The first part of this history had not come to his notice — otherwise his astonishment had vanished, since he'd have known his particular species of aberration. As it was, at times he believed him sane and again thought him mad, for what the man said was rational, dignified and well-spoken, but what he did was reckless, fatuous and wild. What could be madder than to put a helmet full of cheese-curds on one's head and then make one's self think that enchanters were softening the skull? or what more reckless than to invite a hand-to-hand combat with live lions?

From these reflections and this soliloquy the subject of them roused him by saying: 'Who doubts, Señor Don Diego de Miranda, that you set me down for fool and lunatic? Nor is it strange, since my labours point to naught else. At the same time I would that your worship understood that I am not so loose and lacking as I must appear. A gallant knight that in the middle of a great square gives a lucky lance-stroke to a brave bull, looks

well in the eyes of his king. He, also, appears to advantage that, resplendently caparisoned, in merry tourney paces the lists in view of the ladies. And well seem all those knights that in military manœuvres or the like entertain, cheer and if one may so say honour their princes' courts. But better than all appears the errant, that over wastes and solitudes, at cross-roads, through woods through mountains, goes looking for perilous adventures in the hope of leading them to successful and happy issue, merely for the sake of glorious and lasting fame. A fairer sight, I maintain, is an errant knight succouring a widow in some God-forsaken waste than a court-cavalier making love to some damsel of the city.

'All of us have peculiar offices. Let the courtier serve the ladies, add lustre to the palace with his liveries, support poor brethen at the splendid plate of his table, arrange for jousts, take part in tourneys : in a word show himself noble, generous, magnificent and above all a good Christian. He will thus fulfil his very definite obligation. But let the errant on the other hand scour the corners of the world, penetrate the most intricate labyrinths, at every step attempt the impossible. In midsummer out on the barren desert let him resist the scorching rays of the sun and in winter the cruel bitterness of winds and snows. Let lions daunt him not, nor beast nor dragons make afraid, for to track these down, to close with and utterly vanquish them, is his chief and proper exercise.

'I, therefore, since I have fortunèd to be numbered with the latter, may not cease to array myself against all that appears to come within the province of my duties. For example, the encounter with these lions directly touched me, though I knew it an act of the wildest folly. I am well aware wherein valour consisteth : 'tis a virtue midway between the two vices of cowardice and temerity. But 'tis less sinful for the brave man to mount and touch the heights of recklessness than to sink to and sound the depths of abject fear. As 'tis easier for the prodigal than the miser to be wisely liberal, so is it easier for the reckless than the cowardly to be truly brave. In the matter of meeting adventures believe me 'tis better to lose the game by a card too many than

by one too few, and better it sounds to hear that such a knight is rash and overbold than that he's craven and a coward.'

'Allow me to state my opinion, Señor Don Quijote,' answered the other, 'that everything your worship has said and done balances in the scale with reason itself, and I dare assert that should the laws and ordinances of errant-arms be lost, they could be found in your worship's breast as in their very coffer and archives. But since it is getting late, lend us mend our pace a bit, that we may reach my village and home, where you may rest from your past labours which, though perhaps not of the body, certainly were of the spirit, which now and again are wont to redound to the weariness of the flesh.' 'I accept this great favour and kindness, Señor Don Diego,' said he of the Lions, and spurring a little faster about two that afternoon they arrived at the village and home of Don Diego, to whom our adventurer gave the name of the Knight of the Green Cloak.

CHAPTER XVIII

Don Quijote in the castle or house of the Knight of the Green Cloak, together with other things out of the common

OUR knight found the abode of Don Diego spacious, in this resembling the usual country-house. The family-arms in rough stone were over the street-door, the store-room was in the patio and in the rear porch was the entrance to the wine-cellar with many jars standing about which, being of el Toboso, renewed in our knight memories of his enchanted and transformed Dulcinea. Heaving a deep sigh, not thinking of what he said or in whose presence he was, he murmured :

'O pledges sweet, discovered to mine ill,
Sweet and delightful, when 'twas Heaven will.

O ye Tobosan wine-jars, that have brought to mind the sweet-pledge of my most bitter sorrow !' This soliloquy was overheard by the student-poet, who with his mother had come out

to welcome Don Diego. Both stood spell-bound on seeing the extraordinary figure of Don Quijote but he, dismounting from Rocinante, with great courtesy approached to take and kiss the lady's hands, and Don Diego said :

' With your accustomed grace, señora, receive Don Quijote de La Mancha, a knight-errant, the most daring and discreet the world contains.' Doña Christina thereupon welcomed him with marked good-will and attention and our knight offered his services with abundance of polite and appropriate phrases. At this point the author describes the house in detail, enumerating all that pertains to the typical mansion of a rich country-gentleman, but the translator thought best to pass these and similar details, feeling they had naught to do with the main drift of the story, which concerns itself more with truth than with dull digressions.

They ushered their guest into a chamber and there his squire disarmed him, leaving him in his loose Walloon breeches and chamois-leather doublet, which was badly stained with the grime of his coat-of-mail. His Flemish collar was of the student cut without starch or lace ; his buskins were date-colour, his shoes tallowed. His trusty sword hung from a bauldrick made of sea-wolf skin down from his shoulder, not at his waist, for 'tis reported that for many years he had had a disease of the kidneys. A cloak of good grey cloth he wore over all. First, with five or six buckets of water (the number is disputed) he washed head and face, and even the last bucketful turned the colour of whey, thanks to Sancho's gluttony and the purchase of the benighted curds that left his master so fair. In his present finery and with gentle gallant carriage he sailed forth into a hall, where the son awaited to engage him while the table was prepared, for Doña Christina wished to show herself apt and able in regaling a guest.

While Don Quijote was being disarmed, Don Lorenzo, the son, found time to enquire of his father : ' What shall we say of the knight you have brought home, sire ? His name, appearance and your saying he's a knight-errant, have puzzled my mother and me ? ' ' I don't know what to say, son. I only know that I have seen him act like the worst madman in the world, yet speak wisely enough to overshadow and efface his deeds. Do you have

a talk with him and take the pulse of his understanding; you are sufficiently observing, judge for yourself of his discretion or folly, which seems the more reasonable. For myself I judge him more mad than sane.'

So Don Lorenzo now undertook the entertainment of their guest and among other matters exchanged by the two, Don Quijote said to him: 'Don Diego de Miranda, your father, has informed me of the rare gifts and subtle genius possessed by your worship, stating in particular that you're a great poet.' 'A poet possibly, but great, not for a moment. 'Tis true I am fond of poetry and of reading the better poets but in no way do I deserve the epithet my father attached to me.' 'This humility mislikes me not, for there's no versifier that isn't proud and doesn't think himself the finest.' 'There's no rule without its exception,' suggested the other, 'and some may be the finest and yet not think so.' 'Few,' declared Don Quijote; 'but tell me, friend, what verses have you there? your father was saying they make you rather restless and dispirited. If it be some gloss, I understand a little of the art myself and should like to hear it. If it be for a literary joust, try to win the second prize, for the first goes by favour or to a person of rank, the second by merit. The third is really second therefore and the first third, like degrees at a university; though of course to be first means a great deal.' 'So far,' said Don Lorenzo to himself, 'I shouldn't set you down for a fool; but let us see further.' So he said aloud: 'Your worship has frequented the schools apparently; what science did you pursue?' 'Knight-errantry, which is as good as that of poetry, nay, two fingers'-breadth beyond.' 'As yet I've not heard of this science.'

'Knight-errantry,' explained Don Quijote, 'is a science that embraces all or most of the sciences of the world, by reason that its candidate must be a jurist deep in the laws of justice, distributive and commutative, so as to give every man his due and desert; a theologian, that he may state clearly and precisely the grounds of his Christian faith wherever called upon; a physician, in particular an herbalist, that he may recognise in wastes and wildernesses herbs with the property of healing wounds, since a

knight-errant can't go looking at every stumble for someone to touch him up ; an astrologer, to tell the time of night and the part and clime of the world. Mathematics too must be a part of his equipment, for at any step he may have need thereof. Not mentioning that he must be adorned with all the virtues theological and cardinal, I descend to the details of his profession and say he must know how to swim like Fish Nicholas, and how to shoe a horse and mend saddle and bridle. Rising again to higher matters, he must keep faith with God and his lady, be chaste in thought, pure in word, generous in good works, brave in deed, patient in labours, a friend to the needy ; in fine a maintainer of the truth, though it cost him his life. All these qualities, small and great, go to the making of a worthy knight-errant. So you can judge, Señor Don Lorenzo, whether it is a snivelling science, this the knight learns that studies and professes it, and whether to be equalled by the most strenuous taught in schools and colleges.'

' I should say that this science bore the palm before all,' replied his listener, ' if only what you say be true.' ' And what do you mean by that ?' ' That I doubt whether there have been or are now errant knights, especially any adorned with so many virtues.' ' Many times have I said what I am to say now,' began Don Quijote, ' since most persons think with you that adventurers never existed. But nay, I shall not attempt to draw you from your error, since I cannot but feel that, unless Heaven in some miraculous way show you that knights-errant have been and are, whatever trouble I might take to demonstrate that truth, would be vain, as experience has oft-times revealed. I shall merely pray Heaven may act for me, helping you to appreciate how advantageous and necessary to the world errants were in former times and how useful they would prove nowadays, if only the fashion. Alas, in their stead, for the sins of the people, sloth, idleness, feasting, luxury are in the ascendant.' ' Our guest has broken loose and no mistake,' soliloquised Don Lorenzo ; ' for all that he's a gallant fool, and I a poor one did I not find him so.'

Here their discourse ended as they were summoned to dinner. Don Diego asked his son what he had made out anent their

guest's intelligence and received the reply : ' All the physicians and scribes in the world couldn't draw him off clean from the rough copy of his infirmity : he's a madman interlarded, full of lucid intervals. ' They now went out, and Don Quijote found the table such an one as Don Diego had described : orderly, plentiful and delicious. But what most delighted him was the marvellous stillness that reigned throughout the house, giving it the air of a Carthusian monastery. When the cloth had been removed, the blessing asked and their hands dipped in water, Don Quijote earnestly prayed Don Lorenzo to repeat the verses for the literary joust ; to which the other replied :

' That I may not be numbered among those poets that when asked refuse to recite their verses, yet vomit them forth without request at other times, I'll give you my gloss, composed with no thought of a prize but merely to discipline my faculties. ' ' A friend of mine and a discreet one, ' remarked Don Quijote, ' was of the opinion that none should trouble to gloss verses, reasoning that a gloss could never approach the text and frequently, nay usually, was beside its aim and scope. Moreover he held that the rules of glossing were altogether too stringent, forbidding questions, the introduction of ' said he ' and ' I shall say, ' the use of verbs as substantives, allowing no freedom of construction, together with other bonds and fetters whereby glossers are handicapped, as your worship must know. ' ' Of a truth, Señor Don Quijote, I have been trying to catch your worship in some consistent error, but you slip through my hands like an eel. ' ' I don't understand this slipping, ' said Don Quijote. ' I shall tell you later, sir ; for the present attend to the gloss and theme. '

When Don Lorenzo had finished, our knight rose to his feet and seizing the other's right hand with his own raised his voice almost to a shout, crying : ' By the life of the heavens wherever they are highest, but you, generous swain, are the best poet alive and deserve to be laurel-crowned, not by Cyprus or Gaeta as a certain versifier said (whom may God forgive) but by the academies of Athens were they in existence and by those that are, Paris, Bologna and Salamanca. Would to Heaven that the judges

that refuse you the first prize be transfixed by the darts of Phœbus and may the muses never cross the thresholds of their homes ! Be kind enough, sir, to let me hear some of your long-measure verse. I would take the pulse of your admirable genius at every point.' Is it necessary to add that Don Lorenzo was delighted to hear himself praised by Don Quijote, though he knew him a madam ? O power of flattery ! how far-reaching art thou and how wide asunder are the boundaries of thy pleasant sway ! To this truth Don Lorenzo bore witness, complying with his guest's desire and demand by repeating to him a sonnet on the fable or story of Pyramus and Thisbe, at the finishing of which Don Quijote cried : ' Blessed be God, that among the infinite number of consumed poets there's one consummate one, as the art of this sonnet assures me, sir. '

For four whole days our knight was royally entertained at the house of Don Diego, but at the end asked leave to go his way, saying that while delighted with his reception and the kindness shown him, inasmuch as it didn't look well for knights-errant to spend much of their time in leisure and pleasure, he would do his duty and seek out adventures, wherein he was informed the neighbourhood abounded. In these he expected to be engaged till the day of the jousts at Saragossa, his final goal. The first adventure would be his descent into the cave of Montesinos, whereof so many marvellous things were reported throughout that district ; hoping also to discover the true source and origin of the seven lakes of Ruidera. Don Diego and his son applauded so honourable an enterprise, saying he might take with him from their house and farm anything he pleased and that they would assist him with the best will in the world, whereto they were bound by his valour and most worthy profession.

At last arrived the day of departure, as pleasant to Don Quijote as deplored by Panza, who found exceeding content in the abundance there and whose paunch revolted at a return to the hunger that reigns in woods and wilds, and at the thought of the customary leanness of his ill-provided saddlebags. These last however he filled to the neck with what he deemed most likely to come into play. As they came to bid farewell, Quijote, turning

to Don Lorenzo, said : ‘ I am not sure that I’ve told your worship, but if I have, I’ll repeat, that should you ever wish to cut short the works and ways leading to the inaccessible height of the temple of fame, all you need is to quit the fairly narrow path of poetry and take the well-nigh invisible one of knightly arms, would you make yourself an emperor like a flash.’ By these words Don Quijote sealed the question of his madness ; still more when he added :

‘ God knows how pleased I should be to have Señor Don Lorenzo accompany me that I might teach you how to pardon subjects and subdue and trample under foot the proud : accomplishments native to my profession. But since neither your tender age nor your commendable employment will permit, I content myself with declaring that even as a poet you will achieve fame if guided more by others’ opinions than your own, for no parent believes his children homely, and one is even more blinded toward the children of the soul.’ Again did father and son wonder at the knight’s blended discourse, now sound now senseless, together with his unflinching determination to go forth upon his questionable quests, the be-all and the end-all of his existence. There was a repetition of services and civilities, and with the gracious allowance of the lady of the castle Don Quijote and Sancho on Rocinante and Dapple took leave.

CHAPTER XIX

The adventure of the enamoured shepherd and other delightful passages

DON QUIJOTE had travelled but a short distance from Don Diego’s house when he encountered two that seemed either priests or students together with two peasants, all riding asses. One of the students carried, tied in a piece of green buckram by way of portmanteau, what looked like a piece of scarlet-and-white cloth together with two pairs of ribbed stockings. The other carried naught but a pair of new fencing-foils with their

buttons, while the peasants were laden with things that tokened they were on their way home from some large town where they had made purchases. Both they and the students fell into the same astonishment all fell on first beholding Don Quijote, and were dying to know who this man could be, so unlike his kind.

The knight saluted these strangers and having learned the road they travelled, since it proved his own, offered his company, asking that they slacken pace a trifle as their ass-fillies moved faster than his steed. To oblige them he briefly sketched himself, his office and profession of knight-errantry, in other words the quest of adventures in all parts of the world. He informed them too that though his real name was Don Quijote de La Mancha he was also known as the Knight of the Lions; all of which was Greek and gibberish to the peasants. The students at once surmised he was out of his head, yet regarded him with admiration and respect, one of them saying : ‘ If your worship have no determined road, sir knight, pray come with us and you’ll see one of the finest and richest weddings ever celebrated in La Mancha or in the country many leagues about. ’

Don Quijote asked if ’twere a prince’s wedding thus extolled. ‘ Nay, a farmer’s and a peasant-girl’s, he the richest man in all these parts and she the most beautiful woman ever men set eyes on. The display attending it promises to be most unique, for the ceremony is to take place in a meadow near the village of the bride, who by way of distinction is called Quitéria the fair. The groom’s name is Camacho the rich ; her age eighteen, his twenty-two. They are of equal rank, though some overnice persons that know the world’s families by heart, would have it that the fair Quitéria’s has the advantage ; but what care we about such things nowadays, when riches solder so many flaws. Moreover this Camacho is lavish with his wealth and has taken it upon himself to branch over all that meadow, so that the sun will be put to it if he try to enter and shine on the green grass that covers the ground. He has provided dancers as well, both of swords and little bells, for in his village are those that can shake and jingle to perfection. Of the shoe-clatterers I say nothing — of them he has engaged a host.

‘ But none of these things or many others unmentioned by me will make the nuptials as memorable as those the desperate Basilio will methinks do there. This Basilio is a native of Quitéria’s village and her neighbour, whence Cupid took occasion to revive for the world the long-forgotten loves of Pyramus and Thisbe. Basilio has been enamoured of Quitéria from his first and tender years and she responded to his feeling with a thousand innocent favours; so much so that the devotion of the children became the talk and diversion of the entire village. As the girl grew, her father decided to forbid Basilio his accustomed access to their home, and further to allay his fears and apprehensions he arranged for his daughter to marry with the rich Camacho, disapproving of Basilio, who is less endowed by fortune than by nature. To tell the truth without envy he’s the most agile youth we know, a great pitcher of the bar, a first-class wrestler and a capital ball-player. He runs like a buck, leaps more nimbly than a goat and bowls down the nine-pins as by enchantment. He sings like a lark, strums the guitar till it speaks and above all handles the sword with the finest. ’

‘ For that alone,’ interposed Don Quijote, ‘ this youth deserves to marry not Quitéria alone but Guinevere herself were she living, maugre Lancelot and all that would circumvent him. ’ ‘ Tell that to my wife,’ exclaimed Sancho, who till now had been a passive listener; ‘ she wants every man to marry his equal, abiding by the proverb that says, Every ewe to its mate. My own idea is that worthy Basilio, for whom already I have strong liking, should get the girl, and salvation and a long rest (I was about to say the opposite) to all that interfere with the marriage of lovers. ’

‘ If all that love well were to marry,’ said Don Quijote, ‘ parents would be deprived of the choice and right of marrying their children with whom and when they should, and if daughters were allowed to select their husbands, one would be choosing her father’s servant and another some passer-by that seemed to her proud and imperial, though really a rake and a bully. Love and devotion easily blind the eyes of the understanding, which are so necessary in determining one’s estate. That of matrimony

in particular stands in grave danger of being wrongly entered upon : both clear insight and Heaven's special favour are needed to determine it aright. If a wise man be going a journey, he first seeks some true and pleasant companion : why then should not he that is to travel all his days even to the inn of death do likewise, especially when the other is to be his associate in bed, at board and everywhere. The more that the comradeship of one's wife is no merchandise that can, once bought, be returned, bartered with or exchanged : 'tis an irrevocable condition that ceases only with life. 'Tis a noose that, once on the neck, becomes a Gordian knot ; unless cut by the scythe of death, there's no untying. Much more might I say were I not prevented by my desire to know whether señor licentiate has aught further to tell with regard to Basilio. ' To this the student-bachelor, or licentiate as Don Quijote called him, replied :

‘ Nothing remains to be told save that from the time Basilio learned that fair Quitéria was to marry Camacho the rich, none has seen him smile or speak rationally, since he ever walks downcast and mutters to himself : clear and certain proof that his brain is affected. He eats and sleeps little : his diet consists of fruit alone and he sleeps, if at all, like a brute in the open fields on the hard ground. At times he gazes vacantly at heaven, at others firms his eyes fixedly on the earth like a draped statue whose garments are tossed by the wind. In fine he seems so overcome with grief that all his acquaintance fear that fair Quitéria's yes to-morrow will prove his death-sentence. ’ ‘ God will bring it about better than that, ’ said Sancho, ‘ for He that gives the hurt gives the healing. No one knows what is to come : ’twixt this and morn lie many hours and in one of them, nay in a moment, the house may fall. I've seen it rain and shine together ; one may lie down well at night and at sun-up not be able to stir. Tell me, do any flatter themselves they've put a spoke in fortune's wheel ? never. ’Twixt a woman's yea and nay I'd be loth to put a pin-point — for there wouldn't be room. Give me proof that the lass loves Basilio with all her heart, and I'll give him a sack of good-luck. For they say love looks through spectacles that make copper gold, poverty riches and blear-eyes pearls. ’

‘ When will you have done, curse you, ’ quoth his master ; ‘ once you get started with your proverbs and old tales, none can follow short of Judas, may he take you ! Tell me, animal, what do you know about spokes or wheels or anything ? ’ ‘ If you don’t follow me, no wonder my opinions are called nonsense. But what does it matter ? I follow myself and know I’m not such a fool in what I say, even though you, master, set up to be cricket of my speech and of my deeds too. ’ ‘ Critic, thou tongue-traitor, whom may God confound ! ’ ‘ Don’t be vexed with me, señor, for you know I wasn’t bred at court and that I never studied at Salamanca so as to tell when my words have a letter too many or few. Bless me, you mustn’t ask the Sayagan to talk like a Toledan, and maybe there are Toledans that don’t hit it off so briskly when it comes to gaudy words. ’

‘ You are right, ’ said the licentiate, ‘ for those of them bred in the tanneries or in the Plaza de Zocodover don’t speak as fluently as those that spend their day in the cathedral-cloisters — yet all are Toledans. The pure, proper and discriminating use of words is only to be found among enlightened persons at court, though they were born in Majalahonda. I say enlightened, since many are not — intelligence plus practice is the grammar of good speech. I, for my sins, was a student in canon law at Salamanca and pique myself somewhat on my clear and vigorous language. ’

‘ Had you not piqued yourself more on the management of your foils, ’ interposed the other student, ‘ you might have been head of your degrees instead of tail. ’ ‘ Tut, tut, ’ replied the licentiate : ‘ you hold the most erroneous opinion in the world as to the dexterous use of the sword, if you consider it of no benefit. ’ ‘ ’Tis not merely an opinion but a well-established truth, ’ retorted the other, ‘ which would you that I demonstrate, you have the blades, equipment is not lacking, and mine are steadiness and muscle which, joined to my pluck (and that is not slight), will make you confess me not far wrong. Dismount and let us see you measure time, your circles, angles and science, for I hope to make you see stars at noonday with my rough and ready art, wherein I believe after God the man is yet unborn

that can make me turn back, for he lives not whom I won't force to give ground.' 'As to this turning back or not,' replied the fencer, 'I leave all that to you, for perchance in the spot where you first plant foot, will open your grave : in other words, there you may be left for dead by the art you despise.' 'That will now appear,' cried the other, Corchuelo by name, and leaping from his ass he furiously snatched one of the swords the licentiate carried. 'Not so,' exclaimed Don Quijote, 'for I mean to umpire this bout and judge of this so frequently drawn battle.'

Dismounting and seizing his lance the knight stationed himself in the road just as the licentiate with calm air and measured step advanced to meet Corchuelo, who came on darting fire from his eyes as they say. The two peasants, sitting on their ass-fillies, remained spectators of this mortal tragedy. The slashes, lunges, down-strokes, side-cuts and double-handers dealt by Corchuelo were past counting, thicker than guts or hail. He rushed at the other like a nettled lion but met on his way a mouth-touch from the button of the licentiate's sword, which checked him in full course, making him kiss it as though a relic, though not with such deep devotion as relics should and are wont to be kissed. The licentiate ended by numbering with his passes all the buttons of the other's short cassock, tearing his shirt into strips like the arms of a cuttle-fish, twice swishing off his hat and finally so wearying him that from disgust, irritation and rage Corchuelo, seizing his sword by the hilt, hurled it with such force that one of the seconds, a scrivener, later deposed that he found it about three-quarters of a league distant — which testimony has served and still serves to show and prove beyond question that strength yields to skill.

Corchuelo sat down exhausted and Sancho came up to him saying : 'My faith, sir, if you take my advice, hereafter you'll challenge persons not to fence but to wrestle or pitch the bar : you have the years and strength for that. But of these they call fencing-masters I've heard say they can put a sword-point through a needle's eye.' 'I am satisfied to have fallen from my high horse,' replied Corchuelo ; 'the experience has shown me mine ignorance ;' and rising he embraced the licentiate and the

pair were better friends than ever. They decided not to delay for the scrivener but to push on and reach in season Quitéria's village, to which all belonged. During the rest of the journey the licentiate enlarged on the excellences of the sword, with so many and conclusive arguments and with so many figures and mathematical demonstrations, that all became convinced of the goodness of the science and Corchuelo was quite cured of his conceit.

It was now nightfall and from a distance they could see on their side the village what appeared a canopy of brilliant and innumerable stars. They could hear too the mingled sweet accents of divers instruments, flutes, tambourines, psalteries, cymbals, tabors and timbrels. Drawing near they beheld a bower of trees, raised at the village-entrance, hung with lights unharmed by a wind blowing so softly that not even the leaves of the trees were stirred. The musicians were the wedding merry-makers and moved amid that pleasant scene in troops, dancing or singing and marking time with the various instruments. Indeed it seemed as if throughout that meadow mirth and revelry leapt in frolic and joy. Many others were busy raising platforms whence might be viewed the plays and dances to be given on the morrow in the spot dedicated to the wedding of the rich Camacho and the obsequies of the poor Basilio.

Don Quijote refused to enter the town though besought by both péasant and bachelor. He gave as excuse one most sufficient to himself, that it was more customary for errants to sleep in field and forest than in settlements, though beneath roofs of gold. With this he turned a little from the highway, much against the wish of Sancho, who bethought him how well had he lodged at Don Diego's castle.

CHAPTER XX

The wedding of Camacho the rich and the faring of Basilio the poor

SCARCE had fair Aurora given time to shining Phœbus to dry up with the heat of his scorching rays the liquid pearls of her golden hair when Don Quijote, shaking sloth from his limbs, rose to his feet and called his squire, still snoring ; which when his master observed, he said : ‘ O blest beyond all that live upon the face of the earth, since without envy or being envied you sleep with quiet spirit ; nor enchanters persecute you nor enchantments assail. Sleep on, I say again and a hundred times, since no suspicions of your lady keep you in ceaseless vigil, nor thoughts of debts keep awake, nor how on the morrow to provide for your small and straitened family. Ambition disquiets you not, nor the vain pomp of the world wear you to the bone, since the limits of your desires extend only to the care of your ass. That of your person you have laid on my shoulders : the burden and counterpoise imposed by nature and custom on all masters. The servant sleeps and the lord watches, thinking how he may support and advance him, doing him favours. Anguish at seeing the sky turn copper, withholding from the earth its timely showers, afflicts not the servant as the lord, bound through failure and famine to maintain those that served him in times of fruitfulness and plenty. ’

To none of this did Sancho make reply, for he slept, nor would have awakened had not his master used the butt of his lance. Dull and languid he looked in every direction and said at last : ‘ From yon bower, if I mistake not, issue the steam and smell that betoken broiled rashers more than rushes and thyme. Nuptials that start off with odours like these are sure to be lavish and liberal, by my halidome. ’ ‘ Peace, glutton : come, let us witness this espousal and see what the rejected Basilio will do. ’ ‘ Let him do what he will : nay, would he be poor and marry

Quitéria? marry in the clouds with never a groat, is that all he wants? In faith, sir, I am of opinion the poor fellow should content himself with what he finds and not go looking for tidbits in the sea. I'll wager an arm that Camacho can fairly cover him with reals, and if that be so, as it must be, what a fool Quitéria would show herself to throw away the jewels and trinkets Camacho must have given and still can give, choosing the bar-pitching and foil-play of Basilio. At what tavern will a good throw of the bar or a clever sword-trick fetch you a beaker of wine? Graces and accomplishments that aren't marketable, better let Count Dirlos have them. But when such graces fall to one that has money besides, let my life be like his. Upon good bottom can be raised a good house, and the best foundation in the world is a heavy purse.'

'In God's name, Sancho, bring your speech to an end, for I believe that if they let you continue in those you begin you'd have no time to eat or sleep, for all would be spent in wagging your tongue,' 'Had your worship a good memory, you would recall the agreement drawn up before we last left home: One of the articles was that I should be free to talk all I pleased, provided 'twere not against my neighbour or your authority. So far methinks I haven't overstepped this provision.' 'I recall no such article,' responded the other, 'and though it may be as you say, I desire for the present that you hold your tongue and come along, for already the instruments heard last evening are making the valleys rejoice and doubtless the nuptials will take place in the cool of the morn.'

The squire yielded to the master's will and placing the saddle on Rocinante and the pannel on Dapple he and the knight mounted, and slowly advancing passed under the bower. The first sight that offered to Sancho's eyes was a steer spitted on an elm-tree. In the blaze wherein it was to be roasted burned half a mountain of wood, while the six earthen pots closely surrounding the fire were not like ordinary pots, but were six fair-sized wine-jars, each a veritable shambles, for in them whole sheep as if pigeons were swallowed up unseen. The hares already skinned and chickens already plucked, hanging from the arbour previous to burial

in the pots, were without number, as were the birds and game of all varieties, hung about that the air might cool them. Sancho counted more than sixty wineskins, each holding, as later appeared, more than eight gallons of vigorous wine. Like piles of wheat on a threshing-floor loaves of the whitest bread were heaped in rows, while cheeses set like bricks formed a wall. Two cauldrons of oil, larger than dyer's vats, served to fry the pastry, which by means of two whopping shovels was lifted out when fried and plunged into another cauldron of prepared honey. The cooks and kitchen-maids numbered more than fifty, all neat, all busy and all good-humoured. In the distended belly of the steer rested twelve soft suckling pigs, which, sewed within, served to make him tender and toothsome. Spices of various kinds, bought not by the pound apparently but by the quarter, were on view in a great chest. In fine, the preparations of this wedding, though rustic, were on a scale to feed an army.

Sancho saw all, examined all and by all was moved to love. The first things to besiege and captivate his taste were the fleshpots, wherefrom he'd willingly have accepted a good-sized helping. Then the wineskins took his fancy, and lastly the fruitage of the frying-pans, if those bulging cauldrons can be so termed. At last, finding it beyond his power to do aught else, he approached one of the busy cooks and in courteous and empty phrase asked leave to dip a crust into one of those jars. ' Brother, thanks to the rich Camacho, this day is not one over which hunger bears sway. Dismount and see if you can find a ladle wherewith to skim a hen or two, and may you be the better for them. ' I see no ladle, ' murmured Sancho. ' Wait, ' quoth the other ; ' body of me, but you're a dainty delicate one ! ' and with this he seized a kettle and plunging it in one of the jars drew out three hens and a couple of geese, saying to Sancho : ' Eat, friend, and break your fast on this froth till the dinner-hour. ' I have no plate to put it on, ' replied Sancho. ' Then take it, kettle and all, ' said the cook, ' for the wealth and kindness of Camacho supply everything. '

While the squire was thus employed, the knight in another part of the bower was watching the entrance of twelve peasants,

mounted on twelve most beautiful mares, richly and showily decked out with little bells jingling from their breast-leathers. These folk were festively clad and ran rejoicing all in a troop not one but many courses over the meadow, shouting with loud ecstatic huzzas : ' Long live Camacho, long live Quitéria, he as rich as she is beautiful, and she most beautiful of living maidens.' ' 'Tis easy to see they've never beheld my Dulcinea,' murmured Don Quijote, ' else they'd be less free with their praises.' Soon afterward entered from different parts many and various dancers, among them a troop of sword-dancers, some four and twenty youths of gallant look and air, attired in finest and whitest linen with varicoloured head-dresses worked in choicest silk. One of the horsemen asked the leader of this troop, a nimble swain, had any of the dancers received hurt. ' Not as yet, thanks be to God ! so far all is well, ' he answered and with his companions straight began to twirl about with so many and skilful turns of blades that though Don Quijote had before seen this manner of dancing, none ever seemed so marvellous. Equally was his fancy taken by another band, of twelve most lovely girls, apparently between fourteen and eighteen years, clad in green, with locks partly plaited and partly loose and all so golden as to rival the sun's ; and on their heads were garlands of jasmine, roses, amaranth and honeysuckle, all inwoven. They were led by a venerable gaffer and ancient matron, both more active and nimble than their years promised. These sylphs moved to the music of a Zamoran bagpipe, and with modesty in face and eyes and nimbleness of feet proved themselves the finest dancers in the world.

Next came a dancing or speaking masque, made up of eight nymphs arranged in two rows, the first led by the god Cupid, the other by Interest : that adorned with wings, bow, quiver and arrows, and this clad in various rich colours of gold and silk. The nymphs in the train of Love bore on their shoulders their names in large lettering on white parchment, Poetry, Wisdom, Family and Valour, and likewise those that followed Interest were designated Liberality, Largess, Treasure and Peaceful Possession. In their front a wooden castle was borne by four

savages, clad in ivy and hemp dyed green, so true to life that Sancho at first was frightened. On its forehead and on each side of the castle were the words, The Castle of Good Heed. When four skilful tambourine and flute-players had struck up, Cupid commenced to dance and after executing two figures, raising his eyes and aiming an arrow at a maiden among the battlements, said :

Of earth and air the god am I,
The waters at my bidding swell ;
So too obey my sovereignty
Lost souls and angels damned in hell.

I never knew the breath of fear,
I never dream but what I do.
With ' hasten ' there and ' hopeless ' here
I help this man and hinder you.

He then let fly the arrow over the castle and retired to his station.

Then came forth Interest and executed two other figures ; the tambourines were silent while he said :

Greater than Love thou dost behold,
Though Love's my guardian, my guide.
My stock's the hardiest, most bold,
That ever Heaven deified.

For I am Interest, though few
Of mortal beings find I pay,
Nor know without me what to do.
Wilt have me ? I am thine for ay.

Interest retired, giving place to Poetry, who making figures like the others lifted his eyes to the maiden of the castle saying :

And now comes lovely Poesy,
Engarlanded with verses gay
And clad in sonnets prettily
With all the welcome of the May.

If thou art vexed not when I praise,
Art pleased when I importune,
Thine envied fortune shall I raise
Above the circle of the moon.

Poetry made an end and from the train of Interest issued Liberality, who, after the customary prelude, began :

They call me liberality
Because I fly the two extremes
Of wasteful prodigality
And what a stingy man beseems.

Yet more than doth the prodigal
I'll heap all riches for my love ;
For though it others sinning call,
Devotion shall its pardon prove.

In this manner appeared and withdrew all the nymphs of the two squadrons : each executed his figure and said his verses, some serious, some silly, but the above were all Don Quijote's memory, though a good one, retained. Presently these dancers mingled, weaving and unweaving their figures with pliant grace ; and Love, passing before the castle, shot his arrows on high, while Interest broke against it golden balls.

Finally, after a good deal of dancing, Interest produced a large purse, made from a brindled cat's skin and apparently full of coin. He threw this at the castle and as it struck, the boards loosened and fell, leaving the maiden without defence. Interest and his followers then ran up and throwing a long gold chain about her neck, made as though to take and lead her away captive, but Love and his faction tried to rescue her, all fitting their movements to the sound of the tambourines and dancing and moving in harmony. They were at length brought to terms by the savages, who quickly replaced the fallen walls and shut the maiden within as at first. With this and amid great applause the play came to its end.

Don Quijote asked one of the nymphs who it was that had composed and ordered the piece. She named a certain priest of that village, who possessed a rare gift for such compositions. ' I'll wager,' said the knight, ' he's more the friend of Camacho than of Basilio, and is more a hand at satire than church-services, this bachelor or priest, for cleverly has he opposed the accomplishments of the one and the riches of the other.' Sancho Panza, who stood listening, exclaimed : ' The king is my cock : I stand

by Camacho. ' ' Indeed, Sancho, you prove yourself a varlet and of those that cry, Whoever conquers, long live he. ' ' I know not to what class I belong, but I'm certain I should never skim such excellent froth from Basilio's pots ' ; and showing his kettleful of geese and fowl he seized one and began to devour it with spirit and relish, saying :

' A fig for the cleverness of Basilio, for you're worth no more than you have, and so much as you have, that you are worth. There are after all but two classes in the world, the haves and the have-nots, as said one my grandmother, who always stuck to the haves. And nowadays too, master, they take the pulse of owning rather than of knowing. A gold-covered ass looks better than a horse with pack saddle. Therefore, I repeat, I stand by Camacho, in whose pots the generous skimmings are geese, hens, hares and conies, whilst those of Basilio's pots, if they came to hand, or even to boot, would be naught but dregs. ' ' Have you finished, devil ? ' ' Soon, for I see it wearies you though if that hadn't checked me in the middle, there had been work cut out for three days. ' ' Please God, man, may I see you dumb before I die. ' ' At our present pace, verily before your worship goes I shall be chewing the clay, and then perchance be so dumb that I shan't speak a syllable till the end of time, or at least till Judgment Day. ' ' Though that occur, O Sancho, never would your silence equal what you have spoken, speak and are to speak in your life. Moreover, the day of my death naturally should come first, and I therefore expect to see you dumb never, not even when you drink or sleep, which is the most I can say. '

' Of a truth, sir, no trust can be put in my Lady Dry-Bones, in Death I mean, who devours the lamb with the sheep and as I've heard our priest tell, treads with equal foot on the high towers of kings and the lowly huts of the poor. The lady is more mighty than nice : she's nothing particular : she eats of all and does for all, swelling her saddlebags with every kind and age and rank. She's no reaper that sleeps through siestas, for she reaps at all hours, cutting the green with the dry. Nor does she chew her food at all but bolts whatever is placed before her, since hers is a dog's hunger, never satisfied. And though without a belly yet

is she dropsical, and great thirst drives her to drink the lives of all that live, like a jug of cold water.'

'Not a word more, my son : don't risk a fall ; for verily what in your rustic terms you have spoken concerning death, might have come from the best of preachers. Had you discretion as you have good natural wit, you could take a pulpit in hand and range the world over, preaching fine sayings.' 'He preaches well that lives well,' replied Sancho ; 'I know no theologies but that.' 'Nor have you need,' said his master ; 'but I wonder how, since the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom, you can be so wise, who fear a lizard more than Him.' 'Let yet worship judge of his chivalries, nor mind other peoples' fears or braveries, for I am as properly afraid of God as any neighbour's son. Leave me to snuff up this froth here, since all the rest is empty words which we shall have to account for in the other life.' And saying this he renewed his assault on the kettle with courage sufficient to arouse that of Don Quijote, who doubtless would have come to his assistance had he not been let by something to be told further on.

CHAPTER XXI

The story of Canacho's wedding continued, together with other delightful passages

WHILE Don Quijote and his squire were in the midst of the colloquy reported in the previous chapter, loud clamour and cries were heard, coming from the horsemen, who with rush and shout went to welcome the bridal pair. These, surrounded by a thousand kinds of instruments and devices, came in the company of the priest, their kinsfolk and the people of note in the neighbouring villages, all in gala attire. When Sancho beheld the bride, he exclaimed : 'As the Lord liveth, not as a farmer's daughter comes she clad but like a palace-girl. Egad, as I make out, her necklace is of rich corals and her green Cuenca stuff is thirty-pile velvet, and lo, the white linen border ! I vow 'tis of

satin. Then look at her hands, covered with hoops of jet do you call them ? may I never grow rich if they're not rings of gold and pure gold at that, set with pearls white as a curd ; each must be worth an eye of the head. O the whoreson jade, what hair ! which, if it be not false, I've never seen longer or more golden in my life. Ay, but note her carriage and figure : is it not to be compared to a palm-tree swaying in the wind with its bunches of dates, which are the trinkets hanging from her hair and throat ! I swear in my soul she's a lass to be reckoned with and could cross the shoals of Flanders.'

Don Quijote smiled at his squire's country praises, though it seemed to him also that, sparing Dulcinea del Toboso, never had he seen a woman more beautiful. She looked a trifle pale, the result no doubt of the bad night brides pass in preparation for the pending marriage-day. They all moved toward a theatre at one side the meadow, decked with carpets and branches, where the nuptials were to take place and whence could be seen the dances and pantomimes. But just as they arrived, loud shouts were heard from behind and a voice that cried : ' Stay a little, ye hasty and heartless ones ! ' All turned and beheld a man in black frock striped with flame-like crimson ; on his head a crown of funereal cypress and in his hands a large staff. As he drew near, they recognised the gallant Basilio and anxiously waited to see what his cries and words portended, fearing trouble from his arrival at this juncture. Exhausted and breathless he came before the bridal pair and drove his staff, tipped with steel pike, well into the soil. Then with pallid face and eyes fixed on Quitéria in hoarse and trembling voice he began :

' Thou art well aware, ungrateful Quitéria, that by the holy law that we profess thou canst not marry while I live. Thou knowest too that while waiting till time and and[?] mine industry bettered my fortune, I have not failed to observe the respect due thine honour. Yet thou, casting behind all rights due my true regard, would'st make another lord of that which is mine. His riches not only serve him as his fortune but serve to make him fortunate, and that his horn may be filled (not that I think he deserves it, but because Heaven so wills) mine own hand will

remove the obstacle that stands in his way, and myself no longer divide you two. Long live rich Camacho with ungrateful Quitéria, long and happy years, and die, die poor Basilio, whose poverty clipped the wings of his happiness and laid him in the grave.' Saying this he seized the staff driven in the ground and leaving half there showed that the other was a sheath concealing a fairly long rapier, and when he had planted what may be called its hilt beside the other, with quick resolution he threw himself against it. Instantly the bloody point and half the steel appeared at his back and the poor fellow lay bathed in blood, transfixed by his own weapon.

His friends rushed to the rescue, overcome by this piteous catastrophe. Don Quijote, dropping from Rocinante, also hurried to the spot and raising him found him not yet expired. They were about to withdraw the rapier but the priest present thought they should first confess him lest he might not survive. He now showed slight consciousness and in painful dying accents said : 'Cruel Quitéria, wouldst thou in my last and fatal agony give thy hand as my wife, I might hope that my folly would be pardoned, as thereby I should have attained the bliss of being thine.' The priest said he should attend to the safety of his soul rather than the pleasure of his body and with his whole heart crave God's pardon for his sins and this act of desperation. To this Basilio replied that he would never confess himself till Quitéria gave her hand — that joy would double his will and give him strength meet for repentance.

On hearing the wounded man's plea Don Quijote cried that Basilio sought a most reasonable and righteous thing, a thing easily accomplished moreover, for Señor Camacho would be as honoured in receiving the lady Quitéria as the widow of worthy Basilio as from the hand of her father. 'It means no more than a yea, which entails the mere pronouncing, since the marriage-bed of this wedding will be the grave.' Camacho heard this but it left him doubting, perplexed as to what to do or say. But the outcries of Basilio's friends were so persistent, demanding his assent lest the other's soul be lost, parting so wickedly from this life, that they moved, nay forced him to say that if Quitéria

gave assent, he would give sanction, since at most 'twas to delay only for a moment the fulfilment of their desires.

Thereupon all besieged Quitéria, and some with tears, some with persuasions, pressed her to give her hand to the poor Basilio. Harder than marble and stiller than a statue she apparently could not nor would have answered, had not the priest told her to make up her mind instantly, as Basilio's soul was already in his teeth. Then the fair bride, still silent and to all appearances confused, repentant and sad, drew near Basilio, lying there with eyes turned within, breathing short and with difficulty, muttering 'twixt his teeth the name of Quitéria, dying more like pagan than Christian. The girl stood over him and kneeling down rather by sign than word sought his hand. Basilio loosed his eyes and looking at her fixedly said: 'O Quitéria, why thus late hast thou relented when thy pity will serve but as a knife to give the last stroke, since no longer have I strength to suffer the glory thou givest nor to check the pain so soon darkening mine eyes with the dreadful shadow. Mine only prayer, O my fatal star, is that thou ask not my hand nor give thine by way of consolation, deceiving me a second time, but that, with no pressure on thy will, thou deliver thyself freely as to thy lawful husband. 'Tis not well in a crisis like this thou shouldst deceive or feign with one that has dealt openly with thee.' As the youth spake, he swooned, till the bystanders feared that each paroxysm would take his soul.

Quitéria, timid and utterly abashed, taking Basilio's hand in hers, said: 'No pressure would be great enough to turn my will, and with the freest possible I give my hand as thy lawful wife, receiving thine in turn, if thou give it as a reponsible being, unclouded and unconfused by the calamity whereinto thy fell purpose has plunged thee.' 'Thus do I give it,' said the other, 'not clouded or confused but with the clear understanding wherewith Heaven saw fit to endow me, and so engage myself as thy husband.' 'And I likewise as thy wife, whether thou live many years or whether this moment they take thee from mine arms to thy grave.' 'For a chap as wounded as all that,' murmured Sancho, 'he talks considerably. Let them bid him

drop his sighs and look to his soul, which methinks he has more on his tongue than 'twixt his teeth.'

Now that they had joined hands, the priest tenderly and in tears pronounced his blessing, praying Heaven to grant sweet repose to the spirit of the late-espoused. But he, as soon as he had received this benediction, leapt to his feet and with unheard-of rashness drew the rapier from its body-sheath. The crowd at first was dumfounded, till some of them, more credulous than curious, cried: 'Miracle, a miracle;' but Basilio answered: 'No miracle, miracle, but strategy, strategy.' The priest in amazement hastened to examine the wound and discovered that the blade had passed, not through the ribs and flesh of Basilio, but through a hollow iron tube, which had been fitted in place and filled, as later appeared, with blood that wouldn't congeal. The priest, Camacho and the crowd saw that they had been tricked and made fools of. The bride however showed no signs of distress, but rather, when she heard them say that the marriage, being fraudulent, wouldn't hold, declared she would confirm it anew; from which all gathered that this affair had been arranged with her knowledge and connivance.

So incensed were Camacho and his supporters at this turn that taking vengeance in hand and unsheathing many swords they made at Basilio. But for his protection almost as many others were drawn, and Don Quijote, taking the lead on horseback with couched lance and well covered by his shield, forced the assailants to give way. (Sancho, who never found solace or pleasure in such demonstrations, hurried back to the jars from which he had skimmed the delicious froth; it seemed to him that that spot, as a kind of holy place, would be held inviolable). Our champion cried with loud voice:

'Hold, sirs, hold! 'tis not just to avenge the ills of love. Consider how it and war are one and the same thing, and that even as in war 'tis lawful and customary to use snares and stratagems to overcome the enemy, so in the rivalries of love we countenance the plots and deceptions that serve to bring about the desired end, provided they don't disparage or dishonour the thing beloved. Quitéria was meant for Basilio and he for her by

a just and propitious ordering of the skies. Camacho is rich and can purchase his pleasure when, where and how he pleases. Basilio has but this ewe-lamb and none, however powerful, can deprive him thereof, for those whom God has joined, shall no man put asunder. He that attempts it must first pass through the point of this lance ;' which now he brandished so dexterously and decisively that all to whom he was unknown took fright. And so deeply did Quitéria's disdain become rooted in Camacho's thought that he expunged her from memory instantly. The priest's persuasions had weight with him therefore, and he and his followers became pacific and reconciled. As a sign thereof they sheathed their swords, blaming Quitéria's docility rather than her lover's strategy, Camacho reasoning that if the girl as maiden loved the other, no less would she as a wife, and that he ought to thank his stars he was rid of what would have proved a burden.

Now that he and his group were wholly conciliated, Basilio and his troop also quieted down. And the rich Camacho, to show he bore no resentment, desired that the merry-making proceed exactly as planned. However, neither the couple nor their friends cared to participate and withdrew to their village (for the poor, such as are virtuous and discreet, have followers to honour and aid them even as have the rich those that flatter and fawn upon them). They made Don Quijote of their company, considering him a man of worth and a stout one. The soul of Sancho was the only one darkened, for he saw he couldn't attend Camacho's splendid feasting and festival, which continued through that day. Beaten and sorrowful he followed his master in the train of Basilio, leaving behind the flesh-pots of Egypt, though carrying the memory thereof in his heart. The skimmings of the kettle, now almost done and gone, stood for the glory and abundance he was losing, and with aching heart, though full stomach, mounting his Dapple he followed on the heels of the nag.

CHAPTER XXII

The great adventure of the cave of Montesinos, in the heart of La Mancha, to which our worthy Don Quijote gave a happy issue

GR^{EAT} and many were the tokens of regard showered by the newly married pair on Don Quijote in return for his courageous defence of their cause — and on a par with his valour they set his wisdom, esteeming him a Cid in arms, a Cicero in eloquence. And three days did good Sancho enjoy himself at their cost. From them it was learned that the fictitious wounding hadn't been prearranged with Quitéria : Basilio had trusted that things would result as they did. He confessed, however, that he had made some of his friends party to the scheme that they might further his purpose at the critical moment, supporting his deceptions.

‘ Deceptions they cannot and should not be termed that look to honourable ends,’ said Don Quijote, ‘ and the marriage of lovers is most honourable. But yourself be warned that love’s greatest foe is hunger and continuous need, for love, especially after the lover possesses the thing beloved, is all happiness, love is all pleasure and joy, against which need and poverty are open and determined enemies. All this I say in the hope that Señor Basilio may cease to practise his various accomplishments, which, while they afford reputation, yield no profit, and that he may look to the increase of his estate by lawful means of industry, never lacking to the prudent and diligent. The poor and honourable man, if a poor man may so be termed, has in a beautiful wife a treasure, and if this be taken from him, his honour is slain. The beautiful and virtuous woman whose husband is poor deserves to be crowned with laurels and palms of victory and triumph. Beauty itself awakens desire in all beholders, who like royal eagles and high-soaring birds swoop down upon it as on an enticing decoy, and if to this beauty need and distress be

joined, even crows, kites and other birds of prey attack it, till she that remains firm against so many assaults deserves to be called the crown of her husband.

‘ Look ye, wise Basilio,’ continued the knight ; ‘ ’twas the opinion of a certain philosopher, I know not whom, that in all the world there was but one good woman, and he advised every man to think and believe this woman his wife and so live content. I am neither married nor thus far have thought of it, yet I would be so bold as to counsel him that asked me how to find the woman he should wed. First of all I should warn him to look more to reputation than to wealth, for a good woman profits not only by being good but by seeming so, and her honour suffers more from public scandal than secret corruption. If you bring a virtuous woman to your house, ’tis easy to preserve and even increase that virtue, but should you bring a bad, she’ll make it hard to reform her. To pass from one extreme to another is not the lightest thing in the world — I don’t say ’tis impossible but ’tis certainly next to it.’

Sancho overheard all and said to himself : ‘ This my master, when I speak things of pith and substance, is wont to say I could take a pulpit in hand and wander through this world preaching fine sayings, but now can I tell of him that when once he begins to thread ideas or give advice, he can take, not one in hand, but two pulpits on each finger and cry out through the market-places, What do ye lack ? To the devil with you for a knight-errant ! you know too much. I thought in my heart he could talk of naught but what touched his chivalries, but no, he pecks at and puts his spoon into everything.’ Sancho muttered this half-aloud and his master, catching some of it, turned and said : ‘ What do you murmur and say, Sancho ?’ ‘ I say nothing nor do I murmur,’ replied he ; I was just noticing to myself I would I had heard before I married what now you tell us, for then perhaps I could say, The untethered ox licks himself well.’ ‘ Is your Teresa as bad as all that, my son ?’ ‘ Teresa is not so very bad, but then again she’s not so very good, at least not so good as I might wish.’ ‘ You do wrong, Sancho, to speak ill of your wife, the very mother of your children.’ ‘ We shall be

even then, for she speaks ill of me sometimes, when she feels like it, especially when she's jealous : let Satan himself put up with her then. '

Three days were spent with the newly married couple, by whom they were served and entertained like kings. Don Quijote besought the fencer-licentiate to lend him a guide to the cave of Montesinos, which he longed to explore, seeing with his own eyes if the wonders reported of it throughout that district were true. The licentiate promised to lend him his first-cousin, a great student and devoted to books of chivalry, who would be glad to lead him to the mouth of the cave and on the way show him the lakes of Ruidera, famous not only in La Mancha but throughout Spain. He added that Don Quijote would find him entertaining, for the lad knew how to write books and dedicate them to princes.

In due time the cousin appeared, mounted on an ass in foal, whose pannel was covered with a piece of carpet or sackcloth of many colours. Sancho saddled Rocinante, got ready Dapple, furnished his saddlebags with which those of the cousin, also well-stocked, kept company, and commending themselves to God and taking leave of all they set out. As they rode along Don Quijote enquired of the student as to the kind and character of his pleasures, profession and studies, and the other answered that he was by profession a humanist, and that his pleasures and studies lay in writing books, all of great benefit and interest to the republic. One was entitled *The Book of Liveries*, wherein is described seven hundred and three liveries, with their colours, mottos and ciphers, wherefrom gentlemen of the court, at times of festivals and celebrations, might pick and choose, without pestering others or racking their own brains to get ones suited to their tastes and intentions. 'I offer to the jealous, the disdained, the forgotten and the absent, garbs appropriate to their condition and which shall fit them properly.

'Another book of mine,' he continued, 'I mean to call *Metamorphoses* or *The Spanish Ovid*, of new and rare invention, for therein, parodying Ovid, I identify the Giralda of Seville and the Angel of the Magdalen. I tell what was the Gutter of Cordova;

what the bulls of Guisando ; the Sierra Morena, the fountains of Leganitos and Lavapiés in Madrid, not forgetting that of the Diojo, of the Golden Gutter and of the Priora — all with their allegories, metaphors and transformations, in a manner that will at once amuse, amaze and edify. Still another book have I which I call Supplement to Polydore Virgil, which concerns itself with the invention of things and is graced with much erudition and learning, for I bring to light and set forth in an elegant fashion all the more important things omitted by Polydore. For example, he omitted to tell who first brought catarrh into the world, who first tried salivation as a cure for French pox. I set these matters right and cite more than twenty-five authorities. So your worship may see I have not laboured in vain and that such a book is likely to prove of use to mankind. ’

Sancho listened most attentively to the cousin’s words and now said : ‘ Tell me, sir, and may God give you luck with the sale of your books, can you inform me, and of course you can for you know everything, who was the first man to scratch his head ? My opinion is it must have been our father Adam. ’ ‘ Very likely, ’ replied the cousin, ‘ for there’s no doubt Adam had head and hair, and being the first man in the world, some time or other he would scratch himself. ’ ‘ So it looks to me, ’ said Sancho, ‘ but tell me now, who was the first tumbler ? ’ ‘ To be honest, brother, I cannot answer till I have read up a little. When I get back to my books I’ll look into the matter and report when next we meet, for this cannot be the last time. ’ ‘ Don’t bother, sir, for as it happens I have just hit on the answer : know then that the first tumbler in the world was Lucifer when they tossed him out of Heaven and he came tumbling down to hell. ’ ‘ Right you are, friend, ’ agreed the cousin, but Don Quijote added : ‘ That question and answer were not your own, Sancho ; you borrowed them from another. ’ ‘ Tut, tut, señor ; why, if I wanted to, I could ask questions and give answers and not be done by morning. Nay, nay, sir, in asking absurdities and replying nonsense I’ve no need of help from my neighbours. ’ ‘ You say more than you know, my son, for some are there that grow thin in learning and verifying things which when

known and proven aren't worth a chip either to the understanding or to the memory.'

In this and other pleasant converse they passed that day and at night put up at a small village whence, as the cousin informed Don Quijote, 'twas only two leagues to the cave of Montesinos and that did his determination hold to explore the same, they should provide themselves with rope wherewith to tie and slip him down the hole. Don Quijote replied that though it reached to the abyss, he must touch bottom. So they bought near a hundred fathoms, and on the next day at two reached the cave, whose mouth proved large around but so thickly overgrown with box-thorns, wild-fig, brambles and briars, as to be entirely concealed. The three dismounted, the cousin, Sancho and last of all Don Quijote, whom the others tied firmly; and while making fast Sancho said: 'Look to what you're doing, master; don't try to be buried alive or place yourself where you'll look a bottle let down a well to cool. 'Tis no affair or business of yours to pry into what may prove worse than a Moorish dungeon.' 'Tie me and tie that tongue, Sancho friend, for this enterprise was reserved for me and me alone.' And the guide said: 'Prithee, Señor Don Quijote, look well and examine with an hundred eyes what you find below. There may be things I could put into my book of transformations.' 'The drum's in hands that well know how to beat it,' remarked Sancho.

When this and the roping, which went not over the armour but about the doublet of the knight, were finished, the latter said: 'Twas heedless of us not to provide a little bell which, tied upon the rope not far above me, as it kept tinkling would let you know I still descended and was alive. But since that is impossible, be it in God's hand to guide me.' Thereupon he knelt down and in low tones prayed to Heaven to aid and give him happy issue out of this seemingly perilous and brand-new adventure, and then raising his voice he said: 'O mistress of mine acts and motions, peerless and fairest Dulcinea del Toboso, if it be possible that the prayers and petitions of this thy venturesome lover reach thine ears, by thy unparalleled beauty I beseech thee to heed them, for they're but to beg thee not to

deny thy favour and protection which now I so sorely need. I am about to plunge myself, drop and sink into the abyss that here opens, for no other reason than that the world may know that while thou favourest me there's naught so impossible but that I can face and defeat it.'

With this, Don Quijote neared the opening but could find no spot where he might be lowered into the cave, save by cutting a passage by force of arms. He therefore drew sword and began to hack and hew at the brambles that choked the mouth; at which noise and commotion a multitude of huge crows and jackdaws issued therefrom in such numbers and violence as to bowl the knight quite over, and had he been superstitious as he was good Catholic, taking it for evil omen, he'd have shunned entombment in such a place. At length he arose, and the cousin and Sancho, finding the passage free from crows and other night-birds such as bats, playing out the rope let down the errant into the cavern grim. As he sank, his squire, giving blessing and making a thousand crosses over him, cried aloud: 'God and the Rock of France and the Trinity of Gaeta guide thee, flower, cream and froth of adventurers. There thou goest, blusterer of the world, heart of steel, arms of brass. God guide thee once again, and send thee safe, sound and scot-free back to the light of this world which thou art leaving for burial in the obscurity thou seekest;' and the cousin repeated similar prayers and petitions.

The knight sank lower and lower, calling to give more rope and still more, which they did little by little, and when his cries, echoing up through the cavern, no longer could be heard, they were at the end of the hundred fathoms. Their first thought was to resurrect him at once, but they delayed a half-hour, and then as they pulled, the rope came slack, making them think him left within. Sancho wept bitterly and pulled with all speed to make sure, and at last, having reached as it seemed to them below the eighty fathom mark, they felt their load again. At this they rejoiced exceedingly and finally with but ten fathoms left they caught sight of him of the Sorry Aspect, to whom Sancho called: 'Welcome back, master of mine; we began to think you had remained to found a race.'

But Don Quijote answered not a word and when they had drawn him wholly out, they saw his eyes closed in sleep. They laid him on the ground and unfastened the rope, yet with all this he did not waken. They turned him first on this side, then on that, shook and rolled him over and over, till at length and after a long interval he came to, stretching himself as if wakened from deep and heavy slumber. Glancing about as if startled he sighed : ‘ God forgive you, friends, for having snatched me from the sweetest and most delightful spectacle and experience ever human has seen or lived. Indeed now am I certain that all the pleasures of this life are as a shadow and a dream and fade like the flower of the field. O unfortunate Montesinos ! O sorely-wounded Durandarte ! O unhappy Belerma ! O tearful Guadiana and ye others the sad daughters of Ruidera, whose waters are the waters of your wondrous eyes ! ’

The cousin and Sancho were most attentive to these words, that seemed painfully drawn from the knight’s very entrails. They asked their meaning and what had he witnessed in that hell. ‘ Hell do you call it ? then say not so, for you’ll straightway see ’tis unmerited.’ He asked to eat first, as he had a searching hunger. They spread the cousin’s packcloth on the green grass, quickly opened the saddlebags and sitting all three in good peace and fellowship dined and supped in one meal. The cloth removed Don Quijote de La Mancha said : ‘ Let none rise, and attend, my sons.’

CHAPTER XXIII

The marvellous things the consummate Quijote told of having beheld in the cave of Montesinos, the magnitude and impossibility of which have led this adventure to be deemed apocryphal

TWAS four in the afternoon when with diminished light and softened rays the sun behind clouds permitted our adventurer without heat or discomfort to relate to his two illustrious listeners the things he had witnessed in the cave of Montesinos. This was his opening : ‘ A matter of twelve or fourteen times a man’s height down in the depth of this dungeon and on the right hand is a side-recess large enough to hold a good-sized wagon with its team of mules. A thin ray of light penetrates that far, coming through a chink or crack in the crust of the upper earth. This recess and ledge I saw, what time, wearied and vexed with finding myself dangling on a rope, I descended through that dismal region with no certain and determined road. Accordingly I decided to enter therein and rest awhile, calling to you not to let out more rope till I ordered, but you must not have heard me.

‘ I pulled in the slack and making a coil thereof sat me down, a little sad and heavy I confess, wondering how I was to reach bottom, no longer having anything to hold to. While thus in trouble and suspense, suddenly and through no desire of mine was I overcome by a profound sleep and when least I expected it and without knowing how or why, I awoke and found myself in the middle of the loveliest and most delightful mead that nature could create or the liveliest wit imagine. I winked mine eyes, rubbed them and saw that I no longer slept but was awake in very truth. To make doubly sure I felt my forehead and breast to prove ’twas I, this very self, and not some empty and counterfeit phantom. The touch, the feeling, the very sequence of my thoughts, made me certain I it was, the same that am now here.

‘ Straightway I beheld a sumptuous royal palace or castle, whose walls and battlements shone as if of transparent crystal, and on the opening of two ponderous doors I saw approaching an old and venerable man, clad in a gown of murrey serge that trailed behind him. A collegiate band of green satin girt his shoulders and breast, a black Milan cap covered his head, his snow-white beard fell bellow his girdle. He bore, not arms, but in his hand a rosary of beads larger than walnuts and every tenth one resembling a common ostrich-egg. His countenance, mien, the dignity of his imposing presence, severally and together, held me in awe and admiration. Coming to where I stood he embraced me saying : ‘ O puissant knight of La Mancha, long ages have we that dwell in these enchanted solitudes awaited your arrival, that you might discover to the world what the profound depths of the cave of Montesinos, wherein you are entered, hold and conceal : a feat alone reserved for your invincible heart and marvellous courage. Follow me, most illustrious sir, for I would show you the marvels mewed up in this transparent castle, whereof am I the permanent governor and perpetual chief-warder, since I am that Montesinos from whom the cave takes its name. ’

‘ Scarce had he said he was Montesinos when I asked whether or no ’twere a true report of him in the world above, that with a little dagger he had cut out the heart of his friend Durandarte from the centre of his breast and carried it to the lady Belerma as bidden by the dying lover. He answered that all was true save as to the instrument employed, which was neither little nor a dagger but a polished poniard sharper than an awl. ‘ That same poniard, ’ suggested Panza, ‘ was most likely one of Ramon de Hoces the Sevillian’s make. ’ ‘ I can’t say, ’ replied Don Quijote ; ‘ but no, not he for Ramon de Hoces was of yesterday only, and the battle of Roncesvalles, where this incident occurred, was ages back. But the identification is of no importance and doesn’t affect or alter the truth or structure of the story. ’ ‘ Right, ’ said the cousin, ‘ and let your worship proceed, Señor Quijote, for I listen to your tale with the greatest possible pleasure. ’

‘ With no less I relate it, ’ replied the adventurer, ‘ and so I

say that venerable Montesinos led me into the crytalline palace, where in a lower hall of surprising coolness and all of alabaster stood a marble sepulchre of exquisite workmanship. Thereon at full length lay a knight, not of bronze or marble or carved in jasper as on other tombs, but of flesh and bone. His right hand — which to my seeming was rather sinewy and hirsute, proof that its owner possessed great strength — rested above his heart, but before I could enquire of Montesinos, he observing my amazement turned and said : ‘ That is my friend Durandarte, flower and mirror of the valiant enamoured knights of his time. Like myself and many others, men and women, he is held enchanted here by that French magician Merlin, whom they would have a son of the devil ; but I must think that he knew one point more than the devil. How or why he enchanted us, none can guess, but methinks the time that shall reveal it is not far distant.

‘ ‘ Mine own puzzle is a different one : I am as sure as that it is now day that Durandarte expired in mine arms and that after his death with these very hands I cut his heart out, and in sooth it must have weighed a couple of pounds, for according to the natural philosophers he that has a large heart is endued with greater courage. This being a fact then, that this knight veritably perished, how can he sigh and moan from time to time as if he lived ? ’ As Montesinos said this, the poor wretch on the tomb cried out :

‘ O my cousin Montesinos,
This I made my last request,
As I lay upon my death-bed
And my soul had left my breast :
That thou come and carve my heart out
With a poniard or a sword,
With it hasten and present it
To Belerma, my adored. ’

‘ Upon this outburst the venerable Montesinos knelt before the wounded knight and with tears said to him : ‘ Long since, O my most beloved cousin, have I done what you commanded on that fatal day of our loss. I cut your heart out as best I could, without leaving the smallest string thereof in your breast. I wiped it with a kerchief of point-lace and set out on the run for France,

having first laid your body in the bosom of the earth with tears sufficient to wash my hands and cleanse me from the blood got from travelling in your reins. More by token, O cousin of my soul, at the first village after Roncesvalles I salted down the heart a mite, lest it smell and that it might come, if not fresh, at least dry and clean into the presence of the lady Belerma. She and you and I and Guadiana your armour-bearer, and the dame Ruidera, her seven daughters and two nieces, together with many others of your friends and acquaintance, are held enchanted here by the sage Merlin these many years, and though already five hundred have passed, none of us is dead.

‘ ‘ Ruidera, her daughter and nieces abide no longer with us, for them Merlin, moved doubtless by compassion for their tears, converted into as many lakes, which now in the world of the living and the province of La Mancha are called the lakes of Ruidera. Seven belong to the kings of Spain, and the two nieces to the knights of the most holy order of Saint John. Your shield-bearer Guadiana, likewise bewailing your fate, bearing his own name became a river, which, on reaching the surface and seeing the sun of another sky, sank back again into the bowels of the earth — such was his sense of the loss of you. Nevertheless, not being able to check his natural flow, from time to time he rises and appears where the sun and the sons of men behold him. The lakes of Ruidera supply him with their waters, with which and many others he enters with pomp and pride into Portugal. And yet, where’er he flows, he betrays his grief and melancholy, nor is he pleased to breed in his current fish toothsome and esteemed, but coarse ones rather and tasteless, quite unlike those of the golden Tagus.

‘ ‘ But all this that now I tell, cousin, I have told you many, many times before, but as you never reply, I fear that either you don’t believe or don’t hear me, and God only knows what I suffer thereby. But to-day have I hit on a bit of real news which, though it assuage not your sorrow, will in no way increase it. Know that you have before you (open your eyes and you will see him) that great knight of whom so many things sage Merlin has prophesied, that Don Quijote de La Mancha, who anew and

with better success than in former ages has revived in the present one the already forgotten order of knight-errantry, by whose means and favour we may be disenchanted, since great deeds for great men are reserved.' 'And if this shall not be, O cousin,' sighed the wounded Durandarte in a low voice of despair, 'failing that, my counsel is, Patience and shuffle the cards;' and turning on one side he sank into his old silence with never a word more.

'Just then loud outcries and lamentations mingled with deep groans and sobs of pain were heard throughout the palace, and when I turned, I saw through the crystal walls a two-filed procession of fairest maidens, clad in mourning with white turbans on their heads, Turkish fashion. Behind walked a lady, at least her grave demeanour so betokened, likewise clothed in black, with white veil so ample and flowing as to kiss the ground. Her turban was twice the size of the biggest of the others. Her eyebrows met, her nose seemed rather flat, her mouth large and her lips red. Her teeth, for occasionally she showed them, appeared scattered and ill-placed, though white as peeled almonds. In her hands she bore a fine kerchief and resting therein I glimpsed a heart of mummy-flesh, it looked so dry and withered.

'Montesinos informed me that these persons were servants of Durandarte and Belerma, enchanted along with their lord and mistress. She always brought up the rear with the heart in her kerchief, since four days a week they formed that procession and sang, or better say wept, dirges over the body and lacerated heart of his cousin. If Belerma looked rather plain to me, or not so fair as report painted, the cause was the bad nights and worse days of her enchantment, as could be seen by the dark circles under her eyes and her sickly colour, not due to the common ailment of women, since not for months and years had she been subject thereto, but to the grief her heart felt for that other heart she ever holds in her hands. It renews in her breast and brings to her mind the tragedy of her ill-fated lover. Otherwise, said he, the great Dulcinea del Toboso, though renowned in all those parts and even throughout the world, would scarce equal her beauty, grace and bearing.

‘ ‘ Come, come, Señor Montesinos, ’ quoth I then ; ‘ tell your tale as it comes, knowing that all comparison is odious and there’s no reason to compare aught with aught. The peerless Dulcinea is what she is and the lady Belerma what she is and has been, and there let it rest. ’ ‘ Señor Don Quijote, I crave pardon, for I confess I did wrong and said ill, since ’twas enough for me to have known that your worship was her knight, as I did by some token or other, to have bit out my tongue before comparing Dulcinea with aught save heaven. ’ With this satisfaction paid me by the great Montesinos I quieted my heart from the shock of hearing my lady likened to Belerma. ’ ‘ Indeed I marvel, ’ exclaimed Sancho, ‘ that you didn’t get the old boy under you, kick his bones to splinters and tear out every hair of his head. ’ ‘ Nay, Sancho friend, ’twas not fitting, since we’re bound to respect the aged though not knights, but chiefly such as are and enchanted to boot. I know I owe him naught on the many other questions and answers that passed between us. ’

The cousin now spoke up saying : ‘ I cannot understand, Señor Don Quijote, how you could have seen so much and held such long conversation in so short a space of time. ’ ‘ How long was I ? ’ ‘ A trifle over an hour, ’ declared Sancho. ‘ You must be mistaken, for the sun rose and set three times ; according to my reckoning I was in those parts three days, removed and hidden from you. ’ ‘ My master must be right, for all things befall him by enchantment and it might well be that what to us seemed an hour, down there to him would seem three days and nights. ’ ‘ Even so, ’ said Don Quijote. ‘ And did you break fast in all that time ? ’ asked the cousin. ‘ Not by a mouthful, nor was I hungry, even in thought. ’ ‘ And do the enchanted eat ? ’ ‘ No, nor defecate, though ’tis reported that their nails, hair and beard grow. ’ ‘ And do they sleep perhaps ? ’ queried the squire. ‘ Certainly no ; at least in the three days I abode there, none so much as closed an eye, and I as little. ’

‘ Here, ’ said Sancho, ‘ fits in well the proverb that says, Tell me the company you keep, and I will tell you what you are. Your worship’s companions were enchanted, fasting and wide-awake fellows, so ’tis no wonder you neither slept nor ate while with

them, though, craving pardon, sir, may God, I was about to say the devil, take me, if I believe one word of it all.' 'How not?' quoth the cousin; 'is it for Señor Don Quijote to lie? Though he had wished to, there wasn't time to make up or imagine so many myriads of falsehoods.' 'I don't think he lied,' responded Sancho. 'What do you think?' asked the knight. 'I think that yon Merlin or whoever it was that enchanted all that motley crew you say you saw and communicated with there below dumped into your mind or noddle the heap of rubbish you've already told us and all there is to tell.'

'That might be the case, Sancho, but it isn't, for what I have related, I beheld with mine own eyes and touched with these very hands. And what will you say when I tell that among other things and marvels that Montesinos showed me (which at leisure and on fit occasions I'll rehearse in the course of our journey, since now they'd be out of place), he pointed out three peasant-girls, who about those charming fields went frisking and frolicing like she-goats. Scarce had I observed when I recognised in one of them the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso and in the others the two that accompanied her and with whom we spoke just outside el Toboso. I asked Montesinos did he know them. He answered nay but he supposed them ladies of quality under enchantment; they had been there a few days only. I mustn't be surprised at this, he added, for many other ladies both of past and present were enchanted down there under different and outlandish figures, among whom he recognised Queen Guinevere and her duenna Quintañoa, the one that poured wine for Lancelot when from Brittany he came.'

On hearing this last speech Sancho thought he would lose his wits or die altogether of laughter, inasmuch as he knew the truth of the feigned enchantment of Dulcinea, whereof he had been the enchanter and chief witness. Now he knew beyond reasonable doubt that his lord was a lackwit, an all-round madman; so he said: 'By evil accident, at a worse season and on a fatal day, dear patron mine, did your worship descend into the lower world, and hapless the hour you fell in with Señor Montesinos who has so changed you for us. Heretofore

your worship was clothed and in your right mind, such as God gave you, speaking maxims and giving counsel at every turn ; not in the least as you are now, uttering the wildest absurdities imaginable.' ' Knowing you, Sancho, I heed not your words.' ' And I as little your worship's, though you strike, nay, kill me for those I've said or those I shall say, unless your worship correct and amend yours. But tell me, sir, now we are at peace, how or by what token did you recognise our lady ? if you spake to her, what did you say and what did she reply ?'

' I knew her by her clothes, the same she wore when you first pointed her out. I spake but she answered not a word ; indeed she turned her back and flew off with such speed an arrow wouldn't have reached her. I was about to follow and should have done so, had not Montesinos warned me not to take vain trouble — the more that the hour was approaching for my ascent from the cavern. He said too that in course of time he'd advise me how himself, Belerma, Durandarte and the others were to be disenchanted. But of all I saw and noted there below the thing that distressed me most was that while Montesinos thus conversed with me, there drew near from one side without my seeing her one of cheerless Dulcinea's companions, saying in low and tremulous voice and with tears : ' My lady Dulcinea del Toboso kisses your worship's hands and beseeches you as ardently as possible to be pleased to lend on this new dimity petticoat a half-dozen reals or as many as you have, which she promises very soon to repay. '

' I was struck dumb by this request, but at length, turning to my guide, said : ' Is it possible, Señor Montesinos, the enchanted of quality suffer need ?' ' Believe me, Señor Don Quijote de La Mancha, this they call need obtains everywhere and visits all : not even the enchanted does it pass. And since the lady sends to borrow the six reals and the security appears sound, there's naught but to give them, since she is doubtless sore pressed.' ' The security I refuse,' I replied, ' nor can I lend all she demands, for I have but four reals on my person.' These I handed her — the ones you, Sancho, gave me the other day to give to the poor we met along our road. In addition I said : ' Tell

your mistress, friends, that her cares weigh on my heart and I would I were a Fugger to remedy them. I'd also have her know that I cannot nor ought to enjoy health while bereft of her pleasant company and discreet conversation, and I supplicate her as ardently as possible to be good enough to let herself be seen and communicated with by this her humble servant and wayworn adventurer. You will say as well that when least she looks for it she'll hear I've taken vow and oath after the manner of the Marquis of Mantua for avenging his nephew Baldwin, whom he found expiring on the mountain. This oath was not to eat bread off a cloth, with other trifles named therein, till he had avenged the other's death. This now shall I do, nor rest from visiting the seven parts of the world with even greater diligence than Prince Pedro of Portugal, until I disenchant her.'

'The damsel then made answer: 'All this and more your worship owes my lady;' and taking the four reals instead of a low bow she cut a caper that raised her two yards in the air.' 'As the Lord liveth!' cried Sancho, 'can such things be? can enchanters and enchantments have such power as to turn my master's sound judgment into crazy nothings? O señor, señor, for the love of God look to yourself. For your honour's sake come back, no longer putting trust in these phantoms that have rifled you and made away with your wits.' 'I know you wish me well in so speaking, Sancho, but you are not versed in the things of the world, and all a little difficult seem to you impossible. But the time will come, as I said before, when I shall relate certain of my experiences there below that will make you believe those already given, the truth whereof admits not of doubt or reply.'

CHAPTER XXIV

A thousand trifles both necessary and impertinent to the true understanding of this great history

HE that translated this great history from Cid Hamet Benengeli's original says that on coming to the chapter of the cave of Montesinos adventure he found written in the margin in Hamet's own writing these words :

' I cannot believe nor am I able to persuade myself that all that is written in the accompanying chapter actually befell our worthy Don Quijote. All the adventures so far met with have been feasible and likely, but this one of the cave has no chance, as far as I can see, of being regarded as fact, since it passes far beyond the bounds of reason. But for me to think that Don Quijote, the soul of truth and noblest knight of his times, lied, is not possible : he wouldn't have perjured himself had they pierced him with arrows. Moreover, I reflect that relating it with all the present details he couldn't have invented so much nonsense in so short a time. If this adventure appear apocryphal therefore, mine is not the blame, for I record it without affirming it true or false. Do you, reader, since you are discreet, judge of it as it appears to you, for I neither can nor should do more. One thing is certain that at the time of his death he is said to have retracted it, confessing he had evolved it out of his own consciousness, since it squared so well with the adventures described in his books of chivalry. ' Then the historian proceeds with the narrative saying :

The cousin was amazed both at Sancho's boldness and his master's patience with him, and judged that from the pleasure experienced by the latter at the sight of his Dulcinea, though under enchantment, arose the amiableness he now gave evidence of ; otherwise the words and speeches of Sancho should have got him a beating, for verily the squire had appeared impudent. To the master the cousin now said :

‘ I, Señor Don Quijote, consider this day as exceedingly well spent, for on it I have gained four things. First of all, I have formed your worship’s acquaintance, which I count great felicity. Secondly, I have learned what lies hidden in the cave of Montesinos, together with the mutations of the Guadiana and of the lakes of Ruidera, which will serve me for the Spanish Ovid I have in the works. Thirdly, I now know the age of playing-cards, that they were already employed in Charlemagne’s time, as may be gathered from the words you report Durandarte as using when at the end of Montesinos’ long harangue he wakened and said, Patience and shuffle the cards. The enchanted one could have learned such a spirit and manner of speaking nowhere save in France under that emperor. And this discovery comes very apt for the other book I am composing, namely the Supplement to Polydore Virgil on the Invention of Antiquities. This author, I believe, doesn’t think to date the antiquity of playing cards, so I shall now, which will be of considerable importance, especially as I can quote so exact and serious an authority as Señor Durandarte. The fourth and last thing whereby I have profited this day is having learned with certitude the source of the Guadiana, heretofore unknown. ’

‘ Your worship has reason to be grateful, ’ replied Don Quijote ; ‘ but I should be interested to hear, provided God favour you to the extent that a license is granted for the printing of these books, which I doubt, to whom you think to dedicate them. ’ ‘ There are enough grandees and nobles in Spain. ’ ‘ There are not many to whom they could be addressed ; not that these lords don’t deserve this attention, but because they don’t care to be bound to the debt of gratitude apparently owed an author for his labour and courtesy. One nobleman I know that could supply the lack of others and in such good measure that dared I say how bountifully I might awaken envy in more than one generous breast. But let’s leave this to a fitter time and go and seek where we may pass the night. ’

‘ Not far hence, ’ offered the cousin, ‘ is a hermitage where dwells a man said once to have been a soldier and believed to be a good Christian, a clever talker and hospitable besides.

Nearby stands a small cottage, built at his own cost, which though small is large enough to receive guests.' 'Would he be likely to keep hens?' queried Sancho. 'Few are without them,' replied Don Quijote; 'nowadays hermits are not as were their brothers of the Egyptian deserts, who clad themselves with palm-leaves and lived on roots of the trees. Don't think however that in praising those I disparage these: I merely maintain that the penances endured by modern hermits don't approach the rigid disciplines undergone by the ancient. At the same time all may be good men: at least I ever so judge them, and at worst the hypocrite pretending to goodness does less harm than the flagrant sinner.'

While thus discoursing they saw approaching a man walking briskly, striking a mule laden with lances and halberds. Drawing near he saluted and passed on, but Don Quijote called after him: 'Stay a while, my good man; it looks as if you travelled too fast for the mule.' 'I can't delay, sir, for this armour must do duty to-morrow and so I bid you farewell. Would you know why I carry it, to-night I lodge in the inn above the hermitage and if that be your direction, there you will find me and hear wonders; and good-bye again.' With this he pricked his mule so strenuously that our knight had no time to ask what were these marvels, and being a bit curious and eager ever for new knowledge he ordered that they set out at once and pass the night at that inn, not touching at the hermitage as the cousin had advised.

All three mounted and took the straight road to the hostelry, where they arrived a little before dusk. The cousin moved Don Quijote that they wander down to the hermitage for a quaff. No sooner did Sancho hear this than he turned Dapple thither, followed by his companions. But his ill-luck apparently had it that the hermit was away from home — so said his deputy whom they found within. And when they asked her for some of the dear good stuff, she replied her master had none but that wished they cheap water, she'd be happy to give it. 'Had it been a water-thirst,' said Sancho, 'there were enough wells by the roadside to have quenched it. Ah, ye nuptials of Camacho and

plenty of Don Diego's house, how oft have I missed you !'

They accordingly turned back to the inn, soon overtaking a youth, walking rather slowly ahead of them. On his shoulder he carried a sword with a bundle swung from it, supposedly containing clothes. These might be his breeches, cloak and a sark or two, for all he had on was a short velvet jacket worn shiny like satin, beneath which his shirt-tail appeared. His stockings were of silk and his hoes squared after the court manner. He was perhaps of eighteen or nineteen years, showed a merry countenance and looked slight of body. To beguile the tedium of his way he sang ditties and as they came up was singing the last verse of one (which the cousin noted in memory) running as follows :

For want of cloth and bread
To the wars I must go ;
If I were rich instead,
This would never be so.

Don Quijote was the first to accost him saying : ' You travel very lightly, sir gallant, and whither bound, if you care to tell ? ' To this the stripling replied : ' The lightness of my dress is due to heat and poverty, and I am bound for the wars. ' ' How due to poverty ? ' asked the knight ; ' because of the heat it may well be. ' ' In this bundle, ' replied the lad, ' are a pair of velvet breeches, companions to this jacket. If I wear them out on the road, I couldn't sport them in the city, and as I haven't means to buy others, as well as to keep cool, I go as I am till I reach, not twelve leagues hence, certain companies of infantry, with whom I shall enlist. Thence there will be baggage-wagons in which to travel to the port of embarkation, said to be Cartagena. For I'd rather have the king for my lord and master and serve him in war than some penniless duffer at court. '

' And does your worship get a bounty perchance ? ' enquired the cousin. ' Had I served some Spanish grandee or other titled personage, I reckon I could, for that is what helps the faithful and sends them up from the servants'-hall to be ensigns or captains or some good pay. But I, to my sorrow, have always been in the hire of fortune-hunters and adventurers, who were on pay and

ration so wretchedly small that to keep ruffs in starch made away with half, and 'twould be considered a miracle if a page-adventurer like myself had any luck, no matter how slight.' 'But tell me on your life, friend,' questioned Don Quijote, 'do you mean to say that in all the years you have served others you never donned a livery?' 'Two; but even as some religious houses remove the habit and return his clothes to one that leaves before making profession, so my masters returned mine when, having finished their business at court, they came home, taking back the liveries they had given but for show.'

'A notable spilorceria (stinginess)! as the Italians would say,' exclaimed Don Quijote; 'but withal you are fortunate in having left court on so worthy a quest, for naught on earth is of greater honour and profit than first to serve God and next your king and natural lord, especially in the exercise of arms, which win, if not greater riches, at least more worship than letters, as I have maintained again and again. Though letters may have founded more estates, arms has I know not what of advantage: a certain I know not what of glory is found in soldiers, surpassing all. And this that I am now to say, keep in memory, since 'twill be of great service and comfort in your labours. It is that you dismiss from your mind all fear of misfortunes, for the worst is death, and be it honourable, the greatest of all things is to die. They once asked Julius Cæsar, that worthy Roman emperor, which was the best death. He replied that which came unexpected, of a sudden and unforeseen. Though he answered as a pagan without knowledge of the true God, he said well, as far as the sparing of human suffering is concerned. Though they kill you in the first engagement and onset, whether by cannon-ball or springing of a mine, what matters it? it's all dying and the thing is done; and according to Terence better appears a soldier dead on the battle-field than alive in flight.'

'The good soldier wins so much of fame as he has shown of obedience to his captains and others in comand. This too observe, my son: that to the fighter powder smells sweeter than civet; and should old age still find you in this honourable calling, though you may be covered with wounds and crippled or lame,

at least it cannot find you without honour, and such honour as no poverty can cloud ; the more as 'tis being ordered that old and crippled soldiers shall have care and relief. Nor is it just that they be treated like negro-slaves who, when too old for service, are driven from estates with the title of freemen, though thereby made bondmen of hunger, wherefrom they have no hope of release save in death. For the nonce I'll say no more, but do you mount the crupper of this my steed till we reach the inn. There shall we sup together and in the morning you can pursue your journey, which may God grant as successful as your intentions deserve. '

The page accepted the invitation to supper but refused that to the crupper ; and at the end Sancho is said to have murmured to himself : ' God bless thee for a master ! is it possible that one who can speak so many and such good things as he has now spoken, should say he has seen all that impossible clap-trap of the cave of Montesinos ? Ah, well, time will tell. ' They reached the inn just as night shut down, not without pleasure to the squire who saw that his master took it for a plain, ordinary inn and not a castle, as was his wont. No sooner had they entered than Don Quijote enquired for the man with lances and halberds and the innkeeper informed him he was in the stable attending to his mule. The cousin and Sancho did the same for their live-stock, according the best berth and manger to Rocinante.

CHAPTER XXV

The adventure of the braying and the rare one of the puppet-showman, together with memorable divinations of the divining ape

As the saying runs, the bread wouldn't bake for Don Quijote till he had heard and informed himself of the wonders promised by the porter of the arms. He therefore searched for him in the stable and when he had found him, asked the fellow to deliver at once whatever he had to say in answer to the ques-

tion put to him on the road. 'The story of the wonders I have to tell,' replied the man, 'must be told at more leisure and not standing. Pray, sir, let me finish feeding my mule and I'll then tell things to surprise you.' 'Let it not wait for that,' said Don Quijote, 'for I'll give you a lift all around;' and so he did, sifting the barley and cleaning the manger — humility that forced the other to tell with good-will the story asked of him. Seating himself on the inn-bench next Quijote, and having as a senate and audience the cousin, page, Sancho Panza and the innkeeper, he made this beginning :

'Your worship must be told that in a village lying four and a half leagues from this inn a certain alderman through the deception and trickery of his maid-servant (it's a long story) lost an ass, and though he made most thorough search, could not discover him. Fifteen days may have passed, so 'tis said and recorded, when, as the alderman loitered in the plaza, another alderman of the same village thus accosted him : 'Hand over the reward, brother, for your ass has been found.' 'So I will and a handsome one but first tell me where.' 'Off on the mountain; I saw him this morning without pannel or trappings and wofully thin. I tried to catch him but he was so shy and wild that, as I drew near, he ran and disappeared in the deep woods. Let us return, if you like, and hunt him out. I'll first leave this jenny at home and be back at once.' 'Greatly shall I be your debtor and shall try to pay you in the same coin.' With these particulars and in the very manner I now relate it the tale is told by all in a position to know.

'In short the two alderman went on foot and hand in hand off to the mountain and arriving at the place where they expected to find the ass, found not a trace of it in all those parts, though long their search. When at length the animal did not appear, the alderman that had seen it said to the other : 'Look, friend, I have hit on a scheme whereby we can certainly discover the little beast, though buried in the bowels of the earth, let alone the wood. It is that I know how to bray marvellously and if you can bray a little, consider the business as done.' 'A little you say! i'faith I yield to no man, nay, not to asses themselves.' 'Well,

let us see, for my scheme is that you make the circuit of the hill on one side and I on the other till we meet, and from time to time do you bray and I'll bray, and the ass is sure to hear and bray in reply, if he be anywhere about.' To this the owner answered : ' The scheme is capital, brother, and worthy your great wit : ' and the two accordingly separated.

' But it fell out that, entering the wood, both brayed at the same time, and each, deceived by the other's braying, hurried in search, thinking it the ass. On meeting, the first alderman said : ' Is it possible, brother, that it wasn't mine ass that brayed ? ' ' 'Twas only I, ' replied the other. ' Then all I can say is that, as far as braying is concerned, 'twixt you and an ass there's not the slightest difference, for in all my life I've never seen or heard anything more natural. ' ' Such extreme praises, ' replied the originator of the scheme, ' fit you better than me, brother, for by the God that made me you can give two brays handicap to the best and most experienced brayer known. Your note is high, pitch of the voice in tune and compass, the cadences come thick and fast. In short I confess my defeat and grant you the palm of victory and the colours of this singular accomplishment. ' ' Henceforth, ' replied the owner, ' I shall think better of myself, and since I have this one grace, consider that I know something. Though I hoped I was braying well, I never imagined 'twas as fine as you say. ' ' There are rare gifts lost in this world, ' replied the second, ' and many wasted on persons that don't know their use. ' ' Mine ', returned the owner of the ass, ' isn't likely to benefit save on occasions similar to this, in which, please God, may it bring luck. '

' This said, they returned to their brayings, but at each outbreak they were fooled and came together, until they devised two brays in succession as a countersign to show they were themselves and not the ass. Yet with this doubling of their calls throughout those woods not once did the lost beast reply ; how could he, since the ill-fated creature lay in the thickest of the undergrowth devoured by wolves ? On finding him the owner said : ' I was indeed surprised that he didn't acknowledge our salutes for, had he not been dead, he'd surely have brayed or he

were no ass. However, by reason of having heard you bray and with such rare grace, brother, I consider I have profited by the labour spent in his search, though I found him dead.' 'After you, friend; if the abbot sings well, the acolyte isn't far behind.' In bad humour and hoarse voice they made their way back to the village, where they related to their friends, neighbours and acquaintances all that had occurred in their search for the ass, each enlarging on the other's skill in braying.

'All this was hawked abroad through the surrounding villages and the devil, that never sleeps and delights in sowing discord and enmity everywhere, raising calumnies in the wind and great confusion out of nothing, brought it about that the folk of the adjacent towns, on meeting any from ours, commenced to bray, as if to throw in our faces the braying of our aldermen. The small boys took it up, which was like giving it into the hands and mouths of all the fiends of hell. The braying has spread from village to village to the extent that the natives of our own are now universally known as brayers, as surely as are negroes differentiated from whites. And so far has the unlucky joke been carried, that more than once the brayers have sallied forth against the jesters in armed squadrons, without king or Roque or fear or shame being able to prevent it. To-morrow, I believe, or the day following, the people of my town, the braying one, intend to take the field against those of another about two leagues off and foremost among our persecutors, and that they may go forth well-prepared I bought those halberds and lances you saw me carrying. These are the marvels I said I had to tell you, and though you don't think them such, I have no others.'

Just as the good man gave an end to this his story, there entered the inn-door one clad in chamois-hose, breeches and doublet, calling in a loud voice: 'Señor host, have you room? here comes the divining ape and the puppet-show of the Rescue of Melisendra.' 'Body of me!' exclaimed the innkeeper, 'if here isn't Master Pedro! a fine evening is in store for us.' I forgot to mention that said Pedro had his left eye and almost half the cheek covered with a patch of green taffeta, as if something ailed that side of his face. And the innkeeper added: 'Your

worship is indeed welcome, friend ; but where are the ape and show ? ' ' Coming, ' replied he of the chamois-skin ; ' I hurried on ahead to learn if there were room. ' ' I'd turn out the Duke of Alva to make quarters for Master Pedro, ' replied the host ; ' fetch them along, for people are stopping here to-night that will pay to see them. ' ' So be it and well, ' replied he of the patch ; ' I'll lower the price of admission and with bare expenses met rest satisfied. I'll go and fetch the cart in which they travel ; ' and therewith he left the inn. Don Quijote at once questioned the host as to who this Master Pedro was, and what the show and ape he carried.

' The fellow is famous as a puppet-showman, who now for some time past has been going about this La Mancha of Aragon, exhibiting a puppet-show entitled the Rescue of Melisendra by the celebrated Don Gaiferos, and believe me 'tis one of the rarest and best acted stories seen for many years in this part of the kingdom. He also carries an ape with him of the strangest talent ever known among apes or, 'tis thought, among men. To whatever is asked he listens attentively and then, springing upon his master's shoulder, whispers the reply in the ear of Master Pedro, who straightway declares it. Of the past he reveals more than of the present, and though not always right, so seldom fails that we're led to think the devil's in him. Two reals he gets for every question, provided he reply — if his master, that is, reply for him after the ape has muttered in his ear. 'Tis supposed therefore that this Pedro is very rich ; at any rate he's a gallant fellow and a boon companion, as they say in Italy, and leads the best life in the world. He talks more than six, drinks more than a dozen — all at the cost of his tongue, his ape and the puppets. '

Master Pedro was now back again and in his cart came the show and the ape, a large tailless fellow with buttocks bare like felt ; but his visage was not a bad one. Scarce had Don Quijote seen him when he said : ' Tell me, your worship, señor diviner, what fish do we catch ? what's in store for us ? See, here are my two reals ; ' bidding Sancho give the money to Master Pedro, who replied for the ape : ' This animal, sir, doesn't inform or answer correctly concerning things that are to come. Of the past

he knows a thing or two and of the present still more.' 'I swear by Rus,' quoth Sancho, 'I wouldn't give a farthing for them to tell me what has passed in my life, for who knows it better than myself? and to pay to hear what I already know would be foolishness. But if he knows the present, here are my two reals, and tell me, goodman monkey, what's my wife Teresa Panza doing now? how does she cheer herself?' Master Pedro refused to take the money, saying: 'I prefer to receive the pay after the service,' giving with his right hand two slaps to his left shoulder. With one leap the ape jumped thereon and putting his mouth to his master's ear began to chatter rapidly, and having kept up this operation for the space of a credo with another leap jumped down again. Master Pedro immediately knelt before Don Quijote and clutching his legs thus addressed him:

'When I embrace these legs it's as if I embraced the pillars of Hercules, O illustrious renewer of long-forgotten errantry! O thou never-adequately-praised Don Quijote de La Mancha, courage of the sick-at-heart, crutch of the falling, arm of the fallen, staff and good counsel to all wretched humanity!' The knight was thunder-struck, Panza thrown into a cold sweat, the cousin astonished, the page amazed, the man from Braytown stupified and the innkeeper utterly dumfounded to know what to make of it: in short all were appalled that heard these words of the showman, who now proceeded: 'And thou, O good Sancho Panza, the best squire of the best knight in the world, rejoice that thy good wife Teresa is well and at this moment combing a pound of flax. More by token she has by her left side a broken-lipped pitcher containing a quantum of wine and 'tis with this she cheers herself.' 'I can well believe it,' returned Sancho, 'for she's a blessed one, and were she not so jealous I wouldn't swap her for the giantess Andandona who, master says, was all there. My Teresa is not one to let herself fare ill, though her heirs pay for it.'

'Now do I assert,' said Don Quijote, 'that he that reads and travels much, sees many sights and gains much knowledge. For what mere argument would have persuaded me there were apes in the world that divine, as now I have seen with mine own

eyes, since I am that very Quijote this animal has named. He has strained himself a bit in my praise, but whatever I be, thank Heaven I am endowed with a gentle and compassionate nature, inclined to do good to all and evil to none.' 'Had I money,' spoke up the page, 'I should ask mister ape what my luck will be on my journey.' To this Master Pedro, who had raised himself from Don Quijote's feet, replied: 'I've just said that the little beast doesn't answer concerning the future; if he could, money would be no object, since for the service of this knight I would forego all the earnings in the world. And now as I am in his debt and to afford him pleasure, I'm going to make ready my puppets and amuse you all free of charge.' The keeper was overjoyed and pointed out the place where the show might be set up.

Our hero was not wholly satisfied with the ape's divinations, since it seemed preposterous that a mere animal could divine past or future. Accordingly, while Pedro was preparing his show, he retired with Sancho to a corner of the stable where, unheard of any, he said to him: 'Well, brother, I've been carefully considering the extraordinary talent of this ape and I have arrived at the conclusion that Master Pedro has a pact, tacit or expressed, with Satan.' 'If the pack comes expressed from the devil,' said Sancho, 'tis sure to be a dirty one. But what use are packs to this fellow Pedro?' 'You misunderstand me, friend: I mean to say he must have made a bargain with Satan whereby the ape is gifted with this peculiar talent. That is the way he makes a living, and when he becomes rich, he'll give the devil his soul which is what mankind's universal enemy aims at.

'What inclines me to this belief is the fact that the ape only tells of the past or present — the exact extent of the devil's knowledge. The future he knows only by conjecture and intermittently, for to God alone is reserved to know the times and seasons and with him there is no past or future. This being true, as it is, 'tis clear that this ape speaks after the manner of the devil and I wonder that he hasn't been denounced to the Holy Office, brought up for examination and the truth wrung from him as to by whose power he divines. For 'tis certain he's no astrol-

oger : neither he nor his master knows how to raise those figures termed judiciary, now of such common use in Spain that there's no maid-servant, page or old cobbler that doesn't presume to raise a figure as easily as pick up a knave of cards, making the wonderful truths of science ridiculous by their ignorance and lies.

' I know of a certain woman that asked one of those horoscope-makers whether or no her little lap-dog bitch would breed and bring forth, how many and what the colour of the pups. To this, after drawing the figure, sir astrologer replied yes, she would breed and bear three pups, one green, one flesh-colour and the third motley, provided she were covered 'twixt eleven and twelve, day or night, on Monday or Saturday. What occurred was that in two days the bitch died of colic, but sir horoscoper won great reputation in his art, like all or most of them.' ' None the less,' replied Sancho, ' I would that you ask the ape whether what befell your worship in the cave of Montesinos was true or not for, begging your pardon, I still must think it all humbug and a lie, or at best a dream.' ' It may have been,' replied his master, ' and I'll do what you advise, though I am still a little skeptical of the ape's power.'

Master Pedro now came to tell Don Quijote that the show was ready, urging his presence, since he would find it worth his while. Our knight mentioned his doubt with regard to the ape and asked that first he enquire of the beast whether certain things that befell in the cave of Montesinos were dreams or realities ; to his own mind they partook of the nature of each. Without a word Master Pedro went for the diviner and returning with him said : ' Look you, señor ape, this gentleman would know whether certain things that befell him in the so-called cave of Montesinos were true or false ;' and answering the customary signal the ape jumped to his left shoulder, appearing to speak in the ear of his master, who then said : ' He replies that some of the things your worship saw or experienced in said cave were false and some plausible, and that this is all he knows regarding this question and would your worship learn further in the matter, on Friday next he'll answer all that may be asked him. At present his power has failed and won't return till said day.'

‘ Didn’t I tell you,’ said Sancho, ‘ that I couldn’t bring myself to believe all you told concerning the cave, nor even half?’

‘ Events will show,’ said the knight, ‘ for time, revealer of all things, leaves naught unexposed to the light of day, though hidden in the bowels of the earth. Enough for the present, since now we’re to witness the puppet-show, which doubtless contains some novelty.’ ‘ How some!’ exclaimed the owner; ‘ sixty thousand novelties are contained in this show of mine. I tell your worship, Señor Don Quijote, ’tis one of the finest spectacles in the world. But *operibus credite et non verbis*, and all hands to work, for ’tis getting late and there’s much to do, much to say and much to show.’ Master and man obeyed, coming to where the show was set up in full view, lit on every side with little wax tapers, making a glorious display. Master Pedro stationed himself behind the scenes to manipulate the puppets, and in front, as interpreter and revealer of the mysteries, stood a lad that with a wand pointed out the various figures as they appeared. When all in the inn were in place, some standing and Don Quijote, Sancho, the page and the cousin in the best seats in front, the dragoman began to say what he well hear or read that reads or hears the following chapter.

CHAPTER XXVI

The charming episode of the puppet-player continued, together with other passages in truth sufficiently good

TYRIANS and Trojans were silent all: in other words the spectators were hanging on the lips of the interpreter of these marvels, when they heard kettle-drums and trumpets sound within and a heavy discharge of cannon, whose thunder, however, soon died away, and straight the lad called out: ‘ This true history, here presented to your worships, is taken scene by scene from the French chronicles and Spanish ballads that are in the mouth of folk and children in these streets. It depicts the rescue by Señor Don Gaiferos of his wife Melisendra, held captive in

Spain in the power of the Moors in the city of Sansueña, for so they called what we to-day call Saragossa. Here you see Don Gaiferos playing backgammon, according as 'tis sung :

Gaiferos is at tables playing,
Forgotten is his Melisendra.

Yon personage that with crown and sceptre now appears is Emperor Charlemagne, putative father to Melisendra. Wroth at seeing the sloth and supineness of his son-in-law, he comes to scold him. Observe the ardour and vehemence wherewith he does so ; one might think he was on the point of giving him half a dozen bruises with his sceptre. Indeed some authors say he did give them, and well laid on too. And having spoken considerably about the risk the other's honour ran in not succouring his wife, he is said to have exclaimed :

Look to it ; I have said enough !

Next let your worships observe how the emperor turns away, leaving Don Gaiferos, who, impatient and petulant, flings the board and men from him and calls in haste for his armour, begging from his cousin Don Roland the loan of his sword Durindana. Don Roland, observe, refuses his request, offering instead his own person in this difficult undertaking. The valerous spit-fire will not accept of him, saying he alone is sufficient to rescue his spouse though hidden in the deepest centre of the earth. Therewith he arms himself, preparatory to setting out upon his quest.

Let your worships now turn your attention to yon tower that steals into view, for it represents one of the towers of the castle of Saragossa, to-day known as the Aljafería. That lady, dressed after the Moorish fashion and standing in the balcony, is none other than the peerless Melisendra. This is not the first time she has come out there and, gazing along the road to France, let her imagination travel on to Paris and her husband, consoling herself thus in her captivity. But here a strange thing occurs, one perhaps ne'er seen before. Do you not observe yon Moor that silently and on tiptoe, with finger to lips, steals up behind Melisendra ? Notice the kiss he gives her, square in the mouth,

and the speed wherewith she spits it out and wipes it away with the white sleeve of her smock ; how she cries and tears her fair tresses as though they were to blame for the insult. Observe also this stately Moor in the corridor, Marsilio, Sansueña's king, who having glimpsed the first Moor's insolence, orders him, though his kinsman and great favourite, to be given two hundred lashes and driven through the crowded streets with criers before and bailiffs behind. You can see them about to administer the punishment, almost simultaneously with the crime, for among Moors there are no indictments and summonses and remands as with us.'

'Come, come, boy,' exclaimed Don Quijote at this ; 'stick to your story and lead us not into curves and crossways. Proof upon proof is needful in getting at the facts.' Also, from behind the scenes, was heard the voice of Master Pedro : 'Don't insert extras, my son ; do just as this gentleman says. Tell a plain tale and fly not off into counterpoints or you'll break the strings.' 'I'll remember,' replied the lad, who continued saying : 'This figure, mounted and covered with a Gascony cloak, is our old friend Don Gaiferos, long expected by his wife who, avenged for the hardihood of the enamoured Moor, more at her ease again appears on the tower-balcony and speaks with her husband, taking him for some wayfarer. With him she passes the words reported in the ballad :

If thou, sir knight, to France should cross,
Pray ask for Don Gaiferos ;

more of which I'll not repeat, since from prolixity weariness is engendered.

'Tis enough to notice that Don Gaiferos discovers himself, and that by the demonstrations of happiness on Melisendra's part we are given to understand that she recognises him ; more by token that we see her about to drop from the balcony onto the crupper of her good husband's steed. Alas, the poor wretch ! the flounce of her petticoat catches on the railing and there she hangs willy-nilly. Yet observe how pitiful Heaven succours us in great crises, for now Don Gaiferos comes and not caring whether the rich petticoat be torn or no lays hold of her and in

spite of it brings her to the ground. With one toss he sets her astride on the crupper, bidding her hold on tight with arms about him lest she fall — the lady Melisendra not being used to such riding. The steed's neighs show how pleased he is with the brave and beautiful charges he carries in the persons of his lord and lady. There they're off and leaving the city joyously take the road to Paris. Go in peace, peerless pair of faithful lovers. May you reach in safety your longed-for fatherland, unimpeded by fortune on your blessed journey. May the eyes of your friends and relatives see you enjoy in tranquil peace the days (and may they be those of Nestor) still left of life.'

Again Master Pedro's voice was heard to exclaim : ' Simplicity, my son ; don't put on, for all frills are bad.' The interpreter without reply proceeded with his story : ' Idle eyes were not lacking : wont to see everything they saw the descent and mounting of Melisendra, whereof they gave notice to King Marsilio, who at once ordered them to sound the alarum. See with what haste he's obeyed, for now the city shakes with the clangour of bells ringing from the towers of all the mosques.' ' Not so,' interrupted Don Quijote ; ' in this matter of bells Master Pedro is a long way off, for Moors never use bells, but timbrels and a kind of dulcimer much like our clarion. To sound bells in Sansueña is certainly grave anachronism.' When this was heard of the stage-manager, he stopped sounding and said : ' Let your worship not notice trifles, Señor Don Quijote, nor look for perfection, for you'll never find it. Are there not a thousand comedies with a thousand inconsistencies and absurdities acted almost daily here in Spain, yet they run a glad career and are attended not only with the applause but with the admiration of all ? Continue, boy, and let them talk, for so long as I line my purse, let there be as many improprieties as there are motes in the sun.' ' You are right,' said Don Quijote, and the lad proceeded :

' Again I must call your attention to the number and brilliance of the horsemen that issue from the city in pursuit of the Catholic lovers ; how many trumpets are blown, how many dulcimers, timbrels and kettle-drums beaten. I fear lest they be come up

with and brought back tied to their horse's tail — a dire spectacle!' Upon this, Don Quijote, seeing and hearing the Moorish array and alarum, was moved to assist the fugitives. Springing to his feet he cried in loud voice : ' Never will I consent that in my days and presence foul dealing be practised upon so famous a knight and so bold a lover as Don Gaiferos. Stay, ye low-lived dogs : check your speed. If not, the die be cast. '

So doing and saying, the errant unsheathed sword and arriving before the stage with one bound, began to shower strokes upon the puppet-horsemen, demolishing some, beheading others, crippling this Moor, maiming that ; and among many others he delivered one such down-stroke that had not Master Pedro ducked from under and sprawled on the floor, his head would have been sliced off as easily as if of almond-paste. Yet he found time to cry : ' Stay, stay, Señor Don Quijote ; these you slay and demolish are not real Moors but figures of cardboard. Look, confound it, you're destroying my whole livelihood. ' Not for this did the knight cease to rain two-handers, back-handers, side-cuts and lunges. In short, in less than two credos he brought the whole business to the ground, made hash of the properties and puppets, left King Marsilio sorely wounded and Emperor Charlemagne with head and crown split in two. The senate of auditors was panic-stricken, the ape took refuge on the housetop, the cousin was scared stiff, the page turned deathly pale and even Sancho lost control for, as he confessed after the storm was over, never before had he seen his master so wild to play the madman.

When now the affair was wholly done for, its destroyer quieted down a trifle, saying : ' O that were present all those that do not or wish not to believe that knights-errant are of real benefit to the world ! Try to think what would have become of the worthy Gaiferos and fair Melisendra, had I not been on the scene. Even now the dogs would have caught up with them and used them shamefully. Long live chivalry say I, above all else on the earth. ' ' Long live it and good-luck, ' gasped Master Pedro, ' and die me, now so poor that I can say with King Roderick :

But yesterday I over Spain held sway ;
One fort I cannot call mine own to-day.

Not a half-hour ago, nay, not a half-minute, I found myself lord of kings and emperors, and filled were my stables, my chests and my sacks with countless steeds and liveries without number. Now am I desolate and oppressed, poor and in want, above all without mine ape, and verily when I lay hold of him, he'll sweat his teeth for it. And all by reason of the mistaken zeal of this sir knight, of whom 'tis said he protects minors, rights wrongs and does other good works. At me alone did his generous purpose miss fire, for which blessed and praised be the heavens where their seats are highest. Indeed Knight of Sorry Aspect must be he that has put such a woful look on all my puppets.'

'Don't cry, Master Pedro,' said Sancho Panza, moved to compassion by these words; 'don't lament any more or you'll break my heart, and I'd have you know that my master is so Catholic and scrupulous a Christian that if he can make out he has done you injury, he'll wish to pay you, and over.' 'Would he pay me but a portion of the damage, I should rest satisfied and his worship easy of conscience, for there's so salvation for him that takes what belongs to another against the owner's will and without restitution.' 'True,' said Don Quijote, 'but as yet I'm not aware that I have aught of yours, Master Pedro.' 'And how? these corpses that strew this hard and barren battle-field, who routed and mowed them down but the invincible strength of that powerful arm? and whose were those figures if not mine? by what did I live save by them?'

'Now am I convinced,' declared our knight, 'of that which oft I have suspected, that these enchanters my persecutors first place before me figures as they are and then change and turn them into whatsoever they list. On my honour I say to you gentlemen that methought all that happened here, occurred exactly as it appeared: that Melisendra was Melisendra, Gaiferos Gaiferos, Marsilio Marsilio and Charlemagne Charlemagne. Therefore was it that my wrath got the better of me, and to comply with mine office of errantry I was bound to aid and protect the fugitives. With this commendable aim I did what you see. If the outcome proved disastrous, be not mine the blame but theirs that wickedly persecute me. Nevertheless, for this my mistake,

not my malice, I am ready to stand the costs. Let Master Pedro make a statement of what is due for the dismantled figures and I'll pay at once in good and current Castilian coin.'

The showman bowed acknowledgment and said : ' I expected no less from the unparalleled Christianity of the worthy Quijote of La Mancha, the real and only helper of all needy and oppressed vagabonds. Let goodman keeper here and the great Panza be arbiters and appraisers 'twixt your worship and myself of the value or former value of the ruined puppets.' The innkeeper and Sancho agreed and the manager thereupon raised, minus his head, King Marsilio of Saragossa, saying : ' Obviously 'twould be out of the question to restore this king to his former estate, and so methinks, saving better judgment, there should be allowed for his death, overthrow and complete destruction four reals and a half.' ' Proceed,' said Don Quijote. ' For this split from top to bottom,' continued he of the patch, ' taking in his hands the divided Charlemagne, 'twouldn't be a great deal did I ask five reals and a quarter.' ' It isn't little,' said Sancho. ' Nor much,' returned the inkeeper ; ' let's split the difference and call it five reals.' ' Give him the quarter,' said Don Quijote ; ' the cost of this notable devastation doesn't stand on a penny more or less. Make haste, Master Pedro, for 'tis getting supper-time and I have sure indications of hunger.'

' For this puppet, which is the fair Melisendra short a nose and eye, I want, and I shall be reasonable, two reals and twelve maravedis.' ' Nay,' quoth Don Quijote, ' the devil's in it if by this time the lady be not safe with her husband over the French border : the steed they rode seemed to fly rather than run. It's no use trying to sell me a cat for a hare, offering me a noseless Melisendra, when the real one, if all went well, is pleasuring herself with her husband in France at full stretch. God help every man to his own, Master Pedro, and let us all walk and talk straight ; and proceed.' The showman, seeing our knight getting off the road again, harking back to his old crotchet, determined not to let him escape, so said : ' This can't be Melisendra after all but one of her maids-in-waiting ; with but sixty maravedis therefore I'll call it square.'

In this manner the showman appraised many another of the broken puppets, and when his prices had been adjusted to the satisfaction of both parties through the medium of the arbiters, the total costs were found to be forty and three-quarters reals. But in addition to this, which Sancho at once counted out, Master Pedro demanded two reals for catching the ape. 'Give them, Sancho', said his master, 'not to catch the ape, but the she-ape (to get drunk). Two hundred reals would I give to one that could tell with certainty that the lady Melisendra and Señor Don Gaiferos were now in France with their own.' 'None could tell you better than my pet,' said he of the patch, 'but ne'er a devil could catch him now. In the night his hunger and affection will force him to look me up I reckon. God will send the morrow and we shall see.'

And so the storm of the puppet-show blew over and they all supped in peace and fellowship as guests of Don Quijote, who was liberal beyond measure. Before dawn he of the lances and halberds was well on his way, and while still but twilight, the cousin and page came to bid farewell, the one to return home, the other to continue his journey, for whose aid thereon Don Quijote gave a dozen reals. Master Pedro didn't care to enter into more ifs and ands with one he knew too well, so rose before the sun, gathered his ape and the fragments of his show, and was off again on his adventures. The innkeeper, to whom Don Quijote was a perfect stranger, wondered no less at his liberality than at his light-headedness. For Sancho at his master's bidding paid him well, and taking leave about eight o'clock the pair set out on their journey, where we shall leave them. 'Tis time to speak of other things needful to the unfolding of this history.

CHAPTER XXVII

Master Pedro and ape identified, together with the sad result Don Quijote met with in the braying adventure, which didn't turn out as he had wished or expected

CID Hamet, chronicler of this great history, opens this chapter with the words, I swear like a Catholic Christian ; on which his translator comments, that for Cid Hamet to swear like a Catholic Christian, being certainly a Moor, means nothing more or less than that, even as the Catholic Christian when taking an oath, swears or should swear the truth and declare it in what he says, so Cid Hamet, as though he had thus sworn, was now to tell the truth : particularly in telling who were master Pedro and the divining ape, whose intuitions set all those villages gaping.

He says then that he that has read the first part of this history won't have forgot one Ginés de Pasamonte, whom along with other galley-slaves Don Quijote set free in the Sierra Morena — an attention for which he was little thanked and less repaid by that wicked an ill-mannered crew. This Ginés de Pasamonte, whom our knight spoke of as Ginesillo de Parapilla, was the rogue that stole Sancho's Dapple — the omission of the how and when of which stealing led many to put the blame on the author's poor memory rather than on the carelessness of the printers where it really belonged. Ginés stole him, you remember, while his owner slept in the saddle, employing the trick Brunelo practised when at the siege of Albraca he drew his steed out from between Sacripante's legs. But later Sancho recovered his mount, as described.

This Ginés then, fearful of justice, which was hunting him down for his infinite cunning and crimes (so many and so bad were they that he filled a large volume in their exploitation), decided to cover his left eye and pass over into the kingdom of

Aragon in the role of puppet-player, at which and sleight-of-hand he was supreme. And it fell out that, meeting with ransomed Christians just returned from Barbary, he purchased this ape, which he soon taught to leap at a given signal upon his shoulder and to give what seemed a whisper in his ear. With this outfit of show and ape, before he entered a village in his wanderings, he would enquire in the neighbourhood or from whom he best could as to what if anything had befallen in that village and to what persons. Keeping this information clear in mind he would first, on entering, present the puppet-show, which dealt sometimes with one story, again with another, but all merry, diverting and familiar.

The play over, he'd announce the talents of his ape, telling the crowd he could divine all the past and present, but the future was beyond him. For each reply he charged two reals but for some made it less, taking the pulse of his questioners. Occasionally he went to houses the history of whose inmates he knew, and though they asked no questions from their unwillingness to pay, none the less he gave the signal and straight would declare that the ape said such-and-such a thing which, of course, fitted like a glove to actual occurrences in that household. By these means he achieved unspeakable credit and all ran after him. At other times, like the shrewd fellow he was, he would originate his answers to suit the questions, and as none investigated the thing or pressed him to tell how an ape could divine, he made apes of them all and filled his purse. Thus the moment he entered the inn above-mentioned, he recognised Don Quijote and Sancho and from his previous relation with them found it easy to mesmerise not only them but all the others. Which visit would have cost him dear had Don Quijote lowered his hand a trifle, what time he divested King Marsilio of his head and destroyed his cavalry, as described in the foregoing chapter. This, then, is all there is to tell regarding Master Pedro and his ape.

Returning to Don Quijote de La Mancha the chronicle states that after leaving the inn he resolved first to visit the shores of the river Ebro together with all that district before entering the city of Saragossa, since there was still ample time before the

opening of the jousts. With this plan he pursued his journey and travelled two whole days with naught befalling worthy of note. But on the third day, as they mounted a hill, he heard a great sound of drums, trumpets and musketry. His first thought was of a regiment of soliders on the march, and spurring Rocinante and coming to the top of the rise he beheld at its foot near two hundred men armed with a rude assortment of arms, such as pikes, crossbows, partisans, halberds and lances, a few muskets and many shields.

He descended and drawing near could distinctly make out the ensigns, distinguish the colours and note the devices of the squadron. Particularly he marked one on a fold or banner of white satin, portraying to the life a jackass of the small Sard breed, with head in air, mouth open and tongue extended in the act and posture of braying. Round the border was writ in large letters these two lines :

Brayed not in vain
Our bailiffs twain.

Don Quijote gathered from this that the company hailed from Braytown and so said to Sancho, telling what was writ on the banner. But, he added, their informant was mistaken in saying they were two aldermen that brayed, for the lines showed them bailiffs. ‘ That doesn’t matter, sire ; it might well be that the aldermen have since been advanced to bailiffs and so can be known by both titles. Moreover, it doesn’t affect the truth of the story, whether the brayers be bailiffs or aldermen, they being equally good at braying. ’

They soon guessed that the mocked town was come out to fight the one that had mocked them beyond all decency and neighbourliness. Don Quijote therefore rode up, to the no slight anxiety of Sancho who was never a lover of such encounters. Those of the battalion, thinking him of their faction, received him in their midst, but when he raised his visor and with unassuming air and carriage drew near the banner, the leaders of the army were thrown into the same astonishment all were thrown on seeing him for the first time. Our knight saw them look at

him intently without word or question, and resolving to avail himself of the silence, broke his own and said :

‘ My good sirs, as earnestly as I can I entreat you not to interrupt the speech I am about to make (unless you find it disgusting and tedious), for the slightest sound will seal my lips and gag my tongue. ’ They cried for him to proceed : they would gladly hear him. With this license the other continued : ‘ I, gentlemen, am a knight-errant, whose profession is that of arms and whose office the succour of the needy and the relief of the oppressed. Some day since I learned of your trials and the cause that frequently moves you to take arms that you may be avenged on your enemies. And having considered the matter not once but many times I find that according to the laws of the duel you are mistaken in believing yourselves insulted : for no man can insult an entire village when he is ignorant of the individual that committed the treason charged, unless he impeach it collectively.

· Of this we have example in the person of Don Diego Ordoñez de Lara, who impeached the entire population of Zamora, not knowing ’twas one man only, Bellido Dolfos, had committed the treason of killing his king. He charged them all with the crime and all felt his answer and vengeance. And Señor Don Diego, it must be added, went altogether too far and quite passed beyond the limits of challenges, for there was no need to accuse the dead, the food and water, and those yet unborn, together with the other things specified in his defiance. Let that pass, however, for when anger breaketh over its banks, the tongue hath neither father, ruler or bridle to restrain it. If this then is true, that individuals cannot affront a kingdom, province, city, republic or entire village, it follows that it’s idle of you to take up cudgels for such an insult, since insult it cannot be. What a mess we should be in if the people of Clock Town were always at swords’ points with those that fling that epithet in their face ; or the Cazoleros, the Egg-planters, the Whalers, the Soapers or others with nicknames, such as are continually bandied about by urchins and the rabble. A pretty thing verily, if these honourable cities took umbrage and went about wreaking vengeance with

swords turned into stomach-cleansers, no matter how trifling the quarrel.

‘Nay, nay, God neither allows nor wishes it. Men of discretion, well-ordered republics, take arms, unsheath swords, risk lives and property, for any of four reasons : first, to champion the Catholic faith ; second, to protect life, a law of nature and of God ; third, in defence of honour, family or estate ; and fourth, in the king’s service in a righteous war. If we add a fifth (which rightly should be second), it is in aid of their fatherland. Under these five heads may be grouped a few other causes, just and reasonable ; but to engage in war for trifles and things that have more to do with fun and fooling than with intent of insult, strikes me as strangely illogical.

‘Furthermore, to take unrighteous vengeance (for no vengeance under the sun can be aught else), contradicts the sacred law we as Christians profess, which commands us to do good to our enemies and love them that hate us — a commandment which, though it appears somewhat difficult to obey, is only so for those having less of God than of the world and more of flesh than of spirit. For Jesus Christ, very God and a good man, who never lied and could not and cannot lie, being our lawgiver, said that his yoke was easy and his burden light. He surely would not demand an impossibility. It follows, then, gentlemen, that your worships are bound by laws divine and human to go home in peace.’ ‘The devil fetch me !’ exclaimed Sancho, ‘if this my master isn’t a theologian ; if not, he’s as like one as one egg is another.’

Don Quijote took a little breath at this point and seeing that still all lent silence was about to proceed when he was anticipated by his agile squire who, seeing his master had halted, took the reins of the discourse, saying : ‘My master Don Quijote de La Mancha, once known as he of the Sorry Aspect but now called the Knight of the Lions, is a gentleman of great understanding and knows Latin and the vulgar tongue like a bachelor, with all the laws and ordinances of what they call the duel under his finger-nail, and in all he speaks and advises acts like a good soldier. So there’s naught to do but be guided by what he says and blame me if he mislead you. More by token it has been

said 'tis foolish to lose one's temper on hearing a bray. I remember that as a lad I used to bray each and every time I pleased, wilhout let or hindrance, and with so much grace and propriety that when I brayed, all the asses of the village struck up. Yet not for this did I cease to be the son of my parents, who were honest folk. Though envied for my accomplishment by more than four of the toploftical people of the town, I didn't care two farthings. That it may be seen I speak the truth, wait and listen, for this science is like that of swimming : once learned, never forgot.'

Thereupon the good squire, with hand pressing nose, began to bray and so vigorously that all the neighbouring valleys resounded. But one of the Braytown folk, thinking he ridiculed them, raised his long pole and gave our friend such a blow that in spite of himself he came to the ground. His master, seeing this ill treatment, rushed at the assailant with brandished lance, but many intervened to thwart him, and finding a shower of stones raining and a thousand drawn crossbows and an equal number of muskets threatening, he turned Rocinante about and at full gallop sped away, fearing every moment lest some bullet piercing his back come out through his lungs. He kept drawing breath to see if he had any ; but the squadron were content to see him flying and did not fire. As for Sancho, scarce himself as yet, they placed him on his beast and let him follow his master — not that he had sense enough to direct, but Dapple trotted in the wake of Rocinante, without whom not for a moment was he to be found. A long way off Don Quijote turned his head and seeing that his squire and squire only followed, waited for him. Those of the squadron remained till nightfall and as their adversaries appeared not, returned to their town joyous and happy. And had they known the ancient customs of the Greeks, on that historic field they'd have raised a trophy.

CHAPTER XXVIII

Things that Benengeli says he will know that reads them,
if he read with attention

IF the valiant flee, 'tis when foul play is discovered, since the part of those of discretion is to save themselves for fitter times. This truth was exemplified in our brave adventurer, who, giving way to the fury of Braytown and the wicked design of its enraged host, made the dust fly, and heedless of Sancho and his jeopardy removed himself as far as he deemed sufficient for safety. Sancho followed, slung across Dapple, and on reaching his master fell at Rocinante's feet, in his senses now but all woe-begone, all battered and bruised. The knight dismounted to examine his wounds, but finding him whole from head to foot said somewhat testily :

' In how evil an hour learnt ye to bray, my son, and how could ye think it well to mention rope in the hanged man's house? To the music of brays what harmony is to be looked for save bastings? But give thanks to God, boy, that though they blessed you with a stick, they didn't cross you with a scimitar.' ' I'm in no shape for parleying,' groaned the other, ' for I seem to speak through my shoulders. Let me mount and out of here. I henceforth shall keep silent as to my brays but not as to how knights-errant desert their faithful squires ground like privet or wheat in their enemies' millstones.' ' He flees not that retires,' maintained the master, ' for you must know, Sancho, that courage unfounded on prudence is bravado, and deeds of rashness owe more to chance than to true bravery. I confess, not that I fled, but that I retired, imitating thereby many valiant men (in whom history abounds) that have kept themselves for fitter times. I do not now specify, since 'twould be of no help to you or happiness to me.'

With the knight's aid Sancho was again on his ass and the other mounting they slowly made their way toward a grove of

poplar-trees that stood out on the landscape about a quarter-league off. From time to time the henchman gave deep sighs and bitter groans and upon his lord's asking the reason of such sharp distress, he replied that from his spine-end to the nape of his neck he ached enough to lose his wits. 'Such pain,' suggested the other, 'doubtless results from the fact that as the pole they measured you with was long and heavy, it caught you over the whole back, which are the very parts now sensitive. Had it reached further, your suffering would be even greater.' 'My God! but your worship has absolved me from a serious doubt and cleared it up in unmistakeable terms! Body of me, was the cause of my pain so obscure there was need to tell me 'twas by reason of the pole? Were mine ankles sore, it might be something to divine why, but to reason out my present pain is no such marvellous matter.

'Indeed, dear master mine, another's trouble hangs by a hair, and every day I touch earth as to the little good I can look for from following your worship. If this time you let me be pounded, another and a hundred more I shall return to the blanketings of old and other games which, if now they were played on my shoulders, will next time be on mine eyes. Much better should I do (only I am a barbarian and should do good never), much better, I say, should I do if I went home to wife and children, supporting her and rearing them with what God may be pleased to give me, nor follow your worship about on journeys without a road and along paths and courses that have none, drinking ill and eating worse. Then there's the sleeping: count ye, brother squire, seven feet of ground, and if that be not enough, count as many as ye will — you are master of the feast and stretch you to your heart's content. But may I see burned and brought to dust the man that first invented chivalry, or rather the man first willing to serve such dolts as must have been all former errants. On the present I pass, for, since your worship is of such, I am bound to respect them, especially as I am sure you know one point more than the devil in what you speak and think.'

'I would lay a wager with you, boy,' said his master, 'that

when you talk as now and none to check you, you don't feel a hint of pain in any part of your body. Talk on, my squire, speak whatever comes to your head or tongue, for while it frees you from suffering the annoyance your impudence causes me shall be considered diversion. And if you are so eager to be at home with wife and children, God forbid that I prevent. You have my money : reckon the period of this third sally, consider your worth by the month and with your own hand take your pay.'

' When I worked for Tomé Carrasco, father to the bachelor Samson Carrasco, whom your worship well knows, I got two ducats a month and food. With your worship I can't calculate, though I'm certain a knight-errant's squire works harder than a field-labourer. When we hire out to farmers, no matter how much there is to do by day or how ill it goes, when night comes we eat our stew and sleep on beds — which I haven't done in your worship's employ, except during our brief stay at Don Diego's house and the fling I had with the skimmings of Camacho's pots, and what I ate, drank and slept in the home of Basilio. Other times I have lain on the hard ground beneath the stars, subject to what they call the inclemencies of the skies, dining on crusts and cheese-parings, and drinking water now from brooks now from springs of the many we cross in this back-country of our travels.'

' I must confess that all you say is true, Sancho. How much more than did Tomé Carrasco, do you think I should give you ?' ' Did your worship give me two reals a month extra, I believe I should consider it good pay, as far as wages goes. As quittance of your promise of the island-government, 'twould be fair to add another six reals, making thirty in all.' ' Agreed,' replied the master ; ' at that rate per month reckon what I owe for the five and twenty days we've been out, and as I have said pay yourself with your own hand.' ' Body of me but your worship is mistaken : in the matter of the isle the days should be reckoned from the first time it was promised down to the present.' ' And how long is that ?' ' If my memory serve me, it must be twenty years, three days more or less.' The knight gave himself a good slap on the forehead and laughing heartily said :

‘Why, Sancho! in the Sierra Morena, nay in the whole course of our sallies, I’ve travelled scarce two months, and yet you say ’tis twenty years since I gave my word for the isle? Verily, methinks you would consume in wages all the money you have of mine. In that case and if ’twould please you, henceforth call it yours and much good may it do you, since in return for finding myself rid of a miserable servant I shall rejoice to be left penniless. But tell me, perverter of all squirely traditions, where have you seen or read of a shield-bearer haggling with his master and saying, So much a month must you give me? Embark, thief, embark, varlet and monster — for all this you look to me — embark I say on the mare magnum of knights’ histories, and if you find one lone henchman saying and thinking with you, you may nail it on my forehead and make a fool of me with four hard slaps in the face besides. Turn rein or halter to Dapple and get you home, for not a step further shall you go with me. O bread ill-requited! O promises ill-bestowed! O man more beast than human! just when I thought to place you in state and in such an one that in spite of your wife they’d call you lord, do you leave me? Will you go now, when I am firmly and finally resolved to make you ruler of the best island in the world? Verily, verily, as you have said more than once, The honey is not... Ass you were, ass you must remain, an ass you will finally die, since I’m certain your life will reach its last goal ere you realise what a beast you are.’

Sancho’s eyes moved not from his master during this upbraiding, and as contrition swelled within and the tears came, in weak and heart-broken voice he replied: ‘I believe, master mine, that to make a complete ass of me the tail is the only thing lacking, and would your worship get me one, I’ll deem it well-placed and serve you like such a beast all my days. Forgive me, sire; have pity on my folly, reflecting that I know very little, and that if I speak much, more proceeds from nature than from malice, especially since he that errs and mends, to God himself commends.’ ‘I should have been surprised indeed, Sancho, had your speech terminated and no little proverb. Well, well, I’ll forgive you, provided you do mend and henceforth

show yourself more disinterested. Try to widen that heart of yours, my son, taking hope and courage at the thought of my promises, for though their fulfilment is delayed, it yet may arrive.' The other replied so would he do, drawing strength from weakness.

They had now entered the grove and the knight composed himself at the foot of an elm and Sancho at the foot of a beech, for these trees and others have feet though without hands. The squire passed the night in pain, since the drubbing made itself felt more with the night air. Don Quijote passed it in a succession of memories ; yet both gave their eyes to sleep and at daybreak continued their search for the banks of the famous Ebro, where befell them what will be told in the next chapter.

CHAPTER XXIX

The famous adventure of the enchanted bark

BY the above-mentioned and unmentioned stages, two days after leaving the grove Don Quijote and Sancho arrived at the river Ebro, the sight whereof proved great joy to the former, for he marked and marvelled at the beauty of its banks, the clearness of its waters, its smoothness of current and its laughter. The refreshing sight renewed in his memory a thousand amorous thoughts : especially did he bethink him of all he had seen in the cave of Montesinos, for though the ape declared some of those things false and only some true, he held more to the truths than the lies — the reverse of Sancho, who held it all of a piece.

As they rode along they espied a little bark without oars or tackle tied to a tree-trunk at the water's edge. The knight looked in every direction and seeing no one, without more ado dismounted, bidding his squire the same and to tie the beasts together to the branch of a poplar or willow growing there. Sancho asked the cause of this sudden halt and tie-up, and received the reply : ' You must know, Sancho, that this bark, designedly

here and for no other purpose, is calling and inviting me to embark for the relief of some knight or other noble personage in certain and great distress. For such is the habit of the books of knightly deeds and of the enchanters that make talk and trouble therein, to wit, that when a knight is caught in some difficulty, he cannot be freed save at another knight's hand, though distant one from the other two or three thousand leagues or more. They either snatch him up in a cloud or convey him in a bark and in less than the opening and closing of an eye carry him by air or water whither they will and his help is needed. So you can understand, O Sancho, how this bark is placed here for that very purpose and this is as true as that it is now day. Tie Dapple and Rocinante side by side, and be it in the hand of God to guide us, for bare-footed friars couldn't let my embarking.'

'In that case, would you put your every foot in these — blunders shall I call them, there's naught but to bow the head and obey, attending the proverb, Obey your lord and sit with him at the table. At the same time, to ease my conscience, I must warn your worship that in my opinion the bark belongs to none of the enchanted but to fishermen of this river, wherein are caught the best shad in the world.' Sancho spoke while tying the beasts, leaving them with sad heart to the favour and protection of enchanters. His master bade him not heed this desertion, for He that was to guide them through ways and regions so longinuous, would take care of what they left behind.' 'I don't understand this longicuous,' said Sancho, 'nor have I heard such a word all the days of my life.' 'It means remote,' answered the other, 'but it isn't surprising that you didn't understand it: you are not supposed to know Latin, as are some that pretend to and don't.'

'Now that the beasts are fastened, what are we to do?' enquired the servant. 'What but cross ourselves and weigh anchor, embark in other words and cut the cable wherewith our vessel is tied.' And leaping therein, followed by his squire, Don Quijote cut the rope and the bark gradually moved from the bank. When Sancho found himself a matter of two yards out, he began to quake with fear of perdition, but naught gave him

more distress than to hear Dapple bray and see Rocinante trying to break loose. So he said to his master : ‘ Dapple is braying in sorrow of our absence and the nag is trying to free himself in order to plunge in after us. O beloved friends, rest in peace and may the madness that removes us from you, changing to sanity return us to your presence.’ And with this he began to weep so bitterly that Don Quijote, vexed out of all patience, said :

‘ What are you afraid of, cowardly creature? what are you crying about, heart of butter? who molests or persecutes you, soul of an indoor mouse? or what do you lack, ever in want though in the midst of the bowels of abundance? Are you perchance travelling on foot and barefoot over the Rhipœan mountains, instead of sitting on a seat like an archduke, floating down the current of this delightful river, whence soon we shall pass out onto the open main? Already must we have travelled seventy or eighty leagues at the shortest. Had I an astrolabe for taking the altitude of the pole, I could tell the exact distance, though now I should say we have passed or soon shall pass, else I know little, the equinoctial line that divides and cuts the opposite poles in equal portions.’ ‘ And when we have come to these same knocks your worship speaks of, how far shall we have travelled?’ ‘ Far, for of the three hundred and sixty degrees embraced by this globe of earth and water, we shall then have gone half, as the great cosmographer Ptolomæus computed it.’ ‘ Fore God, but your worship has fetched a pretty witness to back you up : Polly, miaus and putrid besides.’ The knight, smiling, continued :

‘ You must know, Sancho, that Spaniards and others embarking at Cadiz for the East Indies have as one of the signs that they have crossed this equinoctial line, that fleas die from all on board nor in the whole vessel is one to be found though they gave its weight in gold for it. So pass your hand over your thigh, my son, and if you meet with aught, we shall be freed from our uncertainty ; if with naught, we have crossed the line.’ ‘ I take no stock in this,’ replied Sancho, ‘ but I’ll obey, though I can find no reason for making these experiments when I see with mine own eyes that we’re not five yards from the bank nor down

stream more than two from where stand the animals. There they are, precisely where we left them, and watching a point, as I do now, I swear by all we're not moving or advancing at an ant's pace.'

'Make the test, Sancho, and heed no other, for little do you know of colures, lines, parallels, zodiacs, ecliptics, poles, solstices, equinoxes, planets, signs and points, which measure the celestial and terrestrial spheres, Did you know these all or even in part, 'twould be clear how many parallels we had crossed, what signs beheld, what constellations were left behind and are now passing. Again I urge you to fish and feel, for I am certain you are cleaner than a sheet of white paper.' Sancho felt his way softly over his left ham and then looking up at his master said: 'Either the test is a poor one or we haven't reached the spot your worship mentioned, nay, not by many leagues.' 'How? have you found something?' 'Ay, some things,' replied the other, washing his hand in the river, on whose bosom the bark now gently glided, moved by no occult intelligence or unseen enchanter but by the calm and smooth current.

Ere long the voyagers discovered some large water-mills, situate in mid-stream, and scarce had Don Quijote glimpsed them when in loud voice he exclaimed: 'Look, friend, where steals into view the city, castle or stronghold wherein is mewed some oppressed knight, or some queen, infanta or princess in sore distress, for whose relief I am sent.' 'What devils of city, stronghold or castle are you talking about, sire? can't you see they're water-mills for grinding grain?' 'Peace, Sancho; though they look so, mills they are not. As oft I have said, enchantments change and transform all things from their natural state. Not that they actually are transformed but they appear to be, as experience has demonstrated in the case of Dulcinea, sole refuge of my hopes.'

By this time the bark was in mid-stream and began to move less leisurely, and the millers, seeing 'twould soon enter the mill-race, promptly and some with long poles ran out to check it. Truly they were a wicked sight, with their faces and clothes covered with flower, and shouting: 'Whither, ye devils of men?

are you crazy ? do you want to be crushed by these wheels and drowned ? ' ' Didn't I tell you, Sancho, that we have come where I must show to what height the valour of mine arm doth reach ? Behold what harpies and land-sharks come to attack me ! how many spectres I shall have to face ! how many hideous countenances are endeavouring to terrify me ! But you shall see, ye scoundrels ! '

Thereupon rising in the boat, Don Quijote began to shower curses on the millers, saying : ' Ill-intentioned and worse-advised dogs, set free the person you hold in yon castle or prison, high or low, of whatever condition or quality he or she may be, for I am Don Quijote de La Mancha, alias the Knight of the Lions, for whom it has been reserved by the high heavens to give a happy ending to this adventure.' Saying this he drew sword and brandished it in the air against the millers, who, hearing but not understanding this bluster, tried with poles to hold back the bark, now well in the mill-race. Sancho was on his knees, earnestly praying Heaven to deliver him from this imminent danger. His prayer was answered through the diligence and labour of the millers, who finally succeeded in staying the craft, though not without overturning it and upsetting master and man. Fortunately for him, Don Quijote could swim like a goose, though the weight of his arms twice brought him to the bottom, and had it not been for the millers, who plunged in and hoisted them out, 'twould have been Troytown for them both. Immediately they were landed (more drenched than thirsty), Sancho Panza fell on his knees and with clasped hands and with eyes raised to Heaven besought his Maker at length and fervently henceforth to preserve him from these dare-devil plans and pursuits of his lord.

And now came the fishermen-owners of the bark, which the mill-wheels had by this time churned to bits. They began to fleece Sancho and demand payment of his master, but the latter, as though naught had happened, in his usual calm manner said to these millers and fishermen that he would indeed be happy to pay for the bark, provided they unreservedly set free the person or persons imprisoned in that castle. ' What persons or

castles do you mean, crazy ?' answered one of the millers ; ' would you carry away the people that come to have their wheat ground in these mills.' ' Enough,' said the other to himself : ' 'twere but preaching in the desert to hope to induce this rabble to perform a virtuous act. In this adventure two powerful enchanters must have taken sides, one to prevent what the other proposed : one furnished the skiff, the other upset it. May God help us, for this world is naught but plots and counterplots all defiant. I cannot do more.' And now speaking aloud, with eyes fixed on the mills : ' Friends, whoever ye may be mewed in this prison, forgive me that to mine own shame and yours I cannot relieve your distress. This adventure, it must be, is reserved for another knight.'

Ours then agreed with the fishermen to pay for the ruined bark fifty reals, which Sancho counted out with heavy heart saying : ' Two voyages like this and we and all our cargo will sink to the bottom.' The fishermen and millers stood gazing in astonishment at the odd-looking pair, nor did they once get light as to what the master's speeches and requests might mean. Holding them both for idiots they left them and returned to their mill, the fishermen to their huts. To Rocinante Don Quijote returned and Sancho to the ass. Both returned to their asinine life, and thus ends the adventure of the enchanted bark.

CHAPTER XXX

The knight's experience with a fair huntress

WITH dampened spirits knight and squire came to their mounts. Sancho in particular was downcast for it touched his soul to touch their stock of money : all that they took seemed to come from the apples of his eyes. They made quick and silent work of mounting and leaving the famous river, Don Quijote buried in the thoughts of his love, his servant in those of his advancement, which just then seemed rather far away : simple as he was he couldn't help seeing that all or most of his lord's actions

were flighty, and he was endeavouring at this moment to find an occasion whereby without entering into disputes and leave-takings he might some day slip off and home. But fortune ordered quite the reverse.

The day following at sunset, as they issued from a wood, it chanced that the errant's eyes rested on a green meadow, where, on the further side, he noticed what on nearer approach proved a hawking-party. In their midst he distinguished a fine lady riding a snow-white palfrey or hackney, caparisoned in green with side-saddle of silver. The lady as well was dressed in green, so richly and gaily that gaiety itself seemed personified in her. On her left hand sat a hawk, discovering to our knight that she must be of noble birth and mistress of all the hunters. He therefore observed : ' Run, boy, and tell yon lady of the hawk and palfrey that I the Knight of the Lions kiss the hands of her great beauty and should her grace grant me leave, I shall in person kiss them, serving her to the extent of my power and her bidding. Have care, my son, of the manner of your petition, lest therein you insert a proverb or two.' ' You've found your inserter and no mistake ; but trust me, master, for this isn't the first time in this life I've carried embassies to high and mighty ladies.' ' Save that to the lady Dulcinea, I know of none, at least on my behalf.' ' True, but pledges never worry a good paymaster and in a full house supper is soon cooked. I mean to say there's no need of warnings, for I'm ready for and equal to a little of everything.' ' I believe it, Sancho ; so go, good-luck and God guide you.' Sancho rode off at top speed, pressing Dapple out of his pace, and coming to the fair huntress dismounted and knelt before her saying :

' Fair lady, yon knight you see, called Knight of the Lions, is my master and I am his squire whom in his house they call Sancho Panza. This same Knight of the Lions, who not long since went by the name of Sorry Aspect, through me sends to ask that your grace be pleased to grant him permission to come, with your intention, pleasure and consent, to effect his desire, which is no other (as he says and I think) than to serve your high-flown beauty, for with such license your worship will do

what will redound to your welfare, and he on his part will bear the most signal respect and gratitude.' 'Of a surety, good squire,' replied the lady, 'you have announced your mission with all the customary phrases. Rise, my good man, for it suits not that the squire of so great a knight as he of the Sorry Aspect, of whom we have heard much, be on his knees. Rise, friend, and tell your lord he comes at a most fortunate time to wait upon me and the duke my husband at our country-seat.'

Sancho rose, astonished at the lady's beauty and courteous manner, but still more that she should be familiar with the Knight of Sorry Aspect: that she didn't call him the Knight of the Lions was due, he supposed, to the fact that this title had been so lately assumed. The duchess (whose name is not known) now questioned Sancho, saying: 'Tell me, brother squire, is not this your master he of whom a history is in print with the title, That Imaginative Gentleman Don Quijote de la Mancha, whose lady-love is one Dulcinea del Toboso?' 'The very same, lady, and that squire of his that figures or should figure there, whom they call Sancho Panza, is myself, unless they changed me in the cradle, in the press that is.' 'By all this I am much pleased,' said the duchess; 'go, brother Panza, and tell your master he is well-arrived and welcome at my country-seat and that nothing could make me happier.'

With this cheering message Sancho gleefully returned to his master, to whom he repeated all the grand lady had said, in his rustic terms praising to the skies her great beauty, fine manner and extreme courtesy. Don Quijote righted himself, set his feet well in the stirrups, adjusted his visor and spurring Rocinante came on with gallant air to kiss the hand of the duchess, who, having sent for the duke her husband, told him of Don Quijote's embassy while the knight was approaching. Since both had read the first part of this history and appreciated our hero's peculiar obsession, they awaited him with the utmost delight, resolving to humour him in all he said or did and to treat him as an errant in very deed during the period of his stay: not one of the common ceremonies set forth in the books of chivalry, which they had read with relish, were to be omitted.

The knight, with visor raised, was now at hand. Sancho hastened to hold the stirrup, but in alighting from Dapple one of his feet so caught in the packsaddle rope that, ere he could extricate it, he found himself hanging with breast and lips to the ground. His master, who never dismounted without the stirrup being held, thinking that the squire was performing that office, threw himself off with a swing, carrying Rocinante's saddle (which must have been ill-girthed) along with him. He and saddle came to the ground, to the great mortification of the knight, plentifully cursing 'twixt his teeth him whose foot was still in fetters. The duke bade his hunters hasten to their rescue, and when the don was raised to his feet again, rather the worse for his fall, he limped his best to bend the knee before these fine persons. But the duke wouldn't suffer this; instead, alighting from his hunter, he hastened to embrace him, saying: 'I greatly regret, Sir Knight of Sorry Aspect, that the first time your worship has visited my soil, you should have done it so unpleasantly, but the carelessness of squires is wont to result in even worse accidents.'

'That which has befallen me, worthy prince, cannot be an evil though it landed me in the bottom of hell, for the glory of having met your lordship would have raised me thence. My squire, confound him, is better at loosening his tongue to say sharp things than at tightening my saddle to make it stay. But however I find myself, raised or fallen, afoot or ahorse, I shall ever be at your service and that of my lady the duchess, your worthy consort, true mistress of beauty and universal princess of court-esy.' 'Gently, my lord Don Quijote de La Mancha,' said the duke, 'for where my lady Doña Dulcinea del Toboso is, other beauties may not justly be praised.'

Sancho Panza, now free from his slip-noose, ere his master could reply, spoke up and said: 'It cannot be denied and must be affirmed that she's very beautiful, my lady Dulcinea del Toboso, but the hare leaps where least he is looked for, and I've heard tell that this they call nature is like a potter that makes vessels out of clay, who if he make one beautiful vessel can make two or three or a hundred. I say this because my lady the duchess is, I swear, not a whit behind my mistress the lady Dulcinea

del Toboso.' Thereupon Don Quijote turned to the duchess and said : ' Your grace must understand that never in the world had knight-errant a more talkative or witty squire. He'll be his own evidence would your extreme highness accept of my service a few days.' To this the duchess made reply : ' That Sancho the good is witty pleases me much, for wit, as your worship knows, isn't found in dunces, and hence I affirm him wise.' ' And long-winded,' added Don Quijote.

' So much the better,' said the duke, ' for much wit cannot be delivered in few words, and not to waste time in them, come, great Knight of Sorry Aspect —' ' Of the Lions, your highness should say,' put in Sancho : ' there's no longer any Sorry Aspect.' ' Let Sir Knight of the Lions then come to my castle hard-by and there receive entertainment due so high a personage. The duchess and I are wont to harbour all errants coming hither.' By this time Sancho had straightened and tightly girthed Rocinante's saddle, and when Don Quijote had mounted him and the duke his fine hunter, with the duchess between they rode to the castle. His hostess bade Sancho ride near as it was infinite pleasure to her to listen to his sharp sayings. Sancho was easily persuaded, and weaving in among them made a fourth in the conversation, to the great amusement of duke and duchess, who counted it a wonderful privilege to harbour in their castle so errant an adventurer and so travelled a squire.

CHAPTER XXXI

Which treats of many and great things

BOUNDLESS was the joy experienced by Sancho at finding himself thus in favour with the duchess, since he could not not but picture that he should meet in her castle with what he had found in the homes of Don Diego and Basilio : he was ever the friend of good living and would take entertainment by the forelock each and every time offered. The history relates then that before they arrived at his country-seat or castle the duke

went on ahead and instructed his servants how to treat Don Quijote, who now, as he approached with the duchess, was met at the gate by grooms or lacqueys, clad from top to toe in what are called morning-gowns, of finest crimson satin; and these, catching the knight in their arms almost before they were seen or heard, said to him: 'Hurry, sire, and help my lady alight.' Don Quijote hastened so to do and then and there ensued a long interchange of compliments, but in the end the persistency of the duchess prevailed, who wouldn't descend or alight from her palfrey save in the arms of the duke, saying she didn't consider herself worthy to be such a fruitless charge to so great a knight.

The duke then came forward to assist her and as they entered a large patio, two lovely maidens approaching threw over their guest's shoulders a long mantle of finest scarlet. Straightway the galleries of the yard were crowned with men and maid-servants, shouting: 'Hail to the flower and the cream of knight-errantry!' and all or most sprinkled phials of sweet-scented waters upon him and their master and mistress. This made our hero wonder and wonder: here for the first time he fully believed and recognised himself to be a veritable knight-errant, not an imaginary one, since he saw himself treated in the identical manner that, as he had read, were treated real errants in bygone days.

Sancho had abandoned his ass and sewed himself to the duchess, entering with her into the castle, but now his conscience pricked him for the desertion of his friend, and approaching a reverend duenna, who with others came forth to greet the mistress of the house, in low voice he said: 'Señora Gonzalez, or however your grace is called —' 'Doña Rodriguez de Grijalba is my name,' replied the duenna; 'what do you wish, brother?' 'I wish,' said Sancho, 'that you go to the castle-gate, where you will find my dappled ass. Please your worship put him or have him put in the stable, since the poor little thing is timid and never likes to be left alone.' 'If the master have as much sense as the man,' said the other to herself, 'we shall have our fill. Go yourself, brother, and the devil take you and him that

in evil hour brought you here. Look after the beast yourself; the women of this household are not acquainted with such tasks.' 'Indeed,' replied Sancho, 'what was it I heard my master, a witch for histories, say, repeating the story of Lancelot when he came from Brittany, how damsels provided for him, and duennas for his nag, and not even Sir Lancelot's would I take in exchange for my Dapple.' 'Brother, if you be a clown, keep your pretty sayings for where they may so appear, where you'll be paid for them, since from me for all of them you won't get a fig.' ' 'Twould be a ripe one if I did; indeed if years counted, your worship would surely win the trick.'

'Whoreson gutter-snipe!' exclaimed the duenna, red with rage; 'I'll give account to God whether I'm old or no, not to you, you garlic-stuffed mountebank;' and this she said so loudly as to be overheard by the duchess, who, turning about and seeing the duenna's excited face and fiery eyes, asked with whom was she angry. 'With this fine fellow, who in all seriousness asks me to put his ass, standing at the castle-gate, into the stable, giving as an example that in some place or other certain ladies looked after one Lancelot and duennas after his nag. What's more, he ended by calling me old woman.' 'Which I should deem a greater insult than any request,' replied the duchess, who now turned to Sancho saying: 'Mark you, Sancho friend, Doña Rodriguez is still quite young, wearing her hood more as a badge of authority and from custom than from years.'

'Bad may those remaining to me be,' quoth the squire, 'if I meant it that way. I only spake as I did because of the great affection I bear mine ass; it seemed to me I couldn't commend him to a person more sympathetic than the lady Doña Rodriguez.' His master, overhearing, now said: 'Is this the place for such talk, my son?' 'Master, every man must tell his need where he has it. Here I bethought me of mine ass and here I spake for him. Did I think of him in the stable, there should I speak.' To which the duke answered: 'Sancho is quite right and blameless. Dapple shall have all the provender he can eat: let his master rest easy, for his mount shall be treated as well as his own person.'

With this banter, relished by all save the knight, they arrived upstairs and showed their guest his hall, adorned with richest stuffs of gold and brocade. Six damsels as pages disarmed and served him, each forewarned and prompted by the duke and duchess of what to do and how to act toward Don Quijote that he might imagine himself faring like an adventurer. When they had stripped him of his armour, he was left in his tight-fitting breeches and doublet of chamois-skin, lank, long and withered, with cheeks that kissed : a figure whereat the maids just managed not to burst with laughter, having received definite orders against so doing. Instead they asked might they strip and array him in clean shirt, but he wouldn't hear of it, saying that modesty no less than valour became persons of his calling. He bade them hand the shirt to his squire, with whom now closeting himself in a room with a handsome bed, he stripped and donned the shirt, saying to Sancho :

‘ Tell me, modern clown and ancient booby, looks it well to you to insult and dishonour a duenna as venerable and worthy of respect as that below? Was that the time to be thinking of Dapple or are these persons to maltreat our mounts when their masters are received so royally? ’Fore God, my son, restrain yourself, and show not your thread lest they discover you are spun of coarse and country stuff. Look ye, sinner, in so much more worship is the master held as he has respectful and well-mannered servants, and one of the greatest advantages princes enjoy over commoners is being attended by as good as themselves. Do you not see, besotted that you are and beset that I am, that once they find you a churlish boor or ridiculous jester, I'll be taken for some charlatan-knight and a quack? Nay, nay, Sancho friend! fly, fly these stumbling-blocks, for he that trips into babbler and clown, falls at the first trap into fool out of favour. Bridle the tongue : consider and chew the words before they leave the mouth, realising that we have reached the spot whence, by God's favour and the valour of mine arm, we shall issue thrice and five times bettered in fame and fortune. ’

Sancho firmly promised to sew his month and bite off his tongue before saying an inapt or ill-considered word, in accord-

ance with the bidding of his master, who might henceforth rest easy, for never through him would be discovered what they were. The knight dressed, donned baldrick and sword, threw the scarlet mantle over his shoulders, put on a hunting-cap of green satin presented by the damsels, and thus adorned passed into the larger room, where he found his pages, arranged in wings, with appliances for bathing the hands, which they proffered with all respect and ceremony. Next came twelve other pages, boys, with the seneschal, to conduct him to dinner, where his hosts awaited. They placed the knight in their midst and full of pomp and majesty led him to the hall, where was set a sumptuous repast of four covers.

The duke and duchess advanced to receive him and with them one of those grave ecclesiastics that rule the houses of princes — one of those that, not being princes themselves, make sorry work of teaching behaviour to those that are ; that would measure the greatness of the great by the pettiness of their own souls ; that, striving to teach their pupils strictness, end in making them niggardly. Of this number I say was the solemn person that now came forward with his hosts to receive Don Quijote. They uttered a thousand polite phrases and with the knight came to the table. Don Quijote was honoured with the head and though he demurred, the duke so insisted that at last he yielded. The ecclesiastic sat opposite and duke and duchess on either side.

To all this Sancho was silent observer, dumfounded at seeing so much made of his master by these noble personages. Noting the many compliments and entreaties that passed between the duke and Don Quijote, he said : ‘ If your worships will give me leave, I’ll relate an incident that occurred in my town concerning this matter of seating.’ Scarce was this out of his mouth when his master shook with fear lest he utter some absurdity. Sancho saw, understood and said : ‘ You need not fear, sir, lest I go astray or tell something out of place, for I’ve not forgot the advice you gave me just now about speaking much and little, good and ill.’ ‘ I recall no such advice, Sancho ; say what you will, provided you say it briefly,’ ‘ Then what I am about to tell, gentlemen, is so true that my master Don Quijote here

present will not let me lie.' 'As far as I am concerned you may lie all you please. I shan't raise a hand to prevent you; but heed.' 'I have heeded and reheeded till I'm as safe as the bellman, as the story itself will show.' 'Twere well that your graces order this fool from the room, else he'll be making a thousand blunders.' 'By the life of the duke,' exclaimed the duchess, 'they mustn't take Sancho from me for an instant. I quite dote upon him, since I know him wise.'

'Wise be your holiness's days! in return for your good opinion, though I don't deserve it. And the story I am about to tell is this: A certain hidalgo of my village sent an invitation. He was rich and of rank, for he came of the Alamos of Medina del Campo and was married to Doña Mencía de Quiñones, daughter of Don Alonso de Marañón, knight of the order of Santiago, who was drowned in the Herradura and about whom there was that quarrel years ago in our place, in which I believe my master Don Quijote was mixed up and out of which little Tomé the scapegrace and son to Balbastro the smith came wounded. Is not all this true, señor? tell us, as you live, that these gentlemen may not think me a babbling liar.' 'So far,' offered the ecclesiastic, 'I consider you more babbler than liar, but hereafter I can't tell how I'll hold you.' 'You offer so much evidence and so many witnesses,' said Don Quijote, 'I am forced to say you must be telling the truth. Proceed, and shorten the tale, for at this speed you won't be done in two days.' 'There's no reason why he should to please me,' said the duchess, 'for his every word affords me pleasure. Let him tell it as he knows it, though not finished in six. Were he even that many, they'd be the best ever I spent.'

'I say then, good sirs, that this hidalgo, whom I know as well as I know these hands, for his house isn't a bowshot from mine, invited to dinner a poor but respectable farmer.' 'Hasten, brother,' broke in the ecclesiastic, 'for methinks you won't be done till the other world.' 'Please God and I'll finish short of half-way there,' returned Sancho; 'and so I say that when this farmer came to the house of the afore-mentioned host — may his soul rest in peace, for he is sometime dead, and more

by token they say he died the death of an angel ; I wasn't there at the time, having gone aharvesting at Tembleque.' ' On your life, my son,' again interrupted the ecclesiastic, ' come back soon and end your story before burying the gentleman, or there'll be another funeral.' ' Now it came to pass that when the two were about to seat themselves — and I seem to see them now better than ever — ' The duke and duchess were highly amused at the ecclesiastic's disgust at these pauses and asides, but Don Quijote was fairly afire with rage and vexation.

' So I say that as the pair as I have said were about to sit to their meal, the farmer pleaded with the hidalgo to take the seat at the head, and the hidalgo pleaded likewise that the seat of honour should be his guest's, saying that in his own house he was owed obedience. But the farmer, who prided himself on his manners and breeding, wouldn't consent, till finally his irritated host, placing his hands on the countryman's shoulders, forced him to the seat, saying : ' Down with you, clodhopper, for where I sit, there is the head of the table.' And this is my story and truly methinks it hasn't been introduced unfitly.' The knight turned a thousand colours, till his brown face looked like jasper, and his hosts restrained their mirth lest he lose control in his sense of Sancho's deviltry. To change the subject and to keep the squire out of further straits the duchess asked his master what news he had of his lady Dulcinea and whether of late he had sent her any presents of giants or crooks, for he must needs have vanquished many. And her guest replied :

' My trials, lady, though with a beginning, will never end. Giants I have vanquished, and villains and crooks I have sent her, but where are they to find my love, if she's changed and enchanted into the homeliest country-wench conceivable?' ' Don't ask me,' said Sancho, ' though I thought her the loveliest creature in the world. Certainly in litheness and friskiness a tumbler couldn't beat her. If you'll believe me, lady duchess, she leaps on an ass like a cat.' ' Have you seen her enchanted, then?' asked the duke. ' Have I seen her? who the devil was it then, if not I, that first hit upon this enchanting business? She's as enchanted as my father.'

The ecclesiastic, hearing them talk of giants, crooks and enchantments, awoke to the fact that this was Don Quijote de La Mancha, whose history the duke was always reading, though many times he had censured him, saying 'twas the height of folly to read such trash. Assured now that his suspicions were true, he turned to the duke and with considerable irritation said : ' Your excellency, sir, will have to account to our Lord for this fine fellow. This Don Quijote or Don Fool or whatever his name is not so simple as you seem to think, fitting him out with opportunities to display his vapours and vacuities. '

And turning to the knight he said : ' And you, numskull, who ever put into your head that you were a knight-errant and had vanquished giants and caught villains ? Go and good riddance, taking my advice : get you home, raise your children if you have them, look after your estate and leave off tramping the world o'er sucking wind, the butt of everyone, knowing you or not. Where, for goodness' sake, have you heard there ever were or are now knight-errants in the world ? where that there are giants in Spain or crooks in La Mancha or enchanted Dulcineas anywhere, or any of all that wild nonsense told of you ? ' Our errant listened attentively to these words of the venerable man, and seeing he had done, quaking with wrath and with livid countenance he rose, and not glancing at his hosts said — but his reply merits a chapter by itself.

CHAPTER XXXII

Don Quijote's reply to his censor, together with other passages both grave and gay

SHAKING from head to foot like a man dosed with mercury, in quick excited voice the knight began : ' The place where I stand, the presence I am in and the respect I ever have born and still possess for the calling your worship professes, tie the hands of my righteous indignation. Wherefore and because I recognise as all do that the cleric's and the woman's weapon is

one, to wit the tongue, I shall enter with mine in equal combat with your worship, from whom good counsel rather than infamous vituperation was to have been expected. Just and well-meaning criticism asks other times and demands other grounds than these; at least this public and bitter censure has gone beyond all limits or fair judgment, since the best rests more on sympathy than harshness. Nor is it well, without knowledge of the sin in question, right at the start to call a sinner simpleton and fool.

‘Else tell me, sir, for which of my simplicities do you condemn me and call me to account, bidding me go look after my house, wife and children, without knowing whether such be mine or no? Is nothing more needed to lay down the law for chivalry and to judge of knights than to enter one way or another into persons’ houses and dictate to their owners, having one’s self been trained in some scant pupilage and having seen no more of the world than is contained in the twenty or thirty leagues of one’s native district. Is it a vain dream or is the time ill spent that is devoted to wandering through the world, looking not to its rewards but to the rough brakes virtue must go through ere crowned with immortality? Were I deemed fool by knights, the magnanimous, the large-hearted, the nobly-born, I should consider it lasting reproach. But to be thought witless by students, who tread not the paths of chivalry, is as nothing to me.

‘Knight I am and knight, please God, I shall die. Some pass over the broad field of a proud ambition, others of a base and servile adulation, still others of a fraudulent hypocrisy and some of a true religion. But I, minded of my star, tread the narrow path of errantry, in whose practice I scorn wealth but not honour. I have satisfied grievances, redressed wrongs, chastised insolences, vanquished giants and trampled under foot monsters of all kinds. I am enamoured and for no other cause than that it is so required of knights-errant; but being in love, I am not among the Sybaritical and vicious but the Platonic and chaste. I ever direct my purposes to laudable end, to wit, to do good to all and ill to none. Whether or no he that so intends, so works and lives, deserves to be called fool, let your worships say, most excellent duke and duchess.’

‘ Well spoken, by heaven ! ’ exclaimed Sancho ; ‘ say no more, sire, for there’s nothing more to say or think or persist in in all the world. More by token, this gentleman denying as he has denied that knights-errant ever were or are, what wonder is it that he knows naught of what he says. ’ ‘ Are you, ’ asked the cleric, ‘ him they call Sancho Panza, to whom your master promised an isle ? ’ ‘ The same, ’ said Sancho, ‘ and I am the man that deserves it as well as the next. I am of your, Keep with the good and thou’lt be one of them ; of your, Not with whom thou art bred but with whom thou art fed ; and of your, He that leans against a good tree, has good shade over him. I’ve leaned against a good master and been many months in his company — must therefore, God willing, be another like himself. Long live he and long live I, since he’ll not lack empires to rule or I islands to govern. ’

‘ Right you are, Sancho friend, ’ said the duke, ‘ for in the name of Señor Don Quijote I offer you a spare one of mine of no poor quality. ’ ‘ On your knees, my son, and kiss his excellency’s feet for the favour done you. ’ Sancho obeyed, but the cleric, thrown into fury by this, rose from the table and exclaimed : ‘ By the habit I wear, I am forced to call your excellency as great a dunce as these two sinners. Well may they be mad when the sane further their folly. With them let your worship flock, for while they continue in this house I shall keep to mine, sparing myself the pains of censuring what I cannot cure. ’ And without a word or mouthful more he left the room, despite his host’s entreaties, though the duke to be sure didn’t say much, prevented by his amusement at the other’s foolish rage. He at length checked his laughter however and said to Don Quijote :

‘ Your worship, Sir Knight of the Lions, has answered so adequately in your own defence that there’s no occasion to seek further satisfaction for what after all is no grievance. Though it seemed one, ecclesiastics can no more give offence than women, as your worship knows better than I. ’ ‘ True, and the reason is that he that cannot suffer offence cannot give it. Women, children and the clergy, since they cannot defend themselves, cannot receive insult, for between insult and injury there’s this

difference, as your excellency knows better than I : an insult can only come from those capable of giving it and that do so give and maintain it, while an injury can come from any person and yet may not insult. For example : a man is idly standing in the street, ten armed men come up and give him one ; he draws sword and returns the compliment ; but the great odds defeat his desire, which was to avenge himself. Such a man suffers injury but no insult. Take again the instance of a man with his back turned ; along comes another and lets him have it somewhere, and then takes to his heels before the first can catch him. This again is a case of injury but no insult, for an insult has to be maintained. If he that gave the blow, though he gave it like a coward, had drawn sword and stood to it, the other would have been both injured and insulted : injured, in that he was struck treacherously ; insulted, because his assailant maintained it and didn't take French leave.

‘ Ergo, according to the laws of the accursed duel I may have been injured but I certainly was not insulted, for even as women and children may not resent or shun anything and cannot stand their ground, so is it with ecclesiastics. These three classes are deprived of arms offensive and defensive and therefore cannot offend, though by nature obliged to defend themselves. A minute ago I said that I may have suffered injury, but now I say not even that, for he that cannot receive injury still less can offer it. And so for all these reasons I could not resent nor do I resent what this good man said. Mine only regret is that he didn't wait till I convinced him of his error in thinking and maintaining that errant knights never existed. Had Amadis or one of his infinite descendants heard him, I warrant his grace would have fared ill. ’

‘ I can vouch for that,’ said Sancho : ‘ they'd have given him a sword-cut that would have split him from top to toe like a pomegranate or over-ripe melon ; they were just the boys for jokes of that kind. By my halidome, had Rinaldo of Montalvan heard this little man, I'll take mine oath he'd have given him such a slap on the mouth his grace wouldn't have spoken for three years. Nay, let him interfere with them once and see how

he leaves their hands.' The duchess was ready to die with laughter, for she rejoiced in Sancho, thinking him more daft than his master. And many at that time agreed with her.

At length the knight calmed down, the dinner ended and the table was cleared. Four damsels now approached, one with a silver basin, another with a ewer likewise of silver, the third with two fine white towels one over each shoulder, and the fourth with arms bared to the elbow and in her white hands (for white they must needs have been) a round ball of Neapolitan soap. The damsel of the basin came forward and in a thoughtless casual manner clapped the same beneath the beard of Don Quijote, who, though wondering at this ceremony, spake not a word, believing it must be the custom in that country instead of hands to cleanse the beard. He therefore stretched his own out as far as possible and straightway the ewer rained upon it and the damsel with the soap made a great to-do in rubbing and raising flakes of snow (for such the soap-suds seemed) not only on his beard but over the submissive errant's face and eyes, which latter he was forced to shut.

The duke and duchess, not being parties to this extraordinary ablution, wondered what the upshot would be. The barber-damsel, having raised a handful of lather, pretended there was no more water and so bade the ewer-damsel fetch some, saying that Señor Don Quijote would wait. The other obeyed and the knight sat there the oddest and most ludicrous sight imaginable. The onlookers, and there were many, did naught but gape and gape, and beholding that half-yard of neck more than commonly brown, the closed eyes and the lathered beard, were hard put to it to control their mirth. The damsels of the trick stood with unuplifted eyes, not daring to meet those of their master and mistress, who were moved alternately to laughter and rage, not knowing whether to punish the girls' insolence or reward them for the pleasure they afforded. At last the ewer-damsel returned and when the washing was done, the towel-bearer wiped and dried with care. All four then made the knight a low and sweeping curtsy and were about to leave when the duke, lest his guest perceive the joke, called to her of the bowl: 'Come now, and

wash me, but take care lest the water give out.' The damsel, quick to understand and act, arranged the basin as she had for the knight and all working together made a short clean job of it, and curtsying left the room. Afterwards it was learned that the duke swore to himself that if they didn't wash him as they did the other, he'd chastise their sauciness — which he now considered in some part atoned for.

Sancho was a spectator of these ablutionary rites and said to himself: 'God help me, would 'twere the custom in this land to wash squires' beards as well as knights! By Heaven and on my soul I've great need thereof, though were they to scrape me with a razor, I should prize it still more.' 'What do you say, Sancho?' enquired the duchess. 'I was saying, lady, that at the courts of other nobles I've always heard tell that on removing the cloth they pass water for the hands, not lye for the beards. 'Tis well to live long to see much, though they say that he that liveth long, suffereth much. But to suffer one of these washings were pleasure rather than pain.' 'Don't worry, friend, for I shall take care that my damsels wash you too, scrub you if need be.' 'With my beard I'll rest content, for the present at least. For the future, God has said what will be.' 'Mark you the good Sancho's wants, seneschal, and gratify them to the letter.' The seneschal replied that in all things Señor Sancho should be well served; and with this he took him to their dinner, leaving at the table the duke, the duchess and Don Quijote, who talked on many and among themselves unrelated topics but all bearing on the exercise of arms and knight-errantry.

The duchess requested Don Quijote to outline and describe (since he seemed blest with a good memory) the beauty and features of the lady Dulcinea del Toboso, for according to report bruited abroad she must be the most beautiful creature on earth, let alone La Mancha. Don Quijote sighed and said: 'Could I pluck out mine heart and lay it in a dish on this table before the eyes of your grace, my tongue would be spared saying what hardly will be conceived. Your excellency would then behold her in her full beauty, but ill can I portray point by point the loveliness of the peerless one — a task worthy of others' shoulders,

demanding the brush of a Parrhasius, a Timanthus, an Apelles and the gravers of a Lysippus, to paint and carve her on tablets, in marble and bronze, with Ciceronian and Demosthenian eloquence in words to do her justice.' 'What is Demosthenian, Señor Don Quijote?' interrupted the duchess; 'I seem never to have heard it.' 'Demosthenian eloquence means the eloquence of a Demosthenes, as Ciceronian of a Cicero, these two being the world's greatest orators.' 'True,' said the duke, 'and 'twas glaring ignorance on my wife's part not to know. Yet it would still give us great pleasure did Señor Don Quijote but sketch her in the rough, for even so I'm sure she'll seem so fair that the fairest will envy.'

'Twould be a pleasure to do this,' replied the knight, 'had not her recent disgrace so blurred my impression of Dulcinea that I incline more to lament than limn her. Your graces should be informed that when the other day I came to kiss her hands and receive her blessing, pleasure and license for this my third sally, I found another than I sought. I found her enchanted and changed from princess to peasant, from fair to foul, from angel to devil, from sweet to sour, from courtly to country, from peaceful to prancing, from light to darkness : in short from Dulcinea del Toboso to a peasant of Sayago.' 'God help me,' cried the duke, 'and who could have wrought such mischief in the world : who could have deprived Dulcinea of the beauty that gladdened, the manner that delighted, not to speak of the modesty that did her such credit?'

'Who?' replied his guest; 'who but one of the many and wicked envious enchanters that persecute me? the cursed crew! born in the world to obscure and efface the deeds of the good and to brighten and enhance those of the wicked. Enchanters have persecuted, enchanters still and will persecute me until they sink me and my high chivalries into the depths of oblivion. They wound and work me harm where most I feel it : for to deprive an errant of his lady-love is to take from him the eyes wherewith he sees, the sun that gives him light, and that whereby he sustains himself and lives. Oft and oft have I said and now I say again, that the knight without a love is a tree without

leaves, a building without foundation, a shadow with substance.'

'There's no more to be said,' declared the duchess; 'but if the history of Señor Don Quijote, which not long since came forth to the light of the world, meeting with such general applause, is to be credited, one would infer, if my memory serve me, that your worship has never seen Dulcinea, because there's no such lady in the world; in fact that she's a fantastic being, a creature of your imagination, painted with all the charms and perfections you desired.' 'On this question much might be said,' replied Don Quijote; 'God knows whether or no there's a Dulcinea in the world, real or imaginary: these are not things whose truth can be proven. I neither engendered my lady nor brought her forth, but simply think her as she needs must be, as one whose parts can make her famous in all those of the world: beautiful without blemish, distinguished without pride, tender and yet modest, gracious from courtesy and courteous from good-breeding; last of all, noble of lineage, for with family as a background beauty shines forth and excels with more degrees of excellence than with the fair of lowly birth.'

'True,' said the duke, 'but will Señor Don Quijote allow me to say what, having read the history of his exploits, I am forced to suggest, namely, that, granting there is a Dulcinea in el Toboso or out of it and that she is marvellously beautiful as your worship would have us believe, her lineage surely cannot match the Orianas, Alastrajereas, Madásimas and others of that stripe with whom, as you well know, the histories abound.' 'To this I can only say that Dulcinea is the daughter of her works, that goodness corrects the blood and that an humble virtuous person is more to be honoured than a vicious exalted one. The more that my lady has within what can make her a crowned and sceptred queen, since the merit of a fair and worthy woman can work even greater miracles, and virtually, though not formally, Dulcinea has in her very nature the promise of a better than her present lot.'

'I confess,' now ventured the duchess, 'that in all your worship says you go sounding your way lead in hand, and henceforth I shall believe and make my household, the duke himself if

necessary, believe, that Dulcinea del Toboso is and is beautiful and nobly born, and what is the most I can and know how to say of her, is worthy the service of such a knight as Señor Don Quijote. Yet I cannot help entertaining one scruple and harbouring something almost of bitterness against your squire, and that is that when on your behalf he brought this Dulcinea a letter, he found her winnowing a sack of wheat, and more by token he says 'twas red wheat — a circumstance that makes me question her family-rank.'

To this doubt of his hostess the knight replied : ' My lady, your highness must know that all or most things that befall me are beyond the pale of the common experience of knights-errant, being so directed by the inscrutable will of the fates or by the malice of some envious enchanter. And 'tis a truth long verified that all or most famed and errant knights have graces peculiar to themselves : one the gift of not being enchanted ; another the being fashioned of such impenetrable flesh as to be invulnerable. For example it is related of the famous Roland, one of the Twelve Peers of France, that he was proof against wounds save through the sole of his left foot by means of a stout pin, so when Bernardo del Carpio worsted him at Roncesvalles, finding that he resisted every weapon and bethinking him of how Hercules strangled the fell giant Antæus, putative son of Terra, he lifted and hugged him to death between his arms. From all this I would declare that possibly I also possess some certain charm, not invulnerability, since experience has oft shown me that my flesh is penetrable and soft, nor of being enchantment-proof, for once I found myself locked in a cage where all the world had not been sufficiently powerful to thrust me.

' Since I freed myself from that spell however, I am tempted to believe no other exists that can harm me, and my enchanters, seeing they cannot work their low tricks on me, methinks avenge themselves on what I most love, defrauding me of life by persecuting that of Dulcinea by whom I live. Ergo, when my squire carried her my missive, they changed her into a peasant, and one engaged in the menial pastime of winnowing wheat, though I've always held that this particular wheat was not red or even

wheat, but grains of orient pearl. In further proof of my main contention I would say to your graces that when a while back we arrived at el Toboso, the palaces of her ladyship were not to be found, and though the day following she appeared to Sancho in her proper and most beautiful figure, to me she looked like nothing so much as a coarse country-wench, and not at all a well-spoken one, whereas really she's the wit of the world. And since I am not enchanted and presumably a second time cannot be, she must be the enchanted one, the injured, the transformed, the changed and changed about. On her mine enemies have avenged themselves and in perpetual sorrow shall I live till again I behold her in her pristine state.

‘ All this have I said that no notice be taken of what Sancho reported of the sifting and winnowing, for inasmuch as she's transformed for me, 'twere no wonder if for him as well. My lady-fair is noble and well-born and comes of the gentle families of el Toboso, which are many, ancient and reputable. Certainly no slight praise is Dulcinea's and her village will be as famed and celebrated in future ages for her as Troy has been for Helen and Spain for La Cava, though with better reason and report than these. Furthermore I would have your worships understand that Sancho Panza is the most delightful squire that ever served knight-errant. At times he betrays such clever simplicities that the weighing whether he is simple or clever causes not a little diversion. He has wicked ways that condemn him for a rogue and incivilities that confirm him for a booby. He doubts all and believes everything. When I think he's about to fall headlong into nonsense, he outs with some word of wisdom that raises him to the skies. In short I wouldn't exchange him though they gave me a city to boot.

‘ I am thus left in doubt whether or no 'twere well to send him to that government your worship has bestowed, though I mark in him a certain aptitude therefor, which with a little trimming of his understanding should make him succeed as well as the king does with his taxes : the more since after many experiments we have come to appreciate that neither great capacity nor much learning is needed in a governor, when there are a hundred

hereabouts that scarce can read, and yet rule like jail-birds. The great requisite is good intention and the constant desire to act uprightly, for there'll always be someone to set them straight, even as with illiterate knights, who, acting as governors, rule by proxy. I shall counsel my squire never to take a bribe or desert the right, together with other things at present lying in my stomach, to come out at the proper time for his use and the benefit of the isle.'

The conversation had reached this point when they heard a loud noise and many voices, and soon Sancho came rushing in, all in a fright, wearing a dish-cloth for a bib, and behind him many servants, or better say kitchen-knaves and other trash, one of whom bore a little trough full of water whose colour and consistency betokened dish-water. This one was chasing the squire and trying to clap the trough upon his beard, which another of the varlets was anxious to wash. 'What, what, boys! what is this!' exclaimed the duchess; 'what will you of this good man? have you forgot he's a governor-elect?' To this the scullion-barber replied: 'The gentleman refuses to have his beard washed as is the custom and as the duke and his master had theirs.'

'I don't refuse,' protested Sancho in great anger, 'but I want it done with cleaner towels, clearer water and less dirty hands. There's no such difference 'twixt me and master that they should wash him with angel-water and me with devil's lye. The customs of countries and palaces are well enough in so far as they don't arouse disgust, but the method of cleaning that obtains here is worse than that of the flogging-penitents. My beard is decent enough and needs not such refreshment, and he that comes to wash me or touch a hair of my head, of my beard that is, speaking with all respect I'll leave my fist in his skull. Cirimonies and soapings of this sort look more like practical jokes than the entertainment of guests.'

The duchess was highly amused on seeing the anger and hearing the answer of the squire, but it gave his master little pleasure to see him so foully decked with the many-coloured towel and surrounded by such a rout of scullions. First making

a low bow, as if for license to speak, he calmly said to the dogs : ‘ Ho, there, gentlemen, let that lad be and get ye gone whence ye came, or elsewhere if it please you, for my squire is as decent as the next fellow and these little troughs are as distasteful to him as a small drinking-cup would be. Take my advice and let him alone, for neither of us is good at taking jokes.’ Sancho caught the speech from his mouth and continued it saying : ‘ Ay, let them not come to fool with the vagabond, for I’ll put up with it as much as ’tis now night. Let them fetch a comb or what they will and curry me this beard, and should they find one little thing that offends against cleanliness, they can shear me cross-wise.’

Upon this, the duchess, still with signs of merriment, said : ‘ Sancho Panza is right and always will be. He is clean and as he says doesn’t need washing ; if our custom offends him, his soul is his own, especially since you, ministers of purity, have been too reckless and remiss in offering such a person and beard troughs of wood and pantry dish-clouts, instead of fountains and ewers of pure gold. You are wicked, base-born creatures and, scoundrels that you are, must wreak your bad passions on squires of knights-errant.’ The scullion-crew, and even the seneschal, who was one of them, believed their mistress spoke seriously, and put to confusion and ashamed of themselves they took the bib off Sancho and retreated from the room.

As soon as Panza found himself free of that seeming great peril, he knelt before the duchess saying : ‘ From great ladies great favours are expected : this that your worship has done me can never be repaid with less than desiring to see myself dubbed a knight-errant, that I may spend all my days in serving your supreme highness. But I am naught but a peasant, my name Sancho Panza ; I am married, have children, and work at being a squire ; if with any of these I can aid your majesty, I shall take less time in obeying than you in asking.’ ‘ It is evident you have learned to be courteous in the school of courtesy itself ;’ she replied ; ‘ in other words that you have been nurtured at the breasts of Don Quijote, who should be the cream of politeness and the flower of all cirimonies as you call them.

Blessings on such a lord and such a servant, one the pole of knight-errantry, the other the star of squirely faithfulness. Rise, friend Sancho, and in return for your courtesy I shall see that as soon as possible the duke bestows the promised favour of an isle.'

With this, their talk came to an end and Don Quijote retired for the siesta. The duchess told Sancho that, should he not care about sleeping, he could pass the afternoon in a cool hall with her and her damsels. Sancho replied that though as a matter of fact he was apt to sleep four or five hours siesta in the summer, to please her goodness he would try to keep awake and follow obedient to her wishes. The duke gave new orders as to how Don Quijote should be treated : not to omit one point from the style with which errant knights are said to have been treated of old.

CHAPTER XXXIII

The succulent discourse that passed 'twixt the duchess and her damsels on the one side and Sancho Panza on the other, worthy to be read and noted

THE history tells us then that Sancho didn't sleep that siesta but in fulfilment of his word went to visit with the duchess, who by reason of her great pleasure in hearing him talk made him sit on a low chair beside her, though Sancho as a good servant would rather have stood. His hostess however said that as a governor he must be seated, though he still should talk as a squire ; as both he deserved no less than the bench of Cid Ruy Diaz, the Campeador. Sancho shrugged his shoulders and sat down and all the duennas and damsels surrounded him, waiting in silence to hear what he would say. But the duchess began the conversation :

' Now that we are alone and there's none to overhear us, I would that sir governor settle certain doubts of mine, born of the story of the great Don Quijote de La Mancha already in

print. One of these scruples is, how came it that when the good Sancho never saw Dulcinea, the lady Dulcinea del Toboso I should say, and never brought her master's letter, which was left in the memorandum-book in the Sierra Morena, how came it I ask that he had the impudence to feign a reply and say that he found her winnowing wheat, which was all trumped up, and not only greatly to the prejudice of the peerless one's reputation but quite out of keeping with the fashion and fidelity of good squires.' At these words without attempting reply Sancho rose and quietly with body bent and finger on lips walked about the room lifting the curtains, and then, this done, sat down again and said :

' Now that I've seen that none save these bystanders is listening, without fear or fright I'll answer what has been asked me, my lady, and all that may be asked in the future. The first thing I say is that I hold my master Don Quijote mad, stark-naked mad, though occasionally he says things that, in my opinion and indeed in the opinion of all that hear them, are so shrewd and travel such a good track that Satan himself couldn't go better. At the same time, truly and once for all, I've made up my mind he is crazy. And with this in my 'magination I dare make him believe things that have neither head nor foot, such as the reply to his letter and that other matter of six or eight days standing, which is not in the history as yet. I refer to the enchantment of my lady Dulcinea. I led him to think she was under a spell, though such is no more the case than over the hills of Ubeda.'

The duchess asked to be informed, so Sancho described it exactly as it had passed, to the no small pleasure of his audience, and continuing the conversation the duchess said : ' As a result of what the good Sancho has been telling me, a certain question keeps bobbing up and down within me and a certain voice keeps whispering in mine ear saying : ' If Don Quijote de La Mancha is mad, witless and a fool, and Sancho Panza his squire, knowing it, still serves and follows him and waits agog on his empty promises, obviously he must be more mad and foolish than his master. If that be true, as it is, 'twill be a bad story for thee,

mistress duchess, if to such a Sancho you give an isle to govern, for he that cannot rule himself, how shall he others ?' 'Fore God, lady, but this scruple is well born, and your worship can ask it to speak right out or as it pleases, for I know 'tis telling the truth, and that had I my wits about me, I should have deserted my master days ago. But this is my fate and my misfortune : I have to follow him, I cannot do more. We belong to the same village, I have eaten his bread, I love and owe him much, he gave me the ass-colts, and above all I am faithful. So it's impossible for aught to separate us, save he of the pick and shovel.

' If your haughtiness refuse me the promised isle, God made me for less, and maybe withholding it will prove to the good of my soul, for though a clown I know the meaning of the proverb that says, To her own hurt had the emmet wings. It well may be that Sancho the squire would go to Heaven sooner than Sancho the governor. They bake as good bread here as in France and by night all cats look grey. Unlucky the man that hasn't broken fast by two in the afternoon, and no stomach is a hand larger than another, which can be filled, as the saying is, with hay and straw. The little birds of the field have God to care for them, and four yards of Cuenca baize will warm you better than four of Segovia broadcloth. In quitting this world for the grave the prince goes by as narrow a path as the peasant, and the pope takes up no more room than the verger, though one be taller than the other, for entering the pit we must all shrink and fit, or they make us in our spite ; and good-night I say. If your worship refuse the island to me as a fool, I shall know how not to care a fig like a wise man. And I've heard say the devil lurks behind the Cross, that all is not gold that glitters, that from his oxen, ploughs and yokes they took the farmer Wamba to be king of Spain and that from his silks and good times and riches they took King Roderick to be eaten of serpents, if the verses of the old ballads do not lie. '

' How can they, ' exclaimed the duenna Rodriguez, one of the listeners, ' when there's a ballad that tells us in so many words that they put the king alive in a tomb full of toads, snakes and

lizards, and that two days later in low and pitiful voice he was heard to cry :

Now they eat me, now they eat me,
In the part I sinned the most.

Very right, therefore, is this gentlemen in saying he'd rather be peasant than king, if vermin are to eat him.' The duchess could not but smile ; nor had her wonder ceased at the words and wisdom of Sancho, to whom now she said :

' The good Sancho already knows that what a knight once promises he tries to fulfil, though it cost him his life. The duke, my lord and husband, though not of the wanderers, is a knight none the less and will keep his word with regard to the promised isle in spite of the envy and malice of the world. Let Sancho be of good cheer, for when least he thinks he'll find himself seated in the saddle of his island-state, clutching his governorship, which may he reject for another of three-bordered brocade. And let him look well to how he governs, remembering that all his vassals are loyal and well-born.' ' In this matter of governing well,' replied Sancho, ' no warning is needed, for I am charitable by nature and have compassion for the poor. There's no stealing the loaf from him that kneads and bakes, and by my halidome let them throw no loaded dice with me for I am an old dog and on to their ' hist, hist.' I can keep sharp lookout on occasion and no cobwebs will be spun over my eyes : I know where the shoe pinches. I say this because at my hands the good shall have both favour and influence and the evil neither welcome nor good wishes. In this affair of governing methinks the beginning is everything, and who knows but that after a fortnight I shall smack my lips over it and know more about ruling than of field-work, to which I was reared.'

' You are right, Sancho ; none is born sword in hand and 'tis out of men, not stones, bishops are made. But reverting to the matter touched upon a few moments ago, the enchantment of Dulcinea, I regard it as a certainty and more than proven that all the make-believe resorted to by Sancho to deceive his master, making him think the peasant-girl Dulcinea, was in reality the work of one of the many magicians that persecute Don Quijote.

If he failed to recognise her 'twas because she was enchanted, for verily I have it from a reliable source that the wench that sprang onto the she-ass was and is Dulcinea del Toboso, and that the good Sancho, thinking to be deceiver, was himself deceived, and there is no more doubt about this than of anything under the sun. Secondly, let Master Panza realise that we also have enchanters, who both wish us well and keep us posted as to what goes on in the world, telling us in few and plain words without fraud or confusion. So believe me that the bouncing lass was and is Dulcinea, who is as enchanted indeed as the mother that bore her, but whom when least we think it we shall again behold in her proper form. And then Sancho shall be rid of the delusion under which he lives.'

'All this may easily be,' confessed Sancho, 'and it inclines me to take stock in what my master says he witnessed in the cave of Montesinos, since he vows he saw the lady Dulcinea in the very same guise and habit in which I said I saw her, the time I enchanted her for mine own pleasure. All may be the reverse, as your ladyship informs us, since it cannot and should not be expected of my mean wit that it originate so clever an artifice, nor do I think my master mad enough to swallow, simply through my meagre and flimsy persuasion, a thing so open to suspicion. But not on this account were it well that your goodness set me down as a mischief-monger, since a clown like me is not supposed to ferret out the thoughts and spitefulnesses of naughty magicians. I concocted that business to escape my master's scolding and with no intent of working him harm. If it has turned out otherwise, God's in his Heaven and judges our hearts.'

'True,' agreed the duchess, 'but tell me, Sancho, what is this you say of the cave of Montesinos? 'twould interest me to hear.' The squire then related step by step all that has been writ of that adventure, and when he had done the duchess remarked: 'Since the great Don Quijote says he saw down there the very lass Sancho saw outside el Toboso, it may be inferred that surely she was Dulcinea — enchanters are not idle hereabouts, nay a little overbusy I should say.' 'I too,' echoed Panza, 'but

if my lady really is enchanted, I'm sorry for her, though it's not for me to meddle with my master's enemies, who must be numerous and very devils. Let the truth stand that what I saw was a country-wench, and country-wench I took and judged her to be. If that was Dulcinea, 'tis not to be laid at my door: don't look to me, 'tis no affair of mine. Let them not come nagging at every step with, Tell me and I'll tell you, and their, Sancho said so, or, 'Twas Sancho that did it, or, Sancho went and Sancho came, as though I were any old person and not the Panza that is travelling in books all over the world, according to Samson Carrasco, who has been bachelored by Salamanca, and such folk can never lie, except when it pleases them or they find it to their advantage. So there's naught to pick a quarrel about with me. And seeing I stand in good odour, and as a good name according to my master is more to be desired than great riches, let them case me this goverment and they shall see marvels; for he that has been a good squire will make a good governor.'

'All that honest Sancho has here said,' remarked the duchess, 'are Catonian sentences or at least drawn from the very heart of Michael Verino, that perished in his pride. Indeed, indeed, speaking after your own fashion, Under a rough coat may be found a good drinker.' 'Believe me, lady, in all my life I never drank from wickedness; from thirst, yes — I have naught of the hypocrite about me. I drink when I feel like it, and even when I don't, if they hand it to me, that I may not appear squeamish or ill-bred. When they toast a friend, what heart so marble that will not pledge him? But though I wear shoes, I don't muddy them. More by token, squires to knights-errant usually drink water, since their road ever lies through wood and dale, over mountain and crag, without a pittance of wine though they gave an eye for it.'

'I can well believe it,' sympathised the duchess, 'and now let Sancho go rest a while. Later we shall speak more at large and give orders that he soon may be cased, as he calls it, with that government.' Sancho again kissed the hands of the duchess, whom he prayed that good care should be taken of Dapple, the light of his eyes. 'What Dapple is this?' she queried. 'Mine

ass ; but not to call him so I usually speak of him as Dapple. When I first entered this castle, I requested the lady duenna here to see to him, but she flared up as though I had called her old and ugly, whereas duennas should attend to asses more naturally and properly than bear sway in halls. So help me God ! and how ill did a certain gentleman of our village take to these ladies.' 'He would be some good-for-nothing then,' retorted Doña Rodriguez ; 'were he a gentleman and of good birth, he would set them above the horn of the moon.'

'Come, come,' rebuked the duchess ; 'let Doña Rodriguez hold her tongue and Master Panza rest at ease, leaving to my care the entertainment of Dapple, which as Sancho's jewel I'll set above the apples of mine eyes,' 'Tis enough if he be in the stable,' said Sancho, 'for neither he nor his master is worthy for a moment to be over your ladyship's eyes, and I should as little think of it as to stick me with a poniard. My master says that in politeness 'tis better to lose by a card too many than too few, but I say that when it comes to beasts and asses one should walk with compass in hand and in measured bounds.' 'Take the animal with you to your government, Sancho, and there he can be entertained as you wish, and even be released from his usual labours.' 'Let your worship not think you've said something foolish,' declared the squire, 'for I have seen more than two asses go to governorships ; so 'twould be nothing novel for me to take mine.' The words of Sancho renewed in the duchess her eagerness and delight, and sending him to his rest she went to make the duke acquainted with his visit. The two then arranged and gave orders for a jest, and a rare one, to be played upon Don Quijote, fitting well with the fashions of chivalry, and before the end many pranks of this kind were practised, so suitable and clever as to be judged the best adventures of this great history.

CHAPTER XXXIV

A way is discovered of disenchanting the peerless Dulcinea, being among the most famous adventures of this book

GREAT was the pleasure of the duke and duchess in the conversation of Don Quijote and his squire, and carrying out their intention of playing a few jests upon them by way of mock-adventures they chose as a motive of one what the knight told of having seen in the cave of Montesinos. What the duchess marvelled at more than that tale was that Sancho's simplicity was so simple that he had come to believe Dulcinea really and truly enchanted, though himself had been the projector and enchanter of that whole affair. And so, having given orders to their servants for all that was to be done, six days later they took our knight on a hunting-party, accompanied by as great an array of hunters and beaters as a crowned head could summon. They offered their guest an appropriate suit and another of the finest green cloth to Sancho. Don Quijote declined his, saying that on the morrow he was to return to the laborious exercise of arms and wished not to be hampered with wardrobes or furnishings of any kind. But Sancho? yes, he took what they gave him, hoping for an early opportunity to put it up for sale.

When the long-looked-for day arrived, the knight assumed his armour, the squire his new suit, mounted his Dapple whom he refused to leave behind, declining a proffered horse, and both mingled with the hunters. The duchess was gorgeously decked out and in pure courtesy Don Quijote led her palfrey by the bridle, though the duke would have waived this attention. In time they arrived at a wood lying between two high mountains, and here, when the stations were assigned, the toils and snares laid and the people distributed on their various beats, the hunt began with great noise, shouting and hallooing, till one couldn't be heard amid the barking of dogs and blowing of horns. The

duchess alighted and holding a sharp spear took her stand in an ambush whence she knew the wild boars were won't to issue. The duke and Don Quijote did the same, posting themselves on either side, with Sancho drawing up the rear, still sitting on Dapple whom he dared not forsake lest harm befall him.

Scarce had they taken their positions, with their many servants on either wing, when they saw rushing toward them, hard pressed by dogs and huntsmen, a huge boar, gnashing his teeth and tusks and tossing foam from his mouth. At once, embracing his shield and clapping hand to sword Don Quijote advanced to receive him. The duke followed his example with a hunting-spear, but the duchess would have outstripped them both, had not the duke prevented her. But Sancho, seeing the valiant beast, abandoned Dapple and took to his heels. As he tried to squirm a high oak for safety, when half-way up his luck turned against him — the branch he held broke and he in his fall, caught by a snub, couldn't reach bottom. Finding himself in this plight and that his green coat was tearing, fearing too lest the savage boar might come his way, the squire shouted for help with such ardour that all that heard and saw him not believed him already in the jaws of a wild-beast.

The tusky boar was at length transfixed by the many opposing javelins, and Don Quijote, attending to the cries of Sancho, whom he recognised through them, saw him hanging head down, his ass beside, who forsook him not in his scath. And Cid Hamet adds that rarely did he see Sancho Panza without Dapple or Dapple without Sancho : such their mutual faith and friendship. The knight coming up released the other who, finding himself free and standing, gazed at the tear in his hunting-suit, grieved to the soul, thinking that in that garment he had possessed an inheritance. They now laid the heavy boar upon a mule and covering it with sprigs of rosemary and branches of myrtle brought him as the spoil of victory to some large field-tents raised in the midst of the wood, where they found tables set and so large and sumptuous a feast that one could not fail to recognise the lavishness of the provider.

Showing the rents of his torn vestment Sancho said to the

duchess : ' Had this hunt been for hares or little birds, my coat had been spared this extremity. I can't see what sport there is in watching for an animal that, if he but touch you with his tusk, takes your life. I remember to have heard an old ballad running :

The bears may gulp you down
Like Favila of renown. '

' Favila was a Gothic king, ' volunteered his master, ' who on a hunt was eaten by a bear. ' ' Just my point, ' said Sancho : ' that I think it wrong for princes and kings to run such risks for the sake of a little pleasure, which apparently is none, since it consists in killing an innocent animal. '

' In this you are mistaken, Sancho, ' said the duke, ' for the exercise of hunting is of all others the most seemly and suitable for kings and princes. The chase is an image of war : therein, without too great personal danger, are stratagems, crafts and snares for the defeat of the enemy. In its practice are endured biting cold and insufferable heat ; sloth and drowsiness are cast behind ; the bodily powers are strengthened and the limbs made supple. In fine, 'tis a pursuit to be enjoyed to the hurt of none and the delight of many. And the best of it is, 'tis not for all men, but unlike other sports save falconry is reserved for kings and great lords. Therefore, my good Sancho, you must change your opinion and when you are governor, engage in the chase, and you'll see that one loaf is as good as a hundred. '

' Never, ' quoth the squire ; ' the good governor and the broken leg abide at home. 'Twould be a pretty thing if people came foot-sore to see me on business and I off enjoying myself ; at that rate mine island would go to the devil. Upon my word, sir, hunting and pastimes are more for good-for-nothings than governors. The way I think to amuse myself is by playing brag at Easter and bowls on Sundays and fêtes. Your chases and races don't tally with my conscience or agree with my constitution. '

' Please God, may it be so, ' said the other, ' but 'twixt saying and doing there's great space. ' ' Let there be what there will, pledges never worry a good paymaster, and he whom God helps is better off than he that rises early. 'Tis the belly that carries

the feet and not the feet the belly. My meaning is, that if God be on my side and I do what I should and with good purpose, sure I'll govern better than a jail-bird. Nay, let them put their finger in my mouth and see if I bite it or no.'

'May God and all his saints confound you, accursed man,' quoth his master; 'when will the day come, as often I ask, when you will speak coherently and without refrains? Prithee, your worships, take no notice of this fool, or he'll grind your souls, not 'twixt two only but two thousand proverbs, dragged in as fitly to the time and season as — so help him God or me, if I wish to hear another one!' 'Sancho's proverbs,' claimed the duchess, 'though more in number than the Greek Commander's, are none the less to be prized for the brevity of their wit. For myself I can say that they give greater pleasure than any that may be more aptly applied or more seasonably introduced.'

With this and similar engaging talk they left the tent for the wood, where they passed the afternoon in visiting the hunters' posts and ambuscades. Night descended nor so clear or serene as might have been expected of this the middle of summer, but it brought with it a kind of visible darkness that greatly assisted their worships' project. Thus, as the night closed in and a little before dusk, suddenly it seemed as if the whole forest were afire and from far and near were heard countless cornets and other martial instruments, as if many troops of cavalry approached. The blaze of fire and blare of instruments well-nigh stunned the ears and sealed the eyes of our little company, indeed of all in the wood. Straightly they heard numberless cries of *illâh illa'llâh*, even as cry the Moors on entering battle. The trumpets and clarions blared, the kettle-drums resounded, the fifes whistled, all in unison and so vehemently and without remission that he must have had no senses that didn't lose them. The duke was astounded, the duchess amazed, Don Quijote wondered, Sancho Panza quaked, and even those privy to the cause held their breath. Fear silenced all, when straight a postillon in devil's attire rode past, blowing in lieu of a cornet a huge hollow ox-horn, giving forth a horrid and raucus resonance.

‘Ho there, brother courier,’ cried the duke, ‘who are you and whither bound? what warlike nation is this, marching through the wood?’ And the courier in hideous and devil-may-care tones replied: ‘I am the evil one and go in search of Don Quijote de La Mancha. The rabblement that pours this way are six troops of enchanters, bearing on a triumphal car the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso. Enchanted she comes with that elegant Frenchman, Montesinos, to instruct said knight how she may be freed from her charm.’ Upon this the errant in question accosted him: ‘Were you the devil as you say and your aspect declares, you’d have recognised him of La Mancha, since he stands before you.’ ‘Fore God and on my conscience,’ replied the demon, ‘I didn’t notice him, for my thoughts are parcelled out among so many things that I overlooked the chief one that sent me hither.’ ‘Truly,’ said Sancho, ‘this devil must be a good man and a good Christian or he’d not have sworn fore God and on his conscience. Methinks there must be worthy folk even in hell.’

The demon without dismounting directed his gaze at Don Quijote saying: ‘To you, Knight of the Lions (and may I see you in their jaws), the unlucky but courageous Montesinos sends me, bidding me ask on his behalf that you abide in the very spot where I find you, by reason that he has with him one Dulcinea del Toboso, and wishes to inform you what is needful to her disenchantment. Since no more was mine errand, no more shall be my rest. May demons like myself abide with you and good angels with these their highnesses.’ Therewith he blew his outrageous horn and departed, nor stopped for reply. Astonishment again fell upon all, the knight and squire in particular: upon Sancho in seeing that maugre the truth they would have it that Dulcinea was enchanted, upon Don Quijote in his doubt as to all that befell him in the cave. While lifted in these thoughts, he was addressed by the duke: ‘Will you wait, Señor Don Quijote?’ ‘Why not? here I’ll abide fearless and strong though all hell stir against me.’ ‘But as for me,’ quoth Sancho, ‘if I see another devil and hear another horn like the last, I’ll abide here as soon as in Flanders.’

By this hour darkness reigned and many lights commenced to flicker through the wood, much as the earth's dry exhalations dart across the sky, like shooting stars. At the same breath was heard a rumbling as of heavy ox-cart wheels, at whose harsh ceaseless creaking wolves and bears are said to flee. On top of all and adding to the general fury rose another tempest as of battles and engagements in all parts of the forest, for here could be heard the booming thunder of terrific artillery, yonder the discharge of countless muskets, almost at hand rang the shouts of combatants, while at a distance echoed the Moslem war-cry. Cornets, clarions, horns, trumpets, kettledrums, cannon, muskets and above all the dreadful grating of the wagons, together made such pandemonium that Don Quijote had to steel his heart to withstand it. Sancho's fell to earth and sent him fainting to the skirt of the duchess, who quickly ordered water thrown in his face.

He revived just as a wagon with creaking wheels drew up before them. It was drawn by four ponderous oxen, each covered with black trappings and carrying on his horns a blazing wax-torch. On the high seat sat a venerable gaffer with beard whiter than snow extending below his waist and clad in long flowing robe of black buckram (as the wagon was decked with countless lights, 'twas easy to make out all it contained). It was guided by a pair of hideous demons, likewise clad in buckram and with such monstrous faces that Sancho, having once glimpsed them, closed his eyes that he might never do so again. The old man, now rising from his high seat, cried in loud voice: 'I am the sage Lirgandeo;' and the car moved on without his speaking more.

Soon came another wagon of the same type and an old man enthroned, who, causing the chariot to slow down, in a voice no less formidable than the other cried: 'I am the sage Alquife, great friend of Urganda the unknown;' and passed on. In the same manner arrived a third, but seated on this throne was not an aged man but a lusty one with an evil eye, and he on his arrival rose to his feet, saying in voice more harsh and wicked than the others: 'I am the enchanter Arcalaus, mortal enemy to Amadis of Gaul and all his tribe;' yet he too passed on.

These three wagons moved a little to one side and, halting, eased the harrowing stridor of their wheels. And straight was heard, not more noise, but the sound of sweet harmonious music, whereby Sancho was made glad. Taking it for good omen he said to the duchess to whom he was still sewed : ' Where there is music, lady, there can be no ill.' ' Nor where are lights and splendour,' she replied. And Sancho returned : ' Fire gives light and bonfires splendour to be sure, as we see even now, but they I fear will scorch us ; whereas music is ever the symbol of feasting and joy.' ' We shall see,' said Don Quijote, who had overheard all. And he said well, as the following chapter will show.

CHAPTER XXXV

Dulcinea's disenchantment continued and coupled with other rare passages

THEY saw that there now came toward them to the measure of the delightful music a triumphal car, drawn by six grey mules covered with white linen, whereon rode penitents of light, covered with the same and in their hands carrying large blazing tapers. This car was twice or even three times the size of the former, and in front and along the sides thereof came twelve other penitents white as snow, all with burning tapers — a sight that both dazzled and dazed. On a raised throne sat a nymph clad in a thousand veils of silver-tissue, bespangled with countless leaves of gold tinsel, that made her if not rich, at least splendidly apparelled. Her face was half concealed by a veil of delicate sendal, in such wise that, without hindrance from its folds, through them by the aid of the lights could be seen the beatific countenance of a maiden, whose years looked not yet twenty nor less than seventeen. Beside her stood a figure draped to the feet with a robe called a trailer and the head covered with a black veil.

The moment the car arrived in front of the duke, duchess and

Don Quijote, the music of the clarions ceased, and soon began that of harps and lutes, proceeding from the car. And rising to his feet the figure of the robe, parting it and removing the veil, revealed no less a person than Death, fleshless and ugly, for whom the knight received loathing, Sancho qualms and their hosts the semblance of fear. In a voice somewhat drowsy and a tongue not over wide-awake this living Death delivered himself of the following :

I am that Merlin whom the legends say
The devil had for father, and the lie
Hath gathered credence with the lapse of time.
The prince am I of magic and the king
And keeper of the Zoroastric lore.
To me Toboso's peerless dame did come
And told of her enchantment and disgrace.
I therewith thumb'd a hundred thousand books
Of my benighted and bedevilled lore,
And shrinking to this fearsome skeleton
I come to give appropriate remedy.
To thee I say, O hero unextolled,
That ere thy love regain her pristine state
Must Sancho on his bared buttocks give
Three thousand and three hundred lashes warm,
To tickle, tire and tease the blowing boor.
The authors of her mishap this resolved
And for this have I come, most worthy sires.

‘ I here take mine oath, ’ quoth Sancho as Merlin finished, ‘ let alone three thousand, I shall as soon give myself three lashes as three dagger-stabs. To the devil with such disenchanting ! what the deuce have my buttocks to do with such things I’d like to know. As the Lord liveth and if Mister Merlin can’t find another method, in her spell she can stay till she goes to the graveyard. ’ ‘ Don countryman stuffed with garlic ! ’ cried his master on hearing this ; ‘ I shall bind you to a tree naked as your mother bore you and let alone three thousand three hundred, six thousand six hundred stripes I’ll give, so well laid on they won’t peal off with three thousand three hundred pulls. Don’t answer a word or I’ll uproot your very soul. ’

‘ This cannot be, ’ said Merlin, ‘ for the lashes must be of his own free will and not by force, and at any time it pleases him,

since there's no stated term. Would he redeem the infliction of half these whippings, he is allowed to turn them over to another hand, provided it be fairly weighty.' 'Neither another hand nor mine own, neither a weighty nor one for weighing nor any hand at all shall touch me. Did I perchance give birth to the lady that my buttocks have to pay for the sins of her eyes? my master, yes, for she is part of him, since at every step he calls her his life, his soul, his mainstay and crutch—he can and should whip himself and suffer all the necessary pains for her disenchantment. But I to lash myself? I pronounce it.' Scarce had Sancho done when the silver nymph rose to her feet and removing the light veil from her face revealed one that seemed to all exceeding beautiful. With masculine assurance and no very feminine voice, directing her words to Sancho, she said :

'O wretched squire, soul of pitcher, heart of cork-tree and bowels of gravel and flint! had they asked you, thief, to throw yourself from a high tower or, enemy of the human race, eat a dozen of toads, two of lizards and three of snakes, or to kill your wife and children with sharp and murderous scimitar, 'twouldn't be strange if you were squeamish and stubborn. But to make a to-do about three thousand three hundred lashes, which no charity-boy however puny doesn't get every month, amazes, offends and stuns the compassionate bowels of all that hear it, and indeed of all that shall hear it in the passing of time. Cast, O miserable and hard-hearted beast, cast I say those timorous owl-eyes of yours on these apples of mine, which have been compared to flashing stars, and you'll see them weep drop by drop, globule by globule, making furrows, roads and paths over the fair fields of my cheeks.

'Let it move you, rogue and plotting monster, that my blooming youth, still in its teens (for I'm nineteen and not yet twenty), fadeth and perisheth beneath the coarse rind of a country-wench. If now I look not like one, 'tis due to the special favour of Señor Merlin here, that my beauty might melt you : that the tears of an afflicted fair one might turn crags to cotton and tigers to lambs. Strike, strike I say, those hams of yours, O wild beast, and rouse from sluggishness the spirit that moves you to naught

but eat and eat. Liberate the sleekness of my flesh, the gentleness of my nature, the beauty of my countenance. If for my sake you'll not soften and be agreeable, do so for the poor knight that stands at your side, your master in other words, whose soul I see sticking crosswise in his throat, not ten fingers from his lips, awaiting your answer stern or mild, to issue from his mouth or return to his stomach.'

On hearing this the knight felt his throat and turning to the duke said : 'Fore God, sir, the lady says true, for here I feel my soul stuck in my throat like the nut of a crossbow.' 'What do you say to this, Sancho?' asked the duchess. 'I say, madam, what I have said, that I denounce the lashes.' 'Renounce is the word,' offered the duke. 'Pray let it be, your highness : now's no time to look into trifles of a letter more or less, when these lashes they are going to give me or I am going to give myself have so flabbergasted me that I don't know what I say or do. But I should like the lady Dulcinea del Toboso to tell us where she learned this way of seeking favours. She comes to ask that I open my flesh with stripes and then calls me soul of pitcher, wild beast and a streak of other not nice names to which the devil is welcome.

'Is my body of brass perchance? or is it aught to me whether she be disenchanted or no? What hamper of white linen, of shirts, handkerchiefs and socks, though I don't wear them, does she send ahead to soften me, in place of this or that upbraiding, having heard the proverb they get off in these parts, An ass laden with gold goes lightly up a mountain, and, Presents break hard rocks, and, Praying to God and plying the hammer, and, One take is better than two I'll-give-thees? Then there's my master, who ought to be patting me on the back and coaxing me to make myself wool and carded cotton — all he has to say is that if he can catch me he'll bind me naked to a tree and double the stake of lashes. These tender-hearted persons should consider that 'tis no mere squire they would have thrash himself but a governor : 'tis a case of, Drink and cherries too, as they say. Let them learn, damn'em, how to seek favours and behave themselves, for one time is not the same as another, nor are men always in

good humour. Just at present I'm ready to burst with grief at seeing my green coat all torn ; and yet they come to ask that I whip myself of mine own free will, which I am as far from doing as from turning Indian chief. '

' Indeed, friend Sancho,' declared the duke, ' if you don't mellow into something softer than a ripe fig, you'll never lay hands on the government. A nice thing 'twould be to send mine islanders a cruel governor with heart like flint, who will yield neither to tears of afflicted damsels nor to prayers of a wise, imperious and ancient enchanter and sage. In a word, my friend, either you'll have to lash yourself, be lashed, or forego the governorship. ' Señor, replied Panza, ' can they give me two days to think over which will be the better for me ? ' ' On no account,' said Merlin ; ' here at this instant on this very spot must be determined the issue of the business : whether Dulcinea shall return to the cave of Montesinos to her previous state of peasantry, or be borne aloft as she is to the Elysian fields, there to abide till the number of the lashes be told. ' ' Come, good Sancho,' pleaded the duchess, ' take heart and show yourself grateful for the bread you have eaten of Señor Don Quijote, whom all of us are bound to please and serve in return for his nobleness of character and his worthy chivalries. Say yes to this flogging, and let the devil take the devil. Fear to the mean man and a stout heart breaks bad luck, as you yourself know. '

To these reasonings the future governor replied with irrelevancies, addressed to Merlin, saying : ' How is it, Señor Merlin, that the devil-courier came here and gave a message to my master from Señor Montesinos, bidding him abide till he came with instructions for Dulcinea's disenchantment, yet so far we haven't seen his grace or the like of him ? ' To which Merlin replied : ' The devil, Sancho friend, is a blockhead and great rascal. I sent him in search of your master with a message from myself not from Montesinos, who still is in his cave waiting, or better to say hoping, for his disenchantment, whereof not even the tail has been flayed as yet. If he owe you aught, or if you have business to transact with him, I'll fetch him and put him down wherever you choose. For the present give assent to this

discipline, and take my word, 'twill be of great benefit both to soul and body : to your soul by reason of the love it will engender ; to the body, because you are of a sanguine complexion and won't miss a little blood.'

' Indeed, how many doctors we have in the world : even enchanters are turned doctors of late. But since they all tell me to, though i'faith I don't see why, I agree to give myself the three thousand three hundred lashes, provided I may give them just when I feel like it, without fixing of days or seasons. I promise to wipe out this debt as quickly as possible, that the world may enjoy the beauty of the lady Dulcinea del Toboso, since it appears she is beautiful, in spite of my thinking otherwise. As well must there be this condition, that in this penance I am not bound to draw blood and that if some lashes merely frighten flies, they are to be counted just the same. Item, if I get confused in the counting, Mister Merlin, who knows everything, is to set me right as to how many I'm ahead or behind.' ' As to those you may be ahead,' replied the sage, ' there'll be no reason for informing you, for the moment you reach the full number, the lady will be disenchanted and will come to thank, ay, reward you for your good works. So there's no need to worry over an exact count, and Heaven forbid that I deceive any man, though by a hair of his head.' ' Well then, in God's hand let it be,' quoth the squire ; ' I accept my bad-luck : I agree, in other words, to the punishment on the conditions appointed.'

Scarce had these words left his mouth when sounded the music of the clarions, countless muskets were discharged and the knight threw himself on Sancho's neck, giving him a thousand kisses on cheek and forehead. The duchess, duke and all the company testified to their joy and as the car moved on, the fair Dulcinea inclined her head to their excellencies and made a low curtsy to the squire. And now the glad and smiling morn came on apace : the flowerets of the fields raised their heads in all their pride, and the liquid crystals of the childish brooks, murmuring over white and grey pebbles, ran to pay tribute to the expectant streams. The happy earth, clear sky, limpid air, lovely light, each and all betokened that the day, which now came

treading on the skirts of dawn, would be fine and clear. Having succeeded so cleverly and happily in their design, our hosts, no longer caring to hunt, returned to the castle, intending to follow up their jests, in comparison wherewith no earnest gave them greater pleasure.

CHAPTER XXXVI

The rare and undreamt of adventure of the dolorous duenna, alias the Countess Trifaldi, together with a letter from Sancho Panza to his wife

THE duke had in the person of his majordomo a merry and fruitful wit. He it was that took the part of Merlin and made the arrangements for this last adventure, composed the verses and instructed a page in the part of Dulcinea. And now, with the connivance of his master and mistress, he planned another episode of the rarest and most delightful artifice imaginable.

The duchess asked Sancho on the morrow whether or no he had begun his penance-task for the disenchanting of Dulcinea. He answered yes, five stripes that very evening. The other asked with what had he given them and was told with his hand. 'That,' she objected, 'is to give slaps rather than stripes; I fear sage Merlin won't put up with such lightness. The good Sancho must make himself a scourge of thistles or cat-o'-nine-tails, which can be felt, for with the blood the letter enters, and the release of a great lady like Dulcinea can't be bought cheaply. Consider, Sancho, that works of charity done coldly and grudgingly possess no merit and avail nothing.' To this Sancho made reply: 'May your ladyship fit me out with a proper scourge or rope's end and I'll lay it on if it don't hurt too much. For I'd have your worship know that though a countryman my flesh is more cotton than hemp, and 'twould never do for me to go all to pieces simply for the sake of another.' 'Well and good,' agreed the duchess; 'to-morrow I'll present you with a scourge that

will be just the thing ; 'twill suit the tenderness of your flesh as if they were own sisters. '

Sancho then said : ' Let your highness know, lady of my soul, that I have written a letter to my wife Teresa, telling her of all that has befallen me since we parted. I have it here in my bosom, lacking naught but the address. I should like your discretion to read it, for to my mind it runs like a governor : after the manner I mean in which governors should write. ' ' And who composed it ? ' ' Who would compose it but myself, sinner that I am ? ' ' Perhaps you wrote it then ? ' ' Never, ' replied Sancho ; ' I can neither read nor write thought I can make my mark. ' ' Let me see it, ' said the other, ' for I'm sure you show in it the excellence and sufficiency of your wit, ' Sancho drew an unsealed letter from his bosom, and the duchess found it as follows :

Letter of Sancho Panza to Teresa Panza his wife

If they gave me sound lashes, I had a fine mount : if I have a good government, it cost me good stripes. You won't understand this, my Teresa, but sometime I'll tell you. You must know, sister ; I've determined you shall ride in a coach, which will be to the purpose — any other way is to go like a cat. You are a governor's wife now : see that none treads on your heels. Here I send you a green hunting-suit, given be by my lady the duchess ; turn it into a petticoat and body for our daughter. My master Don Quijote, according to what I've heard say in this country, is a sane man out of his wits and a pretty fool, and that I am not a jot behind. We've been in the cave of Montesinos and sage Merlin has laid hold of me for the disenchantment of Dulcinea del Toboso, known at home as Aldonza Lorenzo. With three thousand three hundred lashes less five, which I must give myself, she'll be as disenchanted as the mother that bore her. Say naught of this to anyone, for take your affair to council and some will call it white, others black. I leave here in a few days for the government, whither I go with the strongest desire to make money — they tell me all new governors go with the same. I'll take the pulse of it and let you know if you shall join me or not. Dapple is well and sends his best respects. I don't intend

to leave him behind, thought they fetch me to be Grand Turk. The duchess my lady kisses your hands a thousand times ; send her back the same with two thousand, for nothing costs less or comes cheaper, according to my master, than pleasing compliments. God hasn't seen fit to furnish me with a hundred crowns like the ones that vanished, but don't mind, Teresa dear, for he is safe that sounds the tocsin, and 'twill all come out in the government-wash. One thing they mentioned that troubles me is that if once I get the taste of governing, I shall eat my hands after it. In that case it wouldn't come very cheap, though to be sure the maimed and handless have benefices in the alms they beg for, so by hook or crook you are sure to be well-off. God give it you as He can and keep me to serve you.

From this castle the twentieth day of July, 1614

Your husband the governor,
Sancho Panza

On finishing, the duchess said : ' In two points the good governor goes a little astray : first in saying or giving the impression that you get this government in return for your lashes, though you know and can't deny that when my lord the duke promised it you, no one dreamt of there being lashes in the world ; secondly, in showing yourself exceedingly covetous, for I'd not have you become a mere money-getter. Avarice breaks the sack and a greedy governor makes justice ungovernable.' ' I didn't mean all that,' pleaded Sancho, ' and if your worship thinks the letter doesn't run as it should, there's naught to do but tear it up and write it over, though it might prove worse, if they leave it all to my poor skull.' ' No, no,' replied the duchess, ' the letter will suffice ; I wish the duke to see it.' With this they went into the garden where they were to eat that day, and there the duchess showed the missal to her husband, whose pleasure was unqualified.

They dined and when the cloth was removed and they were diverting themselves with Sancho's savoury conversation, on a sudden was heard the doleful sound of a fife and the harsh beating of an inharmonious drum. The company appeared much excited

by this medley of martial and melancholy music, especially Don Quijote who in his nervousness couldn't keep his seat. Of Sancho it is needless to say that his fear took him to his accustomed refuge, the side or the skirt of the duchess, and let it be mentioned that the sound was indeed gloomy and distressing. While all were in suspense, they beheld two men enter the garden before them clad in mourning that trailed along the ground, and beating big drums, also covered with black. At their side came the fifer, no less lugubrious than they. Behind the three walked a person of gigantic frame, cloaked rather than clad in funereal gown, whose train likewise was of immoderate length. Over the gown was girt and suspended a broad black baldrick, whence hung a monstrous scimitar with garnitures and black sheath. His face was hid beneath a black transparent veil, through which showed a beard of inordinate length and whiter than snow. With great gravity and composure he moved to the sound of the drums. His size, affected gait, opaqueness and accompaniments might well, and did, startle all that, ignorant of his identity, looked upon him. At this slow and particular pace he advanced to kneel before the duke, who with the others awaited him standing and would on no account suffer him to speak till he had risen. The prodigious apparition yielded and raising the veil disclosed the longest, whitest and bushiest beard ever human eyes beheld. With gaze fixed on the duke he exhumed and let loose from his broad and expanded chest a deep, sonorous voice, saying :

‘ Most noble and potent lord, me they call Trifaldin of the White Beard. I am squire to the Countess Trifaldi, else known as the dolorous duenna, on whose behalf I bring your greatness an embassy, to wit, that your magnificence be pleased to give her leave and authority to enter and tell of her affliction, one of the most singular and unique that the most roiled understanding on earth could have devised. But first she would know is there stopping at your castle the worthy and never-vanquished knight Don Quijote de La Mancha, in whose search she comes afoot and fasting all the way from the kingdom of Candaya, which can and should be deemed a miracle or the power of enchantment. She stands at the gate of this stronghold or country-house, awaiting

your leave to enter. I have done.' He then coughed and stroking his beard with both hands calmly awaited the duke's reply :

' Indeed, good squire Trifaldin of the White Beard, we have heard of the misfortune that overtook my lady the Countess Trifaldi, to whom enchanters give the name of the dolorous duenna, so you may surely tell her to enter, stupendous squire, where she will find the valiant knight Don Quijote de La Mancha, of whose generous nature may safely be promised every assistance and relief. You may tell her as well from me, that if my favour be wished, 'twill not be wanting of one bound to give it as a knight, whose concern it is to succour every manner of woman, especially widowed duennas reduced and in straits, as must be her ladyship.' Upon this the said Trifaldin dropped knee to ground, and motioning to the fife and drums to strike up, to the same tune and pace wherewith he had entered he made his exit from the garden, leaving them marvelling at both his aspect and equipment. The duke turning to Don Quijote said :

' Of a truth, famous knight, the clouds of malice and ignorance cannot hide or darken the light of valour and virtue. I say this because your worship has been in this castle barely six days when there come to seek you out from far and distant lands, and not in coaches and on dromedaries, but afoot and fasting, the sad and afflicted, certain to find in this puissant arm the end of their labours and cares — thanks to your great achievements of the past, blown over the wole discovered earth.' ' I could wish, señor duke,' replied the other, ' that there were present that blessed ecclesiastic, who at dinner the other day showed such prejudice and unjust indignation toward knights-errant, that he might see with his own eyes whether or no such knights are needed in the world. He could put his finger on this fact at least, that those in dire distress and sorrow do not look for relief from men of learning or village-sacristans, from the knight that has never crossed the frontier of his district, or from the lazy courtier, who goes in search of news to repeat rather than to perform works and deeds for others to record. Hope in affliction, succour in times of distress, the defence of damsels, the admonishment of widows, in no class of persons can be

sought for better than in errant cavaliers. That I am of their order I give infinite thanks to Heaven, regarding as well suffered whatever cross or crisis may befall me in this most honourable calling. Let the duenna come and tell her needs and I will meet them through the power of mine arm and the dauntless resolution of my will. '

CHAPTER XXXVII

The famous adventure of the dolorous duenna continued

THE duke and duchess were delighted beyond measure on seeing how well Don Quijote fell in with their plan, but Sancho just then spoke up and said : ' I trust that this lady duenna won't put obstacles in the way of my promised government, for I once heard a Toledan chemist say, and he spoke like a linnet, that when duennas interfere, naught good results. So help me God ! and how out of patience with them was this chemist ! And his saying that all duennas are intrusive and bothersome, no matter what their quality or breed, makes me wonder how it will be with dolorous ones, as they say is Countess Threefolds or Threetails, for in my country, folds or tails, tails or folds, 'tis all one.' ' Peace, Sancho friend,' rebuked Don Quijote ; ' since this duenna came from such remote lands, she cannot be of those the chemist had in mind. More by token she's a countess, and when countesses go into service, 'tis to queens and empresses and, being regarded as high-born ladies are in turn waited upon by other duennas. '

To this replied Doña Rodriguez, being present : ' My lady the duchess has duennas in her employ worthy to be countesses, if fortune but favoured them. But laws go as kings will and let none speak evil of duennas, especially of old-maids, for though not one myself, I can the see advantage duenna-maids have over duenna-widows. But he that clipped us, still has the shears.' ' For all that,' retorted Sancho, ' there's so much to shear in your duennas, according to my barber, 'twill be better not to stir the rice even though it stick.' ' Squires are ever our enemies,'

declared Doña Rodriguez ; ‘ being the elves of the antechamber, they see a good deal of us, and what times they aren’t praying, which is often, they gossip about us, digging up our bones and burying our good name. But I tell them, these rolling logs, that despite them we shall live on in the world and in the houses of nobility, though we die of hunger and cover our bodies, whether delicate or not, with nuns’ veiling, as on procession-days they cover piles of sweepings with tapestries. I’faith, if ’twere permitted me and the occasion demanded, I could persuade not only the present company but all the world that there’s no virtue not lodged in a duenna.’ ‘ I believe my good Doña Rodriguez is most right in what she says,’ volunteered the duchess, ‘ but ’twere better that she return some other time to her own and the others’ defence, refuting the wicked chemist’s heresy and eradicating that in the breast of Sancho Panza.’ To which Sancho made reply : ‘ Now that I have assumed all the pride of a governor, I have lost all the pettiness of a squire and don’t care a wild fig for all the duenas in the world.’

They would have continued this duennesque conversation had not the fife and drums again struck up, whereby they gathered that the dolorous one was about to enter. The duchess asked the duke whether or no they should advance to meet her, being as she was a countess and a person of rank. Before the duke could answer, Sancho said : ‘ For what she has of countess, I should say your greatnesses might move to receive the lady, but for what she has of duenna, I am of the opinion you should stay where you are.’ ‘ Who brought you into this,’ chided Don Quijote. ‘ Who, sir ? I brought myself, that have right, as a squire that learned the marks of politeness in the school of your worship, the best-mannered knight in all the realm of courtesy. In cases like the present, I have heard your worship say, one loses as much by a card too many as too few, and few words to fine wits.’ ‘ Sancho is right,’ agreed the duke ; ‘ let us first see how the countess holds herself, and then we can gauge the courtesy due her.’ The fife-and-drum corps now appeared, and here the author ends this brief chapter and begins the next, continuing one of the most notable adventures in the history.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

The dolorous duenna tells of her hard luck

BEHIND the mournful musicians walked twelve duennas in double file, clad in flowing mourning apparently of milled serge, with hoods of fine white gauze, so long that only the ends of their robes were visible. Behind them came the Countess Trifaldi, led by the hand of squire Trifaldin of the White Beard and clad in the finest unnapped black baize which, had it been napped, would have showed every tuft of the bigness of a Martos chick-pea. The tail or train or however one would call it, ended in three points, lifted in the hands of three pages, also clothed in black, making a spectacular geometric figure with its three acute angles formed by the three trains. Thereby one came to understand why she was called Countess Trifaldi, as one would speak of the Countess of the Three Folds. What's more, Benengeli says that such was the fact — that her real name was Countess Lobuna, because many wolves (lobos) were bred in her county. Had they been foxes (zorras), they'd have called her Countess Zorruna, it being a custom for the nobility of those parts to take names from the thing or things wherein their estates abounded. This countess however, by reason of her inordinate train, dropped Lobuna and assumed Trifaldi.

The procession of twelve duennas and lady filed slowly in, their faces covered with black veils, not open work like squire Trifaldin's, but so close as completely to hide them. The duchess, duke and Don Quijote together with the entire company rose for their reception. The twelve duennas halted and formed an avenue down which the dolorous one advanced though without letting go Trifaldin's hand. The ducal pair and Don Quijote moved forward a dozen steps or so to welcome her and she thereupon knelt and in a voice loud and coarse rather than smooth and delicate began :

‘ May it please your highnesses not to show such great courtesy to this your man-servant, your maid-servant I mean. Indeed distressed as I am, I cannot speak as I should, for my rare and unparalleled misfortune has carried off my wits somewhere, a long way I should say, for the more I search the less I find them.’ ‘ He surely must have lost his,’ returned the duke, ‘ that didn’t recognise by your person your worth, which, without more being seen, merits all the cream of courtesy and all the flower of the politest civilities;’ and raising her by the hand he led her to a seat next the duchess, who received her with similar unctuousness. The knight said nothing, while Sancho was dying to get a peep at the face of the countess and of a few of her many duennas; but this was impossible unless they of their own pleasure revealed them. Now that all were settled and silence reigned, they waited to see who would break it. The dolorous duenna did and with these words :

‘ I am confident, puissant lord, fair lady and most prudent company, that my affliction will find in your stout hearts a reception no less ready than generous and sympathetic, for it’s enough to melt the marble, mollify the diamond and soften the steel of the most hardened hearts of the world. But before it is made public to your hearing, not to say your ears, I would that you tell me whether or no in this body, circle and company is that purissimo knight Don Quijote de La Manchissima and his squirissimo Panza.’ ‘ The Panza,’ said Sancho before another could reply, ‘ is here; likewise Don Quijotissimo, and you may tell, dolorissima duennissima, what you would, for each of us is ready and prepared to be your servantissimo.’ The knight was now risen and directing his words to the countess said :

‘ If your afflictions, anxious lady, admit of any hope of remedy from the valour and prowess of errant knight, here are mine, which though poor and brief shall engage themselves in your service. I am Don Quijote de la Mancha, whose business is to help all that need, and therefore, lady, you shall not crave our mercy or bother with preambles, but plainly and without circumlocution declare your distress, since those that hear it will know how to feel for, if not end, it.’ Upon this the dolorous duenna

threw herself at his feet and striving to embrace them said : ‘ At these feet and legs I throw myself, O unconquered knight, as at the columns and foundations of errant arms. These feet I would kiss, on whose motion hangs the entire remedy of mine ill, O worthy adventurer, whose real achievements outdistance and overshadow the imaginary ones of the Amadis, Esplandians and Belianises ! ’ She then left Don Quijote and moving to Sancho Panza, took him by the hands saying : ‘ O loyallest squire that ever bore arms in the world, I conjure you by what you owe your most faithful goodness to be a fair intercessor ’twixt me and your master that he may straightly lend aid to this most humble and forlorn of countesses. ’

To this request Sancho made reply : ‘ As to my goodness reaching as far as the beard of your squire, it moves me not, lady. Let me have my soul bearded and moustached when I depart this life — that is the main thing, for beards here below are little or naught to me. And just as well without this gullery or supplication I shall ask my master (for I know he loves me, particularly now that he has need of me for a certain transaction) to favour and relieve your worship as he may. Tell your trouble freely and have done — we’ll all understand. ’ The ducal pair scarce could contain their laughter, having taken the pulse of this adventure for themselves and secretly praised the ingenuity and dissimulation of the countess ; who now, taking a seat, began :

‘ Over the famous kingdom of Candaya, that lies ’twixt great Trapobana and the Southern Sea, two leagues beyond Cape Comorin, ruled the queen Lady Maguncia, widow of King Archi-piela, her lord and husband, of which marriage was born the infanta Antonomasia, heiress of the realm, who was bred and grew up under my tutelage and teaching, since I was the oldest and most important of her mother’s duennas. So it befell that as the years came and went, the child Antonomosia attained to fourteen and with such perfection of beauty that nature could go no further. Nor must we say that her wit was snivelling : she was as clever as she was fair, and the fairest in the world ; and is to-day, if the envious fates and cruel sisters have not cut the

thread of her life. But they haven't, since Heaven wouldn't permit such wrong to the earth as 'twould be to pluck ere ripe the cluster of the finest vine in this world.

' Of this beauty, not adequately extolled by my slow tongue, was enamoured an infinite number of princes, native and foreign, among them a certain private knight there at court, that dared raise his hopes to the heaven of such bliss, trusting in his youth and gallantry, his many accomplishments and graces, and the facility or felicity of his genius. For I would have your worship know, if I don't weary you, that he touched a guitar to make it speak and besides was a poet and great dancer and knew how to make bird-cages, whereby alone he could earn his bread were he pushed to it. These were qualities to uproot a mountain, let alone a sensitive girl; yet all would have availed little or naught in reducing the fortress of my child, had not the impudent thief taken the precaution of reducing me first. This swindling and soulless vagabond first took care to win my will and gain my pleasure that I, a poor warden, might hand over the keys of the fortress I guarded. He coaxed my senses and forced my pleasure by all manner of trinkets and jewels, but what chiefly humbled me and brought me to my knees were some lines I heard him sing to me on a balcony one night, which lines, if my memory serve, were these :

Of my sweet foe is born an ill
That lacerates my very heart,
But this the worse doth make it smart
That I must suffer and be still.

The verse seemed a pearl to me and his voice syrup, and after that, from then on in other words, seeing the wrong into which I fell through these and similar verses, I made up my mind that from good and orderly republics all poets should be banished, even as Plato advises — the lascivious at any rate, who write verses, not like those concerning the Marquis of Mantua that amuse and bring children and women to tears, but things with a point to them that pierces the heart like a soft thorn and wounds as does lightning, leaving the vesture whole.

‘ Another time he sang :

Come, death, but come without my ken,
That I may never feel thee nigh,
Or else such joy I'll have to die
'Twill bring me back to life again.

Of this fashion were other verselets and burdens of songs, which when sung enchant, when written ravish. But what when they stoop to compose a certain order of poetry, in vogue in Candaya at that time, called snatches ! then was your dancing of souls, ha-ha of laughter, excitement of bodies — in short the quick-silvering of all the senses. For this reason, gentlemen and ladies, such versifiers should by rights be transported to the isles of the lizards. Yet they are not so much to blame as the simpletons that vaunt, and the foolish women that believe them. Had I been the good duenna I should have been, his laboured conceits wouldn't have moved me, nor should I have taken stock in his saying : Dying I live, I burn in ice, I shiver in fire, I hope without hope, I go yet stay, together with other absurdities of that stripe, wherewith their writings teem.

‘ But when they promise the Arabian phoenix, Ariadne's crown, the horses of the sun, southern pearls, the gold of Tibar and the balsam of Pancaya ! Here is were their pens run riot, since it costs but little to promise what they never think or are able to perform. But why do I degress ? woe's me, what madness or folly drives me to speak of others' faults when there's so much to say of mine own ? Woe, woe is me ! for 'twas not their songs that reduced me but my simplicity. 'Twas not the music that softened me but mine own light-headedness. My great ignorance and little forethought opened the way and freed the path for the steps of Clavijo, the aforementioned knight. With me as go-between he found himself once and many times in the chamber of by me, not by him, betrayed Antonomasia, under the title of lawful husband, for though a sinner myself I wouldn't have allowed him except as her spouse to reach the welt of the sole of her slipper. Nay, nay, marriage must preceed any business of this kind that I have a finger in.

‘ There was but one drawback : disparity of rank, since Don

Clavijo was a private knight and the infanta Antonomasia heiress, as I have said, of the realm. But now this arrangement had gone on for some days, cloaked and concealed by my shrewdness and sagacity, when it seemed to me it was being revealed apace by a certain swelling in the infanta's belly. This fear brought us three to council, whereat it was agreed that before the unwelcome present arrived Don Clavijo should ask Antonomasia in marriage before the vicar, in pursuance of a contract which the infanta, at my instigation, had drawn from him, of such binding force that not that of Samson could have broken it. The proper measures were taken, the vicar read the contract and received the girl's confession. She told all, with the result that for the time being she was handed over to a most respectable bailiff of the court.' At this Sancho exclaimed : ' In Candaya too there are court-bailiffs, poets and snatches ? On mine oath methinks the whole world is one. But prithee hasten, lady Trifaldi, for 'tis late and I am dying to know the end of this long story.' ' I promise I will,' replied the countess.

CHAPTER XXXIX

The Countess Trifaldi continues her marvellous and memorable history

SANCHO's every word gave as much amusement to the duchess as annoyance to his master, who bade him hold his tongue ; and the dolorous one proceeded : ' Finally after much questioning and answering, since the infanta persisted in her first declaration, the vicar decided in favour of Don Clavijo and delivered her to him as his lawful wife, whereupon Queen Maguncia became so wroth that inside of three days we buried her.' ' She must have died,' suggested Sancho. ' Obviously,' returned Trifaldin ; ' in Candaya persons are buried not alive but dead.' ' Persons have been known, señor squire,' replied the other, [Sancho] ' to bury a man in a swoon, supposing him dead, and it looks to me as if that queen were more likely to have swooned than

died, for with life many things are set straight and the infanta's folly was not so great as to be felt that deeply. Had she married with a page or house-servant, as many, they tell me, have done, 'twould have been past remedy. But to have united with a knight as gentle and accomplished as this one is pictured, though a blunder surely, 'twas surely not so huge an one as is thought. According to the rules of my master, who is present and will not let me lie, just as bishops are made from men of learning, so from knights, the more if they be errants, can kings be made and emperors.' 'You are right, Sancho,' seconded Don Quijote, 'for a knight-errant, give him two inches of luck, verges on being the highest lord in the world. But let the dolorous one pass on, for 'tis plain there's still to be told the bitter part of this till now sweet story.'

'Indeed the bitter part still remains, and so bitter that in comparison colocynth is sweet and oleander savoury. We buried the queen, dead and not swooning, but scarce had we covered her with earth and bade our last farewell, when (*quis talia fando, temperet a lachrymis?*) suddenly appeared, riding a wooden horse and on the grave of the departed, the giant Malambruno, her first cousin, who besides being cruel is an enchanter, and by his arts and in his cousin's vengeance punished the boldness of Don Clavijo and requited the forwardness of Antonomasia by leaving them transfixed there upon the tomb, the woman turned into a brass monkey, the man into a threatening crocodile of some unknown metal, with a metal column between them, whereon were inscribed Syriac letters, which, translated into Candayan and now into Castilian, read as follows: 'These two rash lovers will never regain their original form till the worthy Manchegan come to fight me in single battle, since for his great valour alone the fates have reserved this unheard-of adventure.'

'The giant then drew from its sheath a broad and mighty cutlass, and seizing me by the hair made as if to sever and cut my head clean off. I lost my wits, my voice stuck in my throat, I was vexed in the extreme. But at last, summoning all my strength, in quivering and sorrowful tones I said to him such and

so many things I caused him to suspend the execution of this severe chastisement. Instead he ordered to be brought before him all the duennas of the palace, the same that now stand here, and having magnified our sin and showered reproaches on the character of duennas in general, their devilish skill and worse scheming, charging them all with the evil I alone had brought about, he added that instead of capital punishment he would mete out to us a kind of civil death. The moment he said this all of us felt our facial pores to open — our cheeks pricked as with needle-points. Instantly raising our hands to our chins we found them as you see.' The dolorous and other duennas here raised their veils and discovered their visages implanted with beards, some red, some black, others white and a few grizzled, whereat the duke and duchess appeared astounded, Don Quijote and Sancho stupified and all the others amazed beyond expression. But the Trifaldi didn't tarry :

' Thus did that mean and ill-minded devil of a Malambruno wreak his malice upon us, covering the soft mellowness of our skin with the roughness of these bristles. Would to Heaven he had slit off our heads with his monstrous cutlass rather than have shadowed the light of our faces with this fleece. For if we consider it, gentlemen — and what I am about to say should be said with eyes like fountains, but the thought of our position and the seas we've already wept keep ours moistureless, dry as cornsilk — I ask without tears therefore, where can a duenna with a beard go ? what father or mother will take pity on her ? who will help her ? If with smooth complexion though martyred with a thousand kinds of paints and ointments she scarce finds one to wish her well, how will she fare when her face presents a kind of underbrush ? O duennas, my companions ! in fatal hour were we born, at a cursed moment our parents begat us ;' and with this she appeared to swoon.

CHAPTER XL

Things pertaining to and bearing on this adventure in particular and this memorable history in general

OF a truth ought all that delight in histories like the present to be grateful to Cid Hamet its first author for the zeal he has shown in telling us its merest trifles, not leaving a thing of however little moment unbidden to the light of day. He conveys thoughts, mirrors fancies, answers implied questions, clears up doubts, decides disputes, in a word satisfies the very atoms of the most curious desire. O famous historian ! O fortunate Don Quijote ! O Dulcinea known afar ! O delightful Sancho Panza ! may you severally and together live long ages for the pleasure and universal pastime of all peoples !

The history then tells us that as soon as he saw the dolorous one swooning, Sancho said : ‘ I swear on the faith of a good man and by the life of all my forefathers the Panzas, that never have I heard or seen, never has my master described to me, nor has there ever entered his thought, an adventure like unto this. A thousand devils — not to curse thee — take thee for an enchanter and giant, Malambruno ! Couldst thou have found no other punishment for these she-sinners than to beard them ? wouldn’t it have been better for them and more seasonable to have cut half their noses off, even though they talked snuffling ? For I’ll wager they haven’t the wherewithal to get shaved.’

‘ You’ll win, sir,’ replied one of the twelve ; ‘ not a sou have we wherewith to husk us, and some as a thrift remedy have taken to pitch or sticking plasters, by the application whereof to our beards, with a sudden jerk we are left as bare and smooth as the bottom of a stone mortar. Though there are women in Candaya that go from house to house to remove down, embellish eyebrows and prepare cosmetics, we duennas would never admit them, since most smell of your third parties no longer first.

Unless Don Quijote help us in our scrape, with beards shall we be borne to the grave.' 'In the land of the Moors I'll pluck out mine own,' cried the knight, 'if I don't relieve you of yours.'

At this the Trifaldi revived, saying: 'The whisper of that promise, worthy knight, reached me in the midst of my swoon and brought me back to my senses. So again I beseech you, illustrious errant and indomitable lord, that your gracious word may turn to action.' 'It shan't delay because of me; find what I am to do, lady, since the spirit is ready to serve.' 'This then is the way things stand. From here to Candaya by land is five thousand leagues, a couple more or less, but as the crow flies 'tis but three thousand two hundred and twenty-seven. It is as well to know that Malambruno said that when fate found for me the knight our liberator, he would send a mount, better a good deal than your hireling jades and with fewer outs about him — none other than the wooden horse whereon gallant Pierres carried off lovely Magalona.

'This beast is guided by a peg on his forehead in place of bridle and scuds through the air at such a rate that one would think the very devils bore him. Furthermore, this steed was put together, according to ancient tradition, by the sage Merlin, who lent him to his friend Pierres. Pierres made long trips and stole the lovely Magalona, carrying her through the air on the steed's crupper, leaving all below gaping like fools. But Merlin lent him only to his friends or to those that paid him well, and from the time of the great Pierres we know that none has mounted him. But now that Malambruno by his craft has got possession of the racer, he uses him in frequent journeys through different parts of the world: to-day here, to morrow in France and next day in Potosi. And the best of it is that the animal neither eats nor sleeps nor wears shoes, and without wings so speeds through the air his rider can hold a cup of water and not spill a drop, so smooth and even is his pace, to the great delight of the lovely Magalona.'

Upon this Sancho spoke up and said: 'For going evenly and smoothly, I'll back my Dapple (though he goes along the earth and not through the air) against all the pacers in the world.'

They laughed and the dolorous one continued : ‘ This very steed, if really Malambruno intends to relieve our misfortune, within half an hour after night-fall will confront us, for the sign whereby I was to know that I had found the right errant was to be the sending of his mount with despatch. ’ ‘ And how many can ride him ? ’ enquired Sancho. ‘ Two, one saddle and one crupper ; usually knight and squire, unless there be a stolen maiden. ’ ‘ And what might be his name ? ’ ‘ The name, ’ Trifaldi answered, ‘ isn’t like that of Bellerephon’s horse Pegasus, nor like Alexander’s Bucephalus. Neither is he named after mad Orlando’s Brillador, still less after Rinaldo’s Bayarte or Ruggiero’s mount, Frontino, nor does it resemble Bootes or Perithous, which names the horses of the sun are said to answer to. As little is he called Orelia, like the beast on which the unfortunate Rodrigo, last king of the Goths, entered the battle where he lost life and kingdom. ’

‘ I’ll wager then, ’ said Sancho, ‘ that they haven’t named him after my master’s Rocinante, which for appropriateness beats all those mentioned. ’ ‘ You guessed rightly, ’ returned the bearded countess, ‘ but none the less it suits well — Clavileño the fleet one, which fits with his being wooden (leño), with the peg (clavija) and with the fleetness wherewith he travels. As far as names go, he well may rival the famous Rocinante. ’ ‘ The name doesn’t trouble, ’ said Sancho, ‘ but with what kind of bridle or with what make of halter is he governed ? ’ ‘ I’ve already said, ’ returned the Trifaldi, ‘ with a peg, by turning which this way or that his rider guides him, now through the air, now skimming and as ’twere sweeping the earth, and sometimes keeping a mean ’twixt the two : desirable and necessary to all well-ordered actions. ’ ‘ I’ll be glad to see his grace, ’ said the squire, ‘ but to think I shall mount him, saddle or crupper, is to look for pears on the elm. A pretty thing that they should wish me to ride a wooden rump without cushion or pillow, when it’s all I can do to stay on Dapple with a pannel softer than silk. Egad, I don’t think to be worn to the bone to remove anybody’s beard. Let each one shave himself as best it suits, for I shall never accompany my master on a voyage long as that ; more by token

while I am busy with the disenchantment of Dulcinea, the shaving these beards should be none of my business.' 'Yes it should, friend,' persisted the Trifaldi, 'and so much your business that they tell me that without Sancho we can do nothing.'

'In the king's name!' quoth the henchman; 'and what have squires to do with the adventures of their masters? are they to get all the worship and we all the work? Body of me! as though historians were wont to write: 'Knight So-and-so achieves such-and-such an escapade but with the help of his squire What's-his-name, without whom it had been impossible.' Whereas what they really write is: 'Don Paralipomenon of the Three Stars achieves the adventure of the six monsters;' not once mentioning, as if not in the land of the living, his trusty squire, who saw the thing through. So I repeat, friends, that my master may go alone and good-luck attend him. I'll abide in the company of the duchess, and mayhap when he returns, the cause of my lady Dulcinea will be advanced by a third or a fifth, since in my unoccupied and leisure moments I think to give me a round of lashes without a hair to cover me.'

'For all that,' explained the duchess, 'the good Sancho must accompany him if need be, since worthy persons ask it, that the faces of these ladies, simply from your foolish fear, may not remain planted, which would be a sorry thing indeed.' 'In the king's name I say!' again shouted the squire; 'were this kindness for nuns or charity-girls, a man might risk his life in any adventure whatsoever. But to undergo all simply to remove whiskers from duennas! bah, I'd rather see them all bearded from biggest to smallest, from finest to most finikin.' 'You are certainly hard upon them, Sancho friend,' said the duchess; 'you share the Toledan chemist's opinion more than you should, for in my establishment are duennas that can be patterns to their class, such as Doña Rodriguez here, who won't let me speak otherwise.' 'Your excellency says truly,' declared Rodriguez, 'for God knows the facts, and good or bad, bearded or bare, our mothers bore us like other women. And since He sent us into the world, He knows for what purpose. To his mercy do I cling and to the beard of no one.'

A

‘ Well said, lady Rodriguez,’ assented Don Quijote ; ‘ and now, lady Trifaldi and company, I pray Heaven to look with favouring eyes upon your affliction, for Sancho will do what I bid. Enter Clavileño and let me find myself before the giant, for I vow no razor can shave your worships more easily than my sword that enchanter’s head from his shoulders. God suffers the wicked, but not for ever.’ ‘ Him be praised !’ cried Trifaldi ; ‘ and may all the stars of the celestial regions look upon your grace with eyes benign, O gallant one, lodging in your soul all success and courage, shield and shelter of the loathed and down-trodden duennesque race, abominated of chemists, slandered of squires, derided of pages. Ill betide the wretch that in the flower of her youth elects not to be rather nun than duenna. Cursed are we at whom, though descended in direct male line from Hector the Trojan, our mistresses would never quit throwing thees and thous, though they thought thereby to be queens. O giant Malambruno, who though an enchanter art dependable of promise, send us now the peerless steed that our distress may see an end, for if it grow warm and we be still bearded, woe to our scheme.’ Trifaldi said this with feeling sufficiently real to draw tears from the eyes of the onlookers and even filled those of Sancho, who in his heart was now resolved to accompany his master to the uttermost parts of the earth, were that needed to pluck the wool from these venerable jowls.

CHAPTER XLI

The arrival of Clavileño and the end of this flagging adventure

IT was now evening and the appointed time for the entrance of the famous horse Clavileño, whose delay distressed Don Quijote, thinking that Malambruno had kept the steed back, either because he was not the intended knight or because the enchanter feared to engage with him. But look ! yonder enter four savages in green ivy bearing on their shoulders a huge

wooden horse. They set him upon his feet and one of the four cried : ' Let the knight that has the courage mount. ' ' Not I,' said Sancho ; ' I neither have courage nor am a knight. ' ' And let the squire, if there be one, mount his haunches, trusting in the gallant Malambruno, for only by his sword and not by that or the malice of any other can he be hurt. There's naught to do but twist this peg and he'll carry you through the air to where awaits the magician. That the height of the road may not dizzy, your eyes must be kept bandaged till the steed neighs, the sign that you are at your journey's end. ' With this the savages gracefully withdrew.

No sooner had the dolorous one espied Clavileño than well-nigh in tears she addressed Don Quijote : ' Worthy knight, the promises of Malambruno are fulfilled, the jade is at hand, our beards grow and each of us and by her every hair beseeches you to shear and shave us, that you mount, in other words, along with your squire and give good beginning to your novel journey. ' ' That I'll do with a right good-will, lady countess, nor stop for cushion or spurs, such will be my joy in seeing you yourself again and all these duennas clean-cut. ' ' But that I'll not do, ' followed Sancho, ' with good-will or bad will or any will at all. If this razoring can't be effected without my mounting the crupper, either my master can find another squire or these ladies another way to smooth their faces, for I am no wizard to enjoy air-trips. And what will mine islanders say when they hear their governor rides upon the winds ? Besides, since 'tis three thousand and so many leagues from here to Candaya, suppose the horse tire or the giant be vexed with us, we'll be a half-dozen years on the homeward way, and my isle and islanders won't know me. And since 'tis commonly said, danger lurks in delay and when they hand you a heifer, hurry with the halter, let the beards of these ladies please excuse me, for Saint Peter is well-off at Rome and I in this house, where such kindness is shown me and of whose owner I look for so great a boon as to find myself a governor. '

But to this the duke replied : ' The island promised you, Sancho friend, is neither movable nor fugitive : its roots are so

deep in the bowels of the earth that three pulls wouldn't change it from where it is. Moreover, since you know as I do that all important offices are obtained through some form of bribery, great or little, my price for the government is that you accompany your master to the very end, and whether you return on Clavileño with the speed his nimbleness promises, or adversity overtake you and you walk back from hostelry to hostelry and from inn to inn like a pilgrim, whenever you arrive you'll find the island where you left it, your islanders with the same desire of welcoming you as always, and mine own purpose unchanged. Don't hesitate a moment, Sancho, or you'll be doing grievous injury to my desire to deserve you.'

'No more, señor, interrupted the squire; 'I am but a poor servant and can't bear up under such courtesies. Mount, master, let them bandage these eyes and commend me to God and tell me if I shall be able on those tophloftical flights to commend myself to Him and to call upon the angels' favour.' Trifaldi answered: 'You can easily commend yourself to God or whom you list, since though an enchanter Malambruno is a Christian and works his charms with real prudence and consideration, interfering with none.' 'We're off then, and may God and the Holy Trinity of Gaeta be on our side.' 'Since the memorable adventure of the fulling-mills, never have I seen my squire so timorous,' declared Don Quijote, 'and were I superstitious as some, his pusillanimity would make me waver. But hither, Sancho, for with their worship's permission I'd have two words with you;' and going apart among some trees, taking his squire's hands he thus addressed him:

'You are aware, brother, that a long journey is before us and that God alone knows when we shall return and whether or no our mission will afford leisure or opportunity. I would therefore that you retire to your room on the pretext of getting some needment for the journey, and that there like a flash you give yourself say five hundred lashes on account, for to have a thing begun is to have it half done.' 'Fore God, but your worship must be crazy; this is like the saying, You see me in trouble yet ask for my maidenhead. Just when I'm obliged to ride a bare

board, does your worship want me to make my seat tender ? Believe me, sire, you are wrong. Let's first shave these duennas and I promise you, on the faith of what I am, on our return to pay the debt so quickly you'll be satisfied, and I say no more.' 'With this promise, good Sancho, I feel relieved, since I know you'll fulfil it and that though a fool you are true blue.' 'Brown, sir, but thought a mixture I'd keep my word.'

With this they returned and Don Quijote said : 'Have them blindfold you, Sancho, and mount, for he that sent for us from such remote lands, wouldn't go to all this trouble and then trick us for the sake of the little glory of misleading those that trusted him. And though all should turn out the reverse of what I expect, no malice can darken the splendour of having undertaken this great emprise.' 'Let us go, sir, for I have the tears and beards of these ladies sticking in my heart and I can't eat a mouthful to do me good till I see their faces smooth. Let them bind you and let your worship mount, for if I am to ride crupper, you clearly must sit in the saddle.' 'True,' said his master, and drawing a handkerchief from his pocket he requested the dolorous one to tie it tightly. But when she had done so, he removed it saying : 'If my memory serve me, I've read in Virgil that the Palladium or wooden horse, dedicated by the Greeks to the goddess Pallas, was pregnant with armed knights, who later proved the destruction of Troy ; it might be well therefore to take a peep into Clavileño.' 'No need,' said the countess, 'for I trust the beast and am sure Malambruno has naught of the artful traitor about him. Your worship may mount without dread and mine be the blame if aught happen.'

Don Quijote felt that anything he might further urge with regard to his safety would risk his reputation for courage, and so without demur he mounted the wingless steed, catching hold of the peg, which turned easily in his hand. As there were no stirrups and his legs hung down, he resembled a figure in some Roman triumph, painted or woven on Flemish tapestry. Very leisurely and with ill grace his squire managed to climb up and fitting himself the best he could to the crupper found it, far from being soft, insupportably hard. So he asked the duke could they

accommodate him with a cushion or two, or pillow from his lady the duchess's drawing-room or from one of the pages' beds, for the haunches of that beast felt more like marble than wood. To this the Trifaldi replied that Clavileño wouldn't suffer trapping or adornment of any kind, but that Sancho could ride woman-fashion and so feel the hardness less.

The squire accordingly reseated himself, and bidding farewell let them bandage his eyes, but he soon unbound them again, and looking tenderly and with tears on all in the garden, prayed them to succour him in this crisis each one with a pater-noster and an ave-maria. God, he said, would provide someone to do the same for them in like confusions. But his master exclaimed : ' Are you on the gallows, thief, or dying, that you resort to such supplications ? Soulless and cowardly creature, aren't you in the place once occupied by the fair Magalona from which she descended not to the grave but to be queen of France, if the histories say true ? And I that ride by your side, may I not compare myself with gallant Pierres who pressed the very spot I press ? Bandage on, spiritless animal, and see that your fear doesn't again pass your mouth, in my presence at least.' ' Tie it,' sighed Sancho, ' but since they won't let me commend myself to God or others commend for me, what wonder that I fear some legion of devils lurks near to whisk us off to Peralvillo ?'

They blindfolded again and Don Quijote, feeling all was ready, tried the peg and scarce had he turned it when the duennas and others shouted : ' God guide thee, gallant knight ; God be with thee, intrepid squire. There, there you go, cleaving the air more swiftly than an arrow, to the amazement of all that from the earth look up at you. Hold tight, worthy Sancho, you're reeling a bit. Take care, don't fall, or you'd fare worse than the rash youth that determined to drive the chariot of the sun, his father.' Sancho, crowding against his master, folded his arms about him, saying : ' Señor, how is it that they talk about our being so high, when their voices reach us. One would think they were speaking at our elbow.' ' Don't heed that, Sancho, for these things and this flying are out of the ordinary and for a thousand leagues you may see and hear anything you like. But don't clutch so

tightly or you'll upset me ; indeed I can't make out why you are so excited and afraid, for on mine oath I've never ridden so smooth-paced a creature : it is as if he didn't budge. Banish fear, friend, for the thing goes as it must and we have the wind astern. '

' Right you are, ' returned Sancho, ' for on this side I feel a draught as strong as a thousand bellows. ' Right he was, for several large bellows imitated the wind — so well planned was this adventure by the ducal pair and the majordomo it lacked nothing to perfect it. The knight also felt the breeze and said : ' Beyond question, boy, we are come to the second region of the air where are engendered snow and hail. In the third region are engendered thunder, lightning and the cleaving bolt, and if we continue to rise, we shall soon reach the region of fire, nor do I know how to work this peg that we shan't be scorched. ' At this point Trifaldi and company warmed the riders' faces with some lighted tow (which is easily lit and quickly quenched), holding it on a stick a little from them. Sancho felt the heat and cried : ' May they kill me if we're not already there or near it, for they've singed me the beard well enough. Master, I'm for unbinding to see where we are. '

' Don't do it ! ' screamed the other : ' remember the true story of Doctor Torralva, whom the devils carried flying blindfolded on a stick. In twelve hours he arrived at Rome, alighting in the street of Torre di Nona, there beholding the tumult, assault and death of Bourbon, yet on the morrow was back in Madrid, where he recounted all. Well, he told that when he was in the sky, the devil bade him unblindfold, and he, obeying, found himself so near the moon he could have touched it, but for his life dared not look at the earth lest he grow dizzy and fall. 'Tis not for us, therefore, to discover our whereabouts, since he that has us in tow will answer for us. Maybe we're fetching a point and climbing aloft in order to fall plump upon the kingdom of Candaya, as goshawk or falcon flies above the heron that it may swoop upon it however high it rise. Though it seems not half an hour since we left the garden, take my word we've gone a long way. ' ' I cannot tell, ' answered the other ; ' all I know is that if the lady

Magallanes or Magalona liked this seat, she couldn't have been over-tender of flesh.'

The duke, duchess and all in the garden heard the colloquy of the two heroes with vast enjoyment, but now wishing to give a finale to this rare and richly-ordered interlude, they lit Clavileño's tail with some lighted tow, and being stuffed with giant-crackers the horse of a sudden and with loud report shot through the air, throwing his riders half-singed to the ground. Previous to this Trifaldi and her bearded squadron had left the place but the others fell each where he stood as if stunned. The knight and squire arose in sorry plight, dumfounded on finding themselves in the very garden they had left and with so many persons laid with the earth. What fixed their astonishment was to see a long lance standing at one side and hanging therefrom by two cords of green silk a smooth white parchment, whereon in large gold letters was writ :

' The far-famed knight Don Quijote de La Mancha by the mere attempting terminated the adventure of the Countess Trifaldi, alias dolorous duenna and company. Malambruno is pleased and satisfied, the duenna's chins are bare and the royal couple, Don Clavijo and Antonomasia, back in their original forms. When the squirely whipping is fulfilled the white dove will be safe from the ravaging jerfalcons that persecute her and will lie in the arms of her beloved mate : so 'tis ordered of the sage Merlin, arch-enchanter of enchanters.' Our knight read the parchment and at once perceived that the last words referred to the disenchanting of his lady-love. And having offered many thanks to Heaven in that with so slight danger he had succeeded in that stupendous exploit, in reducing to their former bloom the skins of the venerable duennas (though not now in evidence), he walked to where duke and duchess still lay senseless, and taking the former by the hand tried to arouse him :

' Courage, good sir, courage, for 'twas nothing : the adventure has been achieved with whole skins, as the writing on this trophy clearly proves.' Gradually and like one awaking from heavy sleep the duke regained consciousness, and with him the duchess and all the prostrate there, but with such manifestations

of wonder and fright 'twas hard not to believe that really had befallen all that they had so cleverly feigned. With half-closed eyes the duke read the inscription and then with open arms ran to embrace Don Quijote, acclaiming him the most chivalrous knight of any age. In the meantime Sancho was trying to locate the countess to discover were she beardless now and beautiful as her gallant bearing promised. But they told him the moment Clavileño exploded and came to earth the whole troop had vanished, shaven of every bristle. The duchess asked how the squire had fared on his long trip and received the reply :

‘ I felt as if we travelled through the region of fire, even as my master said was possible, and I wished to unbandage mine eyes a crack, but he of whom I asked permission wouldn’t grant it. Somehow I have little chips of curiosity about me, wishing to fathom the things I am forbid, and so very cautiously and unseen I raise the handkerchief a bit near my nose and there underneath I had a peep at the earth, which looked no bigger than a grain of mustard-seed, and men walking about it the size of hazelnuts. You can see how high we were.’ ‘ Look to what you’re saying, Sancho friend,’ cautioned the duchess ; ‘ ’twould appear that you really didn’t see the earth but only men walking on it, for if the earth looked small as a mustard-seed and each man large as a hazel-nut, one man would have covered the whole world.’ ‘ True, but I spied a little corner and so saw it all.’ ‘ Tut, tut, man ; how can the whole of a thing be seen if one sees only a part ?’

‘ I know naught of these seeings,’ protested the squire, ‘ but methinks your worship should realise that since we flew by enchantment, by enchantment I could have seen the whole world and all its men whichever way I saw. If I’m not believed in this, neither will your worship believe how by lowering the bandage from mine eye-brows I peeped up at the sky, which I found so near ’twasn’t a palm and a half away. And I can swear to you, my lady, ’twas very grand besides. And it so chanced that as we coasted near the seven little she-goats, having as a lad tended goats in my country, ’fore God and on my soul I longed to romp with them a while and it seemed to me that if I didn’t, I should

burst. So I came and take and what do I do, without a word to anyone, least of all to my master, but softly and gently slide from my crupper and frolic with the kids, who are like flowers, like gilly-flowers, for three-quarters of an hour, and Clavileño all the while never stirred.'

'And while the good Sancho played with the she-goats,' questioned the duke, 'how did Señor Don Quijote fare?' 'As all these events are out of the natural order, it isn't to be wondered that Sancho says what he says. For myself mine only report is that I found myself neither up nor down, I saw neither heaven nor earth, the sea nor the shore. True I felt us passing the region of the winds and approaching that of fire, but I can't be persuaded that we went beyond, since, as the region of fire lies between the heaven of the moon and the upper region of the air, we couldn't have reached the sky of the seven little she-goats without being consumed. And since we were not, Sancho lies or Sancho dreams.' 'Neither one nor the other,' retorted the squire; 'if you think so, ask me the marks of these she-goats; by them 'twill be seen whether I tell the truth or no.' 'What were they, Sancho?' asked the duchess. 'Two of them were green, two scarlet, two blue and one motley.' 'A new species,' said the duke; 'goats of these colours aren't common here below.' 'Naturally,' said Sancho; 'there should be a difference 'twixt the she-goats of heaven and those of earth.' 'Did you see any he-goat with them?' asked the duke. 'Not one, señor; indeed I've heard say that none passes beyond the horns of the moon.'

They didn't care to question more, fearing lest Sancho take them over the whole sky and give news of what was passing. In a word this ended the dolorous duenna adventure, giving the ducal pair matter for mirth not only then but all their lives and Sancho something to talk about for ages, had he lived them. As the party broke up, his master approached the squire and whispered: 'Since you would have me believe what you saw in the sky, do you what I saw in the cave of Montesinos; I say no more.'

CHAPTER XLII

Don Quijote's advice to Sancho Panza previous to the latter's departure for his island, together with other well-digested matters

WITH the happy and delightful outcome of the dolorous one's adventure duke and duchess were so well pleased that they decided to continue their jests, having so fit a subject to take them seriously. Arranging with servants and vassals as to behaviour toward Sancho in the government of the promised isle, the day following the flight of Clavileño the duke notified the squire that he must put himself in trim for his approaching journey, since his islanders already longed for him like showers in May. Sancho made obeisance saying : ' Since I came down from the sky, from whose height I beheld the earth and how small it was, my great desire to be governor has somewhat abated. What is it to rule a grain of mustard-seed ? what sense of dignity or power in governing men no larger than hazel-nuts ? a half-dozen of them at that, for all mankind looked no more ? Should your lordship be pleased to grant me ever so small a portion of the sky, though but half a league, I should derive more pleasure from it than from the biggest island afloat. '

' Consider, friend, ' returned the duke, ' that of the sky I cannot give even so much as a piece the size of a nail to anyone, for that is the sole privilege of God. What I can give is an island, right and tight, round and well-proportioned, exceeding fertile and abundant, where, if clever, you can win the riches of the sky with those of the earth. ' ' Let it come, then, and I'll try to be such a ruler that in spite of rogues I'll go to Heaven. Nor is it from greed that I wish to rise from my hut to bigger things, but solely from a desire to taste how it feels to be a governor. ' ' If once you taste it, you'll eat your hands after it, for 'tis the pleasantest thing in the world to command obedience. When your master comes to be emperor, as without a doubt he will

come (now his affairs go so nicely), I'll wager they won't snatch it from him in a jiffy and that he'll be heartily sorry for the time wasted before getting there.'

'Señor,' assented Sancho, 'I believe 'tis pleasant to command even a herd of cattle.' 'Let them bury me beside you, for you know everything, my son,' declared the duke; 'I must think you'll be the governor your good judgment leads us to expect, and led it rest there. You are to set off to-morrow, so this afternoon they'll fit you with the clothes and needments of the journey.' 'Clothe me as they will, Sancho Panza am I still.' 'True, but clothes must adapt themselves to the particular business or profession: a lawyer shouldn't go attired as a soldier nor soldier as priest. You, Sancho, shall go clad both as a captain and a judge, for in an island are needed arms no less than letters and letters equally with arms.' 'Few letters have I,' confessed Sancho: 'indeed I don't know the A B C; but enough that I remember the Christus to be a good governor. As to arms I'll wield such as they give me till I fall, and God help me.' 'With Christus in mind,' said the duke, 'Sancho cannot go wrong.' Here Don Quijote came up, and knowing what was on foot and how soon his squire was to leave for the government, with the duke's permission taking him by the hand he led him to his chamber to advise him how to conduct himself in office. When the door closed, the knight made the other sit by his side and in calm voice began:

'I devoutly thank Heaven, Sancho friend, that before me and previous to my meeting with the lady good-fortune, she has come forward to welcome and receive you. I, that had pledged my success as payment for your services, see myself but at the door of advancement, while you, before your time and contrary to all rules of reason, find your dreams come true. Others bribe, beg, solicit, rise early, pray and persist, yet fail to get what they seek, when along comes another that without knowing how or why finds himself in the very office and position refused the first-comers. Here easily slips in the saying that a fortune, good or evil, dogs our designs. You, whom I regard at best a clown, without rising early or sitting late, with no solicitude whatever,

solely through the breath of errantry that has touched you, without more ado find yourself governor of an isle, as if 'twere nothing. All this I say, O Sancho, that you may not attribute this favour to your own deserts but rather render thanks to Heaven that so sweetly orders our affairs ; I say this too that you may be grateful for the power inherent in chivalry. And now, my son, your heart being disposed to believe what I have spoken, let it listen to this your Cato, who would be your counsellor, your north and guiding star to lead you safely to port from the tempestuous sea soon to be embarked on, since offices and high places are naught but storm and confusion.

‘ First you shall fear God, for such is the beginning of wisdom, and being wise, you cannot go wrong. Secondly you shall study Sancho Panza, endeavouring to discover what you are, the most difficult knowledge conceivable, yet with it you’ll not inflate yourself, like the frog that would equal the ox, for did you so, the remembrance of having tended pigs in your fatherland would come like the peacock’s feet ’twixt you and the tail of your vanity.’ ‘ But that was when but a boy ; as soon as I had a little of the man about me, ’twas geese I tended, not pigs. And this seems to me beside the question, since not all that govern can be of the breed of kings.’ ‘ True,’ assented Don Quijote ; ‘ and therefore those not of princely blood should unite with the gravity of their charge an approachable suavity which, guided by prudence, will protect them from malicious backbiters, to whom every position is exposed.

‘ Glory in your humble birth, Sancho, and in saying you come of peasants, for when they see that you yourself are not ashamed, none will attempt to shame you ; nay, all will prize you the more for being lowly and of honour than as though an overbearing scoundrel. Innumerable are they that have risen from obscurity to the highest pontifical and imperial dignity, in support of which truth I could produce examples to weary you. Take care, my son, that virtue be your means : pride yourself on doing laudable deeds and you’ll never have reason to envy those whom princes and lords have fathered. Only blood is inherited and virtue may be earned and is precious in itself, while blood of

itself is worth nothing. Since this is true, in case a kinsman come to visit you, do not disown or offend him. Rather must you welcome him, treat him with kindness and offer him entertainment, therein pleasing God, who likes none to disdain what He hath made. You will likewise fulfil your due to the well-ordered plan of nature.

‘ If your wife be with you (and it isn’t well that those engaged in government should be long without consorts), teach and train her, stripping her of her native crudeness, for a rustic and foolish wife can render null and void all a wise governor may attain to. If you become a widower and would have a consort on a footing with your place, don’t choose one to serve you as bait and fish-pole, a hush-money hood, for verily I say unto you that for all his wife takes in, the judge must give account at the court of last appeal, where at his death he shall pay fourfold for the deviltry he let go unpunished in his life.

‘ Go not by arbitrary law, by which the ignorant, presuming to be clever, set such store. Let the poor man’s tears find in you more compassion but not more justice than the pleadings of the rich. Try but to discover the truth, both amid the bribes and promises of the latter and amid the sobs and supplications of the former. Where equity can and should find favour, charge not the full rigour of the statute, for the fame of the severe judge stands no higher than that of the lenient, and with mercy’s weight not bribery’s let the rod of justice be bent. When called upon to judge an enemy’s suit, withdraw your mind from any remembrance of injury once suffered at his hands and fix it on the merits of the case. Nor let partiality blind you in another’s behalf, for the resultant harm will in most cases be irremediable, and if discovered will redound to your discredit and even threaten your position.

‘ If a beautiful woman come to seek justice, close your eyes to her tears, your ears to her pleading; consider at leisure the substance of her petition, unless you would drown your judgment in her weeping, your virtue in her sighs. Whom you are to punish by works, humiliate not in words, since the pain of chastisement suffices without insult. Regard the culprit that

comes under your jurisdiction as a poor human being, exposed to the frailty of our depraved nature, and so far as lies in your power with justice to the prosecution be not harsh but considerate, for though the attributes of God are equal, in our sight mercy is more splendidly glorious than justice.

‘ If these rules and precepts you follow, Sancho, long will be your days and deathless your renown, your rewards abundant and your felicity complete. You will marry your children where you list, they’ll have titles and their children after them. You will live in peace and good-will toward men, in life’s last stages death will come in a sweet and ripe old age and the tender delicate hands of your great-grandchildren will close your eyes. All I have so far spoken relates to the adornment of your soul : hear now what shall serve that of the body.’

CHAPTER XLIII

Further counsels given by Don Quijote to Sancho Panza

WHO could hear these instructions of the knight and not consider him a person of sound judgment and sounder aim ? As has been said many times in the course of this lengthy narrative, he wandered only when treating of chivalry, on other matters displaying a keen and capacious mind. The result was that his works continually belied his words, and vice versa, and in this second bundle of maxims his lively fancy carried sense and nonsense to their highest pitch. His pupil all the while listened most attentively, trying to preserve these counsels in memory, hoping through their observance to be safely delivered of his island-child. In proceeding Don Quijote said :

‘ As regards the governance of your person and house, Sancho, my first advice is that you keep clean and cut your nails, not letting them grow as some do who in their ignorance think that long nails set off the hands, as though such excrescences were nails and not rather talons of the lizard-catching kestrel — a swinish and unnatural abuse. Go not ungirt and loose, son, for

slovenly attire proclaims a slatternly mind, except it be intentional, as supposedly with Julius Cæsar. Consider with care what your office will afford and should you have monies sufficient, give liveries decent and serviceable, not showy and conspicuous, dividing them between your servants and the poor : if for example you have six pages, clothe three and three poor boys. Thus you'll have pages both in Heaven and on earth, though this novel procedure of bestowing liveries is unknown to the vainglorious.

‘ Refrain from garlic and onions lest folk scent your vulgarity. Eat slowly, speak with deliberation, but not as if listening to yourself, for all affectation should be avoided. Dine on little, sup on less, for the body’s health is forged in the foundry of the stomach. Be temperate in drink, knowing that the full pitcher keeps neither secret nor promise. Take care too not to eat with two cuds nor eruct in anyone’s presence.’ ‘ This eructing is new to me,’ complained the squire. ‘ Eruct means to vomit, but that being one of the vilest words in Castilian, albeit most descriptive, fastidious persons have recourse to the Latin and instead of vomit say eruct, eructations in place of vomitings. If at first some don’t comprehend these terms, it matters little for in time they will, when use accustoms them. That is the way to enrich a language, over which custom and the public are all-powerful.’ ‘ I promise you, sire, that one of the counsels I hope to carry away with me is this of not vomiting, for I am rather prone thereto.’ ‘ Say eruct, Sancho, not vomit.’ ‘ Eruct I shall say after this ; I swear it shan’t slip me.’

‘ As well, my son, must you take thought not to interlard your speech with multitudinous refrains, for though proverbs are the pith of wisdom, frequently you so drag them in by the hair as to make them vapid.’ ‘ God will have to remedy that,’ replied Sancho, ‘ for I know more proverbs than a book, and when I talk, so many come crowding to my mouth they fight to get exit and my tongue has to throw out the first it lays hold on, thought it come not pat. But henceforth I shall take more care to speak those becoming the gravity of mine office, for in a full house supper is soon cooked and a bargain’s a bargain, and he is safe that sounds the tocsin, and to give and retain doth need a

good brain.' 'Go on then,' exclaimed the other, 'thrust in, thread and string your proverbs, since there's none to check you. My mother chides me yet I spin the top : I've this moment been telling you to quit your refrains and there and then you throw at me a whole litany, that square as well with what we are discussing as over the hills of Ubeda. Remember, boy, that I don't say a proverb is bad when pertinent ; but to upset them in confusion makes one's speech signify nothing.

'When you come to mount a horse, don't fling your whole body over the saddle-breech nor ride with legs stiff and extended. Do not on the other hand ride laxly as if on Dapple ; riding makes cavaliers of some, postillions of others. Sleep moderately, for he that riseth not with the sun loseth the pleasure of the day. Industry, Sancho, is the mother of good-luck, and sloth, her foe, never lets a dream come true. This last advice I now am about to give, I would that you keep well in mind, for though it doesn't serve for the adornment of the person, methinks 'twill prove no less useful than the others ; to wit : never discuss families, at least never compare one with another, since of necessity one will prove better and the other worse. By these you will be hated for your depreciation without being rewarded by those for your praise. Your apparel shall be full-breeches, a long coat and a cloak even longer : trunk-hose never, which become neither gentlemen nor governors. So much at present has occurred to me for your instruction. As time goes, in accordance with the occasion shall be my tutelage, if you take care to advise me how you fare.'

'Señor,' began the squire, 'I can easily see that all the counsel your worship has given is good, virtuous and helpful, but of what use is it if I don't remember a word ? To be sure this not letting my nails grow and marrying again if I get the chance won't dodge me, but those other gallimaufries, tangles and jumbles are already clean gone, nor can I any more fetch them back than the clouds of last year. 'Twill be necessary that they be written, for though I can neither read nor write myself, I shall hand them to my confessor to stow them away and recall them at need.' 'Alas, sinner that I am !' sighed Don Quijote ;

‘ and how ill it looks in governors not to read or write. For you must know, my son, that for a man not to read, or for a man to be left-handed, argues one of two things : either his parents were vulgar or he himself so perverse that neither precept nor good example made impress. A grave defect is this, Sancho and I would that at least you learn how to sign your name. ’

‘ I already know, ’ said the other, ‘ for when I was steward to a brotherhood at home I learned to make some letters like the mark on a bale of goods, and these, they said, stood for my name. Besides, I can pretend that my right hand is crippled and so make another sign for me. There’s a remedy for everything save death, and holding the power and the rod I’ll do what I please. More by token that he that has the bailiff for father — and I being governor, which is more than bailiff, let them come on and they will see. Nay, let them flout and have their fling, for they’ll go for wool and come home shorn. Whom God wishes well, that house knows it and the folly of the rich man passes for wisdom in the world, and being rich, since I am governor, and liberal withal as I think to be, they’ll deem me flawless. Nay, make yourself honey and the flies will stick to you. You’re worth as much as you have, quoth one my grandmother, and upon a man well-rooted there’s no taking revenge. ’

‘ God curse you ! ’ swore the master at this point ; ‘ may sixty thousand devils take you and your saws ! For an hour you’ve been piling them on, each one torture to me. Take heed or these refrains will one day lead you to the gallows. By reason of them your vassals will demand that you drop the reins of government or they’ll rise in rebellion. Tell me, blockhead, where do you find so many, and how do you ever learn their application, for to find one and make it fit, I labour and sweat as if digging. ’ ‘ Fore God, but your worship complains of very little things. Why the deuce should you fret because I make use of my property : the only stock-in-trade I have in this world is proverbs and more proverbs. This minute I have four ready fit as pears in a basket, but I’ll not utter them, since good silence is called Sancho. ’ ‘ Which you never are, ’ declared the knight ; ‘ not only not good silence, but you’re bad noise and obstinacy to

boot. But come, tell the four proverbs that leap so aptly to your memory, for I've been racking mine, a good one, and meet with none.'

'What better than, Never put your thumbs betwixt your back-grinders, and, Get out of my house, what would you with my wife? — there's nothing to say, and, If the pitcher hits the stone or the stone the pitcher, 'tis all the same with the jug; each of which is as pat as can be. Let none contend with a governor or one in authority or he'll be the worse for it, like the finger 'twixt the grinders, which, though not back-grinders, being grinders, it matters not. And to the bidding of a governor there's naught to say, any more than to: Get out of my house, what would you with my wife? And even a blind man can see how the stone and pitcher fit. So there's need that he that sees the mote in his brother's eye, should first see the beam in his own, lest it be said of him: The dead woman took fright at her with the cut throat; and your worship is well aware that the fool knows more in his own house than the wise man in another's.' 'Not so, boy, for the fool knows nothing, in his own house or another's: on the foundation of folly no edifice of wisdom can be raised. But let's leave this, my son, for if you govern ill, yours the blame though mine the shame. Yet I take comfort in that I have fulfilled my promise and obligation in instructing you as truly and wisely as I knew. God guide you, Sancho, govern you in your government and quit me of mine apprehension that you'll turn the whole island head-over-heels: a calamity I could forestall by discovering to the duke who you are: that all this fat little person is naught but a sack of duplicity and proverbs.'

'Master,' said Sancho, 'if your worship really thinks me unfit for this government, on the spot I'll set it free, for I care more about the black of the nail of my soul than about my whole body, and I can as well keep alive as Sancho on bread and onions as governor on partridge and capon. What's more, while men sleep, all are equal, great and little, rich and poor. If your worship will recall, you'll find that you alone put me onto this business, since I know no more about ruling islands than does a

vulture ; and if 'tis thought that through being a ruler the devil will fetch me, I'd rather go Sancho to Heaven than governor to hell.' 'Fore God, brother, by this last speech of yours I deem you worthy to govern a thousand isles. Yours is a good instinct, without which knowledge is worthless. Commend yourself to God and wander not from your original resolve : in other words keep the intent and purpose firm to do right in all things, for Heaven helps worthy aims. And now let us to dinner for methinks our hosts await us.'

CHAPTER XLIV

How Sancho Panza was taken to the government and of the amazing adventure that befell Don Quijote in the castle

READERS of this history in the original say that its translator hasn't rendered the present chapter as Cid Hamet wrote it, for at the beginning thereof the Moor takes himself to task for having entered upon a work so narrow and restricted. He feels he should keep the narrative to the hero and his squire, not running off into digressions and episodes whether more serious or amusing, yet he finds that always to have thoughts, hand and pen tied down to a single subject and to be obliged to speak through mouths of a few persons only, is an insupportable labour, the fruit whereof doesn't redound to his advantage. To escape this burden in the first part he introduced a novel or two, such as *The Impertinent Paul Pry* and *the Story of the Captive*, though they had nothing whatever to do with the main discourse. The other things related there actually befell the knight and naturally had to be set down.

He fears however that many would have their attention so completely prepossessed by the deeds of Don Quijote as to have none to bestow on any of the tales, passing them by in haste and disgust, oblivious alike of their grace and construction, which would be sufficiently apparent if printed by themselves. He therefore refrains from inserting any in this second part, whether

separate or interwoven, and in their stead gives us a few genuine episodes, but even these sparingly and with just enough words to carry them. In return for this restriction of himself, when his faculties and understanding were sufficient to treat of the whole wide universe, he asks that his labours be praised, not alone for what he writes but for what he leaves in the ink-pot.

The history then proceeds to say that after dinner in the afternoon of the day on which Don Quijote gave his squire the instructions concerning the government, he gave him them in writing, knowing there would be one to read them as he had need. But scarce had he handed them to his apprentice, when the other dropped them and thus they came into the hands of the duke. He of course at once communicated their content to the duchess, so both had fresh reason to admire the mind and madness of their author. And now, continuing their jest, late that afternoon they despatched Sancho with a large retinue to the town that was to serve for an island. He that had the affair in charge was the majordomo, a most humorous and discreet person — since there cannot we wit without wisdom — the same that impersonated the Countess Trifaldi with all the charm above described. Aided by his natural cleverness and the minute instructions of master and mistress as to the management of Sancho, he again met with marvellous success.

It chanced then that, seeing this fellow, the squire recognised in his face that of the Countess Trifaldi and turning to his master said : ‘ Either the devil shall take me from where I stand, a just man and believing, or your worship must allow that the face of this the duke’s majordomo is the same as that of the dolorous duenna.’ The knight looked attentively and then said : ‘ There’s no reason why the devil should take you, neither as a just man nor as a believing (though I scarce know what you mean by that), for I confess that the dolorous one’s countenance is one with that of the majordomo. But not on that account is he the duenna, which would involve a most absurd contradiction. But this is no time to enter into proofs that would lead into intricate labyrinths. Believe me, friend, there’s need with our whole heart to supplicate our Lord to free us twain from evil wizards and enchant-

ers.' ' 'Tis certainly no joke, sir, for but now I heard him speak and methought 'twas Trifaldi's voice sounding in mine ears. Ah, well, I shall hold my peace, which won't keep me from noting as we go any sign to confirm or belie my suspicion.' 'Do that, my son, and let me hear all you learn and of all that befalls you in the government.'

So the squire rode forth in the company of much people, clad as judge in gown of tawny watered camlet with cap of the same, mounted on a mule whith short stirrups. Behind him, by the duke's order, followed Dapple, all tricked out in shining new harness and ass-trappings of silk. From time to time Sancho turned his head to look at him and was so pleased with his company he wouldn't have changed seats with the emperor of Germany. On leaving he kissed the hands of duke and duchess and received the blessing of his master, who bestowed it with tears on one who received it blubbering. And so, amiable reader, let honest Panza go in peace with God's speed, and count on two bushels of laughter to be given thee by the knowledge of how he bore himself in office. Meanwhile learn what befell his master, for if it does not make thee laugh, at least 'twill stretch thy mouth to a monkey-grin—the fortunes of Don Quijote must be met with wonder or a smile.

Scarce had the squire left when the other felt the loneliness, and had it been possible to revoke the commission and deprive Sancho of the government, he'd have done so. The duchess marking his melancholy asked its reason, adding that if 'twere due to Sancho's absence, she had squires, duennas and damsels that could serve him to perfection. 'Though true, lady dear, that I feel my squire's departure, that is the not the chief cause of my apparent gloom, and of the many substitutes your worship is ready to give I accept only the kind spirit wherewith they are offered, and for the rest pray your grace to allow me in mine own chamber to wait upon myself.' 'Indeed, Señor Don Quijote, this must not be; four damsels of mine, fair as flowers, are ready to attend you.' 'To me they'd prove but thorns to prick my soul. They shall as soon enter my chamber or anything like it as fly. Would you continue to bestow favours on one undeserv-

ing them, let me serve myself within mine own room, that I may keep a wall 'twixt my passions and my purity. Nor would I break my habit in this regard for all the liberality you could show. In other words I should prefer to sleep in my clothes than that another should undress me.'

'No more, no more, Señor Don Quijote,' yielded the duchess; 'I give my word that not even a fly shall enter your chamber, let alone a damsel. I am not one willingly to wrong your sense of personal decorum, for, according to my enlightenment, among your many virtues that which bears the palm is continence. Your worship may dress and undress alone and as you list, how and when it suits, and none shall interfere. Within your room you'll find all that could be asked for by a man sleeping behind a locked door, and no call of nature need force you to open it. Live a thousand ages the great Dulcinea del Toboso! be her fame blown o'er all the earth, since hers are the affections of so pure and gallant a knight as Señor Don Quijote, and may benign Heaven plant desire in the heart of Sancho Panza our governor quickly to perform his penance, that the world again may enjoy the beauty of so noble a lady.' Whereto answer was made: 'Your highness has spoken to the manner, for in the mouths of good women naught can be that's bad. More fortunate and more illustrious will my Dulcinea be for being vaunted by your grace than for all the praises given her by the most eloquent alive.'

'So let it be, sir, for supper is at hand and the duke awaits. Let your worship attend and after we have eaten together you shall retire early. The trip from Candaya yesterday was not so short as not to have caused a little fatigue.' 'I feel none, lady, and I'll take an oath that never have I ridden a quieter or more even-paced brute than Clavileño. I am at a loss to know what moved Malambruno to destroy so swift and withal so gentle a mount, burning him as he did for nothing at all.' 'As to that, it might be imagined that repenting of the scath he had wrought Trifaldi and company and others and of the crimes he must have committed as wizard and enchanter, he was eager to have done with all the instruments of his craft and so burned Clavileño as the chief one, that kept him tearing restlessly from country to

country. The more as in the ashes of the beast and in the trophy-scroll the valour of the great Knight of the Lions became a thing of lasting fame.'

The errant again thanked the duchess, and when they had supped, retired alone to his room, not consenting that any should enter to serve him — so deeply did he fear to meet with occasions that might move or force him to forsake the virtuous attitude he preserved for his lady Dulcinea, ever holding before his eyes the chastity of Amadis, flower and mirror of errant knights. Locking the door, by the light of two wax tapers he undressed, but in taking off his hose — O calamity unworthy such an one ! — there burst forth, not sighs or other things to discredit the purity of his thoughts, but about two dozen stitches from one of his stockings, making it look like window-lattice. The good man was mightily distressed and for a drachm of green silk just then would have given an ounce of silver — I say green because such were his hose. Here Benengeli cries aloud and writing says : ' O poverty, poverty ! I know not how the great Cordovan poet was moved to call thee a holy thing misprized. Though a Moor I know through intercourse with Christians that holiness consists in charity, humility, faith, obedience and last of all, poverty. At the same time I say, he that is content, being poor, must have much of God, unless it be that form of poverty concerning which one of the greatest saints said : ' Possess all things as if ye possessed them not. '

' This they call poverty in the spirit, but thou, O inferior poverty, of whom I now speak, why would thou be at odds with hidalgos and gentlefolk more than with others ? Why dost thou force them to smear their own shoes and have the buttons of their coats some of silk, some of hair and some of glass ? Why must their collars be crumpled for the most part — not smoothed out after a pattern ? ' (By this it may be seen that the use of starch and plaited ruffs is ancient). And Benengeli continues : ' Wretched is he, the well-born, that gives sops to his honour, taking a mere bite within doors and then making a hypocrite of the toothpick wherewith he walks out to take the air. Wretched is he I say that keeps his honour in constant fear lest from a

league off be seen the patch on his shoe, the sweat-stains on his hat, the bare thread of his coat and the hunger of his stomach.'

All this was brought home to our hero by the bursting of the stitches, but his heart was consoled by the sight of a pair of travelling boots, left behind by his squire. These he purposed to wear on the morrow, and with this thought got into bed. Yet he lay sad and sorrowful and could not get over Sancho's absence and the irreparable disaster to his hose. These he would have stitched with silk of another colour had he any — one of the surest signs of wretchedness that an hidalgo can betray in the course of his prolonged penury. He snuffed out the candles, but it was warm and he couldn't sleep. He rose and slightly opened a lattice-window that looked out upon a lovely garden. Hearing and perceiving persons walking there, he set himself to listen and those below raised their voices, so much so that he could hear these words :

' Press me not to sing, O Emerencia, for you know that from the moment this stranger entered the castle and mine eyes beheld him, I have not known how to sing but only to weep. Moreover my mistress rests lightly and I would not be found here for all the treasure of the world. And though she didn't waken, in vain would be my song if slumber and wake not to hear it this new Aeneas come to my regions to make of me a laughing-stock.' ' Don't mind that, friend Altisidora, for surely the duchess and all in the house are fast asleep, unless it be the lord of your heart and the 'larum of your soul, for but now I heard open the grated-window of his chamber. Sing, my afflicted one, low and softly to the sound of your harp ; should the duchess hear us, we can lay the blame on the heat of the night.' ' That is not the point, O Emerencia, but that I wouldn't that my song lay bare my thought and that I be taken for light and wanton by those that know not the power of love. But come what may, better shame in the face than sore in the heart.'

She thereupon began softly to stroke her instrument and hearing the sound Don Quijote felt a chill creep over him, for there came to him the memory of countless adventures of windows, gratings and gardens ; of serenades, love-plaints and

dizzinesses, whereof he had read in his dizzy books of chivalry. He straightly imagined that one of the duchess's damsels was truly enamoured of him though modesty compelled her to secrecy. He trembled lest he yield, but determined in his heart against it, and commending himself with all his soul to Dulcinea, thought he might listen to the music. He gave a feigned sneeze that they might know him present, which tickled the damsels since their only wish was that he should overhear. Having tuned her harp Altisidora ran her hands over the strings and began her ballad, and when she had finished, began the consternation of the courted Quijote who, heaving a deep sigh, communed with himself, saying :

‘ How joyless an errant am I whom no maid looks upon that does not love ! How sad the fate of Dulcinea, whom they will not let enjoy alone my incomparable fidelity ! What would you of her, queens ? why persecute her, empresses ? or pester her, damsels of fourteen an fifteen ? Leave, O leave to the miserable maid, that she triumph, rejoice and glory in the lot love would assign her in offering my heart, in delivering my soul. Take notice, love-sick crew, that only for Dulcinea am I dough and sugar-paste, and flint for the rest of you. For her I am honey, for you naught but aloe-juice. Dulcinea alone is fair, discreet, virtuous, sprightly and nobly-born, and all others are ugly, dense, wanton and the scum of the earth. To be hers and none other's nature sent me into the world. Let Altisidora weep or sing and let the lady because of whom they mauled me in the castle of the enchanted Moor despair, for Dulcinea's am I bound to be, roasted or boiled, clean, courteous and chaste, maugre all witchcraft in the world. ’ With this he shut the window with a bang, and perplexed and disheartened, as if he had met with great disaster, got into bed, where we leave him — for the great Sancho Panza calls, being about to assume the reins of his government.

CHAPTER XLV

How Sancho Panza took possession of his island and of the commencement of his reign

O thou perpetual discoverer of the antipodes ! torch of the world ! eye of heaven, sweet stirrer of wine-jars ! Here Thymbrus, there Phœbus, now archer, now physician ! Father of poetry, inventor of music, thou that ever risest and though thou seemest to, never settest ! On thee I call, O sun, by whose aid man engendereth man : thee I invoke to favour me, illumining the darkness of my wit, that I may faithfully report of the government of the great Sancho Panza, since without thee I find myself weak, dejected and confused.

I tell then that with all his retinue Sancho arrived at a village of near a thousand souls, one of the best in the duke's possession. They informed him 'twas named the island Barataria — either because the place was formerly called Baratario or because of the *barato* (practical joke) whereby conferred. On reaching its gates, for it was a walled town, they were met by the municipality, come forth to welcome their new governor : the bells rang and the people gave signs of general rejoicing. With great pomp they carried him to the cathedral-church to give thanks to God, and then with absurd ceremonies handed Sancho the keys of the place, acclaiming him perpetual administrator of the island Barataria. The garb, beard, plumpness and short stature of the new governor amazed all not in the secret, and in fact the many that were. Thence they led him to the judge's seat and placing him thereon the majordomo said :

' 'Tis an ancient custom here, sir governor, that he that comes to take ownership of this famous isle is bound to reply to any question put to him ; by his answer to which question, particularly if knotty and delicate, the townspeople take the pulse of his genius and are glad or sorry accordingly.' While the majordomo was speaking, Sancho sat looking at many large letters on

the opposite wall and not knowing how to read asked what those paintings were over there. 'There, sir, is writ and recorded the day whereon your lordship took possession of this isle. The epitaph reads : This day in such a month of such a year took possession of this isle the lord Don Sancho Panza, which may he enjoy many years.' 'And whom do they call that?' 'Your lordship, for no Panza has ever entered this isle save the one now seated here.' 'Then note this, brother, that I have no Don nor has there been one in my family ever. Plain Sancho is my name, Sancho was my father and Sancho my grandfather, and all were Panza without Don or Doña. I fear that in this isle are more Dons than stones. But enough, God understands me, and if my government last four days, maybe I'll weed out a few, who from their plenty must be troublesome as mosquitos. Out with your question, mister majordomo, and I'll answer the best I can, whether it makes them sorry or not sorry.'

At that moment entered the court-room two men, one clad as a peasant, the other as a tailor with scissors in hand and crying : 'Sir governor, I and this labouring-man come before your worship for the reason that yesterday he came to my shop — for saving your presences I am a licensed tailor, blessed be God — and putting a piece of cloth in my hand said : 'Will there be enough there to make a cap?' I measured the piece and told him yes. He must have suspected, as I suspect and rightly, that I wished to steal the remnant, founding his belief on his own roguery and the bad reputation of tailors, for he asked me was there enough for two caps. I saw through his little game and told him yes, there would be. And he, riding away on his real and devilish intent, went on capping my yeses till we came to five. To-day he calls for his caps which I give him, but he refuses to settle and even asks me to pay him for the cloth or return it whole.'

'Is all this true, brother?' asked Sancho of the peasant. 'Yes,' the other replied, 'but let your worship make him produce the five caps he offers me.' 'With pleasure,' said the tailor ; and thrusting quickly under his cloak he produced five tiny caps, one on each finger, saying : 'The very five the gentleman

asked for, and 'fore God and on my conscience every bit of the cloth was used ; what's more I'll give the work to be examined by the inspectors of the trade. ' All present laughed at the size of the caps and the novelty of the contention, but Sancho set himself to consider a moment and then said : ' In my opinion there need be no delay with this suit, since by common sense it may be disposed of off-hand, and I give as my decision that the tailor forfeit his labour and the peasant his cloth and that the caps be donated to prisoners at the jail ; let no more be said. ' This judgment provoked the amusement of the audience, but what Sancho ordered was done.

There now came before him two old men, one carrying a stout reed by way of walking-stick ; and the other, who had no cane, said : ' Señor, days ago I lent this gentleman on demand ten gold crowns as a favour. Some time went by without mine asking, that I might not put him to greater distress than when he borrowed them. But since he seemed to be taking no thought or trouble about the matter, I have demanded payment not once but often, and he not only doesn't return the crowns but refuses outright, saying I never lent the money and that if I did, he has since paid me. I have no witnesses either of loan or payment (of the payment because there was none), so I would your worship take his oath, and should he swear he has returned the money, I excuse the debt here and before God. '

' What say you to this, good old man of the stick ? ' asked the judge, and was answered : ' I acknowledge it, sir, but prithee lower your rod of justice and since he leaves it to mine oath, I'll swear that I paid the debt, crown for crown. ' The governor lowered his staff and the defendant, first handing his reed to the plaintiff as if 'twere in the way, put his hand on the staff's crook and swore that though 'twas true ten crowns had been lent him, he had in person returned them to the owner, who must have forgot or he'd not keep asking. The governor enquired of the creditor what he had to say in reply and was answered that surely the other would not perjure himself, especially as he considered him a gentleman and good Christian. As the debtor said, he must have forgot the time and manner of payment and

would bother him no more. The debtor at once took his stick and with a low bow left the room. Sancho observed all this, how he went away so readily, and observing the plaintiff's meekness as well, lowered his head on his chest, and putting his right forefinger against his nose and eyebrow, sat very thoughtful a moment or two, and then raising his head asked that the old man be called back. They led him in and the judge said :

‘ Pray hand me your stick, my good sir ; I have need of it. ’
‘ Most willingly, ’ replied the old dodger. Sancho took the reed and handing it to the other said : ‘ Go with God, for now are you paid. ’ ‘ And is this reed worth ten gold crowns ? ’ ‘ It is, else I’m the biggest booby on earth. Let’s see now have I brains to rule a kingdom : ’ and he commanded the reed should be split and opened. This was done and in its hollow were found the ten crowns. All were filled with admiration and took their governor for a new Solomon. They asked him how he knew and he told them that he noticed that the old man before swearing handed the stick to his creditor and afterwards took it back ; from all of which could be inferred that though some governors are idiots, God directs their judgments now and then. Moreover he had heard the priest of his village tell of a similar case, and his memory was so good that, were it not that there slipped him all he wished to retain, there wouldn’t be its equal in all that isle. The old men, one ashamed the other satisfied, went their ways, leaving the hangers-on of the court dumb with wonder, and even he that chronicled the words, deeds and actions of Sancho at this period couldn’t make up his mind whether to think him fool or philosopher.

Now that this lawsuit was disposed of, there entered a woman holding fast a rich drover and crying : ‘ Justice, mister governor, justice, and if it’s not to be found on earth, I’ll go look in Heaven. Your honour, this scurvy fellow caught me on yon plain and used my body like an ill-washed rag. Alas, wretch that I am, he has robbed me of that I have treasured these three and twenty years, defending it from Moor and Christian, fellow-countryman and foreigner — I as tough as a cork-tree, keeping myself pure as a salamander in fire or wool on thorns, and here,

this fellow comes with clean hands to rumple my clothes.' 'It is yet to be proven whether this gallant's hands are clean or dirty;' said Sancho, and turning to the drover he asked what he had to say in reply.

'Gentlemen,' began the man in a state of great excitement, 'I am a poor drover of swine and left home this morning in order to sell four hogs (with your pardon be they maned), but they fetched only a little more than what I have paid out in taxes and extortion. On my way back I met this good duenna, and the devil, who embroils and entangles all things, yoked us together. I paid her sufficient but she, not satisfied, laid hold and wouldn't let go till she brought me to this court-room. She claims I forced her, but by the oath I swear or shall swear she lies, and this is the truth without missing a hair.' The governor asked had he silver on his person. Twenty ducats, he replied, in a leathern purse on his bosom. He was ordered to hand them to the complainant. The man, trembling from head to foot, obeyed, and the woman, making a thousand curtsies to all and praying God for the life and health of the lord governor, who thus looked out for distressed orphans and maidens, left the court-room, clutching the purse in both hands, having first examined to make sure that the money was silver.

Scarce had she gone when Sancho, turning to the weeping drover, whose eyes and heart were with his purse, said to him: 'Good man, follow and get the purse though you have to fight for it, returning with it here.' Nor did he speak to a dummy or a dunce, for the drover went out like a flash. The witnesses were amazed, admiring what would be the issue, but soon both returned, more united than ever, she with her petticoat raised and in her lap the purse, which the man struggled to get but could not, since the other put up the devil of a fight screaming: 'Justice from God and the world! see your worship, sir governor, how little fear and shame this soulless creature has, trying to rob me in the middle of the street of the purse you bade him give me.' 'And did he get it?' 'How get it? I'd relinquish my life sooner than the purse; a pretty child I should be! They'll have to fling other cats at my chin, and not this miserable filthy

wretch ! Pincers and hammers, mallets and chisels, no, nor lions' claws, won't get it from me : they'll sooner tear my soul from my flesh.'

'She says true,' said the drover ; 'I own myself powerless and beaten ;' and he let go his hold. 'Let us see this purse, my good and gallant woman ;' said the governor. She forthwith handed it to the judge who returned it to the man, saying to the rapacious but not raped plaintiff : 'Had you shown the same or even half the strength and courage in defending your body, my sister, that you have in guarding your purse, the force of Hercules couldn't have forced you. Go with God and good riddance, and don't appear in all this isle nor for six leagues round about, under pain of two hundred lashes. You shameless, loose-tongued creature, out of here !' The woman, cowed, slunk from the room and the governor said to the man : 'Go home, my good sir, with God and with your purse, which would you not lose, try to yoke with no one.' The drover gave his boorish thanks and went away, leaving the court admiring anew the judgments and sentences of their governor. His chronicler wrote a report of all for the duke, who eagerly awaited it. Here the just Sancho is left, since his master, sorely tried by Altisidora's music, bids us make haste.

CHAPTER XLVI

The frightful cat-and-bell scare experienced by Don Quijote in the course of the amours of the enamoured Altisidora.

WE left the great Knight of the Lions involved in the thoughts occasioned by the music of the enamoured Altisidora. He went to bed with them as with so many fleas, for they wouldn't let him sleep or rest, and the thoughts of the breakage in his hose joined forces. But time is on the wing and no barrier can check him : he now rode upon the hours and the one for him to mount the morn came quickly. When Don Quijote observed this, he left his soft couch and naught indolent

donned his chamois-suit and then the travelling-boots to hide his bitter loss. He flung the scarlet mantle about him, assumed a green-velvet cap edged with silver, hung his baldrick with the trusty trenchant blade from his shoulders, threw round his neck the large rosary he was in the habit of wearing, and in fine figure and gait strode into the hall.

As he passed a gallery who should stand there but Altisidora with the damsel her friend, and no sooner beheld she the knight than she feigned a swoon, and her friend catching her in her lap quickly began unlacing the bosom of her dress. Observing all this Don Quijote approaching said : ' I already am aware whence spring these fainting-spells. ' ' I'm sure I am not, ' replied the friend, ' for Altisidora's the healthiest maid in all the house : I've never heard her utter so much as an Ah me ! since I first knew her. But cursed be as many knights-errant as are in the world, if all be ungrateful. Let your worship depart, Señor Don Quijote, for the poor child won't revive in your presence. ' ' To-night, lady, do you place a lute in my chamber and I'll console the damsel as best I can, since in the spring-time of love early disillusion is wont to work cure. ' And with this to avoid making talk he moved on.

Scarce had he gone when Altisidora came to, saying to her companion : ' We surely must place the lute there for he certainly intends to give us music and being his it won't be bad. ' They then went to tell the duchess, who accordingly arranged with her husband and the damsels to play him a trick, one more humorous than hurtful. They eagerly looked forward to the night, which came quickly as had the day, for the interval was passed by their graces in agreeable converse with their guest. He, on retiring at eleven that evening, found a guitar in his bedroom. He tried it, opened the window, saw persons in the garden, ran over the strings and tuned the instruments as best he could. Then having spat and cleared his throat in full-tone though a trifle hoarse he sang a ballad composed by him that very day.

The knight had but ceased his singing, to which all in the castle were audience, when suddenly from a balcony overhanging

his window was let down a rope with more than a hundred sheep-bells attached, and following it was spilled a whole sackful of cats, with other little bells about their necks. So great was the jangling and the squalling that duke and duchess, though the perpetrators of the joke, were fairly startled, while its object was paralyzed with fear, particularly as fate so willed that two or three of the cats entered through the grating and flying about the room made it seem as if a whole legion of devils were loose, putting out the candles in their efforts to escape. The shaking of the rope with its large bells didn't cease, enough to petrify most of the castle-folk, though party to the scheme.

No longer petrified was Don Quijote, who rose and clapping hand to sword began to cuff the window, shouting : ' Out with you, ye scurvy enchanter ! avaunt, ye damned crew ! for I am Don Quijote de La Mancha, and against him your machinations are but shadows.' His next turn was to the cats, still scampering about the room, now whacked at this way and that. At length they made for the window and flew out, but one of the them, hard pressed by the knight, leapt for his face and seizing his nose with claws and teeth, drew from him the most painful yells imaginable. The duke and duchess hurried to the room and opening the door with a master-key found the poor gentleman struggling whith all his might to tear the cat from his face. They rushed in with lights and the duke hurried to end the unequal combat, but Don Quijote cried : ' Let none dare separate us ; leave me hand to hand with this demon, this wizard, this enchanter. I'll let him know who Don Quijote is.'

But the cat, heedless of these threats, snarled and held fast, till the duke was forced to loosen it and chuck it through the window. The knight was left with a face full of holes and a nose not as it should be, indignant that they hadn't let him close the close battle with that monstrous enchanter. They fetched some oil of hypericum and Altisidora herself with her snowy white hands applied plasters to the wounds, saying in a low voice as she dressed them : ' All these calamities have overtaken you, flinty knight, by reason of your hard-heartedness, and I pray God that Sancho your squire may forget to lash himself, that this

adored Dulcinea of yours may never pass from her enchantment, nor you enjoy her on the marriage-couch, at least while I live, for I worship you.'

To all this Don Quijote said ne'er a word, but heaving a deep sigh stretched himself on the bed and thanked his hosts for their kindness — not that he feared that ringing feline crew but he was grateful for their good intention in coming to his aid. They let him rest, somewhat repentant at the bad turn of their joke, not having dreamed 'twould prove so painful and costly. Its price was a five-day confinement to his room, where there befell him another adventure more agreeable than the last but which his historian cannot relate at present, for he must hasten to Sancho Panza who is progressing very busily and delightfully in his government.

CHAPTER XLVII

Further details of how Sancho Panza bore himself in his government

THE history tells us that from the justice-hall they led the new governor to a sumptuous palace, where in a large room was set a royal and elegant banquet. As Sancho entered clarions sounded and four pages stepped forward with water for his hands, which he gravely made use of. The music ceased and their ruler sat him down at the head of the table, where was the only cover laid. There stood at his side a personage, who proved a physician, with a little wand of whalebone in his hand. They first removed a rich white cloth wherewith the fruit and a large variety of viands were covered. One that appeared a student said grace and a page tucked a lace bib under Sancho's chin, while another, serving as seneschal, laid a plate of fruit before him. But scarce had he eaten a mouthful when he of the wand touched the plate with it and the others whisked it away with the greatest celerity. The seneschal now offered him another viand and Sancho was about to taste it when the little wand lowered and

'twas removed as quickly as the fruit had been. Seeing this the governor was amazed and looking at the others asked if he was to eat that dinner like a juggler's trick. To this he of the wand replied :

' It's to be eaten, sir governor, after the use and custom of other isles ruled over by governors. I, sir, am a doctor, paid by this community to act to its head. I consider his health much more than I do mine own, studying by night and day and sounding his constitution that I may cure him if he fall ill. My chief duty is to attend at dinners and suppers, letting him eat only what seems to me for his good and removing aught that might prove mischievous. I ordered the fruit away as 'twas a trifle over-humid, and the other viand because it seemed too hot and full of thirst-inducing spices — for he that drinks much kills and consumes the radical humours that go to make up life.' ' In that case,' said Sancho, ' yon dish of roast partridges, they seem very savoury and will certainly work me no harm.' ' Not while I live shall the lord governor partake of these.' ' And why not ?' ' Because our master Hippocrates, the north-star and shining light of medicine, in one of his aphorisms says : *Omnis saturatio mala, perdicis autem pessima*; in other words, All surfeit is bad but that of partridge worst.'

' If that be so, let sir doctor see which one of all the viands on this table will prove most helpful and least harmful to me, and let me eat of the same before it's spirited away, for by the life of a governor, and so may God let me enjoy it, I am dying of hunger, and to deny me food, whatever the doctor says, is not to promote life but to plunder me of the little I have.' ' Your worship is quite right,' agreed the physician; ' there are some stewed rabbits there, but those you shouldn't eat as it's a furry food. That veal, however, were it roasted with pickle sauce, you might have tried.' And Sancho said : ' But that big dish smoking yonder is an olla-podrida methinks and from the variety whereof such ollas are composed I shall be sure to meet with something both tasty and wholesome.' ' Absit !' exclaimed the doctor; ' far be so profane a thought from us. Naught is there of less nourishment than an olla-podrida. Leave all such to canons

and rectors of colleges and to country-weddings, and spare them from governors' tables, where only delicacy and culture should reign. The reason is that always and everywhere and by every one simple medicines are more approved than compound, for in simples one cannot err while in mixtures yes, by tampering with the ratio of the ingredients. What the governor should eat for his health's sake is a hundred wafer-rolls and some thin slices of quince, which both sustain the stomach and aid digestion.'

Upon this Sancho leaned back in his chair and scrutinising his doctor asked him in severe tone what his name was and where he had studied, receiving for his answer: 'I, sir governor, am called Doctor Pedro Recio de Agüero, native of a village named Tirteafuera, which lies on the right hand as one goes from Caracuel to Almodóvar del Campo. I graduated from the University of Osuna.' To this Sancho, whose wrath was now kindled, replied: 'Well then, Mister Doctor Pedro Recio of ill-augury, native of Tirteafuera (take-thyself-off), village lying on the right hand as one goes from Caracuel to Almodóvar del Campo, graduate of Osuna, take thyself off and at once! If not, I swear by the sun I'll seize a cudgel, and beginning with you I'll cudgel every doctor out of the island, at least all those I take to be ignorant; the learned physicians, the prudent and wise, I'll put on my head and honour like persons divine. I say again that if Pedro Recio don't clear out of here this instant, I'll take the chair wherein I sit and make him see stars. Let them call me to account in my period of probation as ex-governor, for I'll clear myself by saying I rendered God a service by killing a bad doctor as a plague to the commonwealth. Give me something to eat or let them take their governorships. A post that lacks sufficient food isn't worth two beans.'

The frightened doctor, seeing the governor's wrath, was about to make his exit when suddenly there sounded a post-horn in the street and the seneschal, looking through the window, turned round and said: 'A messenger from my lord the duke; a message of importance no doubt.' The lad entered in sweat and flurry and drawing a despatch from his bosom placed it in the hands of the governor, who in turn handed it to the majordomo,

whom he commanded to read the address, which ran as follows : To Don Sancho Panza, Governor of the Island Barataria, into his own hands or those of his secretary. ' Who is my secretary ? ' Sancho enquired ; and one of those present replied : ' I, sir, for I can read and write and am a Biscayan. ' ' In that case, you can be secretary to the emperor himself. Open the despatch and see what it says. ' The new-made secretary did so and having read, said 'twas private. Sancho ordered the hall cleared, save of the majordomo and the seneschal, and the others accordingly retired. The secretary then read the letter aloud as follows :

' It has come to my knowledge, Señor Don Sancho Panza, that some enemies of mine and this island are to make a furious assault upon it, some night soon. 'Tis fit then that you be alert and on guard lest they take you unprepared. I learn also by trusty spies that four persons have entered the town in disguise on purpose to take your life, fearing your genius. Keep a sharp lookout, see who comes to speak with you and eat nothing of what they offer. I am ready to relieve you in case of trouble, but in all you will act as expected of your understanding.

From this place the sixteenth of August at four of the morning :

Your friend,
The Duke. '

Sancho was thunder-struck and the bystanders pretended to be. Turning to the majordomo the governor said : ' That which must be done and done quickly is to clap Doctor Recio in the lockup. If anyone will kill me, 'tis he, and by a lingering death, that of starvation, the worst of all. ' ' Nevertheless, ' replied the seneschal, ' your worship would best not eat of aught on this table, for it was presented by nuns, and 'tis a common saying, The devil lurks behind the cross. ' ' I don't deny it, ' said Sancho, ' so let them give me just a piece of bread and a matter of four pounds of grapes ; in them there can be no poison. Indeed I cannot last without something and if we're to be ready for those battles that threaten us, we must be well-sustained. The stomach carries the heart and not the heart the stomach. Do you, secretary, reply to my lord the duke, saying that all shall

be done according to his commands without bating a jot. You will add a salute from me to lady the duchess and say that I pray her to forget not to express my letter and parcel to my wife Teresa, which I shall take very kindly and be careful to serve her ladyship with all my power. You can tuck in by the way a kiss-of-the-hand to my master Don Quijote de La Mancha that he may see I am grateful bread. And you, like a good secretary and a good Biscayan, may add what you please that comes to the point. And now let them remove this cloth and give me to eat, and having eaten I'll have it out with as many spies, murderers and enchanters as come against me and mine island.'

At that moment entered a page saying: 'Here is a peasant on business, who would speak with your lordship on a matter of great importance.' 'Tis a strange thing with your men of affairs,' said Sancho; 'can they be such dunces as not to see that these are not hours for transacting business? Perchance we that judge and govern are not men of flesh and bone? Is it not necessary to leave us at peace such times as our needs demand, or would they that we be of marble?' 'Fore God and on my conscience, if my government last, which I very much doubt, I'll make more than one of them know their places. Tell the gentleman to enter, first seeing that he isn't one of the spies or murderers.' 'He is not,' replied the page, 'but seems the soul of a pitcher, and I know little or he's as good as good bread.' 'There's naught to be afraid of,' said the majordomo, 'whilst all of us are here.' And Sancho said: 'Could it be, seneschal, during Doctor Pedro Recio's absence, that I eat some little thing of weight and substance, a crust of bread perhaps or an onion?' 'To-night at supper the scantiness of the dinner will be made good and your lordship will feel satisfied and repaid for waiting.' 'God grant it,' replied the governor.

There now entered the peasant, whose face would have shown him a good man with good heart at a thousand leagues. His first word was: 'Which is sir governor?' 'Which can he be,' answered the secretary, 'but he that is seated?' 'I humble myself in his presence;' and kneeling the peasant sought Sancho's hand to kiss. He was refused however and told to stand on his feet

and say what he would. And he replied : ' I am a peasant, sir, a native of Miguel Turra, a village two leagues from Ciudad Real.' ' Have we another Tirteafuera ? ' said Sancho ; ' but continue, brother, for I can assure you that I know Miguel Turra well as it's not far from my town.' ' My story then is that by the mercy of God I was married with the love and license of the Holy Roman Catholic Church. I have two sons, students ; the younger studied for the bachelor's degree and the older for the licentiate's. I am a widower, since my wife died or, better to say, a poor physician killed her, purging her when with child. Had God been pleased that she should have been delivered and of a boy, I should have had him study for the doctor's degree, that he might not have been envious of his brothers, the bachelor and the priest.' ' So then,' observed Sancho, ' if your wife hadn't died or they hadn't killed her, you wouldn't be a widower.' ' Surely not,' replied the peasant. ' So far we are agreed,' returned the governor, ' but pray, brother, continue, since the hour is rather for the siesta than business. '

' I say then,' proceeded the peasant, ' that this my son, the one destined to be a bachelor, is in love with a girl named Clara Perlerina, daughter of Andres Perlerino, a rich farmer of our town. This name of Perlerino doesn't come to them by descent or from any ancestry, but because all are paralytic (perlaticos) and the name is better spelt Perlerines, though this particular member of the family, this daughter, is veritably an orient pearl and on her right side seems a flower of the field. On the left not so much, for that eye is missing, lost through small-pox. But though her face is deeply pitted, those that admire her say these are not pits but graves where are buried the souls of her lovers. She is so cleanly that lest she soil her face, she carries her nose cocked up, till one would fancy it were fleeing the mouth. Yet withal she is exceeding comely, for she has a large mouth, and did it not lack ten or twelve front teeth and molars, it might pass and make show among the best. In speaking of her lips words fail me, for so thin and delicate are they, that were it the fashion to wind lips, one could make a skein of them. Moreover they're of a different colour from ordinary lips and have a wonderful

look about them, being a mottle of blue, green and purple. Pardon me, sir governor, if I paint too minutely the charms of one that some day or other will be my daughter, but I love and think well of the lass.'

'Paint her as you please,' said Sancho, 'for the picture delights, and had I eaten I couldn't ask for better desert than this full portrait.' 'That still remains to serve you,' replied the peasant, 'and if I cannot just now, the time will come when I can. I mean, sir, that could I paint her grace of carriage and stature of body, 'twould fill you with admiration, but I cannot because she's bent and contracted with knees to her mouth, though one can easily see that were she straight, her head would hit the ceiling. This beauty would have given her hand to my son, only she can't stretch out the shrivelled thing, but long, furrowed nails show its fine proportions.' 'So far so good,' said Sancho, 'and now, brother, supposing her painted from head to foot, what are you after? come at once to the point without remnants or extras, turnings or asides.'

'I would, sir, that your worship favoured me with a letter of recommendation to the girl's father, praying him to sanction this marriage, for we're not unequal in fortune's goods or nature's; to tell the truth, sir governor, my son is bewitched and three or four times every day evil spirits torment him. From falling in the fire once upon a time he has a face puckered like parchment and eyes rather tearful and running. But his disposition is that of an angel, and were it not that he thumps and belabours himself, he'd pass for a saint.' 'Is there aught else you wish, my good sir?' 'There is, though I lack courage to tell it; but let it speak, for after all I can't let it rot in my breast, come what may, My desire is, sir, that your worship give me three or six hundred ducats toward my son's portion, to help him set up house, for they'll have to live by themselves, away from the impertinences of their fathers-in-law.' 'And is that all?' asked Sancho; 'don't hold back from shyness or shame.' 'That is certainly all,' replied the peasant.

Scarce were the words out of his mouth when rising to his feet the governor seized the chair whereon he had been sitting and

cried : ' By all that's good, don countryman, clownish and ill-bred churl, I swear to break this seat and open your head if you don't clear out of here and hide yourself from me. Whoreson rogue, you devil's own painter ! at this time of day do you come to ask for six hundred ducats ? where have I them, stinkard ? or why should I give them to you, scoundrel and idiot ? what care I for Miguel Turra on the whole family of Perlerines ? Out of here I tell you, or by the life of my lord the duke I'll do what I say. Not from Miguel Turra do you come but are some limb Satan has sent here to try me. Tell me, I've not ruled a day and a half and would you that I have six hundred ducats ? '

The seneschal motioned to the peasant to leave, which he did with bowed head and assumed fright, lest the governor carry out his threat, for the rascal knew well how to play his part. Leave we also Sancho and his wrath ; peace to all the company and let us return to his master, whom we left with swathed face under treatment for cat-wounds, unhealed in eight days, on one whereof occurred what Cid Hamet promises truthfully to relate with his characteristic fidelity toward the incidents, however trivial, of this his narrative.

CHAPTER XLVIII

Don Quijote's affair with Doña Rodriguez, duenna to the duchess, together with other occurrences worthy of record and perpetual fame

TRIED and dispirited lay the sorely wounded knight, with bandaged face, marked not with the hand of God but the claws of a cat : a situation however not foreign to the ways of chivalry. Six days he appeared not in public, and one night as he reclined there awake and watchful, brooding on his ill-luck and the persecutions of Altisidora, he heard a key turn in his chamber-door. He at once imagined the love-lorn maid was come to o'erwhelm his continence, reducing him to betrayal of his fealty to the lady Dulcinea del Toboso. Convinced of this conceit

he swore aloud : ‘ Nay, the greatest beauty in the world cannot quell mine adoration of her that is stamped and engraven on my heart’s core and the secret recesses of my reins, whether, my lady-love, thou be transformed into garlic-fed peasant or nymph of the golden Tagus, weaving cloth of twisted silk and gold, or whether Merlin or Montesinos hold thee at his bidding. Wherever thou art, thou art mine, and everywhere I have been or shall be am I thine. ’

The closing of this declaration coincided with the opening of the door. The knight stood up in bed, wrapped from top to toe in a quilt of yellow satin, a close-fitting cap on his head and with face and moustaches swathed about — the face because of the scratches, the moustaches to prevent their drooping — in which array he looked the strangest phantom conceivable. He fixed his eyes on the door, expecting to see the blighted and love-smit Altisidora, but saw instead a venerable duenna, clad in a white pleated veil that cloaked and covered her from head to foot. In her left hand she bore a lighted half-candle and with her right shaded her eyes, covered by a huge pair of spectacles. She advanced with noiseless steps, plying her feet softly. From his watch-tower the knight observed her stealth and attire and fearing that some witch or sorceress was come to work him harm, he quickly crossed himself.

The apparition drew nearer and nearer till, as it reached the middle of the room, it raised its eyes and observed the speed wherewith the knight was making the cross. If he was frightened at her figure, she was paralysed by his. Beholding him so long and yellow in his quilt and bandages she cried : ‘ Jesu ! what do I see ? ’ and in her fright dropped the candle. Finding herself in the dark she turned to go, but tripping on her train suffered a sound fall. Don Quijote tremblingly began : ‘ I conjure thee, phantom or what not, to tell me who thou art and what thou wouldst of me. If thou be a soul in pain, say, and I’ll lend all my power to thy relief, since I am a Catholic Christian and a friend of doing good to all the world. For that purpose I took the order of knighthood, which profession extends even to the helping of souls in purgatory. ’

The discomfited duenna, hearing herself thus conjured, by her own fear guessed Don Quijote's and in low lamenting voice replied : ' Señor Don Quijote, if it be he I'm addressing, neither phantom nor wraith am I nor soul in purgatory as your worship imagines, but Doña Rodriguez, duenna of honour to my lady the duchess, come to you with a need of the kind your worship is wont to satisfy. ' Tell it, señora ; perchance your worship comes as go-between ? If so, you must know I can be of use to none, thanks to the peerless beauty of my lady Dulcinea. Would you cast aside all love-messages, with candle lighted you may return and we'll discuss all your askings and desires, barring as I say any of amorous suggestion. ' I with a message from anyone ? your worship little knows me. Nay, I'm not sufficiently advanced in years to resort to such nonsense, and praise God I still have a soul in my body and all my teeth and molars in my mouth, save a few lost through catarrh, so prevalent in this country of Aragon. But wait a little, sir, and I'll be back with a light to tell my cares to the easer of all the world's. '

Not staying for reply the duenna left the room, where our knight, pending her return, remained calm and pensive, but not for long, for a thousand conjectures rushed in upon him. It seemed ill done and worse considered to endanger his sworn faith with his lady. ' Who knows but that the devil, cunning and clever, is now making game of me with a duenna, having failed with empresses, queens, duchesses, marchionesses and mistresses of counties ? Many times and from wise men have I heard that, if he can, he'd rather give you a flat-nosed woman than an aquiline, and who knows but that this solitude, the occasion and the silence will awaken my sleeping desires, making me fall where I've not even tripped in all these years ? Indeed in cases like the present 'twere better to flee than wait battle. Yet I must be daft to say and think such nonsense, since it cannot be that a tall, spectacled, white-hooded duenna should arouse passion in the most obdurate breast in the world. Is there perchance one of her breed living that has fair flesh ? one that isn't wrinkled, impertinent and prudish ? Avaunt, ye duennesque crew, worthless for any mortal pleasure ! O how well acted that

señora, of whom 'tis said that at the end of her drawing-room she kept two carved duennas with spectacles and sewing-cushions as if at work ; which dummies were as good as veritable old-maids for preserving the dignity of the house.'

Saying this the knight stepped from the bed with intent of locking the door, but just then the lady returned with her candle and when she beheld the knight at close quarters, in quilt, bandages and bonnet or night-cap, she took a second fright and retreating two steps or so exclaimed : ' Are we safe, sir knight ? I take it as no honest sign that your worship has left your bed.' ' I put the same question to you, lady : am I secure from assault ? ' ' Secure from whom, sir knight ? ' ' From you, since I'm not of marble nor you of brass, nor is it ten in the morning but midnight — even a little later methinks. Moreover we're in a room more shut and secret than that wherein bold and treacherous Aeneas enjoyed the fair and gentle Dido. But give me your hand, lady ; I wish for no greater security than my modest continence and that afforded by your reverend hood ; ' saying this he kissed his right hand, taking hers given with the same ceremony.

In a parenthesis Cid Hamet says that by Mahomet he'd have given the better of his two mantles to have seen the two thus linked move from door to couch, into which Don Quijote got again while the Rodriguez sate herself in a chair at a little distance, not removing her spectacles nor setting down the candle. The knight drew up the bed-clothes, muffling himself till only his face was visible, and when the two had quieted a little, he was the first to break the silence : ' Your worship, Doña Rodriguez, may now rip open and pour from your burdened heart and bowels their full content, for 'twill be heard with chaste ears and helped with merciful deeds.' ' This I believe, for naught less than such a Christian response was to be expected from your worship's noble and courteous presence. This then is the case, Señor Don Quijote, that though you see me seated in this chair in the heart of the kingdom of Aragon, in the habit of a beaten and reduced duenna, by rights I am a native of the highlands of Oviedo and of a family that crosses with the best in that province.

' But mine ill fate and the extravagance of my parents, which

led to their untimely impoverishment, brought me I know not how or why to the court at Madrid, where for the sake of peace and to forestall worse disasters my parents put me out as serving-maid to a lady of quality (and let me say here that at back-stitch and plain work none has surpassed me in all my life). Leaving me in service, my parents returned home and thence after a little they surely went to Heaven, since both were exceptionally good and Catholic Christians. I was left an orphan, with only the miserable stipend and sorry presents given such servants at court. But about this time, through no fault of mine, there fell in love with me a page of the house, a man already on in years, bearded, fine looking and above all a gentleman like the king, for he was of the mountains. We did not carry on our affair so discreetly as to escape the notice of my lady, who to avoid gossip married us with the leave and license of the Holy Roman Catholic Church. From this wedlock was born a daughter to kill my good fortune, if I had any — not that I died in child-bed, for I had a safe and seasonable time, but very soon my husband died of a certain shock which, had I time to tell it, I know 'twould make your worship wonder.' Here the duenna began to weep piteously, but continued :

'Forgive me, sir, that I lose control but every time I bethink me of my unfortunate one, mine eyes fill with tears. So help me God ! with what authority would he carry my lady behind him on the crupper of a stout mule, black as the very jet ! for at that time coaches and carriages, which now they tell me are all the rage, hadn't come in and ladies rode crupper behind pages. And this one incident I cannot refrain from telling as typical of the manners and punctiliousness of my good husband. One day as they were about to enter Calle de Santiago, which is rather narrow, a judge chanced to come out of it with two officials before him, and as my good page sighted the party, he turned his mule about as if to do the other honour. My lady, who was riding crupper, whispered : 'What is this, wretch ? have you forgot I am here ?' The judge politely drew rein saying : 'Do not change your route, sir ; 'tis I should accompany Doña Casilda.' But my husband with cap in hand persisted, and my

lady, beside herself with irritation, drew a stout pin, or bodkin I guess it was, and ran it so far into his loins that, giving a yell and jump he came with his charge to the ground. Two of her lacqueys hastened to pick her up, likewise the judge and his officials. The Guadalajara Gate was in an uproar — that is, the idle loafers there. My lady came home on foot and her page ran into a barber-surgeon's shop, crying he had been stuck through the bowels.

‘ This his courtesy was so much commented upon that street-boys ran after him and for this and because he was rather short-sighted my lady let him go, and without a doubt to my mind ’twas the humiliation of his dismissal caused his death. I was left a helpless widow with a daughter on my back that daily grew in beauty like the foam of the sea. But to make a long story short, my lady the duchess here, then recently married to my lord the duke, offered to take me, since I had the reputation of a good worker, to this kingdom of Aragon, and my daughter as well, who as the days came and went grew up with all the grace in the world. She sings like a lark, dances quick as thought, foots it like a gay one, reads and writes like a schoolmaster and reckons figures like a miself. Of her cleanliness I say nothing, since running water isn't purer, and she's already, if my memory serve me, sixteen years, five months and three days, one more or less.

‘ But to come to the point. This my daughter is beloved of the son of a rich farmer, living in one of my lord the duke's villages not a great way from here. In short, though I know not how, they were united, and under the promise of marriage the fellow fooled her and will not keep his word. My lord the duke knows it for I have complained to him once and many times, asking that the youngster be compelled to do his duty, but he turns a deaf ear. And the reason is that the joker's father lends the duke money, going surety for his pranks on all sides, so the duke doesn't wish to ruffle him or make trouble. I would therefore that you, dear sir, undertook righting this wrong, either by entreaty or arms, since every one says that for this purpose came you into the world, to right wrongs and lend a hand. Consider

the orphanage of my child, sir, her youth and gentle blood, in addition to those good parts already mentioned, for 'fore God and on my conscience of all my lady's maids-in-waiting not one comes up to the sole of her shoe. Even Altisidora, whom they reckon the most lively and gay, doesn't come within two leagues of my daughter, since your worship must know that all is not gold that glitters and this Altisidora has more of presumption than beauty and more sauciness than shame. What's more she's not in good health and has a tainted breath that makes people keep their distance. And then there's my lady the duchess — but silence! for walls have ears they say.'

'By my life, Señora Doña Rodriguez, what of my lady the duchess?' demanded Don Quijote. 'With such conjuring I cannot refrain from telling the whole. Have you noticed, sir, the strange beauty of my lady's face, that wonderful skin, resembling nothing so much as a burnished sword-blade? those two cheeks of milk and carmine like the moon and sun and the sprightliness wherewith she touches, nay, spurns the ground, as if health in her footing trod? Well then, your worship may as well know that she owes all that to God and two issues, one on each leg, through which is carried off all the bad humour whereof the doctors say she has and to spare.' 'Santa Maria!' exclaimed the knight; 'and is it possible that my lady the duchess has two such conduit-pipes? I shouldn't have believed it had bare-footed friars told me, but since Señora Rodriguez affirms it, it cannot but be, though such issues in such places distil not humours but liquid amber. Now can I see that this question of opening issues is an important one for the health.'

Don Quijote had scarce finished when with a great slam the doors of the chamber flew open, the duenna's candle dropped from her hand and the place was left dark as a wolf's mouth, as the saying goes. Instantly the poor woman felt two hands on her throat, clutching so tightly she couldn't scream, while another person quickly and quietly raised the woman's skirts and with what felt like a slipper gave her such a spanking 'twere a pity. Though the knight felt ruth, he didn't budge from his bed, not knowing what he could do, and so lay there, calm and silent,

fearing lest his turn and tuning come next. Nor in vain, for having basted the duenna, who dared not open her mouth, the silent executioners now attacked her accomplice and stripping him of sheet and quilt pinched him so fast and furiously as to force him to bring his fists into play. The battle raged near half an hour, when the plantoms withdrew. The duenna righted her skirts and bemoaning her fortune passed from the room without a word to her champion who, pinched and pensive, was left alone, torn and troubled as to who the perverse enchanter could have been that did him this turn. This will be told in due time, but Sancho Panza calls again, and the structure of the story demands that we answer him.

CHAPTER XLIX

Sancho's experiences in going the rounds of his island

WE left the governor vexed and impatient with the word-artist and rascal who, coached by the majordomo as the majordomo had been by the duke, tried to get the better of him. But the governor held his own with them all maugre his crudeness and corpulence, and now he said to those about him, including Doctor Recio, who was back again after the reading of the duke's private letter : ' Henceforth I shall understand why judges and governors should and must be made of brass that they may not feel the importunities of business men, who at all hours and seasons would be heard and attended to, each one thinking but of himself, come what may. For if the poor judge don't hear them and help them out, either because he cannot or because they come at the wrong time, then they slander him, gnaw at his bones and even rip his family to pieces. Foolish man of affairs, addle-pated creature, don't for ever be in such a sweat : abide the proper time. Don't call at the dinner-hour or when we are abed ; judges are men of flesh and bone like yourselves and must give what nature asks, asks of all save me, for I give her nothing, thanks to Señor Doctor Pedro Recio Tirteafuera here, who

wants me to perish of hunger, affirming that such a death is life, which may God grant him and all his breed, the scurvy doctors I mean, for the skilled ones deserve palms and laurels.'

Those that knew Sancho were taken aback, hearing him speak so elegantly, not knowing to what to attribute it, unless 'twere his position of responsibility, which either quickens or deadens the understanding. And the doctor promised to let him sup that night, though he broke all the aphorisms of Hippocrates. With this the ruler was content, though with great restlessness he awaited the hour : it seemed as if time stood still nor budged from one place. At length however the moment arrived and they gave him a beef-and-onion salad and some boiled calves'-feet a trifle stale, but these Sancho devoured with more relish than as if Milan francolins, Roman pheasants, Sorrento veal, Moron partridges or Lavajos geese. Yet he found time to say to the doctor :

' Look ye, my physician, henceforth trouble not with fancy dishes, which will knock my stomach off its hinges, since 'tis used only to kid, beef, bacon, salted meat, turnips and onions, and if by chance it be given any of your palace-victuals, it receives them with squeamishness and sometimes with nausea. What the seneschal can do is to make me up one of those ollapodridas, and the further gone they are the better they smell, and into it he can stuff and cram all he wishes, so long as it be fit to eat, and some day I'll thank and pay him. But let none try to fool with me, for either we are or are not. Let us live and eat in good peace and fellowship, for when God dawns He dawns for all. I shall rule this post without yielding a right or taking a bribe. And let everyone keep an eye open and mind his own shaft, for I'd have them know the devil's abroad in Cantillana, and if they give me occasions they'll see marvels. Nay, but make yourself honey and flies will eat you. '

' Indeed, sir governor,' replied the seneschal, ' there's plenty of good sense in what you say, and I offer, in the name of the islanders, to serve you in all love, fidelity and kindness, since your pleasant method of ruling in these initial affairs doesn't admit of thing or thought that would redound to your confusion.'

'I believe you,' said Sancho, and they'd be fools that did or thought otherwise. And let me repeat that care must be taken both of my sustenance and that of Dapple, which is the thing we must look to as most to the purpose. Now that it's time to go the rounds, my intention is to clean this island of every kind of impurity and of all idle and good-for-nothing vagabonds, since sloth and laziness, friends, are to a republic what drones are to a hive, eating up the honey made by the working-bees. I shall encourage labourers, see that hidalgos have their rights, reward the virtuous and above all respect religion and honour its true servants. How does that strike you, my friends? say I aught or do I but break my head?' 'Your worship says so much,' answered the majordomo, 'that I wonder how one so unlettered, for I believe you utterly so, can say so many and excellent things, full of wisdom and counsel — so far beyond what was looked of your wit by those that sent us here and by us that came. Each day sees new things in the world: jests turn earnest and jesters are made fools of.'

The night was at hand and the governor, after eating, prepared to set out on his rounds, accompanied by majordomo, secretary, seneschal and the chronicler whose duty it was to record his doings, together with other officers and notaries so many they made half a squadron. Sancho walked in their midst rod in hand, a sight to do one's heart good. Having traversed a few streets they heard a clashing of knives and hurrying thither found two men fighting, though they stopped at once on seeing the authorities, and one of them cried: 'Here in God's name and the king's! what, are they allowed to rob a man in public and assault him in the middle of the street?'

'Calm yourself, my good man,' ordered Sancho, 'and tell the cause of all this, for I am the governor.' Thereupon the other fighter answered: 'Sir governor, I can tell you in few words. Your worship shall know that this gentleman has just won in yon gaming-house more than a thousand reals, though God knows how. I, being present, adjudged more than one doubtful cast in his favour though quite against my conscience. The fellow rose with his winnings and naturally I expected at least a crown

as fee, which trained men like myself are in the habit of getting. We stand by to see fair play and foul, to back up wrong practices and stave off quarrels. Well, what does he do but pocket his money and leave. I provoked, went after and tried by fair and courteous words to make him give me at least eight reals. He knows I am a respected man, without trade or position, since my parents neither taught me nor left me anything, but the scoundrel, more a thief than Cacus and sharper than Andradilla, would only give me four. So you may see, sir governor, how little shame he possesses and how small his conscience. Indeed, had your worship not come up, I'd have made him vomit forth his winnings or know with how many pounds the steelyard was weighted. '

' What say you to this ? ' questioned Sancho of the other, who replied that what his assailant said was true, but that he was unwilling to give him more than four reals because he had given them many times before ; those expecting commissions should be civil, taking what's offered with a cheerful face, and not dispute with the winners unless they know them sharpers for certain and their gains trickily won. To show that he was a gentleman and not a thief as the other represented, there was no better evidence than his refusal to pay, for your genuine sharper is ever a willing tributary to onlookers, by whom they are known. ' That is true, ' interposed the majordomo ; ' let your worship, sir governor, consider what shall be done with these men. ' ' What shall be done is this : do you, winner, good, bad or indifferent, straightway hand over to this your would-be knifer a hundred reals, and count out thirty more for the poor at the jail. And do you, knifer and good-for-nothing, since you have neither trade nor position, take the hundred reals and some time to-morrow betake you from this isle, banished for ten years, under penalty of completing the term in another life, for I, or the hangman at my bidding, will suspend you from a gibbet. And let none answer or he will feel my hand. '

The one disbursed, the other received, this left the island, that went home, and the governor continued : ' I am worth little or I'll put an end to these gaming-houses, for I am sure they're

injurious.' 'Your worship will fail with this one,' said a notary, 'for a person of rank runs it, though the cards lose him far more each year than they win. Against the smaller dives your worship may well exert authority; they do the greatest harm and harbour the worst abuses, for in those owned by noblemen and gentlemen notorious sharpers dare not practise their finesse. Since the vice of gambling has become a national pastime, 'twere better carried on by persons of degree than in the house of of some mechanic, where they swoop down upon a poor fellow after midnight and skin him alive.' 'Well, notary,' said Sancho, 'methinks there is much to be said in this matter.'

There now came up a watchman with a youth in tow, saying: 'Sir governor, this youngster was walking toward us, but when he espied justice he turned and fled like a buck, showing he must be an evil-doer of some sort. I set out after but never would have caught him, had he not stumbled and fallen.' 'Why did you run, my boy?' asked Sancho. 'To avoid the many questions these watchmen put to a fellow.' 'What's your trade?' 'A weaver.' 'And what do you weave?' 'Please, sir, iron-points for lances.' 'Tis a wag you are, and would you weave your jokes with me? Very good, and whither bound?' 'To take the air, sir.' 'And where on this island do they take the air?' 'Where it blows.' 'Good,' said the governor, 'you answer to the point. You're shrewd, my son, but take notice that I am the air and blow astern of you, driving you to jail. Ahoy! seize him and lock him up, for to-night I'll have him sleep without air.'

'Fore God,' cried the young man, 'your worship can as little make me sleep in jail as crown me king.' 'And why not? haven't I the power to arrest you and set you free each and every time I please?' 'Whatever you worship's authority, 'twill not suffice to make me sleep in jail.' 'What do you say!' exclaimed Sancho; 'take him there at once, where he'll see his mistake with his own eyes. Should the jailer on your behalf use interested kindness, I'll fine him two thousand ducats, if he let you put a foot outside the door.' 'Ridiculous,' still persisted the prisoner; 'the fact of the matter is that not all the living can make me sleep in jail.' 'Tell me, devil, have you some

angel to set you free from the fetters wherein I think to clap you?' 'Now, sir governor,' replied the other gaily, 'let us talk and come to the point. Suppose your worship sends me to jail and they put me in chains and fetters in a cell, with the jailer under a heavy forfeit if he let me escape, none the less if I keep awake all night and refuse to sleep, can your worship with all your power make me?' 'Certainly not,' said the secretary; 'the fellow has made his point.' 'You wouldn't sleep then,' asked Sancho, 'because it was your pleasure; you wouldn't think of doing so merely to thwart mine?' 'No, sir, not for a moment.' 'Then go with God and sleep at home and may He give you a good one, for I would not rob you of it. But henceforth take care not to joke with justice, else some day you'll meet with such 'twill send the joke to your brain-pan.'

The lad went off and the governor continuing his rounds soon met two watchmen with another youth. 'Sir governor,' said they, 'this that seems a lad is not, but a lass and no homely one, coming in boys' clothes.' They then held two or three lanterns before the prisoner and discovered the face of a girl of sixteen or a trifle more, with hair gathered into a net of gold and green silk, herself fair as a thousand pearls. They viewed her from head to foot and observed she wore stockings of flesh-coloured silk, with garters of white taffeta edged with gold, and seed-pearl. Her breeches were of green cloth of gold, her jerkin or coat of the same hung loose, beneath which she wore a doublet of finest stuff, gold and white. Her shoes were boys' shoes, only white. No sword hung at her girdle but a handsome dagger instead and on her fingers were many costly rings; in a word she struck all as exceeding fair. The Baratarians were entirely at sea as to her identity and those privy to the tricks played upon Sancho were even more puzzled, for this finding was not to order.

Sancho, though benumbed by the beauty of the girl, asked her who she was, whither bound and why in that garb. With eyes on the ground she answered: 'I cannot tell in public, sir, what it behooves me to keep secret, One thing only I wish to be understood, that I am no thief or wicked person but an unhappy

maiden whom the power of jealousy caused to break through the respect due to modesty.' Upon this the majordomo said to the governor: 'Ask the others to retire, sir, that this lady may speak with less diffidence.' Sancho gave the order and all withdrew save the majordomo, seneschal and secretary. The girl, seeing they were alone, continued: 'I, gentlemen, am a daughter of Pedro Perez Mazorca, who farms the wool in this village and often visits my father's house.' 'That won't hold water, lady,' said the majordomo, 'for I know the man well — he has neither son nor daughter. More by token you say he's your father and then add that he often comes to your father's house.' 'I noticed that too,' remarked Sancho.

'Well, sirs, I was confused and knew not what I said. To speak truthfully, I am the daughter of Diego de la Llana, whom you all must know.' 'That well may be,' responded the majordomo; 'I also know that gentleman, a rich and noble hidalgo, that he has one son and one daughter, and that since he was left a widower, none in the whole village can say he has seen the girl's face. He keeps her in such seclusion that he doesn't let even the sun look at her. Yet rumour has it that she's very beautiful.' 'You are right,' replied the girl, 'that daughter am I; whether or no rumour lies as to my looks, judge for yourselves, sirs, for you now see me;' and with this she began to weep. The secretary whispered in the seneschal's ear: 'Surely something serious has befallen the poor child, walking abroad so far from home in such a guise and at this late hour.' 'No doubt of it,' the other replied, 'and her tears confirm our suspicion.' Sancho consoled the girl with the best words at his command, beseeching her to tell them without fear just what had happened, since they would try most earnestly to set things right again, without leaving a stone unturned.

'It is the truth, sir,' she went on, 'that my father has kept me in privacy ten years now, ever since the earth closed over my mother. At home they say mass in a rich oratory, so in all that time I've seen neither the sun by day nor the moon and stars by night, nor do I know what streets are nor plazas nor temples nor even men save my father, brother and Pedro Perez the col-

lector, whom, as he frequently visits us, I tried to pass off as my father. I was not even allowed to go to church and this confinement has for some time made me very restless. I wished to know the world, at least my native-village and I couldn't see how such a desire ran counter to the decorum to be observed by maidens of birth. When I heard them talk of bull-fights, cane-throws and play-acting, I would ask my brother, who is a year younger than I, all about these and many other things I had never seen. He would describe them as vividly as he could, but this only increased my desire to witness them myself. In the end, to cut short the story of my ruin, I begged and besought my brother — ah ! would I had not done so !' and the girl began to weep afresh. But the majordomo encouraged her, saying : ' Continue, lady, and tell us what befell you, since your words and tears keep us in suspense.' ' Few remain for me to say, though many tears are yet to weep, for misplaced desires entail that atonement.'

By this time the maiden's beauty had sunk deep into the seneschal's soul and again raising his lantern he felt these were not tears she shed but seed-pearls or dew of the field. Nay, he put them a point higher and made orient pearls of them, at the same time praying that her misfortune was not so great as sighs and weeping declared. The governor was uneasy under the child's delay, bidding her relieve their suspense, for 'twas late and they had still much of the town to inspect. 'Twixt broken sobs and half-formed sights she again took up the thread, saying : ' This alone is my calamity and misfortune, that I besought my brother to dress me in one of his suits and while our father slept take me to see the village. Moved by my entreaties he clothed me in this suit and donning one of mine which became him as if born in it (for not having a beard he looked like a lovely maiden), this night an hour or so ago he and I left home. Guided by our youthful and intemperate purpose we made the circuit of the entire village, but as we were about to return, we saw a great troop of persons coming and my brother said : ' This must be the watch, sister. Lighten your feet, put wings to them and follow me, for if they recognise us, there'll be trouble ;' and with this he began not to run but fly. Terrified, in less than six steps I fell

and then came the officer that led me here, where as wicked and capricious I find myself shamed before much people.' 'Then no other harm has befallen you,' asked Sancho, 'and 'twas not jealousy as you first told us drew you from home?' 'No, sir, solely my desire to see the world, which to me meant no more than the streets of this village.'

The truth of what the maiden said was confirmed by the arrival of other watchmen having in their custody her brother, whom one had caught in his flight. His garb was naught but a rich petticoat and a mantle of blue damask with fine gold lacing. His head was without covering, unadorned save by curly locks hanging like ringlets of gold. The governor, majordomo and seneschal at once went apart with him and to their questions as to his disguise he with no less shame and embarrassment told the same story as his sister, whereat the enamoured seneschal was overjoyed. And the governor said to the pair: 'Surely, gentlefolk, this has been but a childish escapade and to tell of it there was no need of so many tears and sighs. Simply to have said that you were such and such and that you left home simply to amuse yourself would have ended the tale, with none of these ahs and ohs and the rest of it.'

'I know,' said the girl, 'but your worships must consider that my excitement was so great that I couldn't keep within bounds.' 'No harm has been done,' said Sancho; 'we'll accompany you to your father's house — perhaps he hasn't missed you. Hereafter don't be such children or so desirous to see the world, for honest girl and broken leg abide at home, and the woman and the hen by gadding are soon lost, and she that wishes to see also wishes to be seen — I say no more.' The youth gratefully accepted the governor's offer to lead them home, which they found not far away. The lad threw a pebble at a casement, a servant came down to open the door and brother and sister disappeared within, leaving all pensive in the thought of their bearing and beauty and their desire to see the world at night without leaving their village; but they attributed all to their youth. The seneschal was left with an aching heart that determined him on the morrow to ask the damsel's father for her as his wife, assured he wouldn't

be denied, being in the duke's employ. Even to Sancho there came the suggestion of marrying her brother with his daughter Sanchica ; in fact he resolved to arrange for this in due season, persuading himself that no husband could be refused a governor's daughter. With this the night-watch came to an end and two days later the government itself, whereby all Sancho's designs were demolished and scattered to the winds, as presently will be seen.

CHAPTER L

Wherin is declared who were the enchanters and executioners that whipped the duenna and pinched and scratched Don Quijote ; together with the fortunes of the page that carried the letter to Teresa, wife of Sancho Panza

CID Hamet, untiring inquisitor into the details of this true history, says that at the time Doña Rodriguez slipped from her room on her visit to Don Quijote, she was observed by another duenna her bed-fellow, and as all duennas are given to prying and smelling into things, she followed her and so quietly as not to be noticed. As soon as the second duenna saw the first enter the knight's chamber, she immediately went to inform the duchess thereof, proving herself no exception to the rule that all of her stripe are tale-bearers. The duchess, telling the duke, asked leave that herself and Altisidora go and see what the old woman was about. The duke assented and the pair slowly and cautiously groped their way to the chamber-door, where they overheard all that was said within. And when Doña Rodriguez came to tell of the duchess's secret garden of fountains, the latter could not suffer it, Altisidora less, and both boiling with wrath and bent on revenge broke into the room, spanking the duenna and tormenting her champion as above described. Insults directed against the pride and beauty of women awaken ire beyond control and set aflame vengeful passions.

To his great enjoyment the duchess rehearsed to the duke all

that had passed and continuing to make sport and pastime of her guest she despatched the page that had impersonated Dulcinea in the device of her disenchantment (now clean forgot by Sancho in the cares of government) to Teresa Panza his wife with the letter from her husband, another from the duchess herself and a long necklace of rich corals as a gift. The history adds that this page, a shrewd and clever fellow, in the service of his master and mistress gladly undertook this mission to Sancho's town: At a stream just outside its entrance seeing a number of women washing clothes he asked did there live in that village one Teresa, wife of a certain Sancho Panza, squire to a knight Don Quijote de La Mancha. A young girl, washing with the others, rose to her feet saying : ' This Teresa Panza is my mother, that Sancho my dear father and the gentleman you name our master. ' ' Come then, chick, and lead me to your mother for I bring her a letter and present from your daddie. '

' That shall I do with a right good-will, ' answered the lass, a girl of about fourteen ; and leaving the wet clothes with a friend, without covering head or feet — for she was barefoot and her hair hung loose — she skipped in front of the page's horse calling : ' Come, your worship, for our house is right at the entrance to the village and my mother in it, worried enough at not having heard from dad these many days. ' ' Then I bring such good news that she can well give thanks to God. ' Leaping, running and skipping the girl came to the town and before entering her house cried : ' Come out, mother Teresa, come out, come out, for here's a gentleman with letters and other things from my good father. ' At these cries appeared the mother, spinning a bundle of flax, clad in grey petticoat so short it looked docked as a mark of shame, with smock and grey bodice. She was not old, a trifle over forty perhaps, hale, hearty and sun-dried. Seeing her daughter and on horseback the page she asked : ' What is this, child ? what gentleman is this ? '

' A servant of my lady Doña Teresa Panza, ' replied the page ; and suiting action to word he leapt from his horse and humbly knelt before her saying : ' Let your worship give me your hands, my lady Doña Teresa, lawful and particular wife of Señor Don

Sancho Panza, rightful governor of the island Barataria.' 'Come, dear sir, get up; don't do that, for I am none of your palace ones but a poor peasant, daughter of a clod-beater, wife of a squire-errant, not of a governor.' 'Your worship is the most worthy wife to an archworthy governor, as proof whereof behold this letter and present;' and he drew from his pocket a string of corals with gold clasps. Throwing it over her neck he said: 'This letter is from the lord governor and another here together with these corals is from my lady the duchess, whose messenger I am.'

Teresa was struck dumb and the girl no less till she said: 'May they kill me if our master Señor Quijote hasn't a hand in this; he must have given father that government or countship so often promised.' 'Exactly so,' said the page, 'for 'tis through Señor Don Quijote that Señor Sancho now governs the island Barataria, as this letter will show.' 'Please your worship read it, sir,' asked Teresa, 'for though I can spin I cannot read a jot.' 'And I as little,' added Sanchica; 'but wait and I'll fetch one that can, be it the priest himself or the bachelor; either will be glad to come and get news of my daddie.' 'There's no use calling anyone,' said the page, 'for though I cannot spin I can read, and will read this letter.' This he now did but as it has already been given it will not be repeated here. He then produced the following one from the duchess:

Friend Teresa:

The excellent qualities of wit and goodness in Sancho your husband induced, nay, compelled my lord the duke to give him the governorship of one of the many islands in his possession. I have word that he governs like a jail-bird, whereat I am much pleased, as is of course my husband. Truly am I grateful to Heaven that I made no mistake in slating him for that post, for I'd have you know, lady Teresa, a good governor is a rare bird in this world, and may God do as well for me as Sancho governs. Herewith I send you, my dear, a string of corals with gold clasps — I would they were orient pearls, but who gives thee a bone doesn't wish to see thee dead. The time will come when

we shall know and converse with each other and God knows what will be. Commend me to Sanchica your daughter ; tell her to hold herself ready for I mean to marry her highly when least she thinks it. They tell me that in your neighbourhood are fine fat acorns ; send me two dozen or so and I shall value them greatly as coming from your hand. Write at length, advising of your health and welfare, and should you have any need, but open your mouth and it shall be filled. God keep you.

From this place, your friend that loves you well,
The Duchess

‘ Ah ! ’ exclaimed Teresa, ‘ what a civil and good and lowly lady. With such may they bury me and not the kind they have in this town, who think just because they’re gentle the wind must not touch them, going to church with as many airs as if queens, till one would think they considered it a disgrace just to look at a working woman, when here’s a good lady that though a duchess calls me friend and treats me as equal, and equal may I see her with the tallest belfry in La Mancha. As to the acorns, sir, I’ll send her a peck and such fat ones that they’ll come to see them as a sight and a wonder. And now, Sanchica, see to this gentleman’s entertainment. Put up his horse, fetch some eggs from the stable, cut plenty of bacon and let’s give him a dinner fit for a prince, since his good news and honest face deserve no less. In the meantime I’ll go tell the neighbours of our happiness, and the good father priest and the barber Master Nicholas, always such friends of your father. ’ ‘ I’ll do as you say, mother, but remember to give me half the coral-string, for I can’t think my lady the duchess so foolish as to have sent you everything. ’ ‘ Indeed you shall have it all, daughter, only let me wear it for a few days about my neck, since it seems to gladden my heart wonderfully. ’ ‘ Both your hearts will be gladdened when I open this portmanteau, ’ said the page, ‘ for it contains a suit of the finest cloth, worn but one day by the governor when out hunting and sent by him to the lady Sanchica. ’ ‘ May he live a thousand years, ’ cried the girl, ‘ and the fetcher the same, or two thousand if need be. ’

Teresa now went forth with the letters and the coral-string about her neck, thrumming the first as if playing a tambourine, and meeting by chance with the priest and Carrasco she fell into a dance, saying : ‘ My faith, but there’s no poor relation now, for we’ve a little government. Nay, but let your finest gentlelady close with me to-day and I’ll set her down as an upstart. ’ ‘ What is this, Teresa ? what folly and what papers are these ? ’ ‘ There is no folly but this, that here I have letters from duchesses and governors. These beads are fine coral, the avemarias and paternosters are of beaten gold and I am the governor’s wife. ’ ‘ God help us, Teresa, we can’t make you out ; what is this you say ? ’ ‘ See for yourselves, ’ said Teresa, handing out the letters. The priest that Samson might hear read them aloud. Each looked at the other in astonishment. The bachelor asked who had brought them. Teresa for reply bade them come with her and see the messenger, a youth like a gold brooch, who bore another present worth as much again. The priest lifted the corals from her neck, examined them with care and satisfied of their genuineness was amazed afresh, saying : ‘ By the habit I wear, I don’t know what to say or think of these letters and presents. On one hand I see and touch the fineness of these corals yet on the other I read how a duchess sends and asks for two dozen acorns. ’ ‘ Strike a balance, ’ advised Carrasco ; ‘ at any rate let us go and interview the bearer, from whom we can find a way out of our dilemma. ’ This they did and Teresa with them.

They found the page sifting barley for his horse, and Sanchica cutting a rasher to be paved with eggs for his dinner. They were taken with the fellow’s fine appearance and when compliments had been exchanged Samson asked for any news he might have of Don Quijote and Sancho ; in spite of the letters they couldn’t understand what it meant for the latter to be governor, especially of an island, since all or most islands were in the Mediterranean and belonged to His Majesty. To this the page replied : ‘ As to the fact that Señor Sancho Panza is a governor, there can be no doubt, but that it’s an island he rules, I shan’t try to decide ; suffice it that it contains over a thousand souls. As to the acorns let me say that my lady the duchess is so civil and humble that

this asking acorns of peasants signifies nothing. Why, I've known her to beg the loan of a comb of one of her neighbours. I'd have your worships realise that the ladies of Aragon, though of as high birth, are not so punctilious or toploftical as Castilian ones. They conduct themselves with greater consideration.'

While they were thus in converse, Sanchica came out with her lap full of eggs, saying to the messenger : ' Tell me, sir, does my father wear laced breeches perchance, now he's a governor ? ' ' I haven't noticed but doubtless he does. ' ' 'Fore God, ' cried the girl, ' what a marvel to see him in close-fitting breeches ! is it not strange that ever since I was born I've longed to see my daddie in tights. ' ' Things like that you shall see if you live, ' replied the page ; ' I swear, if the government last two months only, he's likely to wear a hood and mask. ' The priest and bachelor easily saw how he spake as a wag, but the quality of the corals and hunting-suit, which Teresa now produced, befogged them again. Yet they could not refrain from laughter at Sanchica's longing, nor when the mother said :

' Señor priest, enquire in the village if anyone is going to Madrid or Toledo soon, that he may buy me a round farthingale, all proper and complete, and let it be in style and the best that is. Indeed, indeed I must honour my husband's government as I can ; nay, if they worry me, I'll go to this court and set me up a coach like the rest of them, for she that has a governor for husband can afford a coach to be sure. ' ' And why not, mother ? would to God 'twere to-day rather than to-morrow, though they that saw me seated in it with my lady mother should say : ' Look at the good-for-nothing, daughter of a garlic-stuffed, stretched out there as if she-pope. ' But let them tramp in the mud and let me ride in my carriage with my feet off the ground : a bad year and a bad month to all backbiters in the world. Let me go warm and folk may laugh ; do I say right, mother ? '

' Indeed you do, my child. All this good fortune and even better my good Sancho foretold me. You'll see it won't end till they make me a countess, for with luck the start is everything, and many times I've heard your father say (~~for he his not only yours but is also the father of proverbs~~), When they hand you

a heifer, hurry with the halter : when they proffer you a government, hold it tight ; a countship, take it in, and when they whistle with something good, swallow it, O no ! go to sleep and don't answer when good times come knocking at your door.' And Sanchica added : ' What do I care if when they see me puffed up and fantastic they say : ' The dog saw himself in hempen breeches — and the rest of it ? ' The priest listened and when the women were done he said : ' Sure am I that each of the Panzas was born with a sack of proverbs inside, since never have I met with one of them that hasn't poured them out at all hours and in our every conversation.' ' That must be true,' agreed the page, ' for Señor Governor Sancho speaks them at every turn, and though many are inapt, they all give pleasure and my master and mistress set great store by them.'

' But do you still affirm it true, sir,' asked the bachelor, ' this matter of Sancho's government, and that there's a duchess in the world that writes his family and sends them presents ? For ourselves, though we touch the presents and read the letters, we do not believe it, suspecting it some ruse connected with Don Quijote our fellow-townsmen, with whom matters are brought about by enchantment. I would touch and feel of your worship and see whether a phantom-messenger or one of flesh and bone.' ' All I can say for myself, gentlemen, is that I a genuine ambassador, that Sancho Panza is a bona-fide governor, that my lord and lady the duke and duchess can give and have given said government and that word comes that the aforementioned Panza bears himself most worthily therein. Whether or no there be enchantment about this, your worships must decide between yourselves, for I know naught else by the oath I swear, which is, by the life of my parents, who are still alive and whom I love and wish well.'

' It all may be,' replied the bachelor, ' but dubitat Augustinus.' ' Let him doubt that will, but the truth is as I have stated and the truth always tops falsehood as oil does water. If not, operibus credite et non verbis : come one of you with me and see with your eyes what you don't believe with your ears.' ' I am the one,' cried Sanchica ; ' let your worship carry me crupper, for

how glad shall I be to see my dear father again.' 'Governors' daughters should not travel without escort but with coaches, litters and a retinue of servants.' 'Fore God,' insisted the girl, 'as well can I ride a she-ass as in a coach; you take me for a prude.' 'Hush, child,' counselled her mother, 'you know not what you say. This gentleman is right, for as the time so the tactics: when Sancho, Sancha, and when governor, lady, but I don't know that I say aught.' 'The lady Teresa says more than she thinks,' the page assured her; 'but give me to eat and I am off, since I intend to return this afternoon.' 'Your worship will come and do penance with me,' said the priest, 'since lady Teresa has more good-will than good cheer to serve so worthy a guest.'

The page begged off but in the end had to comply, to his own advantage, and the priest in triumph led him away that he might question him in detail concerning Don Quijote and his doings. The bachelor offered Teresa to write letters of reply, but as she knew him for a wag, she didn't want him meddling in her affairs. Instead she gave a roll and two eggs to a shaveling friar, who wrote out the missives; one for her husband and another for the duchess, dictated out of Teresa's own head and not the worst letters in this lengthy story, as soon will be seen.

CHAPTER LI

**The progress of Sancho's government, with other passages
such as they are**

THE day dawned that followed the night of the governor's rounds, which night the seneschal passed without sleeping, drowned in the memories of the face, air and beauty of the disguised maiden. The majordomo passed what remained of it in writing the duke and duchess of all that Sancho Panza had done and said, equally amazed by his deeds and words, for both were streaked with wisdom and folly. The governor took his own time about rising and by order of Doctor Pedro Recio break-

fasted upon a little conserve and four draughts of cold water, which he would willingly have exchanged for a piece of bread and a bunch of grapes. But finding it a matter of compulsion rather than choice, he submitted with sufficient sorrow of soul and grief of stomach, under the persuasion of the doctor who made him believe that light and delicate viands quicken the intelligence — a result most essential to persons in office and authority, where the powers of the body aren't so much called into play as those of the mind. Bending to this sophistry Sancho suffered hunger so keen that in his heart he cursed the government and him that bestowed it. In spite of his hunger and conserve, however, that day found him at his post as judge.

The first thing that came before him (the majordomo and other attendants being present) was a question put him by a stranger : ' Señor, ' said he, ' a certain lord's estate is divided by a deep river (and may your worships attend, for the case is important and not a little involved), over which river stretches a bridge, at whose end stand a gallows and a kind of court-house, in which last four judges administer this law laid down by the owner of the river, bridge and manor : Whoever shall cross this bridge must first swear his business and destination. If he swear the truth, he may pass over ; if a lie, he shall be strung on the gallows without hope of reprieve. In the knowledge of this law and its severe condition many have come to the bridge and as they appeared to swear truly, were allowed to cross. But so it fell out that when they came to put the oath to a certain man, he swore that he came to die on the gallows. The judges pondered his oath and said : ' Should we let this man pass over, he'll have sworn falsely and in accordance with the law should be hung. Yet if we string him up as he said we should, he'll have sworn the truth and by the same law should go free. ' We ask you, lord governor, what shall we do with the fellow, for even now the judges are waiting. Being informed of your quick intelligence they sent me hither to get your worship's opinion on this knotty and delicate point. ' To this Sancho replied : ' Indeed these judges who sent you might have spared themselves the trouble, for I am dull rather than quick. But state the facts again that I may

understand and maybe I can hit the bull's-eye.' The questioner twice repeated his original statement and at length Sancho said : 'Methinks I can set this matter right in two words, so listen. This man, you say, swears he's going to die on the gallows, and if he die he'll have sworn the truth, and by the ruling law deserves therefor his freedom and passage over the bridge ; whereas if they don't hang him, he'll have sworn falsely and by the same law is liable to death ?' 'The governor has declared it plainly,' said the messenger, 'and as far as a complete understanding of the case is concerned there's naught more to be doubted or questioned.' 'My judgment then,' announced the governor, 'is that they should allow to cross that part of the man that told the truth, but should string up the part that told the lie, for thus the condition of the law will be fulfilled to the letter.' 'But, sir governor, in that case 'twould be necessary to divide this man into two portions, a truth-telling and a perjuring, and if once he be divided, he will perforce die and neither provision of this most binding law will have been complied with.'

'See here, my good fellow,' said Sancho ; 'either I'm a clown or this traveller has as good a right to live and cross the bridge as to be hung, for if the lie condemn him, the truth equally saves him, and this being so, as it is, I advise you to say to the gentlemen that sent you that, since the reasons for sentencing and absolving him hang on a thread, they let him go in peace, for a good deed is ever more praiseworthy than a bad. And this judgment I'd seal with my signature if I knew how to make it. I in this matter have not spoken for myself, but there came to my mind a certain precept, one of many given by my master Don Quijote the night before I was sent a governor of this isle, which precept urges that, when justice hangs in the balance, I favour mercy, and God has been pleased that I remembered this now, for it fits the case like a glove.'

'It certainly does,' echoed the majordomo, 'and I am of opinion that not Lycurgus, that gave laws to the Lacedemonians, could have delivered a better decision than has the great Panza. With this the hearing of the morning stands adjourned and I shall give order that señor governor eat to pleasure.' 'That I

wish for and fair play,' said Sancho; 'let them give me to eat, and rain their cases and questions upon me, for I'll dissolve them in air.' The majordomo fulfilled his promise, feeling it would weigh on his conscience to kill with hunger so wise a judge. Moreover he purposed to end the other's term of office that very night, playing upon him the last trick for which he had been commissioned.

And now it fell out, that when the governor had eaten in the face of all the rules and aphorisms of Doctor Tirteafuera, as he was about to rise from the board there arrived a courier with a letter from Don Quijote. Sancho bade the secretary read it first to himself and then aloud if he found it contained naught of a private nature. The secretary glanced over the missive, saying at the end: 'Easily may this be read aloud, for what Señor Don Quijote writes deserves to be blazoned in letters of gold:

Letter from Don Quijote de La Mancha to Sancho Panza,
Governor of the island Barataria

'Expecting news of follies and blunders, Sancho friend, I hear instead of your acts of wisdom, for which I give especial thanks to Heaven, that can raise the poor from the dunghill and of fools make wise men. They tell me you govern like a man and play the man like a beast, such is your humility. But I would that you observe 'tis oftentimes fitting and requisite for persons in authority to act contrary to the lowlines of their heart, as for instance in the adornment of the person, which should conform to what the office demands rather than to the humble natural wish of its occupant. Clothe yourself well, since a stick well clad no longer seemeth a stick. I do not mean you should wear gew-gaws and trinkets nor that while a judge you should look the soldier. But your garb should suit the place and above all should be trim and well fashioned.

'To win your vassals' affection, among other things you must do these two: first, be civil toward all, but this I have mentioned ere now; secondly, see that there's abundance of the necessities of life, for naught vexes the hearts of the poor more than hunger and want. Make not many statutes but see that the

few you do make are good and above all that they are respected and obeyed : For statutes ill observed are as if they were not, making the prince that had wisdom and authority to compose, seem impotent to enforce them. Laws that merely intimidate, failing of execution, are like the floating log, which as king of the frogs was at first held in awe, but in time was despised and sat upon.

‘ Be a father to virtue, a step-father to vice. Be not always severe nor always mild : choose the mean, wherein lieth the essence of wisdom. Visit the prisons, the shambles and the markets, for the governor’s presence in such places if of great virtue : it sustains the prisoner in hopes of speedy release, ’tis a bugbear to the fleshers who for the nonce use just weights, and a scarecrow to the market-women for like reason. Though you be covetous, which I doubt, don’t appear so ; show yourself neither a lover of women nor a glutton, else the folk that deal with you, learning your inclination, will on that side open their batteries to lower you to the depths of perdition. View and review, consider and reconsider, the counsels and written instructions I handed you before you set out, and you will find them, if you observe them, friends in need to help you over the labours and difficulties that beset governors at every turn. Write the duke and duchess, showing yourself grateful, since ingratitude is the daughter of pride and one of the deadliest of sins. He that is grateful to men, declares he will be to God, that continues to shower so many blessings on him.

‘ The duchess despatched a messenger with your suit and a present to your wife Teresa ; we hourly expect a reply. I have been slightly under the weather, owing to a certain cat-clawing that turned out rather badly for my nose. But ’twas nothing, and if there are enchanters that persecute, there are also those that protect me. Advise me whether or no the majordomo with you was party to that Trifaldi business as you suspected ; and of all that befalls you keep me informed (since the distance is short) ; the more that I think soon to quit this life of ease, whereto I was not born. A certain chance has offered itself that will I fear put me in disgrace with the ducal pair, but what care I ? surely I must

rather comply with my profession than with their pleasure ; according to the saying, *Amicus Plato, sed magis amica veritas*. I quote, supposing you will understand this Latin, now you are a governor. God be with you and guard you that none may work you harm.

Your friend,

Don Quijote de La Mancha.'

This letter was lauded by all for its wisdom ; and Sancho, having listened with great attention, immediately rose and closing himself with the secretary resolved to answer without delay. He told the other to write down just what he said, not adding or omitting a solitary word. The secretary obeyed, with this result :

Letter of Sancho Panza to Don Quijote de La Mancha

' The duties of my post are so exacting that I haven't time to scratch my head, let alone to cut my nails which are now over-long, so may God help them. I say this, dear master of my soul, that you may not take amiss my not having informed you of the welfare or ill-fare of this government, where I am more empty than when you and I roamed woods and deserts. My lord the duke wrote the other day warning me that certain spies had entered this island to kill me, but as yet I've discovered only one, a certain doctor, salaried in this place to kill off as many governors as come. He is called Doctor Pedro Recio and hails from the village of Tirteafuera (take-thyself away), so you may judge whether I have reason to fear death at his hands. This man says for himself that he doesn't cure sickness but forestalls it. His medicines are diet and more diet, till at last he reduces the patient to clean bones ; as though emaciation weren't worse than fever. In a word he's killing me with hunger and I am dying with disappointment, since in coming to this government methought I should eat hot, drink cold and refresh my body 'twixt holland sheets on feather pillows, but now methinks I came to do penance like a hermit, and as I do it ungraciously, I fear in the end the devil will fetch me.

' So far I haven't touched bribe or perquisite and can't make

out what it means, for usually when governors come to this isle, I'm told that before entering they have either given or lent them large sums of money, this being the practice not alone here but toward all that go to governments. Last night in going the rounds I met with a very beautiful girl in boy's costume and her brother dressed like a woman. With the sister my seneschal is enamoured and in his 'magination has chosen her for his wife, so he says, and I have chosen the lad for my son-in-law. To-day we'll have a talk with their father, a certain Don Diego de la Llana, an hidalgo and as good an old Christian as one could wish.

' I visit the markets, as your worship advised, and yesterday discovered that a shopwoman, selling hazel-nuts, had mixed with a bushel of new nuts another of old hollow rotten ones. I confiscated them all for charity-children, who can tell them apart, and sentenced her to a fortnight's absence. They tell me I did bravely. All I can say is common report here says there's no wickeder class than your market-women : that all are shameless, soulless, brazen-faced creatures ; what I've seen of them in other towns would lead me to believe this. That my lady the duchess has written to my wife and sent her the present your worship speaks of pleases me greatly and I shall try to show my gratitude in due course. Please your worship kiss her hands for me, telling her what I say, that she hasn't thrown the present into a torn sack, as the end will prove. I would that you have no differences with my lord and lady, for should you fall out with them, 'twill clearly hurt me. Nor would it be just, after urging me to be grateful, for your worship not to be, considering all the favours they've done you and all the entertainment you've received at their hands.

' That about the cat-clawing I don't understand, and can only think 'twas one of the dirty tricks you are in the habit of experiencing from the deviltry of enchanters. I shall hear when we meet. I would send your worship a present, but I don't know what, unless a few clyster-pipes, made in this isle to be used with bladders — most curious. But if mine office last, I'll manage to send something by hook or crook. Should my wife Teresa write me, please your worship pay the carriage and

forward the letter, for I've the greatest longing to learn the state of my house, my wife and my children. And so may God deliver you from ill-minded enchanters and send me whole and in peace out of this isle ; which I doubt, for I think to leave it only with life, since Doctor Pedro Recio is treating me.

Your worship's servant,

Sancho Panza the Governor.'

The secretary sealing the letter despatched the courier, and those that were carrying on the joke with Sancho met and arranged how to despatch him. The governor spent that afternoon in drawing up ordinances touching the good government of this place deemed by him an isle. Among other things he decreed there should be no provision-hucksters in the republic and that wine could be imported from any point whatever provided it were labelled with its district ; and whoever changed its mark or watered the wine should be punished with death. He lowered the price on all foot-furniture, shoes especially, the prevailing cost of which he deemed exorbitant. He fixed the rate of servants' wages, which had been increasing at a headlong pace, and imposed heavy fines on singers of lewd and lascivious song, by night or day. He decreed that no blind man should chant a miracle unless he had authentic testimony of its truth, for he suspected that most of those chanted by the blind are fictitious, to the hurt of the genuine. He created an overseer of the poor, not to pester them but to examine into their condition, for under the mask of feigned destitution and self-inflicted wounds go hale thieves and hearty drunkards. In short he made so many wise provisions that under the title of the Ordinances of the Great Governor Sancho Panza they continue in force to this day.

CHAPTER LII

**The adventure of the second dolorous or distressed duenna,
alias Doña Rodriguez**

Now that Don Quijote was cured of his scratches, Cid Hamet relates that the life he led in that castle seemed to him wholly at variance with the role of knighthood he had adopted. He therefore determined to ask leave of the ducal pair to set out for Saragossa, where the festival drew nigh whereat he hoped to gain the armour contended for at such jousts. As he sat at dinner one day about to make known his intention and ask this favour, who should enter through the great hall-door but two women, as later appeared for now they were swathed from head to foot in mourning. One of them, approaching the knight, threw herself full-length at his feet, to which she sewed her mouth, groaning so mournfully and distressfully that all hearing and seeing were put to confusion. Even the duke and duchess, though thinking this some jest or other of the servants, were befuddled, seeing the vehemence wherewith the woman sighed, groaned and and wept, until Don Quijote in compassion raised her from the floor, making her drop the mantle from her tearful countenance.

The woman yielded, showing quite unexpectedly the face of Doña Rodriguez, duenna to the household, and the other draped figure proved her daughter, whom the rich farmer's son had betrayed. All that knew the woman were astonished, but none so much as the duke and duchess, for though they took her for a booby and a soft one, they never dreamed she would go this far. Turning to her master and mistress she now said : ' Please your worships grant me leave to go apart a little with this cavalier, that I may succeed in an affair wherein I have been placed by the deviltry of a wicked villain.' The duke assented, and she,

directing her look and words to our knight said : ‘ It has been some days, gallant knight, since I gave an account of the wrong and perfidy practised by a wicked peasant on my nearly beloved daughter, this unhappy creature here. You then promised to take her side and right this wrong, yet now I hear you would leave this castle in search of such good ventures as God may offer. I would therefore that, before you slip off, you challenge this obstinate clown, forcing him to marry my child in fulfilment of the promise he gave previous to yoking with her. For to hope that my lord the duke will get me justice is to look for pears on the elm, for the reasons already declared to your worship in secret. So may our Lord grant you much health and leave us not without succour. ’

Don Quijote with earnestness and dignity replied to these words : ‘ Good duenna, lessen your tears, or better, dry them and check you sighs, since I take as my charge the relief of your daughter, who’d have fared better had she been slower in believing a lover’s vows, which are usually simple to give but hard to fulfil. With the leave of my lord the duke I’ll set out at once in search of this soulless youth and finding will challenge and kill him each and every time he refuses to comply with his given word, since the chief business of my calling is to spare the humble and chastise the proud : in other words to succour the oppressed and destroy their oppressors. ’ Upon this the duke suggested : ‘ There’s no need to seek out this yokel of whom the good duenna complains, nor is it necessary to ask my leave to challenge him, for I consider him as duly invited and myself will undertake to inform him thereof and to see that he accepts and answers in person at this my castle, where to both I shall give fair field, observing all the conditions obtaining at such times, securing justice to each. In this I do no other than all princes should that give free field to those fighting within their borders. ’

‘ With this assurance and the willing license of your worship, ’ replied Don Quijote, ‘ I waive my rank of gentleman for the nonce and lower myself to the level of the offender, that he may be qualified for right of combat with me. Though he is absent, I

challenge him, maintaining he did wrong in seducing this girl, then a virgin, but who through him is one no longer. He must fulfil his promise and become her husband, or stake his life upon the issue ; ' and taking off a gauntlet he threw it into the middle of the room. The duke picked it up, saying that he accepted the challenge in the name of his vassal, fixing the time at six days, the field as the castle-yard and the arms as those customary among knights, namely lance, shield and full suit of armour (without deceit, guile or supernatural charm), examined and passed upon by the judges of the lists. ' But before all else 'tis requisite that this good duenna and this naughty maid place their vengeance in the hands of Señor Don Quijote ; in no other way can this challenge be brought to its due conclusion. ' ' I do so place it, ' replied the duenna. ' And I, ' added the daughter, all in tears and much abashed and discomfited. Now that this formality was met and the duke had resolved what was to be done, the mourners withdrew. The duchess ordered that they no longer be treated as servants but as lady-adventurers come to seek justice. They were given quarters apart and attended as strangers, not without awe on the part of the other servants, apprehensive as to where this crazy effrontery of Doña Rodriguez and her ill-faring daughter would end.

At this point to crown the feast with rejoicing there entered the page that had carried the letters and presents to Teresa Panza, wife of the governor Sancho Panza. His arrival much excited the ducal pair, eager to know of his success, but in answer to their questions regarding his journey the page said he couldn't inform them thus publicly or in few words, praying their excellencies to let it be till they were alone ; for the present they would be interested in these letters ; and producing two he handed them to the duchess. One bore the address, Letter for my lady the duchess So-and-so of I know not where ; and the other, To my husband Sancho Panza, Governor of the island Barataria, whom may God prosper more years than myself. As the saying runs, the bread wouldn't bake for the duchess till she had seen her letter which, having opened, she read first to herself and then aloud to the company :

Letter of Teresa Panza to the Duchess

‘ The letter your grace sent me gave much pleasure, my lady, for indeed I found it welcome enough. The string of corals is very beautiful and my husband’s hunting-suit doesn’t lag behind. That your ladyship has made Sancho a governor gives great satisfaction throughout the village, though none believes it, especially the priest, Master Nicholas the barber and the bachelor Samson Carrasco. I don’t mind that at all, for since it’s a fact, as it is, let each say what he pleases ; though to tell the truth if the suit and corals hadn’t come, I’d have doubted it myself, for in this town they regard my husband as a dullard and cannot imagine for what government he’s fit unless a flock of goats. But God grant it and prosper him as He sees his children have need.

‘ With your worship’s leave I am determined, lady of my soul, to take this good day into my house, and go up to court to stretch in a coach and burst the eyes of a thousand that are envious of me, and so I beg your worship to ask my husband to send me a little silver, and let it be plenty, for at court there’s big expense — bread costs a real and meat thirty maravedis a pound, which is wonderful. Should he not wish me there, let him advise me in time. My feet are dancing to be on the road, since my friends and neighbours among the women tell me that if I and my daughter go showy and pompous about the capital, my husband will become known because of me rather than I from him, as many will question : ‘ Who are those ladies in yon coach ? ’ and one of my servants will answer : ‘ The wife and daughter of Sancho Panza, Governor of the island Barataria. ’ And so Sancho will become famous and I be made much of ; and to Rome for all things.

‘ It grieves me as much as possible that no acorns have been gathered here this year, though I am sending your highness about half a peck, for which I went to the woods myself to pick and choose here one and there one, and these were the fattest — I would they were like ostrich-eggs. Please your pomposity forget not to write me and I’ll take care to answer, advising of my health and of all there is to write about in this village, where

I remain praying our Lord to keep your grace and that you in remembrance will keep me. Sancha my daughter and my son kiss your worship's hands.

She that has more desire to see your ladyship than to write,

Your servant,

Teresa Panza. '

Great was the joy of all on hearing this and the duchess asked Don Quijote if they could open the letter to the governor, for it was sure to be perfect. The knight replied he would open it, if 'twould give them pleasure. He did so, finding that it read as follows :

Letter of Teresa Panza to Sancho Panza her husband

' Your letter I received, Sancho of my soul, and I give my word and swear as a Catholic Christian that I wasn't two fingers'-breadth from going mad with joy. Consider, friend, that when I heard you were governor, I thought I should fall dead on the spot from pure pleasure, for you know how they say that sudden happiness kills no less than great grief. Sanchica your daughter wetted herself without knowing it, she was that excited. The suit you sent I had before me and the corals from my lady the duchess were about my neck, the letters were in my hand and the bearer of them present, and still I couldn't but believe that all I saw and touched was a dream, for who could think that a keeper of goats would become governor of islands? Already you know, brother, how my mother used to say that one has to live long to see much. I say this because I think to see more if I live more, since I don't intend to stop till I see you a farmer of rents or a tax-collector, which, though the devil fetches those that abuse them, are positions, after all has been said, that ever have and ever handle money. My lady the duchess will tell you of my desire to go to court. Think it over and advise me of your wish, for I shall try to honour you there by going in a coach.

' The priest, barber, bachelor and even the sacristan cannot believe that you are a sure-enough governor, saying 'tis all juggling or enchantment, like the rest of your master's affairs, and

Samson says he's going to hunt you down and get the government out of your head and the madness out of Don Quijote's brain-pan. All I do is laugh and look at my necklace and plan how I shall turn your suit into one for our daughter. I sent some acorns to my lady the duchess : I would they were of gold. Send me some strings of pearls, if they be the fashion in that island. The news of this place is that Berrueca married her daughter to a good-for-nothing dabster, that came to this town to take odd jobs. The council gave him an order to paint His Majesty's arms over the door of the town-hall, for which he asked two ducats and these they gave him in advance. He worked eight days with nothing to show, saying he wasn't meant for such fripperies. He gave the money back and is married under the name of a good workman ; the truth is he has dropped his brush and taken up with the spade, going to the fields like a gentleman.

' Pedro de Lobo's son has taken orders and shaven his crown, meaning to be a priest. Minguilla, Mingo Silvato's granddaughter, hearing of it, sues him for breach of promise. Evil tongues say she's with child by him, which he denies on both feet. This year there are no olives nor a drop of vinegar in the whole place. A company of soldiers passed trough the other day and carried off three of the village-girls. I won't say who they were ; most likely they'll return and there won't be lacking some to take them for wives with all their blemishes, good or bad. Sanchica makes bone-lace and earns eight maravedis a day clear, which she puts in a money-box to help toward her dower ; but now she's a governor's daughter, you will give her a portion without her working for it. The spring in the market-place has gone dry. A thunderbolt fell upon the pillory, and there may they all light. I await a reply to this and about my going to the capital, and so may God keep you for me more years than myself, or as many, for I'd not like to leave you without me in this world.

Your wife,

Teresa Panza. '

The letters were applauded, laughed over, approved and admired, and to make things perfect arrived the courier with

Sancho's letter to his master. This too was publicly read and praised, though grave fears were entertained as to the governor's health. The duchess withdrew that she might learn from the first messenger of all that befell on his journey, whereof she received a full account — not a circumstance untouched. The page gave her the acorns and a cheese from Teresa, who said the latter was excellent, better than those of Tronchon. The duchess received these presents with pleasure and with them we will leave her in order to describe the downfall of the government of the great Sancho Panza, flower and mirror of all island-governors.

CHAPTER LIII

The violent end and expiration of Sancho Panza's governorship

TO think that the things of this world are to endure for ever in their present state is to think topsy-turvy. Rather 'twould seem as if nature went round and round, one thing after another. Summer follows spring, harvest summer, autumn the harvest, winter autumn and spring the winter, and thus doth Time revolve its ceaseless wheel. Human life alone speeds swiftly to its end, without hope of renewal save in the life that has no bounds or limits. Thus speaks Cid Hamet, the Mahometan philosopher — for many, though sealed to the light of faith, by the light of nature have come to know the shortness and instability of our present state and the eternal duration of that which is hoped for. Our chronicler speaks of this now because of the speed wherewith the rule of Sancho Panza moved toward completion, was finished in short and undone — vanished into shadow and smoke.

On the seventh night of the days of his office-tenure the governor lay in bed, sated not with loaf or wine but with judging and passing sentence, with drawing up statutes and ordinances; and just as sleep in spite and in the teeth of hunger was drawing the curtains of his eyes, he heard so loud an

uproar of bells and voices, it seemed to him the whole island were sinking. He sat up and listened attentively to divine if possible the cause of this turmoil, but not only was he at a loss, but as in addition to the voices and bells he could distinguish the sound of infinite trumpets and arms, his confusion changed to fear and terror. Leaping from bed he donned slippers (as the floor was damp) and without dressing-gown or aught resembling one moved to his chamber-door, just in time to see coming down the corridor more than twenty persons with torches lighted and swords unsheathed, shouting at the top of their voices : ‘ Arm, sir governor, arm ! for countless foes have landed and we’re lost if your skill and valour succour us not. ’

With this uproar, fury and confusion they arrived where Sancho stood, paralyzed at what he heard and saw, and one of them cried : ‘ Let your worship arm himself at once, if you and all this island would not perish together. ’ ‘ What have I do with arming, and what do I know of arms or succours ? These things were better left to my master Don Quijote, who will despatch them and set things right in a twinkling. Such turmoils are unknown to me, sinner that I am before God. ’ ‘ Ah, señor governor, ’ said another, ‘ what apathy is this ! Arm, sir, for here have we arms, offensive and defensive. Come forth to the market-place and be our guide and captain, as a governor should. ’ ‘ Let them arm me then and welcome, ’ said Sancho ; and instantly they produced a couple of large shields, and not permitting him to assume more clothing, fastened them over his shirt, one before and the other behind, thrusting his arms through holes they had made. They tied both shields tightly with cards, leaving him walled and boarded, straight as a spindle, unable to bend his knees or move a step backward or foreward, though he could lean and balance with a lance they gave him.

When they had the poor man thus, they bade him lead, guide and inspire, for while he was their north, their lantern and light, their affairs were sure to prosper. ‘ How can I lead, ill-fated that I am, ’ protested the governor, ‘ when with these boards sewed to my flesh I cannot bring my knee-pans into play ? What you must do is raise me in your arms and drop me athwart or stand-

ing at some postern, which I can guard with this lance or with my whole body.' 'Advance, sir governor,' cried a third; 'tis fear not boards keeps you back. Have done and bestir yourself, since it grows late and the enemy increase, the cries grow louder and louder and danger presses.' At these persuasions and vituperations the poor governor attempted a move but came to the floor with such a crash he thought himself broken to pieces. He lay there like a turtle encased and enshrouded by its shells, or like a half-pig 'twixt two salting-boards, or a boat bottom up on the shore. The sight of his fall worked no compassion in the devilish crew who, extinguishing their torches, redoubled their cries and with renewed uproar called to arms, marching over their lost leader, and upon his shields showering blows so without number that had he not shrunk within, he'd have fared ill, very ill.

In his confinement Sancho sweated and resweated, with all his heart commending himself to God to deliver him from that peril. Some stumbled, others fell over him, and one for a good space stood on top and thence as from a watch-tower directed the forces, crying: 'This way, this way, for here the enemy most presses. Guard yon postern, bar yon gate! Down with their scaling-ladders! hand up the explosives, the pitch and the resin in stink-pots of boiling-oil, and with mattresses barricade the streets!' As 'twere in great excitement he named all the engines and implements of war wherewith a city-assault is wont to be resisted, and the ground squire, hearing and suffering all, said to himself: 'O that my Lord were pleased to end this losing of the isle and let me see myself either dead or out of this great agony!' Heaven heard his prayer and when lest expected he heard shouting: 'Victory, victory, the enemy is ours and flees! Arise, sir governor, and enjoy the fruits of conquest, dividing the spoils taken by the valour of this invincible arm.' 'Help me then,' sighed the sufferer pitifully. They lifted him and when on his feet he said:

'The enemy I have conquered let them nail him on my forehead. Nor would I divide the spoils of foes, but rather that some friend if I have one give me a draught of wine for I am

parched, and that he wipe this sweat for I am turning to water.' They wiped him down, brought wine and unfastened the shields; but sitting on his bed, from the scare and excoriation he fainted dead away. The perpetrators of the joke regretted they had carried it so far and great was their relief when Sancho revived and asked what the hour. They replied that 'twas now day. Without a word more he began to dress, none knew why.

When now at length and little by little (bruised as he was he could not move with ease) Sancho was clad, he went to the stable, followed by the others, and coming to Dapple embraced him and gave him the kiss of peace on the forehead saying, not without tears in his eyes : ' Come, my companion and friend and sharer of my toils and miseries, let us go. When I trotted along with you and my thoughts were only of mending your gear and of filling your little carcase, happy were my hours, my days and my years. But since I deserted you and mounted the towers of ambition and pride, a thousand cares have beset my soul, a thousand labours and four thousand tribulations.' While saying this he was panneling the beast and when that was done, with great difficulty and pain he mounted and directing his words to the secretary, seneschal and Doctor Pedro Recio and many others standing by he said :

' Make way, gentlemen, and let me return to mine ancient liberty. Let me go in search of my former life, that I may rise again from this present death. A governor I was not born to be nor to defend islands and cities from their foes. Better I know how to plow and dig, prune and trim vines, than to give laws and protect provinces and kingdoms. Saint Peter is well off at Rome and so is every one in the business for which he was brought into the world. Than a governor's rod better a reaping-hook in my hand and better I love to fill myself with bread-salads than be subject to want from a busy-body doctor who would kill me by slow degrees. More I love to lie with my liberty in the shadow of an oak in summer or wrap me in a shepherd's cloak of two sheep-skins in winter than to sleep clogged with a government 'twixt holland sheets, and be in sable clad. May your worships remain with God and say to my

lord the duke that naked I was born, naked am I still, I neither win nor lose. In other words I entered this government without a coin and without a coin I leave it — the reverse of the way governors are wont to leave other isles. Let them make way and leave me go, for I go to be plastered. Methinks all my ribs are crushed, thanks to enemies that this night passed over me.'

'This must not be, sir governor,' said the doctor; 'I'll give your worship a draught against falls and bruises that will at once restore you to your first strength and soundness. I promise also to do better in the matter of meals, letting you eat abundance of all you care to.' 'It is too late,' replied Sancho; 'I'd as soon stay as turn Turk: these jokes cannot be played twice. 'Fore God I'd as soon remain in this or enter another government, though offered 'twixt two plates, as fly to Heaven without wings. I come of the family of the Panzas, a stubborn lot, who once they cry odds, odds it must be though even despite the whole world. Here in this stable let the emmet's wings abide that carried me in the air to be eaten of martins and others birds, and return we to foot it on the ground. If there be no slashed Cordovan shoes to adorn me, there won't be wanting rough hempen sandals. Every ewe to her mate and let none stretch his foot beyond the sheets. And now let me pass, for 'tis getting late.'

To this the majordomo made answer: 'Señor governor, right willingly shall we let your worship go, though much 'twill grieve to lose you, whose intelligence and Christian behaviour force us to wish here. But 'tis common knowledge that ere quitting the post he has been ruling, every governor is obliged to go into residence as it is called, so let your honour abide here on judgment for your ten days in office, and then go in the peace of God.' 'None can ask residence of me, save by the duke's orders. I go to him now and to him I shall give exact account. The more that as I go forth naked, no other proof is needed that I have governed like an angel.' 'Fore God, the great Sancho is right,' quoth the doctor, 'and I am of opinion we should let him go, especially as the duke will be infinitely pleased to see him.' They all agreed, offering him escort on his way and anything he

wished for his person's comfort or convenience. Sancho said all he wished was a little barley for his Dapple and a half-cheese and a half-loaf for himself : the way was so short there need be no more or better provender. All embraced him and he in tears responded, leaving them in admiration both of his words and his wise resolve.

CHAPTER LIV

Which treats of things relating to this history and no other

THE duke and duchess resolved that the challenge offered their vassal by Don Quijote for the cause already mentioned shouldn't go by default, and as the youth had fled to Flanders rather than have Doña Rodriguez for mother-in-law, they chose as substitute a Gascon lacquey named Tosilos, giving him most careful instructions as to his conduct. Two days later the duke told their guest that his opponent would in four days present himself in the field armed as a knight, to maintain that the damsel lied by half the beard, nay by the whole if she affirmed he had given any promise of marriage. Don Quijote received only pleasure at this news, and promised himself to perform wonders, considering it great good fortune that an occasion offered where these gentlefolk could see how far extended the might of his puissant arm. These four days therefore were spent in the joy of anticipation which, however, made them seem four hundred ages.

As we have passed over other things, so will we these and go to accompany Sancho, who upon Dapple, somewhere between happy and sorrowful, travelled in search of his master, whose fellowship meant more than governing all the isles of the world. And so it befell that when he had not gone far from the island (for he never troubled to make sure if it were an island, city, town or village), he saw approaching six pilgrims with their staves, of the foreign sort that ask alms by singing, and these, as he drew near, placed themselves in a row and with one voice began to sing in a tongue unknown to Sancho, save one word

that clearly sounded, alms. Being the soul of charity, according to Cid Hamet, Sancho drew from his saddle-bags the half-cheese and half-loaf wherewith he had come provided and gave them, making signs 'twas all he had.

The pilgrims received the gift but kept saying, Geld, geld ! ' I don't understand what you want, my good people, ' replied Sancho, whereupon one of them produced a purse from his bosom. Putting his thumb to his throat and spreading his hand upwards Sancho indicated that he hadn't a sou, and pricking Dapple broke through the line. But as he passed, one of the pilgrims, who had been scrutinising him closely, ran up and throwing his arms about Sancho's waist cried in good Castilian : ' So help me God, what do I see ? is it possible that I hold in mine arms my dear friend, my good neighbour, Sancho Panza ? Yes, 'tis true, for I am neither drunk nor dreaming. ' Sancho was mightily surprised to hear himself named and feel himself embraced by this stranger-pilgrim, and though he silently studied the other's features for some time, failed to recognise him. Seeing his suspense the foreigner said : ' What, brother Sancho Panza, don't you know your neighbour Ricote the Morisco, the village-shopkeeper ? ' Sancho scrutinised him yet more closely and making sure of his features one by one at length was certain it was he. Without dismounting he threw his arms about his neck saying : ' Who the devil would have known you in this mummer's dress of yours ? who has gone and frenchified you, Ricote, and how dare you return to Spain where, if they catch you and find you out, you'll fare hardly enough ? ' ' If, Sancho, you do not betray me, I am safe, for in this guise none will know me. But come, let us to that poplar-grove yonder, where my comrades wish to eat and rest. And you will eat with them for they are very pleasant fellows, and I shall have time to tell you the story of my life since I left our village in obedience to His Majesty's proclamation, that so seriously threatened my unfortunate race, as you knew. '

Sancho agreed, and when Ricote had spoken to the other pilgrims, all withdrew to the poplar-grove some little distance from the high-road. They dropped their staves and shed their

hoods or pilgrims' weeds, remaining in their jackets. They seemed young handsome fellows, save Ricote who was well on in years. Each had a wallet, apparently well-filled, at least with things provocative of thirst, summoning it at a distance of two leagues. They lay on the ground and making a table-cloth of the grass placed upon it bread, salt, knives, nuts, pieces of cheese and clean ham-bones, which, if they didn't permit gnawing, were not past sucking. They produced as well a black condiment made of fish-roe called caviar, a loud awakener of thirst. Nor were lacking olives, which, though dry and unpickeled, were toothsome and pleasant. But the honours of the banquet were carried off by six bottles of wine, one from each wallet. Even the good Ricote, transformed from a Morisco into a German or Dutchman, boasted one that competed in size with the other five.

With great zest they fell to, yet proceeded with real deliberation, hanging on each mouthful received at the point of the knife, a little of each article first, and then suddenly all six men would raise arms and bottles in air, mouth pressed to mouth, eyes nailed to the sky, whereat they seemed to aim, and thus would they sit fixedly for a considerable space, wagging their heads from side to side, in token of their joy in transferring to their stomachs the content of these vessels. Sancho saw all and by nothing was grieved; rather in order to fulfil the proverb which he knew very well, When at Rome do what you see them do, asking Ricote for his bottle he took aim with the rest and with no less relish than they. Four times did the bottles suffer this fusillade, but a fifth? never — they were more empty and sapless than reeds, and this not a little withered their jollity. Yet from time to time one would clap his hand to Sancho's saying: 'Spaniard and Dutchman all one goot fellow;' and Sancho would reply: 'Goot fellow, by Got;' bursting into a laugh lasting one hour by the clock, with never a thought of his government, for over eating and drinking care has but little sway. In a word the finishing of the wine was the beginning of a drowsiness, till all fell asleep there on the very tables and cloths. Ricote and Sancho, having eaten more and drunk less, alone remained awake. Leaving the pilgrims buried in sweet

dreams they removed to the foot of a beach tree, and Ricote without once stumbling into Moorish told the following tale :

‘ You are well aware, O Sancho Panza, townsman and friend, how the edict and proclamation issued by His Majesty against my nation struck terror in us all : I at least, even before the time allowed us to get out of Spain, felt as if the rigour of the sentence had been executed on my person and children. I decided therefore, as a prudent man I think and like one that, knowing he’ll soon have to leave his present house, looks for another, I decided I say to leave our village without my family and find a place to which I could remove them with comfort and without the hurry to which others were subjected. As did all our elders, I could easily see that these edicts were not mere threats as some pretended but sentences to be executed at the appointed time. I was forced to this belief because I know of the wild and wicked designs my kinsfolk harboured and it seemed to me a divine inspiration that moved His Majesty to give effect to so daring a resolution. Not that we were all to blame, for some were firm and faithful Christians, but so few that we were as nothing against the others, and ’twould have been folly to shelter the serpent in the bosom, enemies within one’s house. With just reason were we punished with the sentence of banishment — a soft and easy measure it seemed to some, but to us the greatest hardship that could have been inflicted. Wherever we are we long in tears for Spain : here were we born, here is our fatherland. Nowhere did we meet with the reception warranted by our misfortune. In Barbary, in all parts of Africa, where we expected hospitality, there were we most offended. We know not good fortune till we lose it, and this our love for Spain is so great that, leaving yonder our wives and children unprovided for, nearly all that can speak the language (and there are many and I among them) have come back. Indeed now I know by experience that sweet is the love of the fatherland.

‘ I quitted our village as I said and went over into France, and though we were welcomed there, I wished to see it all. So I went on to Italy, thence to Germany, where it seemed to me I could live with greatest freedom. Its inhabitants don’t look into

niceties : each lives as he pleases and nearly everywhere is liberty of conscience. I took a house in a town near Augsburg, where I fell in with these pilgrims, many of whom have the custom of coming to Spain each year to visit her sanctuaries, regarded by them as their Indies and most dependable harvest. They wander the country over, nearly, nor is there a town where they don't get bread and drink as they call it, and at least a real in money. By the end of their stay they have more than a hundred crowns clear, with which, changed into gold and hid in the hollow of their staves or the patches of their cloaks or by such devices as they can, they leave the kingdom and pass over into their own country, in spite of the searching by the guards of the posts and ports.

' 'Tis my intention, Sancho, to take the treasure I left buried outside our village, which I can do without risk since it's some distance from the place, and either crossing over from Valencia or writing to my wife and daughter, whom I know to be in Algiers, arrange how to take them to some port in France, and thence to Germany, where we can await what God has in store. For to be plain with you, friend, I can testify that Ricota my daughter and Francisca Ricota my wife are Catholic Christians and though not quite that myself, I have more of the Christian than the Moor about me and ever pray to God to open the eyes of mine understanding, giving me to know how I can best serve Him. But what puzzles me is why my wife and daughter chose Barbary rather than France, where they could have lived as Christians.' 'That, Ricote,' suggested the other, 'may not have been left to their choice, for Juan Tiopieyo, your wife's brother, took them away, and he, being a thorough-going Moor, must have led them where he could go with least trouble. I can tell you too that methinks you go in vain for your buried treasure, for we heard how they stripped your wife and brother-in-law of many pearls and much gold, which they were taking with them to be passed.'

'Very likely,' said Ricote, 'but I am positive they didn't touch my horde, since I told none where it was, fearing just such treatment. So if you, Sancho, would come with me and

help me get and conceal it, I'll give you two hundred crowns wherewith to relieve your necessities, for you know that I know you have many.' 'I should gladly do it,' replied his friend, 'but I am naught covetous and even if I were, only this morning I shed a post that would have let me build my house-walls of gold and let me eat off silver ere six months were past. For this reason as well as for thinking I should be doing treason to my king in helping his enemies, I should not go with you even though, as you promise me two hundred crowns, you here counted out four hundred.' 'And what post is this, Sancho?' 'The governorship of an isle, and such an one that to be plain with you I shan't find its equal for some time.' 'And where is this place?' 'Where? two leagues from here, the island Barataria.'

'Peace, friend, islands are in the sea, not on the mainland.' 'What! I tell you, Ricote friend, only this morning I quit where yesterday I was governing like a jail-bird. Yet I left it because it seemed to me full of peril.' 'And what have you gained from this governing?' 'The knowledge, brother, that I am not fit to govern anything, unless perhaps a herd of cattle, and that riches gained in such offices are at the price of rest and sleep, nay, even of nourishment, for in islands governors must eat little, especially if doctors be around to see to their health.' 'I can't make you out, Panza. All your talk strikes me as foolery, for who would be giving you islands to govern? is there a shortage in the world of more capable men? Come, come, friend, return to yourself, and consider that if you'll take up with me as I suggested, helping with my treasure, for truly it may be called one, I'll give you the living promised.' 'Already have I made plain, Ricote, that I will not. Rest content that through me you won't be betrayed and continue your journey in good hour, letting me follow mine, for I know that what is well received may be lost, and what ill-taken, ditto both itself and owner.' 'I shan't persist more, Sancho, but tell me, were you in the village when my wife, daughter and brother-in-law departed?'

'I was and can say your daughter went away looking so fair that all the folk came out to see her, everybody saying she was the loveliest creature in the world. She was weeping as she

embraced her friends and acquaintance and as many as came up, and from them all she asked that they commend her to God and Our Lady his Mother. I am no whimperer but she spoke with such feeling that tears filled mine eyes, and i'faith many wished to seize her on the road and hide her, but fear of the king's order stayed their hands. Don Pedro Gregorio, that rich young heir, seemed the most affected and they say he loved her deeply. He hasn't been seen since their departure, so we all think he followed after to spirit her away, but as yet nothing has been heard.' 'I always suspected this gentleman of loving my daughter, but trusting in Ricota's virtue I never worried. And you doubtless have heard tell, friend, that Moorish women seldom or never mix with old Christians in amours. My child would not regard the attentions of this noble heir, particular as, I think, she cared more to be a Christian than to be loved.' 'God grant it, else both would suffer,' replied Sancho; 'and now we must part, Ricote friend, since I hope to reach my master Don Quijote ere nightfall.' 'Go with God, Sancho brother. My mates are stirring — 'tis time for us also to take the road.' The two embraced and Sancho on Dapple and Ricote with his staff went their ways.

CHAPTER LV

**Things that befell Sancho on the road, and others
as fine as you please**

HIS visit with Ricote didn't leave Sancho time to reach the duke's castle that day though he was within half a league thereof when night, fairly dark and overclouded, descended upon him. As it was summer he was not afraid, though thinking it wiser to turn off the road a little and wait till morning. This he did but his short and ill-spun fate ordained that in looking for a spot where he best might sleep, rider and ass fell into a deep dark pit amid deserted ruins. As he fell Sancho with his whole heart commended himself to God, believing he'd not stop till he reached the abyss. But such was not to be, for at little more than

three fathoms the ass touched bottom and his owner found himself still on his back without break or hurt. He felt all over his body and drew a deep breath to see were he punctured, but finding himself all there and catholic in health he couldn't sufficiently thank our Lord God. He had feared he was broken into a thousand bits at the least.

He next felt along to see could he get out by his own unaided effort, but the walls were smooth without hold. This grieved him sore, in particular when he heard Dapple lamenting most piteously, nor was this odd, since he didn't captiously complain, but was veritably one large bruise. 'Alas,' sighed Panza, 'and what unlooked-for happenings continually befall us in this world! Who'd have thought that he that yesterday found himself throned governor of an isle, surrounded by servants and vassals, should to-day be buried alive in a pit without hope of rescue and none to hurry to his relief? Here I and mine ass shall perish of hunger, unless we die first, he of sores and I of sorrows. At the best I shan't be lucky as my master in the cave of that enchanted Montesinos where he was better treated than at home, going to a bed made and table laid one would think. There he saw lovely and delightful visions, while here methinks I shall see naught but toads and snakes.

'Unhappy me, and to what a pass have my follies and fancies brought me! From this place they'll dig up my bones — when Heaven sees fit that they find them — white and scraped clean and those of Dapple at their side, whence perchance they'll identify us, at least any that have heard never was Sancho Panza apart from his ass nor his ass from Sancho Panza. Again I say, wretches that we are, our short fate wouldn't let us die in our fatherland with our own, where, though no remedy were found for our mishap, there wouldn't be wanting someone to bewail it and in the last hour of our thoughts close our eyes. O friend and comrade, how ill have I rewarded your good services. Forgive me and ask of fortune as you can to deliver us from our woe. In return I promise to crown you with laurel like a poet and double your ration besides.'

In this manner did Sancho lament to his ass, who listened

without a word — such was his agony. And though, after the night had passed in bitter rue and sorrowings, day came at last, by its light Sancho saw that of all impossibilities 'twas most impossible to issue without help. He began to wail and shout, but 'twas like crying in the wilderness and in the end he gave himself up for dead. Dapple lay on his back but his owner managed to put him on his feet again, though the beast could hardly stand. Opening the saddlebags, which had shared the fall, Sancho gave a crust to the little animal, who did not take it ill, his master saying to him as if he understood : ' With bread all sorrows are less. ' And now he spied in a corner of the pit a hole large enough, by bending and shrinking, for a man to pass. Sancho made for it and crouching down passed through and by the light from above could see that the pit extended far and wide. Returning to his ass, he began to break away the earth with a stone till he had enlarged the hole for Dapple, leading whom by the halter he travelled all through the labyrinth, searching for egress. At times he walked in darkness and at times without light, but never without fear.

' So help me Almighty God ! ' he quoth to himself ; ' this that is misfortune to me, to my master would have been a famous adventure. He, you can bet, would have taken these depths and dungeons for the flowery grounds and palaces of Galiana, expecting to issue from this obscurity and confinement onto some blooming meadow. But I, luckless one, poor in spirit with nothing to draw on, at every turn am frightened lest another pit, still deeper, of a sudden yawn beneath me and swallow me whole. Well come evil if thou come singly. ' In such manner and with such thoughts he had journeyed a trifle more than half a league, it seemed to him, when he was conscious that the darkness became more visible, as if there were an opening at the side — which appeared no less than the way to the other life.

But here Cid Hamet leaves him, returning to speak of his master, who was joyously awaiting the combat with the betrayer of Doña Rodriguez ' daughter, for whom he thought to redress the wrong and injury so foully done her. So it fell that sallying forth one morn to train and exercise himself for the great event

of the morrow, putting Rocinante to the charge or short gallop, he came to plant the nag's feet so near the opening of a pit that had he not pulled up short, he couldn't have escaped falling in. He checked the steed in time however and, approaching nearer, without dismounting peered into the chasm's jaws. As he sat there looking he heard loud cries from within and listening attentively could make out the words : ' Hi there above ! is there any Christian hears me or any kind gentleman that will take pity on a sinner buried alive ? on an unlucky disgoverned governor ? ' This seemed to the knight the voice of Sancho, and in fear and suspense, raising his voice as high as possible, he called : ' Who is it down there ? who cries ? '

' Who could be here or cry but the poor wretch of a Sancho Panza, governor, for his sins and scant luck, of the island Barataria, and late squire to the famous knight Don Quijote de La Mancha ? ' Upon this the knight's astonishment was doubled — his fear turned terror, thinking Sancho must be dead and this his soul in torment. So he cried : ' By all that I as a Catholic Christian can, I conjure thee that thou tell me who thou art — if a soul in torment, say what I can do for thee. As it is mine office to succour the needy of this world, so shall it be to aid those of that, who cannot help themselves. ' ' Then you're my master Don Quijote de La Mancha ; indeed the sound of the voice is all one. ' ' Don Quijote I am, he that professes to succour in their needs both the living and the dead. But tell me who thou art that keepest me in amaze : if my squire and dead, provided the devils didn't fetch thee and thou by God's mercy be in purgatory, our holy mother the Roman Catholic Church has means whereby to deliver thee of thy throes. To her shall I plead with all my substance. Declare thyself therefore and tell me what I should know. '

' I vow by all, ' replied the voice, ' and by the nativity of whomever your worship pleases, Señor Don Quijote de La Mancha, I swear that I am your squire Sancho Panza, not once dead in all the days of my life, but having left the government, for causes and circumstances that need more time to tell, last night I fell down this pit, where still I am and Dapple with me

who will not let me lie.' The ass seemed to catch his meaning, for at that moment he began to bray vigorously till all the cave resounded. 'Famous evidence!' called back the knight; 'that braying I know as if I were its mother, and your voice too I recognise, Sancho mine. Remain where you are and I'll fetch someone from the duke's castle hard by to lift you out of there, where your sins must have placed you.' 'Go, sir, go, and return soon by the only God, for the thought of being entombed makes me die of terror.'

The knight repaired to the castle where he informed the duke and duchess of Sancho's plight. They were not a little astonished, for though they could at once see that he must have fallen into the cave that had been there from time immemorial, they were puzzled to understand how he could have left the government and they not advised. They quickly prepared rope and tackle, and by dint of many hands and much labour drew ass and rider from twilight to the light of day. As Sancho came forth, a student said: 'Thus should all bad governors leave their office, even as this sinner coming from hell, dying of hunger, pale and penniless I trust.' Sancho overhearing him replied: 'Tis eight or ten days, brother backbiter, since I began governing the island given me, in which time not once did I have my belly filled. Doctors have persecuted me and enemies have crunched my bones, and as there has not been time to take bribes or collect dues even, methinks such an ending wasn't deserved. But man proposes and God disposes, who knows best what is good for every man, and as the time so the tactics, and let none say, This water I will not drink. For where 'tis thought there are fitches, there are not even hooks, and God understands me and enough: I say no more, though I could.' 'Don't be vexed or grieved at what you hear, my son,' advised his master, 'or there'll be no end. Come with a clear conscience and let them say what they will, for to tie evil tongues is like trying to put gates to the country. If the governor leave his post rich, they cry thief; if poor, fool and doesn't know his business.' 'Tis fool then they'll call me,' said Sancho, 'not thief.'

Thus discoursing, surrounded by a crowd of men and boys,

they arrived at the castle, where in a gallery the ducal pair awaited them, but Sancho wouldn't go up till he had accommodated Dapple in the stable, for the poor thing had passed a sorry night in his lodging said he. He then went up to his lord and lady and kneeling said : ' Because your graces wished it and from no desert of mine, I went to govern your island Barataria, which naked I entered and naked am I still : I neither win nor lose. Whether I governed well or ill, witnesses over there will tell you. I have decided questions and judged lawsuits, dying of hunger all the while, for so willed Doctor Pedro Recio native of Tirteafuera, insular physician to the island-chief. Enemies assaulted us by night, and though put to it for a time we came off free and victorious through the might of mine arm, the islanders say, and may God give them health as they are truthful.

' In this time, in short, I've been able to measure the duties and obligations of governing and have concluded my shoulders cannot bear them : they're not a weight for my ribs nor arrows for my quiver. And so, rather than have the government fling me, I flung the government. Yesterday morning I left the island as I found it — the same streets, houses, roofs it had when I landed. I've borrowed from none, nor had a hand in any profits, and though I had hoped to frame some helpful statutes, devil the one did I make, fearing they wouldn't be kept, which is the same as not making them. I left as I say with only my Dapple; fell into a pit, and searched through it everywhere till by the light of the sun this morning I saw a way of escape but so difficult an one that hadn't Heaven sent me my master Don Quijote, there I should have stopped till the end of time. So it comes to pass, my lord and lady, that here stands before you your governor Sancho Panza, who in only ten days has learned he wouldn't give a copper to be governor not only of an island, but of all the world. And so, kissing your worships' feet and imitating the game where the boys say, You leap first then give me one, I give a leap o'er the government into the service of my master Don Quijote. After all, with him, though the bread come by fits, when it does come I get plenty, and 'tis all the same to me whether my belly have carrots or partridges, so long as it's full. '

With this Sancho ended his long speech, during which his master stood in constant dread lest he make a thousand blunders. To Heaven he gave thanks when he saw him finished with so few. The duke embraced the squire saying it grieved him to the soul that he had so soon left this post, but he would see that another position was given him of less care and greater profit. The duchess as well embraced him and gave orders for his refreshment, since the man showed himself badly beaten and worse abused.

CHAPTER LVI

The prodigious and unparalleled battle 'twixt Don Quijote de La Mancha and the lacquey, on behalf the duenna Doña Rodriguez' daughter

THE duke and duchess had no cause to regret the trick played on Sancho Panza in the bestowal of the government, and less when the same day arrived their majordomo and to their delight rehearsed well-nigh every word and action of their appointee during his office-tenure, dwelling in particular on the assault of the island and the fear and flight of its chief. The history then proceeds to state that the day of the destined tilt was at hand and the duke, having instructed his lacquey not once but many times how to accomplish the overthrow of Don Quijote without killing or wounding him, commanded the steel points to be drawn from their lances, saying to his guest that Christianity, by which he set such store, didn't permit that the battle be at this risk and danger to life. He must be content that he, the duke, had given a free field within his domain, the more as the holy council had decreed against such duels, and he should not wish to push this affair to a fatal conclusion. The knight answered that it was for his excellency to arrange the details as best suited him, since he would acquiesce in all.

The dread day arrived and to the castle-yard, where the duke

had raised extensive staging for the judges of the lists and the appellants, mother and daughter, there flocked from all the neighbouring villages and hamlets a great troop of people to watch this novel combat, the like of which had ne'er been seen or heard of in that country by living or dead. The first to enter the enclosure was the master of ceremonies, who measured and examined the lists that there might be no guile or hidden thing upon which to trip and fall. Next entered the duennas and took the seats assigned them, hooded from eyes to bosom and with signs of not a little agitation, since their champion was present below. Soon after, heralded by many trumpets and mounted on a powerful steed that shook the earth, entered from one side the great lacquey Tosilos, his beaver down and he wholly encased in a strong and brilliant suit of armour. His horse was clearly a Frieslander, broad and flea-bitten, with a quarter hundredweight of hair at each fetlock.

The gallant combatant came well posted by his lord the duke as to his bearing toward the valerous Manchegan — warned on no account to kill him and himself to avoid the first onset and the certainty of death. The lacquey paced the lists and coming to where sat the duennas, stood for some time at gaze at her that sought him for husband. The marshal called to Don Quijote and with Tosilos on his other side asked the duennas did they consent that this their champion maintain their right. They said yes, and that all he might do would be considered well done and final. Already the duke and duchess had taken their places in a gallery overhanging the enclosure, which itself was crowned with a host of people, awaiting the outcome of this unparalleled life-and-death passage d'armes. The condition of the combat was that if Don Quijote triumphed, his vanquished foe must wed the daughter of Doña Rodriguez, but if conquered, the other was freed from obligation and the penalty. The master of ceremonies parted the sun betwixt them and stationed each in his proper place. The drums beat, the blare of trumpets filled the air, earth trembled under foot. The hearts of the crowd were tense, some fearing, others wishing, a happy or fatal ending to this joust. Our knight, commending himself whole-heartedly to God our

Lord and to the lady Dulcinea del Toboso, sat waiting the signal for the onset, but our lacquey's thoughts were not the same : he was thinking of what now I shall tell you.

It happened that as he looked upon his fair enemy, she seemed the most beautiful woman ever he beheld, and the blindling child that in the streets is wont to be called Love, was anxious not to lose this occasion of triumphing over a lacquey's heart and adding it to his list of trophies. Coming up softly and unseen, he ran a six-foot dart into his left side, piercing the poor fellow's core quite through. This easily he could do, for Love is invisible and cometh and goeth everywhere and none to ask him why. So it befell that at the signal to charge, our lacquey was deep in transport, thinking on the beauty of her he had made mistress of his liberty, nor heeded the sounding of the trumpet, unlike his adversary, who at once charged and at Rocinante's top speed rushed to meet his foe, amid the shouts of his good squire Sancho : ' God guide thee, cream and flower of errant arms. God give thee victory, since the right is on thy side. '

Though Tosilos saw the other descending, he stood his post, and in loud voice summoned the master of the field saying : ' Sir, is not my marrying or not marrying this lady the occasion of this conflict ? ' ' It is. ' ' Then I should be laying a great burden on my conscience, of which I stand in awe, if I proceeded further. I give myself as vanquished and say I am willing to marry her on the spot. ' The marshal was dumfounded, knowing Tosilos to be party to the trick. Don Quijote checked himself in mid-career, seeing that his adversary failed to meet him. The duke cast in mind what all this signified and when he learned from the marshal, was embarrassed and vexed almost to a frenzy. In the meantime Tosilos came and standing before Doña Rodriguez cried : ' Lady, I am willing to marry your daughter and would not gain by quarrel and dissension what I can peaceably and without peril of death. ' The worthy Quijote overheard this and said : ' Then am I exonerated from mine oath : let them marry and well ; since God has given her to him, may Saint Peter add his blessing. ' The duke had now come down and approaching Tosilos said : ' Is it true, knight, that you confess defeat and

that at the bidding of your timorous conscience you wish to yoke with this girl ?' ' Yes, señor, ' replied Tosilos. ' He does very well, ' said Sancho, ' for what you were going to give the mouse, give the cat and save yourself trouble. '

Tosilos walked off to unlace his helmet, praying them to assist him promptly, since his breath failed him and he could no longer abide the smallness of his lodging. They quickly removed the head-piece and the lacquey stood before them. ' A trick, a trick ! ' cried the two duennas ; ' they've substituted the duke's lacquey for the true husband. God's justice and the king's against such mischief, not to say deviltry. ' ' Fret not, ladies, ' said their champion ; ' it is neither one nor the other, and if it be, 'tis not the duke's blame but that of the wicked enchanters my persecutors, who, jealous of my glory in this victory have turned the countenance of your husband into that of one you say is lacquey to the duke. Take my counsel and to spite mine enemies' malice marry him, the more that he's unquestionably the man you sought. ' At this the duke was ready to vent his spleen in laughter, saying : ' So rare are the things that befall Señor Don Quijote that I'm tempted to think that this my lacquey really is not he ; but to make sure, let us postpone the marriage a fortnight — all agreeing — keeping in confinement this person whose identity we doubt. At the end of that period most likely he'll become himself again, for the rancour of wizards cannot last long, the more as their frauds and transformations so little avail. '

' Indeed, sir, ' offered Sancho, ' 'tis an old story with those scamps to twist my master's affairs ; why only the other day they turned a knight he conquered, one he of the Mirrors, into the person of the bachelor Samson Carrasco, a native of our town and a great friend, and as you yourself know they made Dulcinea over into a rustic peasant-wench. I fear therefore that this lacquey must live and die one all the days of his life. ' Upon this Rodriguez' daughter said : ' Be he who he may that asks me for wife, I shall comply, for I'd rather be a lacquey's lawful spouse than the cast-off mistress of a gentleman, though he that tricked me wasn't one. ' All these sayings and doings ended in Tosilos'

being shut up to see what he would turn into. The throng acclaimed the victory for Don Quijote, though most were sad and forsaken not to have seen the rivals hacked to pieces, even as are boys when the man they had waited to see hanged, being pardoned, doesn't appear. The crowd dispersed, the duke and Don Quijote returned to the castle. Doña Rodriguez and daughter were pleased to see that by hook or crook their affair would end in wedlock and Tosilos felt with them.

CHAPTER LVII

**Don Quijote takes leave of the duke and how he fared
with that waggish wanton, Altisidora**

IT seemed to our knight 'twas high time to abandon the life of ease enjoyed at that castle, feeling that his person committed a grave offence in letting itself be cloistered in idleness amid infinite pleasures and delights, though proffered him as an errant. He thought he must yield strict account to Heaven for this ease and withdrawal and he therefore craved leave to depart. This was granted, though with sore grief, the ducal pair avowed.

Th duchess handed his wife's letters to Sancho, who wept over them saying : ' Who would have thought that hopes so great as those bred in the breast of my wife Teresa Panza by the news of my government should end in my returning to the rough-going adventures of my master ? None the less I am glad that my Teresa behaved like herself in sending the acorns, for had she not, I should have been out with her and she would have shown herself ungrateful. It comforts me to think that this present can't be called a bribe, since I already had the government when she sent them, and it stands to reason that they that receive some benefit should, though but by trifles, show themselves appreciative. The short of it is that naked I entered the government, naked I left it, with a safe conscience therefore, which is not a little. Naked was I born, naked am I still, I neither win nor lose. '

This passed 'twixt himself and Sancho the day of their departure. Having bade farewell to his hosts the night before, Don Quijote in the morning presented himself all armed in the castle-yard. There in the galleries were all the folk to see him off, not excepting duke and duchess. Sancho was mounted on Dapple with stores, valise and saddlebags, the soul of pleasure, for the duke's majordomo, alias Trifaldi, unknown to Don Quijote had presented him with a little purse containing two hundred gold crowns for the expenses of the journey. And now from amid the other duennas and damsels who stood watching them was heard the voice of that waggish wanton, Altisidora, rueing and cursing her false lover and charging him with the stealth of portions of her apparel. Don Quijote sat looking at her and when she had done he turned to Sancho saying :

' By the life of your fathers, squire, I conjure you to tell the truth : have you on your person the three kerchiefs and garters mentioned by this enamoured maid ? ' ' The three kerchiefs yes, but the garters, as much as over the hills of Ubeda. ' The duchess was amazed at Altisidora's effrontery : though she knew her for a bold one, gay and wanton, she never dreamed she would push her license this far, and as she herself was in no way privy to the jest, her astonishment was the greater. Yet the duke was willing to second the fun by saying : ' It looks ill to me, sir knight, that having accepted my hospitality you should make bold to carry off at least three kerchiefs, if not the garters, of my serving-maid. This betokens an evil heart and fits not with your fame. Return the garters or here I challenge you to mortal combat, nor need you fear lest rascally magicians transform me, as did they your former foe into that of my lacquey Tosilos. '

' God forbid,' returned the knight, ' that I unsheathe my sword against your most illustrious person at whose hands I have received so many favours. As Sancho says he has them, the kerchiefs I shall return ; the garters I cannot, for neither of us has them. If this your maid would search in her hiding-places, no doubt she will find them. I, sir duke, have never been a thief nor do I think to be one all my life, if still God hold me in his hand. As she herself confesses, this woman speaks as

one in love, but as I am not to blame so is it not for me to crave forgiveness, either of her or of your excellency, whom I beg to think better of me and grant me new leave to follow my journey.'

'May God grant you so good an one,' said the duchess, 'that ever we may hear of your welfare. Go with God for the longer you tarry, the hotter burns the fire in the breasts of the damsels that look upon you. This particular maid I shall so punish that henceforth neither with eyes nor tongue shall she go astray.' 'One thing let me add, O gallant Quijote,' spake Altisidora, 'and that is that I crave pardon for charging you with purloining my garters which, 'fore God and on my soul, I have on, having made the blunder of him that looked for the ass he was riding.' 'What did I tell you?' said Sancho; 'a pretty one am I to cloak thefts when, had I wished, there was my government made on purpose.' Don Quijote made obeisance to his lord, lady and the others, and turning rein, he on Rocinante and his squire on Dapple, left the castle behind, directing their course toward Saragossa.

CHAPTER LVIII

So many adventures come crowding in upon our knight
as to give no elbow-room, one to the other

WHEN Don Quijote found himself in the open country, safe and free from the wooings of Altisidora, he seemed once more in his element and his spirit again was strong to pursue the business of chivalry. Turning to his squire he said: 'Liberty, Sancho, is one of the most precious gifts given of the skies to men; with it no treasures the earth encircles or the sea contains can be compared. For liberty as for honour one can and should stake his life, since the direst of misfortunes is captivity. I say this, Sancho, for you beheld the entertainment and abundance of this castle we are leaving; yet in the midst of those highly-seasoned banquets, those drinks cool as snow, methought

I suffered pangs of hunger, enjoying them less freely than had they been mine own. The sense of obligation imposed by benefits and favours received is a fetter that keeps the mind from ranging at its own sweet will. Happy is he to whom Heaven gives a crust of bread and none to thank for it save Heaven.' 'For all that,' replied Sancho, 'twere well to be grateful for the two hundred gold crowns the majordomo gave me in a little pouch, for like a plaster and comforter I wear it on my heart against emergency. Not always do we find castles for our regaling but inns sometimes for our whaling.'

In this and other talk errant knight and squire went journeying on for a league or more, when they espied near a dozen men clad as labourers with coats spread on the green grass of the meadow where they sat, eating their dinner. Close by were what looked like white sheets, covering things of which some stood upright and others lay flat side by side. Don Quijote rode up to the men and first saluting them courteously asked what lay beneath the cloths. 'Sculptured images for a show we're to give in our hamlet,' came the reply; 'we cover them to keep them from stains and carry them ourselves lest they be broken.' 'With your consent,' returned the knight, 'I should like to see them, for images carried with such care must be fine ones.' 'Ay, you're right there,' said the other; 'not one but is worth more than fifty crowns. That you may know I speak truth, come your worship and examine them;' and leaving his dinner he arose and removed the cover from the first, which chanced to be Saint George mounted on his steed, about whose legs twined a serpent of the usual ferocity and with mouth transfixed by a lance. The whole image shone like a blaze of gold and seeing it Don Quijote said :

'This knight was one of the best errants of the heavenly host. He was called Saint George and was moreover a champion of damsels. Let us see this next.' The man uncovered one that proved Saint Martin on horseback, dividing his cloak with the beggar. Scarce had our knight seen him when he said : 'This one was likewise of the Christians adventurers, more generous than brave I believe, even as you, my son, can see how he's giving

half his cloak to the beggar. It must have been winter or he'd have been charitable enough to give the whole.' 'No, not that,' suggested Sancho, 'but he held no doubt to the proverb, To give and retain doth need a good brain.' His master smiled and asked the men to lift another cloth, beneath which was disclosed on horseback the patron of Spain with blood-red sword treading down Moors and trampling on their heads, on seeing whom Don Quijote said : 'Ay, this was a knight indeed and of the squadrons of Christ : Don San Diego the Moorsmiter, one of the most valiant knights and saints of the world and of Heaven now.' The next image represented Saint Paul's fall from his horse, with all the detail wont to be found in such representations of his conversion. When Don Quijote beheld him, so life-like you'd have said Christ was speaking and Paul replying, he said : 'This man in his times was the greatest enemy of the Church, but its greatest defender since : an errant in his life and a stedfast saint at his death ; an untiring toiler in the vineyard of our Lord ; a teacher of the Gentiles that had Heaven as his school and the very Christ as instructor and master.

This was the last of the images, so Don Quijote bade the men cover them saying : 'I consider it a good omen, brothers, to have seen what I have seen, for these saints and knights profess what I profess, the exercise of arms. Our only difference is that they were saints and fought after the heavenly manner, while I a sinner fight after the human. They conquered Heaven by force of arms, for Heaven suffereth violence ; while I so far know not what I conquer by force of my toils. Should Dulcinea be delivered of hers, my fortune and my mind bettered, I might direct my steps along a fairer road than the one I now pursue.' 'God hear it and sin be deaf,' echoed his squire. The men wondered at both the figure and the words of Don Quijote without comprehending half his meaning. They finished their meal, put their images on their shoulders and bidding farewell took the road in their hands. As though he had never known his master, Sancho marvelled afresh at his learning, believing there wasn't a history in the world or an event thereof not stowed away under his finger-nail or locked up in his memory. 'Truly, master of mine,

if this that has befallen us may be called one, 'twas the sweetest and softest adventure met with in all our wanderings. From it we have come forth without punches or surprises; neither have we put hand to sword nor battered the earth with our bodies nor been left anhungered. Blessed be God to have let me see such a thing with these very eyes.'

'You say well, my son, but you must consider how times are not all one nor run the same course. Reflect too that these the vulgar call omens, not being based upon any grounds in nature, by the wise should be held merely as happy accident. One of your omen-mongers will rise of a morning, leave home and because he chances to meet with a friar of the blessed Saint Francis order, as though he had met a griffin turns and goes home again. With another Mendoza some salt is spilt on the table and straightway is melancholy spilt on his heart, as though by such trifles nature was bound to announce approaching calamity. The wise Christian shouldn't attempt to gauge the will of Heaven by drops in the ocean. Scipio comes to Africa, trips and stumbles as he lands and his soldiers at once cry bad omen, but their leader, hugging the earth says: 'Thou'lt not escape me, Afric mine, for I hold thee tight in mine arms.' The meeting with these images has been for me therefore naught but happy accident.' 'I believe it,' replied Sancho, 'but would your worship please tell why Spaniards entering battle invoke that Moorsmister Señor Don Diego, crying: 'Santiago and close Spain! Is Spain open perhaps, so that it is necessary to close her? or what is this cirimony?' 'You are very simple, Sancho. Learn then that this great knight of the Red Cross was given by God to Spain as patron and protector, particularly in life-and-death struggles with Moors. Spaniards accordingly invoke him in all battles and oft have seen him ride over, rout and crush the Hagarene forces. Of this truth I could offer abundant evidence from the truthful Spanish histories.'

Sancho changed the conversation saying: 'Señor, I am amazed at the boldness of Altistdora, the duchess's waiting-maid. Cruelly must he they call Love have wounded and transfixed her. They tell me he's a little youngster that although blear-eyed or better

say without sight at all, whatever heart he takes for his white, however small, he pierces it through with arrows. As well have I heard that by the modesty and reserve of damsels Love's darts are blunted and dulled, but by Altisidora they seem rather to have been whetted.' 'Consider, my son, that Love knows no respect nor observes any rational restraint, partaking of the nature of death, which equally attacks the lofty palaces of kings and humble shepherd-huts. And when Love takes entire possession of a heart, the first thing he does is to rid it of timidity and shame. Hence without them Altisidora declared her desires, engendering in my breast confusion, not compassion.'

'O notable cruelty! O unheard-of ingratitude! For myself I can say I'd have surrendered and subjected myself to her slightest moving word. O the jade! and what heart of marble in you, master, what reins of brass, what soul of mortar! Nor can I think what it was in your worship this damsel found, thus to yield and submit herself. What grace was it, what gallant bearing, what sprightliness or countenance, which of these things by itself or all together ravished her heart. Verily, verily, often I stop to look at your worship from the sole of your foot to the topmost hair of your head, and can see more things to take fright at than fall in love with. And having heard that beauty is the first and chiefest thing beloved, and since your worship has none, I cannot make out why the poor girl was enthralled.' 'Observe then that beauty is of two kinds: of the soul and of the body. The former is found and flourishes in the understanding, in virtue and good conduct, in liberality and breeding, all of which can obtain in an ugly man. When the attention becomes fixed on this beauty and not on that of the body, strong and violent love is wont to be inspired. 'Tis perfectly apparent that I am not fine-featured, but neither am I deformed, and it suffices a good man not to be misbegotten to be well loved, provided he have this dowry of the soul.'

Thus chatting and conversing they entered a wood that stood a little from the road, and suddenly the knight found himself mixed up with some meshes of a green net that stretched from tree to tree. Unable to imagine its meaning he said to Sancho:

‘ It looks to me, boy, as if this of the nets would prove one of the rarest adventures conceivable. May I die if my persecutors the enchanters are not casting to enmesh me and impede my journey, as vengeance for the cruelty shown Altisidora. But I can tell them that, though the threads were of hardest diamond or stronger than those wherewith the jealous god of smithies entrapped Mars and Venus, I’ll break them as if bulrushes or cotton yarn.’ He was about to suit action to word, when of a sudden from among the trees came forth and stood before them two fair stepherdesses, at least so clad, save that their sheepskins and kirtles were finest brocade — their kirtles indeed were petticoats of rich gold tabby. Their hair, which in ruddiness might vie with the rays of the sun, played loose about their shoulders, crowned with garlands of green laurel and red amaranth interwoven. Their age couldn’t have been below fifteen nor over eighteen.

This was a sight to befuddle Sancho, confound his master and make the sun stop in his course to look at them. The four preserved a marvellous silence till one of the lassies said : ‘ Stay, sir knight, break not our nets, extended not for your peril but for our pastime. As I know you will question how that can be and who we are, I mean to tell and in few words. In a hamlet about two leagues from here where live many gentlefolk and many rich hidalgos, a number of friends and relations arranged with others their neighbours and kinsfolk that we all come and make merry in this spot, one of the pleasantest hereabouts, forming among ourselves a new and pastoral Arcadia and dressing the maidens as shepherdesses and the lads as shepherds. We have committed to memory two eclogues, one by the famous poet Garcilaso, the other (in his own Portugese tongue) by the most excellent Camoens, and are soon to present them. Yesterday, being the first of our coming, we pitched some field-tents among trees beside a brimming brook that waters all these meadows. In the night we stretched the nets to snare the silly little birds which, startled by the noise we make, fly into them. If you will be our guest, sir, you’ll meet with a kindly and generous reception, since, for a while, care and melancholy shall not enter here.’

The maiden ceased and in reply Don Quijote said : ‘ Certainly, most fair one, Actæon could not have been more amazed or admiring when suddenly he beheld Diana bathing than I am in beholding your beauty. I have but praise for the manner of your revelry and only gratitude for your bidding, and if I can serve you, you may command with the assurance of being obeyed. My calling is no other than to be grateful and the benefactor of all, especially of those of the rank your appearance bespeaks, and if these nets, instead of occupying this little space, filled a circumference of the globe, I should seek out new worlds to avoid breaking them. That you may give some credit to this my hyperbole, know that he that so promises is no less than Don Quijote de La Mancha, if perchance his name have reached your ears. ’

‘ Ah, friend of my soul ! ’ cried the other lass ; ‘ and how great a stroke of luck has befallen us ! Do you see that gentleman ? then I would have you know him the most valiant, enamoured, courteous in the world, unless a history of his exploits lie and deceive us. I’ll wager too that this good man with him is one Sancho Panza his squire, whose drolleries none can rival. ’ ‘ You hit it there, ’ said Sancho ; ‘ I am the droll and squire your worship says and this gentleman my master is that very Don Quijote de La Mancha, historified and talked about. ’ ‘ Indeed, ’ said the first one, ‘ let us beseech him to stay, for our parents, brothers and sisters will derive infinite pleasure therefrom. I too have heard speak of his valour and courtesies. Above all they say of him that he’s the most constant and loyal lover known and that his lady is one Dulcinea del Toboso, to whom all Spain gives the palm of beauty. ’ ‘ With reason, ’ said the knight, ‘ unless your unequalled loveliness place it in doubt. But try not to detain me, ladies, for the rigid duties of my calling forbid all repose. ’

There now arrived a brother of one of the shepherdesses, clad as a shepherd and with a richness and gait in keeping with the maidens, who at once told him that this gentleman was the gallant Don Quijote de La Mancha, with his squire Sancho, whose history he too had read and so now knew him. The gay shepherd proffered his services and repeated the invitation, which in the end the knight was forced to accept. At this point

the birds were startled from their covert and deceived by the green colour of the net fell into the danger they were flying. More than thirty persons formed the snaring-party, all bravely decked out as shepherds and shepherdesses. They were introduced to the two strangers, with pleasure on their side, for they too were acquainted with their history. Repairing to the tents they found the tables neatly set with a rich and abundant meal. Don Quijote was honoured with the head of the company, who still couldn't keep their eyes from looking and wondering at him. He, when the cloth was removed, calmly but in a voice heard by all, delivered himself of the following :

‘ Of all heinous sins some hold pride the most flagrant, but I, ingratitude, believing in the saying that of the ungrateful hell is full. This sin, so far as lay in my power, have I tried to shun from the moment I had the use of my faculties, and if I find I cannot return kindness by kindness, I at least have the desire so to do. When this is not sufficient, I make known their good deeds, for he that proclaims favours would return them had he the power. As a rule they that receive are less than they that give, even as God, the Giver above all, is superior to all ; and the bounty of men is far from equalling his bounty. Yet this our poverty and lack gratitude in some measure makes good, and grateful for the favour here accorded me and which I cannot repay in the same coin, contenting myself within the narrow limits of my power, I offer what I can of mine own, which is that I will maintain for two natural days in the middle of the king's highway to Saragossa that these make-believe lady-shepherdesses are the fairest and most courteous damsels living, save only the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso, sole mistress of my thoughts ; without offence be it said to as many, both men and women, as are here. ’

On hearing this, Sancho, who had been listeneng with great attention, exclaimed : ‘ Is it possible that in the world are persons that dare say and swear my master is mad ? Tell me, gentlemen-shepherds, is there a village-priest, however wise or learned, that could speak as my master has spoken ? is there a knight-errant, however famed for valour, that could match this

offer ?' Don Quijote's face reddened with rage and turning on his squire he said : ' Is it possible, O Sancho, there is anyone on the globe denies you are a blockhead, lined with the same — with I know not what bands of malice and roguery ? Who put you to meddling with my affairs, to discover if I be wise or foolish ? Hold your tongue and without a word saddle my steed if unsaddled, for I am about to make good my offer, and with the truth on my side, gentlemen, you may consider as vanquished all that gainsay it ;' and in great fury he arose from the table. The company were dumfounded, not knowing whether to take him for mad or sound, and tried to dissuade him from this challenge, saying that the gratitude of his nature was beyond question, and that as for his valour they needed no new proof, since there was plenty in the history now published. None the less did Don Quijote persist in his purpose and mounting Rocinante with shield embraced and lance on rest rode off to the highway that skirted the meadow. Sancho followed on Dapple together with all the pastoral flock, anxious to see what this arrogant and unparalleled challenge would result in. The knight took stand in the middle of the road and wounded the air with words such as these :

' O ye travellers and wayfarers, knights, squires, persons afoot or ahorse, that pass or shall pass in the next two days along this road, know that Don Quijote de La Mancha, errant knight, is here stationed to maintain that all the beauties and courtesies of the world are surpassed by those crowning the nymphs dwelling in these meads and greenwood, setting aside the lady of my soul Dulcinea del Toboso. He that would think otherwise, let him make haste, for here I await him.' Twice he repeated this little speech and twice it was unheard by any adventurer. But chance, which was leading his lot from better to better, ordained that soon was descried a troop of mounted men, a number of them with lances, coming in a crowd and at double-quick. Nor had the pastoral company clearly perceived them when they turned and fled, fearing some injury. Don Quijote with intrepid heart remained alone with Sancho Panza, who sheltered himself behind Rocinante's haunches.

The troop of lancers drew near and one at the front cried out : ‘ Get out of the way, you devil of a man, or the bulls will rip you to pieces. ’ ‘ Go to, you dog, bulls are nothing to me though of the fiercest Jarama ever bred on her banks. Confess, miscreants, all in a lot, the truth of what I have now declared, or join at once in battle ! ’ The herdsman had no time to answer nor Don Quijote to get out of the way, even had he wished, for the whole herd of fierce bulls (on their way to where they were to be baited on the morrow), together with the tame oxen and all the herdsmen, passed over rider, horse, Sancho and last of all the ass, bringing them to earth and scattering them every which way. There lay the squire trampled on, his master terror-stricken, Dapple down-trodden and Rocinante not very catholic. However they all regained their feet after an interval and their leader at his best speed, stumbling here and falling yonder, chased after the cattle, crying :

‘ Hold, hold there, ye cursed crew, since one lone knight awaits you and he not of the kind or mind that say, To the flying enemy build a bridge of silver. ’ Yet not for this did the run-aways delay or take note of his threats more than of the clouds of last year. Exhaustion at length stayed their pursuer and more vexed than avenged he sate him down in the road, waiting for his squire, his mount and the ass. They arrived, master and man remounted, and without taking leave of the feigned and fictitious Arcadia with more shame than shouting resumed their journey.

CHAPTER LIX

An extraordinary incident, almost to be regarded as an adventure, that befell Don Quijote

TO the relief of the dust and fatigue experienced by Don Quijote and Sancho from the discourtesy of the bulls, ran a clear and limpid brook, found by them in the greenwood, and by its margin, after setting free of halter and bridle Dapple and Rocinante, the wayworn master and man sate them down.

Sancho hurried to the pantry of the saddlebags, from which he drew what he was wont to term his consolation. He first rinsed his mouth while his master washed his face, and from this refreshment both their wilted spirits revived. Yet from pure weariness Don Quijote could not eat, and from pure politeness his servant would not touch the food before him, waiting for the other to be the taster. Finding however that, carried away by his musings, his master forgot to carry a morsel to his mouth, the squire defied every law of good-breeding and silently stowed away the bread and cheese.

‘Eat, Sancho friend,’ said the other: ‘sustain life, which means more to you than to me, and let me die at the hands of my thoughts and in the power of my misfortunes. I, Sancho, was born to live dying and you to die eating. That you may see this to be true, consider how I, that am printed in histories, celebrated in arms, courteous in action, honoured of princes, solicited of damsels, just when expecting palms, triumphs and crowns, won and merited by gallant deeds, this very morning find myself kicked, trampled on and ground to pieces generally by the hoofs of animals common and unclean. The remembrance thereof blunts my teeth, paralyzes my jaws, benumbs my hands and robs me utterly of desire to eat till I think to let myself perish of hunger — the most cruel of deaths.’ ‘In that case,’ said Sancho, still hard at it chewing, ‘your worship can’t approve the proverb, Let Martha die but let her die full. I certainly don’t think to end myself, but rather shall I copy the shoemaker, who with his teeth stretches the leather till he gets it all the way. In other words I by eating shall stretch my life till it comes to the limit by Heaven decreed. Believe me, sire, there’s no greater folly than letting one’s self perish of despair, the way you are doing now. Take my advice, and after making a little meal, lie down and sleep a bit on the green couch of this grass. You’ll find a lighter heart when you waken.’

The knight did as bidden, for these words of his squire seemed more those of philosopher than fool. ‘If you, O Sancho, for my sake would but do what now I ask, my restoration would be more certain and my sorrow not so great, and this is that while

in pursuance of your counsel I am refreshing myself with slumber, going to one side and exposing your carcase to the air, give yourself with Rocinante's reins three or four hundred lashes of the three thousand and odd due for the disenchantment of Dulcinea. 'Tis no small pity that from your delay and negligence this poor lady continues in her present state.' 'Much might be said on that head,' replied the other; 'for the present let's both take a nap and later, God said what will be. Your worship must see that this business of a man's lashing himself in cold blood is no trifle, the less if the strokes fall on a body ill nourished and worse fed. Let my lady Dulcinea be patient and when least she thinks it, she'll find me streaked with lashes. Until death all is life : life I have still and the longing to fulfil my promise.'

Thanking him Don Quijote ate a little, Sancho a good deal, and both laid them down to sleep, letting those two constant companions and friends, Rocinante and Dapple, feed at will on the abundant grass. They wakened rather late, again mounted and resumed their journey, making haste to reach an inn in view about a league away. I call it an inn because Don Quijote did, contrary to his custom of turning all inns into castles. They rode up and on their asking the keeper had he accommodation, were told yes, with all the comforts and service to be found at Saragossa. They dismounted and Sancho locked up his larder in a room to which the landlord gave him the key. He put the beasts in the stable, gave them their feed, and then, offering special thanks to Heaven that this inn hadn't appeared a castle, went to look after the needs of his master, whom he found seated on the bench. The supper-hour arrived, they went within and on Sancho's asking their host what would be the fare, the other replied that his mouth would be his measure — he could ask for what he most wished, for with the birds of the air, the fowls of the earth and the fishes of the sea that inn was provided.

'There's no need of all that,' replied Sancho, 'but a pair of roasted chickens will suffice. My master is delicate and eats little and I myself am no great glutton.' The host replied that he had no chickens just then, for the kites had sailed away with them.

‘ Then let señor host order that a pullet be roasted, provided it be tender. ’ ‘ Pullet, my father ! ’ exclaimed the other ; ‘ indeed, indeed, ’twas but yesterday I sent more than fifty to be sold in the city. But barring pullets let your worship say the first thing. ’ ‘ Well then, let it be veal or kid. ’ ‘ To-day we happen to be out of both, having exhausted our stock, but next week there’ll be to spare. ’ ‘ So much the better, ’ replied Sancho, ‘ for I’ll warrant that all these lacks will be made good by an abundance of eggs and bacon. ’ ‘ Fore God, but my guest has a precious memory : here I tell him I have neither hens nor pullets and does he think I have eggs ? Discuss other delicacies if you will, but don’t ask for hens again, ’ ‘ Come, let us get down to business, body of me ! Tell me in a word just what you have and leave your discussions. ’ ‘ Mister guest, ’ said the innkeeper, ‘ that which really and truly I have is two cow-heels that look like calves’ feet, or two calves’ feet that look exactly like cow-heels. These are cooked with chick-peas, onions and bacon, and are just at the point of saying, Eat me, eat me. ’ ‘ I mark them for mine own from this moment, ’ said Sancho ; ‘ let none touch them, for I’ll pay more than the next man. To my mind naught could be looked forward to with greater relish and I don’t care a rap whether they be feet or no so long as they have heels. ’ ‘ None will touch them, ’ replied the landlord, ‘ for mine other guests, being of quality, have their own cook, butler and stores. ’ ‘ As for your quality, ’ said Sancho, ‘ none could be of more than my master, but his calling admits neither larder nor cellarage. We just take our ease in the middle of a lot and have our fill of acorns or medlars. ’ Such was the colloquy ’twixt Sancho and innkeeper, nor did the former care to continue it when the latter asked the calling or profession of his sire.

The supper was soon ready and when the stew was brought in, such as it was, Don Quijote fell to with no little relish. But scarce had he sat down when he overheard someone in the next room (divided from his own by a thin partition) saying : ‘ On your life, Señor Don Gerónimo, while we’re waiting, let’s read another chapter of the second part of Don Quijote de La Mancha. ’ Hardly had he heard his name when our knight arose and set

himself to listen. He now heard the one called Gerónimo reply : ‘ Why read this nonsense, Señor Don Juan ? whoever has read the first part surely can have no pleasure in reading the second. ’ ‘ For all that there’s no book so bad but has some good in it. What I find fault with is that the knight is represented as no longer in love with Dulcinea del Toboso. ’

Afire with indignation Don Quijote cried : ‘ Whoever would say that Don Quijote de La Mancha has forgot or can forget Dulcinea de Toboso, him shall I convince with equal arms that he’s very far from the truth, for the peerless one cannot be forgot nor her lover forget. His motto is constancy and his profession to keep it with gentleness and unconstrained. ’ ‘ Who is he that speaks ? ’ came from the other room. ‘ Who shall he be, ’ replied Sancho, ‘ but Don Quijote de La Mancha himself, who will make good all he has said or may say, for pledges never worry a good paymaster. ’ Scarce had Sancho spoken when there entered the two gentlemen, at least so they seemed, and one falling on Don Quijote’s neck cried : ‘ Neither can your presence belie your name nor your name your presence. You, sir, are beyond doubt the true Don Quijote de La Mancha, north and morning star of errant arms, despite and in defiance of him that would usurp your title and vilify your deeds, as has been done by the author of this book, which here I deliver ; ’ and he placed in his hands a book his companion had been holding. The knight received it and silently began to turn its leaves. After a little he returned it saying :

‘ In this short moment I have discovered in the author three things worthy of reprehension. The first is certain words I read in the prologue ; the second, that the man is an Aragonese, for he occasionally drops his articles. And the third thing that confirms him for a blockhead is that he errs and goes wrong at the most essential particulars. For example, he speaks of my squire’s wife as Mari Gutierrez, whereas her real name is Teresa Panza. If he errs in this important matter, it can easily be feared he does so in all the others of the history. ’ And Sancho added : ‘ A precious thing of a historian indeed ! he must be an old friend to our affairs if he calls Teresa Panza my wife Mari Gutierrez.

Look in the book again, sir, and see if I wander through it and if my name too has been tampered with.' 'According to what you say,' said Don Gerónimo, 'you must be Sancho Panza, Señor Don Quijote's squire.' 'I am,' said Sancho, 'and proud of it.' 'Then in faith,' said the gentleman, 'this modern author doesn't treat you with the decency your person demands. He depicts you as glutton and fool and nothing witty, quite different from the Sancho described in the first part of your master's history.' 'God forgive him,' said Sancho; 'he should have left me in my corner and taken no thought of me. He that knows the strings, let him thrum them, and Saint Peter is well off at Rome.'

The two gentlemen asked Don Quijote to join them at supper in their apartment, knowing well the inn could provide nothing suitable for him. Our knight, always courteous, yielded to their request and supped with them. Sancho was left in full and absolute possession of his stew, seated at the table-head, and with him the innkeeper who no less than his mess-mate had a partiality for these legs and heels. In the course of their meal Don Juan asked Don Quijote what news he had had of the lady Dulcinea del Tobsoso; was she married, had she been brought to bed, was she pregnant, or was she a virgin still, preserving her virtue and decorum and mindful of the amorous thoughts of her lover. To this his guest replied: 'Dulcinea continues to be herself and my thoughts are more constant than ever. Our intercourse is on the old footing but her beauty has been transformed into that a common peasant-wench;' and he went on to tell in detail of her enchantment, together with all that befell in the cave of Montesinos and the means allowed by sage Merlin for her release. Supreme was the content of the two hosts at hearing these rare passages in his story from the knight's own lips, though the absurdity of it all and the elegant manner in which it was related left them wondering. Here they regarded him as sane, there he slipped from them into madness, nor were they able to decide just how far he went either way.

Sancho had now done with his supper and leaving the landlord under the table repaired to his master, saying as he entered:

‘ May I die, gentlemen, if the author of this book be against our eating crumbs together. As he calls me glutton, I trust he doesn’t call me bibber too.’ ‘ But he does,’ declared Don Gerónimo ; ‘ I don’t recall in just what terms, but I remember his words have an ill sound and are lies to boot, as I can tell by the features of the real Sancho here present.’ ‘ Take my word for it,’ said the squire, ‘ the Sancho and Don Quijote of this history are not those in the one composed by Cid Hamet Benengeli, who are ourselves : my master gallant, discreet and in love, and I simple and witty, neither glutton nor sot.’ ‘ I believe it,’ said Don Juan, ‘ and were it possible it ought to be decreed that none should dare treat of the affairs of the great Don Quijote save Cid Hamet his first author, even as Alexander ordered that none should paint his portrait save Apelles.’ ‘ Let him treat of me that will,’ said our knight, ‘ provided he don’t maltreat me, for patience is wont to fall when they load her with injuries.’ ‘ None can be offered Señor Don Quijote for which he cannot avenge himself,’ said Don Juan, ‘ even if he don’t first ward it off with his shield of long-suffering, which in my opinion is ample and strong.’

In this and other converse they passed a great part of the night. Though Don Juan wished our hero to read more in the book, the latter refused, saying he considered it as read, and confirmed it all as a piece of stupidity. Furthermore he should not wish the author, knowing he had held it in his hands, to flatter himself that he had read it : the thoughts must be kept from things filthy and obscene, how much more the eyes. They asked whither his journey and were told to Saragossa to engage in the annual jousts there. Don Juan informed him that the new history represented Don Quijote, be he who he might, as present in a tilting, which tilting was not only barren of invention but poor of device and destitute of liveries, though rich in imbecilities. ‘ In that event,’ replied our friend, ‘ I shan’t set foot in Saragossa, that to the light of the world may be exposed this recent historian’s deception and that people may see I am not the knight he makes me.’ ‘ You will do well,’ said Don Gerónimo, ‘ and there are jousts at Barcelona where your worship can display your valour.’ ‘ That will I do then, and prithee, gentlemen, giving

me leave to retire, for it is late, place and keep me in the number of your greatest servants and friends.' 'And me no less,' said Sancho; 'sometime maybe I shall be good for something.' With this they parted and master and man repaired to their chamber, leaving the gentlemen wholly astounded at the hash our hero made of his understanding and folly, though by it they were made sure that these, and not those described by the Aragonese author, were the true Don Quijote and Sancho. The knight arose early and tapped on the partition by way of farewell to his entertainers. Sancho paid the landlord magnificently, throwing in the advice that he laud the accommodation of his inn less or larder it better.

CHAPTER LX

Of what befell our knight on his way to Barcelona

FRESH was the morning giving promise of a glorious day when Don Quijote sallied forth from the inn, first informing himself of the most direct route to Barcelona without touching at Saragossa — such was his eagerness to give the lie to the new historian that had so wickedly abused him. Naught befell worthy of record for more than six days, at close whereof night overtook him a little off the road amid a grove of oak or cork-trees, in ascertaining which Cid Hamet doesn't observe his customary care. Master and man dismounted and accommodating themselves at the feet of the trees, Sancho, who had lunched that day, without formality entered the gates of sleep. But his master, whom fancies more than famishment usually kept awake, could not close his eyes; in imagination he kept going and coming by a thousand devious ways.

Now he seemed to find himself in the cave of Montesinos; now watching Dulcinea, turned country-wench, give a leap onto her she-ass; and next came sounding in his ears the words of the sage Merlin, announcing the conditions and performance to be carried out were the lady to be disenchanted. Seeing the sloth

and uncharitableness of his squire he despaired, for he understood that five lashes only had been given — a number small indeed and out of all proportion to the infinite yet remaining. Therefrom he received such sorrow and annoyance that he drove himself to say : ‘ If Alexander the great cut the Gordian knot, saying that cutting amounted to untying, and for all that ceased not to be universal lord of Asia, like success may crown the disenchantment of Dulcinea, if I lash the boy in spite of himself. If the condition of her release be that Sancho receive three thousand and odd lashes, what is it to me whether he gives them himself or another for him : the thing is that he receive them, come whence they will. ’

With this in mind he approached the sleeping squire, having first provided himself with Rocinante’s reins, and commenced to untie his points (’tis common belief that Sancho had but one, in front) ; but he had not gone far when the other started up wide-awake saying : ‘ What is this ? who is touching and undressing me ? ’ ‘ ’Tis I, Sancho, who am come to make good your lack and lighten my weight. I am come to lash you, my son, and so partly discharge the debt you are beholden for. Dulcinea perishes, you live in idleness, I die of love. Therefore strip yourself and of your own free will, for mine holds to give you in this solitude at least two thousand stripes. ’ ‘ Not so, ’ said the other ; ‘ lie still, master ; if not, by the only God the deaf shall hear us. The lashes I owe must be voluntary and not by force, and at present I am in no mood to thrash myself. Enough that I promise to flog and flap me whenever I feel like it. ’

‘ There’s no leaving it to your charity, Sancho, for you’re hard of heart and though a countryman, tender of flesh ; ’ and the knight thereupon strove and struggled to unbreech him. Sancho gained his feet and closing with his master tightly with both arms, gave him the back-trip, landing him on the ground face upward. Placing his right knee on his chest he gripped the other’s hands in such a way that he could neither move nor breathe. ‘ How, traitor, do you revolt against your master and natural lord ? do you affront him that gives you bread ? ’ ‘ I neither mar king nor make king, ’ returned Sancho, ‘ but stand by myself

who am mine own lord. Let your worship take an oath to be quiet and not try to lash me, and I'll let you go. If not —

Here thou diest, traitor,
Enemy of Doña Sancha.'

The knight vowed and swore by the life of his thoughts not to touch a hair of his clothing even, leaving the flagellation to his absolute pleasure and whim.

Sancho arose and moving some little distance to get him a tree for a couch, felt something touch his head. Raising his hands he laid hold of two feet in shoes and stockings. He trembled from fright, but hurrying to another tree had a like experience. He then called to his master to come to his rescue. Don Quijote asked what frightened him, and was told all those trees were draped with human feet and legs. The knight felt and at once divining the cause said to his squire : ' There's naught to fear, for these legs and feet which you feel but cannot see belong to thieves and highwaymen, whom justice strings to trees by twenties and thirties. They say to me I am near Barcelona. '

When day dawned, they lifted their eyes and saw the clusters were indeed bodies of brigands. But if these dead frightened them, no less were they terrified by more than forty live ones that suddenly surrounded them, saying in Catalan to make no noise nor move till their captain came. Don Quijote was afoot, his horse without bridle, his lance against a tree : he was indeed quite defenceless, and so thought best to fold his arms, bow his head and keep himself for better time and opportunity. The footpads made quick work of rifling Dapple, leaving not a thing in the saddlebags and valise. It was well for Sancho that he had the duke's crowns and those from home in a belt about his waist ; yet these too the good folk would have weeded out in their search 'twixt clothing and flesh, had not just then arrived the captain, a fellow about thirty-four, robust, of more than medium height, stern aspect and swarthy complexion. He rode a powerful steed and wore a coat of mail with four pistols at his side of the type called petronels.

Seeing that his squires (for members of that fraternity are so

called) were about to strip Sancho, the captain ordered them let be. He was at once obeyed and thus the belly-band escaped. He wondered to see a lance against the tree, a shield on the ground and a knight armed and pensive, the most pathetic and melancholy figure sorrow herself could have fashioned. Approaching him he said : ' Be not so forsaken, my good man, for you've fallen not into the hands of some cruel Osiris but into those of Roque Guinart, more considerate than cruel.' ' My sorrow,' replied the other, ' is not that I have fallen into your hands, O gallant Roque, to whose fame the earth knows no bounds, but that my remissness was such that your soliders took me without bridle, bound as I am by mine order of errant arms to live eternally vigilant, being mine own sentinel at all hours. For I would suggest, O famous one, that had they found me ahorse whith lance and shield, 'twould have been no joke to reduce me, that am the Don Quijote de La Mancha whose deeds fill the world.'

Roque Guinart saw that the man's infirmity sprang from delirium rather than daring. Though occasionally he had heard mention of this don and his doings, he never had believed in either, nor could he persuade himself that such a humour could reign in heart of man. He was delighted therefore to have met with the original that he might touch closely what he had heard from far. This touching he began by saying : ' Worthy knight, be not cast down nor hold for evil fortune that wherein you find yourself, for by these stumblings your twisted lot may right itself, since Heaven by rare, unheard-of, roundabout ways, ways undreamt of by men, is wont to raise the fallen and enrich the poor.'

The knight was about to thank him when they heard a noise as of a troop of horses, though there proved to be but one, on which rode at full course a youth of about twenty years, clad in green damask laced with gold, breeches and a loose frock, with cap cocked Walloon fashion. His boots were waxed and tight fitting, his spurs, dagger and sword of gilt, and besides these he bore a small firelock in his hands and two pistols at his sides. Roque, turning his head at the noise, beheld this fair figure, who

thus addressed him : ‘ In search of you I come, O gallant Roque, to find if not cure at least relief in my distress. And not to keep you in suspense, for I see you do not recognise me, let me say I am Claudia Gerónimo, daughter of Simon Forte, your especial friend and the particular foe of Clauquel Torrellas, who equally is yours, belonging as he does to the rival faction. You are well aware that this Torellas has a son, Don Vicente, at least so called two hours back.

‘ This Don Vicente (and to cut short the story of mine ills, I’ll say in few words what one he worked me), once beholding wooed me, and I listening loved him, unknown to my father ; for there’s no woman, however secluded or reserved, that won’t have chances and to spare for effecting her precipitate desires. In the end he promised to marry and I gave my word to be his wife, but there the matter rested. Yesterday I learned that, forgetting his debt, he was this morning to marry with another — news that drove me into a rage and broke my endurance. My father was not at home, so I donned this garb and pressing on my horse overtook Don Vicente about a league from here. Not stopping to make complaint or hear excuse I discharged this musket and these two pistols, and lodged more than two bullets in his body, opening passages whereby mine honour, though steeped in his blood, might escape. There I left him with his servants, who neither dared nor could do aught in his defence, and rode to ask you to help me over into France, where I have kinsmen with whom I may dwell. Also I pray you defend my father lest Don Vicente’s many partisans take undue vengeance. ’

Roque, admiring the gallantry, pluck, fine figure and initiative of the fair Claudia, said to her : ‘ Come, lady, let’s first see if your enemy be dead and later we can decide what will be best. ’ Don Quijote, who had been all attention, now exclaimed : ‘ Let none assume the defence of this maid, since I shall consider it my especial charge. Ho with my horse and arms ! and do you, lady, await my return, for I’ll seek out this gentleman, and dead or alive make him fulfil his word to beauty so rare. ’ ‘ Let none doubt of it, ’ said Sancho, ‘ for my master is a great hand at match-making. Only the other day he performed an office

exactly similar to this, and had not the enchanters that persecute him changed the thief's true figure into that of a lacquey, the maiden by this time would have been one no longer.' Roque, who had been thinking more about the fortunes of the lovely Claudia than of the words of master or man, bade his squires return to Sancho all they had plundered from the ass, and themselves go back to where they had quartered the previous night. The captain then set out in all haste with Claudia in search of the wounded or dead Don Vicente.

Arriving at the spot where the girl had come up with him, they found naught but a pool of blood. But as they looked about, they descried some persons on a hill-slope and truly concluded this must be the false lover with his servants, who had borne him there to care for or to bury him. They easily overtook them, as the others moved slowly, and found the young gallant in the arms of his followers, whom he prayed in feeble voice to let him die, since his agony wouldn't suffer him to be moved further. Claudia and Roque flung themselves from their horses and drew near. The servants were terrified by the presence of Roque, and Claudia was stricken at the sight of her lover. Half-pitying, half-severe, she seized his hands saying : ' Had you given these according to our covenant, never would you have come to this pass.' The wounded man opened his all but closed eyes and recognising Claudia said : ' Now I see, fair but mistaken woman, 'twas you that brought me to my death — a punishment undeserved of my desires, in which or in deed I neither would nor could do you wrong.' ' Then is it not true you were to marry this morning with Leonora, rich Balvastro's daughter ? ' ' I was not,' replied Don Vicente ; ' mine evil fate must have brought you this news that in jealousy you should take my life, which I leave in your hands and arms, considering my lot blessed. To assure you of this truth, take my hand and receive me for your husband if you would, for no larger satisfaction have I to grant in return for the harm you think done you. '

Claudia wrung his hand and so wrung was her heart that she fell in a swoon upon his breast even as he was seized with a mortal paroxysm. Roque knew not which way to turn but the

servants ran for water to throw in their faces. The maid returned from her swoon but not so her lover from his convulsion, for it ended his life. Realising that her dear bridegroom lived no more Claudia rent the air with moans, wounded the sky with wails of woe, tore her hair and gave it to the winds, abused her face with her hands, together with all demonstrations of pain and grief whereof a stricken breast is capable. 'O cruel and thoughtless one!' she cried; 'how easily were you moved to effect so wicked a design! O raging power of jealousy, to what desperate lengths do you lead them that lodge thee in their bosoms! O my husband, whose wretched fate through your being pledged to me hath borne you from the marriage-couch to the grave!'

Such and so sad were the ravings of Claudia that they drew tears from Roque's unaccustomed eyes. The servants sobbed, the girl swooned again and again and all about her seemed a field of sorrow and calamity. The brigand ordered the servants to bear their master home that he might be given burial. Claudia said she would enter a convent, of which an aunt was abbess, and there pass her life in the presence of a better and more eternal spouse. Roque approved, offered himself as escort and to defend her father from Don Vicente's kinsmen and all the world that tried to work him harm. Claudia declined the first, thanked him for the other and departed from them in tears. The servants bore away the body of their master and Roque returned to his friends. Thus ended the loves of Claudia Gerónima — what wonder, if we reflect 'twas the cruel and invincible might of jealousy wove the web of her lamentable fate.

The chieftain found his squires in the spot whither he had ordered them. In their midst on Rocinante Don Quijote was delivering an harangue in which he tried to dissuade them from their present life, perilous to the soul as to the body, but as his auditors were chiefly Gascons, a rude and lawless lot, his speech missed fire. Upon his arrival Roque asked Sancho had his men restored the jewels and possessions they had taken from Dapple. Sancho said they had, save three handkerchiefs, worth three cities. 'What do you say, man?' spoke up one of the robbers;

‘I have them here and they’re not worth three reals.’ ‘True,’ replied Don Quijote, ‘but my squire values them so highly because of the one that gave them.’ The captain commanded that they at once be restored, and now, forming his men in a row, ordered that all the clothing, jewels, money and everything stolen since the last division be laid before him. Making a brief summary of the value, turning into money whatever couldn’t be divided, he distributed the whole of it with such foresight and exactness that he neither exceeded nor fell short one point of distributive justice. The troop were left satisfied, and Roque turning to Quijote said : ‘Were I not this scrupulous with these fellows, ’twere impossible to live with them.’ To which Sancho replied : ‘According to what I have seen, so good a thing is justice ’tis necessary to practise it even among thieves.’ One of the squires, overhearing this raised the butt of his musket and would certainly have opened Panza’s head had not the captain shouted to hold. Sancho was flabbergasted, determining not once again to unsew his lips in that company.

At this point arrived one of the men posted as sentinels along the highway to advise their chief of travellers passing. This one reported : ‘Señor, not far hence on the road to Barcelona comes a troop of many persons.’ ‘Are they of the kind that seek us or of those we ourselves seek?’ ‘The latter.’ ‘Then everybody off and see that none escapes.’ The men obeyed, and while they were gone the brigand-chief said : ‘A strange mode of life ours must seem to Señor Don Quijote : new adventures, new occasions and all perilous. Nor can I wonder, for I confess that no life is more restless or open to surprises. I was led into it by I know not what desire of vengeance, which has power to pervert the most equable judgment. I am compassionate by nature and of honest aims but, as I have said, the thirst to avenge me for a certain wrong so brings to earth all my good impulses that I persevere in this calling despite and in defiance of my better judgment. As deep calleth unto deep and one crime unto another these acts of revenge have gone on linking themselves till not only mine but others’ wrongs have I taken upon me to satisfy. But God is pleased that though I find myself in a labyrinth’ of

confusions, I've not lost the hope of some day issuing therefrom to a safe port.' The knight was amazed at Roque's logic, having supposed that among thieves and cut-throats judgment was not to be found; and he replied :

' Señor Roque, once the disease is located, the first step toward health is to take the curative prescribed by the physician. Your worship is ill, you know the cause and Heaven, or better say God our Physician, will administer the proper palliative, which is wont to heal, not suddenly or by a miracle but bit by bit. Wise sinners moreover are nearer to salvation than foolish, and since your discourse shows your sense, there's naught to do but with good hope wait the mending of your conscience. Would you shorten the road and quickly turn into that of your saving, come with me, who will teach you to be a knight-at-arms, where are practised sufficient toils and misventures, if considered as penance, to transport you to Heaven in a trice.' Roque smiled at this exhortation of his new friend, to whom he now told (that he might change the subject) of the tragic fortune of Claudia Gerónima, which grieved Sancho tremendously, for the girl's spirit and beauty struck him not amiss.

The squires now returned with booty in the shape of two mounted gentlemen, two pilgrims afoot, a coach-load of women with some half-dozen servants aborse or afoot, together with two muleteers belonging to the gentlemen. The squires led the train before their great captain, all silent till he should speak. He first enquired of the gentlemen as to their identity, destination and money on hand. ' Señor, we are two captains of Spanish infantry, our companies are at Naples and thither we are to embark in four galleys said to be at Barcelona with orders for Sicily. We carry between two and three hundred crowns, and feel ourselves rich and content, since the soldier's lot admits of no more.' Roque put the same questions to the pilgrims and learned they were about to embark for Rome and that between them they might have sixty reals. Finally he asked who were in the coach, its journey and treasure, and one of the mounted servants replied :

' My mistress Doña Guiomar de Quiñones, wife of the pres-

ident of the Naples tribunal, with her little daughter, a maid-servant and a duenna occupies this carriage ; six servants attend with six hundred crowns. ' In all then, ' said the master-brigand, ' we have here nine hundred crowns and sixty reals. My soldiers must number about sixty ; figure how much this comes to per head, for I am a poor accountant. ' To this the other robbers cried : ' Long live Roque Guinart, despite the thugs that plot his ruin. ' The captains looked crest-fallen, the lady-president mournful ; not even the pilgrims rejoiced at this confiscation of their goods. Roque held them awhile in this suspense, but not wishing that their sorrow, apparent a bow-shot off, should continue, he turned to the captains and said : ' May your worships, sir captains, be pleased of your courtesy to lend me sixty crowns and the lady-president eighty, to satisfy mine escort, for the abbot dines on what he sings. You may then go your road free and unmolested, for I'll give a safe-conduct, in case you meet with others of my squadrons scattered hereabouts. 'Tis never my purpose to handicap soldiers or women, the more if they be of high birth. '

Many and graciously spoken were the words wherewith the captains thanked Roque for his courtesy and liberality — for such they considered his leaving them their money. The lady Doña Guiomar de Quiñones was about to alight to kiss the feet and hands of the famous bandit, but on no account would he permit it. Instead he sought her pardon for this detention, deploring that he was bound to comply with the necessities of his wicked calling. The lady-president bade one of the servants hand out the eighty crowns her assessment ; already the captains had produced their sixty and the pilgrims were about to yield their mite when Roque told them to stay, and turning to his men he said : ' Of these crowns two go to each of you, leaving twenty. Ten of these shall be given the pilgrims and the other ten this squire, that he may give a good report of this adventure. ' He now made out the passports, addressed to the chiefs of his bands, and bidding farewell he let all go in admiration of his magnanimity, gallant nature and rare conduct, affirming him an Alexander rather than a notorious thief.

One of his squires murmured in his Gascon-Catalan : ‘ This our captain is more friar than brigand. In future would he be liberal, let him be so with his own and not our property.’ The poor fellow didn’t say this so low but that it was overheard by his chief, who now with his sword almost split the man’s head, saying : ‘ Thus do I punish the loose-tongued and bold ;’ nor was there one that dared speak a word. The leader next wrote a letter to a friend at Barcelona, advising him of the presence of the famous Don Quijote de la Mancha, the errant of whom so much was said, the most agreeable and intelligent fellow in the world. Four days thence, at the festival of Saint John the Baptist, this knight would present himself in full armour on the city-strand, mounted on Rocinante and his squire Sancho on an ass. He prayed him give notice thereof to his friends the Niarros that they might find diversion in the pair, but he would that his enemies the Cadells miss the treat. This last was impossible however, since the actions both shrewd and simple of Quijote and the drolleries of Panza could not but delight the whole world. He despatched this letter by one of his squires who, changing his bandit garb for a peasant’s, entered Barcelona and properly delivered it.

CHAPTER LXI

Don Quijote’s entrance into Barcelona, together with passages containing more truth than discretion

THREE days and nights Don Quijote abode with the brigand-chief, and had they been three hundred years, things to wonder at and admire in the manner of his life would not have been lacking. Here they wakened, there they dined ; now they fled from they knew now whom, again lay in wait for whom they knew not. They slept on foot and interrupted their dreams by shifts from place to place. Their life was all setting spies, hearing scouts, blowing the matches of their fire-locks, though of these they had but few since all were provided with flint-guns.

Rocque himself slept apart from his men and in places unknown to them, for the many edicts issued by the viceroy of Barcelona against his life made him restless and suspicious of every one, fearful that even his own squires might slay him or deliver him over to justice : a life wretched and burdened indeed.

By unfrequented roads, short-cuts and blind-paths Roque, Don Quijote, Sancho and six of the robbers at length arrived at the Strand between Barcelona and the sea on the night before the festival of Saint John, and when the chieftain had embraced the errant and his squire, to whom he now gave the promised ten crowns, they took leave of one another after a thousand proffers of service on both sides. Our knight was left alone with his squire and awaited the day, just as he was, on horseback. Nor did he have to wait long before Aurora's fair face showed itself through the balconies of the east, gladdening the herbs and flowers, and at this instant the ears too were gladdened by the sound of many clarions and kettle-drums, the ringing of bells, and the tramp, tramp, tramp, make way, make way ! of horses and merry-makers pouring out of the city. The dawn made way for the sun, which with a face broader than a target gradually rose from the horizon.

Don Quijote and Sancho looked about and there beheld the sea, of whose presence they had been unaware in the darkness. It seemed to them very ample and spacious, rather bigger in fact than the lakes of Ruidera, seen in La Mancha. Along the Strand stood galleys which having lowered their awnings, appeared decked out with streamers and pennants that fluttered in the breeze and swept and kissed the water. From within were heard clarions, trumpets and hautboys, that near and far filled the air with sweet martial accents. The vessels themselves began to move and execute a kind of skirmish upon the calm bay, and in the same manner, as if in concert, numberless horsemen upon beautiful steeds and wearing gay liveries issued from the city. The soldiers on the galleys discharged their guns to which those of the forts made reply, and the heavy cannon rent the air with their thunder, answered by the ship-artillery in turn. The sparkling sea, the jocund earth, the clear morning air, though darkened

at intervals by the cannon-smoke, appeared to thrill the people into sudden pleasure. Sancho couldn't understand how those hulks that moved on the sea could have so many feet.

The horsemen of the liveries, with shouts, huzzas and war-cries, came galloping to where in silent wonderment sat Don Quijote, and one of them, the man advised by Roque, cried to our champion : ' Welcome to our city, O mirror, beacon and star, the north of chivalry ! (with all the rest of it) ; welcome, I say, to the gallant Quijote of La Mancha — not the false and apocryphal that stalks abroad in lying books, but the true, lawful and faithful, described by Cid Hamet Benengeli, flower of historians.' The knight made no reply, nor did the horsemen wait, but with the others of their train began to weave circles round and round him. He turning to Sancho said : ' These evidently know us. I'll wager they've read not only our history but that of the Aragonese lately published.' The horseman that first spoke now returning said : ' Let your worship be of our company, for all of us are your servants and great friends of Roque Guinart.' To which the other replied : ' If courtesies engender courtesies, yours, sir knight, are daughters or close kinsfolk to those of the great Roque. Lead whither your will directs for mine is one with it, especially if it be that I employ myself in your service.'

With words no less polite the horseman responded, and gathering him in their midst to the music of clarions and kettle-drums they returned to the city. As they entered, the evil one, who is at the bottom of all wickedness, and two small boys, more wicked than he, mischievously worked their way in among the crowd, and one raising Rocinante's tail and the other Dapple's stuck bunches of furze under each. The poor beasts, feeling these novel spurs, clapped their tails to, increasing the sting to such an extent that with a thousand capers they landed their riders on the ground. Vexed and mortified Don Quijote hastened to rid his animal's tail of its plumage, while Sancho did the same for Dapple. Their escort would punish this rudeness but the urchins were now mingled among more than a thousand processionists. Master and man remounted, and to the same

music and acclaim rode to the house of their guide. This was large and princely, in a word the home of a well-to-do gentleman, and there shall we leave him for the present, for so Cid Hamet bids.

CHAPTER LXII

The adventure of the enchanted head, together with other nonsense that cannot go unrecorded

THE name of our knight's host was Don Antonio Moreno, a gentleman of means, a man of sense and a lover of harmless pleasure. Finding this adventurer at his house he began to search for such ways of drawing him out as should not tell against him ; for they are no jests that cause pain nor are worth while pastimes to another's prejudice. He first made Don Quijote disarm and exhibit himself in that tight chamois-suit of his on a balcony that overhung one of the city's chief thoroughfares, to the view of people and children, who stared at him as at a monkey. The horsemen again ran courses as though they had donned their gala-dress for him alone and not to gladden that festive day. All this was to the great delight of Sancho who, though puzzled to know how, believed he had found another castle like that of the duke.

That day there dined with Don Antonio several of his friends, all of whom treated and honoured Don Quijote as an errant knight ; whereat, proud and important, he couldn't contain himself for pleasure. As for Sancho, his drolleries were so many that the servants and indeed all that heard hung upon his lips. When they were seated Don Antonio said to him : ' We have heard, good Sancho, you are such a lover of blanc-mange and mince-meat balls that if any be left you stow them away in your bosom again^(s) the morrow. ' ' Nay, señor, this is not true, for I'm more nice than greedy, and my master Don Quijote here present knows well that we're both wont to live eight days at a stretch on a handfull of acorns and other nuts. I admit that when

now and then they hand me a heifer, I hurry with the halter : in other words I eat what I'm offered and take times as they come. But whoever may have said that I overeat and am untidy, take my word he's mistaken ; I should have expressed it differently hadn't I noticed venerable beards at this board. '

' Indeed, ' his master bore witness, ' my squire's restraint and tidiness at the table can be written and graven on tables of bronze to the lasting memory of ages to come. True when hungry he may be thought a trifle keen, eating rapidly and chewing two cuds, but neatness he ever regards to a nicety, and when governor learned to be fastidious almost, lifting his grapes, nay the very seeds of his pomegranate, with a fork. ' ' How ! ' exclaimed Don Antonio ; ' has Sancho been a governor ? ' ' Yes, ' acknowledged the squire, ' of an island Baratania. Ten days I governed it to perfection, though during that period I lost my peace and learned to despise all the governments of the world. I gave it the slip, fell down a cave where I took myself for dead, but from which I finally came to life again as by a miracle. ' His master then rehearsed in detail the course of Sancho's rule, to the no small delight of his audience.

When the cloth was removed, the host took his guest by the hand and entered with him into another room, where the only furniture was a table seemingly of jasper resting on a base of the same. On it was placed, like the busts of Roman emperors, one that appeared to be of bronze. Don Antonio walked with his guest many times around the room and the table and at length said : ' Now that I am closeted with your worship where there is none to listen and overhear us and the door is closed, I wish to relate to you one of the rarest adventures, or better say novelties, that can be imagined, expecting that you will keep all I say in the innermost vaults of secrecy. ' ' That I swear to do, ' replied the other ; ' I shall drop a flagstone thereon for greater security, for I'd have your worship know, Señor Don Antonio, that you are speaking with one that, though he has ears to hear, has not tongue to utter. Safely therefore your worship can transfer whatever is in your bosom into mine, resting assured that you have flung it into the abyss of silence. ' ' On the faith of this

promise, I shall now set you wondering at what you see and hear, and relieve myself of the burden of having none with whom to share my secret, not of a kind to be trusted to every one.' The knight was tense, waiting for the mark of so many preambles. His host, taking his hand, passed it over the head of bronze, over all the table and over the base of jasper, and then said :

' This head, Señor Don Quijote, was executed by one of the greatest enchanters and wizards the world has known — a Pole by birth if I mistake not, and a disciple of the famous Escotillo of whom so many marvels are related. This Pole abode with me a while and for a thousand crowns fashioned this head, which has the property of answering all questions asked at its ear. Its artificer took his bearings, traced his characters, observed the stars, marked the minutes, and in the end wrought the head with the virtue we shall witness on the morrow, for Fridays it is mute. In the meantime your worship can consider what you wish to ask, since I know by experience that its answer will be true. ' Don Quijote could not but be astonished at the accomplishments of the head and found it hard to believe Don Antonio, but reflecting in how short a time he could find out for himself, could only thank the other for making him privy to so great a secret. They then left the room, whose door Antonio locked, and repaired to the hall where the other gentlemen sat listening to Sancho, who was telling them many of the adventures and experiences that had befallen his lord.

That afternoon they took Don Quijote for a walk, not armed but in a long street-coat of tawny cloth that would have made ice itself sweat at that season. They left word with the servants to engage Sancho and not let him leave the house. The knight was mounted, not upon his own steed but on a large, easy-stepping and richly-caparisoned mule. On the back of his long coat and unperceived by him was sewn a parchment, whereon in large letters was writ, This is Don Quijote de La Mancha. The scroll drew the eyes of every one and its wearer was surprised to see how many looked and called him by name. Turning to Don Antonio he said : ' Great is the prerogative of errant arms, making him that professes it known and famous throughout the four

quarters of the globe. Observe, my friend, how down to the street-urchins they know me, though now seeing me for the first time.' 'So it seems,' agreed the other; 'even as fire cannot be hid or bounded, so virtue will out: that particularly which proceeds from the profession of arms flourishes and is glorious above all others.'

It fortune'd then that as they moved on amid this acclaim, a certain Castilian, chancing to read the scroll, cried: 'The devil take you for Don Quijote de la Mancha! what, are you here and alive after all the countless cudgellings you bear upon your back? You are crazy, man, and have the property of turning all that treat and communicate with you into fools like yourself. If you doubt it, look at the gentlemen in your train. Go home, lackwit, look after your estate, your wife and children and quit these extravagances that serve but to corrode your wit and skim the cream from your brain-pan.' 'Brother,' said Don Antonio, 'go your way and don't give advice to one that doesn't ask it. Señor Don Quijote is quite sane and we his escort are not dunces: virtue is to be honoured wherever found. Go and bad-luck with you, and don't run where you aren't called.' 'Egad, your worship is right,' returned the Castilian; 'to counsel this man is to kick against the pricks. For all that, it grieves me sadly that the good mind which they say the fool possesses in all things should run to waste by the channel of his errantry. But may the bad-luck your worship mentioned rest upon me and all my descendants if from this day forward, though I live more years than Methusalem, I counsel a soul, even though he ask it.'

He departed and the procession moved on but so great was the press that Don Antonio was forced to remove the placard, under pretence of doing other thing. The night closed in and they returned home, where a dance had been arranged. Don Antonio's wife, a lady of quality, cheerful, comely and discreet withal, had invited her friends to come and honour their guest and enjoy his unrivalled vagaries. Several accepted, they supped gloriously and about ten the dancing began. Among others were two mischievous dames that though virtuous were rather free in planning jests to amuse, and not humiliate. These per-

suaded Don Quijote to dance and so constantly that they ground him body and soul. But 'twas a sight to see that figure, tall and gaunt, thin and yellow, in his tight-fitting suit, quite without grace and not very light on his feet.

These ladies of pleasure also flirted with him on the sly, and equally on the sly he repelled them, but finding himself put to it by their attentions, he at length cried out : ' Fugite, partes adversae : leave me in peace, profane thoughts. Avaunt, ladies, with your desires, for she that is queen of mine, the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso, doesn't consent that other than her own should hold me subject ; ' and saying this, worn out and exhausted from too much dancing, he sat down in the middle of the floor. Don Antonio had him carried bodily to bed, but first Sancho laid hold of him saying : ' In an evil hour you took to dancing, master mine. Think you that all brave fellows are dancers and all knights-errant caperers ? If so, you're mistaken : there's many a man would engage to kill a giant rather than move in time. Had you wished to fling a clog or two, I could have given you a lift, for I can jig like a jerfalcon, but on the dancing I pass.' With these and other lectures Sancho set the room in a roar, and accompanying his master to bed he wrapped him closely that he might sweat out his chill.

The day following Don Antonio thought well to make trial of the enchanted head, and with his wife, the knight and squire, two of his friends and the two ladies that had done their worst with the guest in the ball-room and who had remained over night with their hostess, he locked himself in the room where the bronze rested. He informed the others of its peculiar virtue but charged them with secrecy, saying that this was the first time he had put it to proof. Save for his two friends none other knew the mystery of the enchantment, and had he not discovered it to them, they too would have been as greatly puzzled as the rest — so cunningly was it fashioned. The first to approach the head's ear was our host himself, who whispered into it, though loud enough to be heard by the others :

' Tell me, head, by the virtue thou possessest, what am I now thinking of?' And the head without moving its lips replied

clearly and distinctly : ' I do not judge of thoughts.' The listeners were amazed indeed for in no part of the room was human being that could have answered. ' How many are we here ?' again asked Don Antonio, and was answered in the same voice, slowly : ' Yourself, your wife, two friends of yours and two of hers, a famous knight Don Quijote de La Mancha and a squire that answers to the name of Sancho Panza.' Here surely was matter for new wonder : their hair stood on end they were so frightened. Moving a little from the head Don Antonio said to the others : ' This is enough to convince me I wasn't deceived by him that sold thee to me, learned, talkative, responsive and wonderful head. Let another approach and question.' As women are commonly eager and curious, the first to come forward was one of the two friends of Don Antonio's wife. Her question was : ' Tell me, head, what shall I do to be very beautiful ?' and the answer : ' Be very chaste.' ' That will do,' she said. Then her companion stepped to the ear and whispered : ' I should like to know, O head, whether my husband loves me or not.' ' Consider what he does for you and tell yourself,' came the reply. The married one stepped back again and said : ' Indeed this answer didn't require a question, for certainly deeds declare the will of him that does them.'

Next came one of the gentlemen with the question : ' Who am I ?' ' You yourself know.' ' That was not what I asked, but dost thou know me ?' ' I do ; you are Don Pedro Noriz.' ' There is naught else I would question, for this convinces me, O head, thou knowest all things.' Then came the other friend : ' Tell me, O head, what are the wishes of my son and heir ?' ' Already have I said I judge not of desires, but this at least I can assure you that such as your son has are to bury you.' ' This is the same as saying, What I see with mine eyes, with my fingers I touch ; enough for me.' Their hostess' turn now came : ' I can think of nothing to ask, O head, unless it be whether or no I shall enjoy many years with my good husband.' ' You shall, for health and temperance in living promise him long lease of life, which many shorten by indulgence of one form or another.' And now came Don Quijote ; what could he ask but :

‘ Tell me, whosoever answers, was it truth or dream, all that I relate as having befallen me in the cave of Montesinos? Secondly, are Sancho’s lashes assured, and thirdly, will Dulcinea’s disenchantment result therefrom?’ ‘ As to the cave, much might be said : it partakes of the nature of both. The lashes of Sancho will proceed in due course and the release of your lady-love follow.’ ‘ No more would I enquire, for as I see Dulcinea disenchanted, shall I consider all blessings mine.’ The last was Sancho : ‘ Perchance, head, I shall have another government? shall I ever get out of the squire’s hard living and see wife and children?’ ‘ You will govern in your house; if you return thither, you will see your wife and children, and quitting service, you’ll no longer be squire.’ ‘ Good, by God!’ cried Sancho; ‘ I could have told all this myself nor would have told me more the prophet Perogrullo.’ ‘ Beast!’ exclaimed his master; ‘ what do you expect? isn’t it enough that the replies answer the questions?’ ‘ Yes, yet I would that it spoke more to the point and told me something new.’

With this the questions and answers came to an end, but not the astonishment of those uninitiated in the secret, and lest the whole world with them be kept in suspense, thinking some magician or mysterious power resided in the head, Cid Hamet Benengeli wishes to declare the truth thereof. So he says that Don Antonio Moreno, in imitation of another head he had seen at the capital, fashioned by an image-maker, made this one to amuse himself and befuddle the ignorant. Its construction was after this wise. The top of the table was of wood, painted and varnished like jasper, and its base as well, with four eagles claws that stood out therefrom, more firmly to support the weight. The head itself, which resembled the bust of a Roman emperor, was hollow, even as the table, to which it fitted so nicely that no sign of juncture was visible.

Through all this cavity of base, table, chest and throat ran a tin pipe, and in the room below was stationed the oracle. Applying his mouth to the pipe, he was easily heard above, even as the question whispered at the ear reached below in unmistakeable accents as through an ear-trumpet; nor was there any

way of discovering the deception. Don Antonio's nephew, a bright and clever student, was the medium, and having been told by his uncle who were to be in the room, he found no trouble not only in correctly answering the first question but in giving a shrewd guess at the others. Cid Hamet says more : that for ten or twelve days this marvellous contrivance was kept going, but when it became noised abroad that Don Antonio had an enchanted head that answered any question, fearing lest it might reach the ears of those watchful sentinels of our faith, he himself brought the matter to the attention of the inquisitors, who ordered its disuse lest the ignorant vulgar be scandalised. In the opinion of Don Quijote and Sancho however, it remained a magic and responsive head, though to the greater satisfaction of the former than of the latter.

The gentlemen of the city, to favour Don Antonio and to flatter his guest, whose antics they would witness, had arranged a tilting at the ring six days thence, but this did not come to pass for the reason given below. On one of the intervening mornings, our knight wished to make a quiet tour of the city on foot, fearing that if he went on horseback, the small boys would persecute him. He and Sancho with two servants as escort sallied forth. As they passed down a certain street, Don Quijote chanced to raise his eyes and saw written in large letters above a door, Books Printed Here ; whereat he was not a little pleased, having never seen a printing-press and being eager to know its operation. He entered with the others and in one room found them drawing the sheets off, revising them in another, composing in this, correcting in that — in short all the processes to be met with in a large printing-house. In one department he would ask what they did ; the workmen would tell, he would watch them with wonder and then pass on to the next. Among others, in answer to his question, one of the hands replied :

‘ That gentlemen yonder ’ — pointing to a man of good though rather solemn appearance — ‘ has translated an Italian book into Castilian and I am setting it up for the press. ’ ‘ What is the title of the book ? ’ The translator himself replied, saying ; ‘ In Italian it is called *Le Bagatelle*. ’ ‘ And what answers to *Le*

Bagatelle in Castilian ?' ' It is as though we should say, Trifles, but though it bears this humble title, it contains most excellent and substantial things.' ' I know a little Italian myself,' said the visitor, ' and, to my pride, can sing a number of Ariosto's verses. But, prithee, sir, and I ask solely for information and not to test you, have you ever met with the word *pignata* in your reading?' ' Frequently,' replied the other. ' How then would you render it in Castilian?' ' How else than by *olla*?' ' Body of me!' exclaimed Don Quijote; ' but you are advanced in the Tuscan idiom! I'll lay a good wager that where the Tuscan says *piace*, you in Castilian say *place*, and where it says *piu*, you say *mas*, *sù* you render by *arriba* and *giù* by *abajo*.' ' I do,' said the translator, ' for such are the proper equivalents.' ' Yet also I dare swear,' said the knight, ' that your worship is unknown to to the world, ever adverse to rewarding choice spirits and laudable labours. What gifts are lost, what geniuses made solitary, virtues sacrificed! And yet, translation from one tongue into another, unless it be from those queens of languages, Greek and Latin, seems to me like viewing Flemish tapestries on the wrong side where, though one can make out the figures, threads blur them and the smoothness and colour are lost. The translation of easy tongues argues neither wit nor mastery of style, any more than copying from one paper to another. I would not have it inferred that this exercise is not praiseworthy — a man may be engaged in worse occupations than translating and with less profit. And two famous translators, Doctor Cristóbal de Figueroa in his *Pastor Fido* and Don Juan de Jáuregui in his *Aminta*, I omit from the account altogether, for they place us in a happy doubt as to which is the translation, which the original. But tell me, sir, is this book printed at your own expense or have you sold the copyright to some bookseller?'

' At mine own expense,' replied the author, ' and on the first impression alone I hope to realise a thousand crowns at least, for there will be two thousand copies that will sell like hot-cakes at six reals apiece.' ' Your worship is quick at figuring,' replied Don Quijote, ' but you would seem not to have taken into account the ins and outs of publishers and the under-

standings between them. When you find yourself saddled with two thousand copies, I promise you your body will be so weary that you won't know which way to turn, especially if the book be a little out of the ordinary and nothing picquant.' 'What then!' cried the author, 'would you have me turn it over to some bookseller, who will give but three farthings for the copyright and think he is doing a favour at that? I don't publish that I may acquire fame in the world, for my works have already made me known. 'Tis money I'm after, without which the best of fames isn't worth a sou.'

'God grant you success with it,' Don Quijote replied, passing on to another room, where he watched them correct a sheet of a book entitled *Light of the Soul*, and on seeing this he said: 'These are the books, though there are many of their kind, that should be printed, for many are the sinners that now flourish, and infinite lights are needed for the legions in darkness.' He again moved on and found them correcting still another, and asking its title was told *The Second Part of That Imaginative Gentleman, Don Quijote de La Mancha*, composed by such-an-one, native of Tordesillas. 'I have heard about this book,' said the knight, 'and in truth and on my conscience I thought it was already burned to ashes for its impertinence. But its *Martimas* will come to it as to every hog, for feigned histories are so far good and delightful as they approach the truth or the semblance thereof and the true ones are better the truer they are;' and saying this, with evident irritation, he walked out.

Don Antonio had arranged to take him that day aboard the galleys, to the great joy of Sancho, who had never seen them in all his life. Their host had written the commodore that he would visit them that afternoon, bringing with him the famous Don Quijote de La Mancha, of whom already not only the commodore but all the city had heard. What befell on this visit will be told in the following chapter.

CHAPTER LXIII

The ill that overtook Sancho Panza on the visit to the galleys, together with the novel episode of the fair Mooress

MANY were Don Quijote's conjectures regarding the answers of the enchanted head, though none of them afforded a solution of the problem and all centred on the prophecy which he regarded as certain of fulfilment, of Dulcinea's disenchantment. Thither he came and went and inwardly rejoiced that he was soon to see it fact. As for Sancho, though he detested his experience as governor, he again longed to command and be obeyed — this curse does authority, even a mock one, bring in its train. But to continue :

As had been arranged, the visit to the galleys was made that afternoon, and no sooner had they arrived at the Strand when all the ships struck awning and sounded their clarions. A pinnace, cowered with rich carpets and cushions of crimson velvet, was lowered, and on our knight's setting foot therein the captain's galley, followed by the others, discharged her midship gun, and as he mounted the starboard ladder, all the crews saluted (as is the custom when a person of note boards a galley) with three times the cry of Hu, hu, hu. The general (for thus we shall speak of him), a Valencian nobleman, grasped Don Quijote's hands and embraced him saying : ' This day shall I mark with a white stone as one of the best I think to enjoy in this life : on it I first met Señor Don Quijote de La Mancha, in whom is invested and epitomised the entire worth of chivalry.' With no less courteous phrases our knight replied, jubilant at meeting with such a reception.

All now moved to the poop, fitted up for the occasion, and seated themselves on the side-benches. First the boatswain passed down the gangway and whistled for the crew to doff shirts, which was done in an instant. Sancho was frightened on

seeing so many persons in their skins, and more when the awning was set so quickly that he believed all the devils of hell must be at work, But this was cakes and cookies to what will now be told. He had been seated by the stantrel on the starboard side near the aftermast oarsman, who now, acting under orders, lifted the terrified wretch in his arms and passed him along, and the whole crew, standing ready, sent him flying from bench to bench with such speed that poor Sancho lost the sight of his eyes, sure that these were demons carrying him off. Nor had they done till they sent him down the larboard side and set him on the poop again, breathless and freely perspiring, not knowing what had happened.

Don Quijote, seeing this wingless flight of his squire, asked the general if such ceremonies were practised on all visitors to galleys; for himself he had no wish to be initiated, vowing to God that if anyone came to take him for a flight, he would kick his soul out. Saying this he rose to his feet, clutching his sword, but at this very instant they struck awning and lowered the yard with a deafening noise. Sancho thought the sky, loosed from its hinges, was falling on his head, which now, in terror, he ducked between his legs. Nor did his master altogether relish it, for he too humped his back and lost colour. But the crew straight hoisted the yard with the same speed and racket, silent themselves as if without voice or breath. The boatswain whistled to weigh anchor, and leaping to the middle of the gangway began to brush the crew's shoulders with a courbash or knotted rope, and little by little the galley put out to sea.

When Sancho beheld so many red feet in motion, for such the oars appeared to him, he murmured to himself; ' These truly, and not the kind my master talks about, are things enchanted. But what have the wretches done that they lash them so, and how can that one man, that goes whistling there, dare strike so many? Now methinks this is hell, or purgatory at best.' Don Quijote, observing the attention wherewith his squire watched all that passed, said to him: ' Ah, friend Sancho, how quickly and at what little cost could you make an end of Dulcinea's enchantment, would you strip to the waist and take a seat with these

gentlemen. There amid the misery and sufferings of so many, you would scarce feel your own. What's more, sage Merlin might consider each of these strokes, given by so good a hand, equal to ten of those which you in the end are bound to feel.' The general was about to ask what strokes were these and what the disenchantment of Dulcinea, when a seaman called out :

' Monjuich signals that a craft with oars is on the westward coast.' The general leapt to his feet crying : ' Pull away, my sons, let her not escape us. It must be a brigantine of the Algerian corsairs.' The three other galleys now came up to the captain-galley for orders, and the general commanded that two of them should put to sea, while he with the other would keep along shore, that the vessel might not elude them. The crew bent to the oars, driving the vessel so furiously that she seemed to fly. The galleys that had put to sea, when about two miles out, discovered a vessel which they took to be of fourteen or fifteen banks. Such she was and when she sighted them, took to her heels in the hope of escape. In this she was frustrated, for the captain-galley was one of the swiftest afloat and gained upon the brigantine so rapidly that her master, perceiving no hope, bade his men cease rowing and give themselves up that our captain might be as little vexed as possible. But fate ruled otherwise and ordained that just as the captain-ship drew near enough to hear that they surrendered, two Turaquis, two drunken Turks in other words, sailing with several dozen others in the brigantine, discharged their muskets, killing two soldiers upon our forecastle. At this the general swore not to leave a man of them alive, but bore down so furiously that the other slipped away under the oars, and our vessel shot ahead a good distance. The enemy, seeing they had missed, sped away again with sail and oar while our galley was turning. But their diligence helped them less than their treachery harmed, for the captain-ship overhauled them in little over a half-mile, and clapping oars upon them took all prisoners.

By this time the two other galleys had come up and all four with the prize returned to the Strand, where a crowd awaited them, eager to see the capture. The general cast anchor near land, and recognising the city-viceroy, commanded the pinnace to be

launched to bring him aboard. He next ordered the seamen to lower the yard that they might hang the master of the brigantine then and there, along with the other Turks, numbering in all some thirty-six brave fellows, chiefly musketeers. The general asked which was the master, and was answered in Castilian by one of the captives (who proved to be a Spanish renegade) : ' That youth yonder, sir, is our master,' pointing to the fairest and gallantest swain the imagination could picture, of an age apparently under twenty. The general turned to him and said : ' Tell me, ill-advised dog, what moved you to kill my men, when you saw 'twas impossible to escape? is this the respect you bear captain-galleys? know you not that bravado is not valour? Faint hope should render men resolute not rash.' The master was about to reply but the general could not hear him then for he must meet the viceroy, now aboard with a few servants and townspeople.

' You have had a good chase, general,' said the viceroy. ' As fine as your excellency shall soon see dangling from this yard-arm.' ' How so?' ' Because against all law and right usage of war they killed two of my best men, and I swore to hang them every one, in particular this youth, the master of the brigantine;' and he pointed to him with hands tied and rope about his neck, awaiting his end. The viceroy looked and seeing him so beautiful, so gallant, so humble, wished to spare him — his beauty alone making a sufficient appeal. So he said to the lad : ' Tell me, master, are you Turk by birth or Moor or renegade?' To which the youth in Castilian : ' None of these.' ' Then what?' ' A Christian woman.' ' A woman and a Christian and in such dress and here! 'tis a thing more to bewilder than believe.' ' Delay then mine execution, sirs, for little will be lost in deferring vengeance while I tell my tale.' What heart so hard that would not soften at these words or at least hear what she had to say? The general yielded but added that no pardon could be hoped for for this outrageous offence. With this the narrative began :

' Of that nation more unfortunate than discreet, upon whom a very sea of calamity has swept these days, was I born, the

child of Moorish parents. In the course of their misfortunes I was carried by two of mine uncles to Barbary, for it availed me naught to aver I was a Christian, as I am — not one of your feigned ones either, but a true and Catholic. This stood me in no favour with those having our wretched banishment in charge, nor would mine uncles believe that it was not a lie and subterfuge that I might remain in the land of my birth. I had a wise and Christian father and with my mother's milk sucked in the Catholic faith ; was nurtured in good principles ; and neither in them methinks nor in speech did I betray I was of the Moors.

‘ On a parity with these virtues, as I believe them, my beauty, such as it may be, kept pace, and though my seclusion was close, it could not have been so complete as to escape the notice of a young gallant named Don Gaspar Gregorio, son and heir to one of the gentry whose village neighboured ours. How he saw me, how we spake together, how he became lost for me and I no gainer through him, would be too long to tell, especially when I fear that ’twixt my tongue and my neck a cruel rope will cut me short. He, knowing the language, mingled with the Moriscoes from other places and, as one of them, made friends with mine uncles on the way. My father, I must tell you, left our village the moment he heard of the first proclamation relating to our banishment, and prudent and foresighted as he was went to find a home for us in some foreign country. In a place known to me alone he left buried many pearls and jewels of price, along with money in cruzadoes and doubloons of gold, commanding me not to touch the treasure, even were we exiled before his return.

‘ I obeyed, and with mine uncles and other kinsmen and acquaintances passed over into Barbary, to Algiers, which was as if we were in very hell. The king heard of my beauty and rumour told him of my wealth, which in part turned out fortunately for me. He called me before him, asked from what part of Spain I came, and what money and treasures I had. I told him the name of our village, that the money and gems were hid there and could easily be found if I myself sought them. All this I said that his covetousness might prevail over my beauty to blind him.

While we thus conversed, word was brought that there had come with me one of the most gallant and beautiful youths conceivable. Of course I at once knew that they referred to Don Gaspar Gregorio, whose bearing exceeds the fairest that can be vaunted. When I considered the danger he ran, I was distressed, for among these barbarous Turks a handsome boy or youth is more prized than a woman, however fair.

‘The king bade them bring him in, asking me if what they said of the youth were true. Whereat, as if inspired by Heaven, I answered yes, but that ’twas no man but a woman like myself, and I begged him to let me go and clothe her properly, for then her beauty would shine most gloriously and she would appear before him with less diffidence. He told me I might do so and that we should arrange on the morrow how I should return to Spain for the hidden treasure. I spake with Don Gaspar, told him of his danger, clothed him like a Mooress and that afternoon brought him to the king who, duly impressed, planned to keep him as a present to the grand vizier. In order to escape the peril he would run in the seraglio of his own women and in distrust of himself, he ordered him to be placed in the house of some Mooresses of station, to protect and attend upon him. What we both suffered by this separation, for I need not deny that I love him, may be left to the imagination of those that have loved and are parted.

‘The king then made arrangements for me to return to Spain in this brigantine, accompanied by two Turks, these that killed your men. There embarked as well this Spanish renegade, who I am sure is a Christian disguised, with a greater wish of remaining here than of returning to Barbary. The rest of the crew are Moors and Turks, who serve at the cars. These two Turks, insolent and covetous, ignoring the orders to land us in our Christian garb at the first Spanish land we touched, would first scour this coast and take some prize if possible, fearing, if they put us ashore at once and galleys were along the coast, it would be discovered that a brigantine was in these waters and they would be seized. Last evening we sighted this shore and unaware of the nearness of these four galleys were discovered, with the

result you see. In a word Don Gregorio remains a Moorish woman among Moors, with almost the certainty of meeting his end, and I find myself with hands tied, fearing, or rather wishing, to lose that life whereof I am full weary. So this is the last of my lamentable story, true as it is distressful. All I ask is that you let me die like a Christian, as I have shown that in no way I partake of the error into which my nation has fallen.'

The maiden was silent, her eyes with soft tears, as were those of many others. The viceroy, tender and compassionate, with his own hands quietly loosed her lovely ones. While she was telling her strange narrative, the eyes of an ancient pilgrim that had boarded the galley with the viceroy fastened upon her, and barely had she ended, when he threw himself at her feet and clasping them in his arms, said in words broken by a thousand sobs and sighs : ' O Anna Felix, unhappy daughter mine, I am your father Ricote, who returned to find you, since I cannot live apart from my soul.' At these words Sancho, raising his head till then bowed with the humiliation of his late passage, opened his eyes and recognised in the pilgrim the very Ricote he had met the day of his leaving the government. He was certain too that this was his daughter who, now released, embraced her father, mingling her tears with his. The other, turning to the general and viceroy, said :

' This, señors, is my daughter, more unhappy in fortunes than name. Anna Felix is she called, with surname of Ricote, as celebrated for her beauty as for my wealth. I left my native-village to search among foreign kingdoms for one to harbour us, and having found it in Germany, I returned in this guise of pilgrim in company with some Germans in quest of my child and to unearth much treasure left behind. I did not find my daughter, but the treasure I have with me, and by this curious chance I have now recovered that which I prize above all wealth. If the slightness of our wrong-doing and our tears through the integrity of your justice can open a path to your pity, let us feel it, for never had we thought to offend you, nor have we in any way made one with the designs of our people, now justly banished.' It was now Sancho's turn to say : ' I know this Ricote well, and

that he speaks the truth in saying Anna Felix is his daughter. In the other trifles of going or coming, of having bad or good design, I meddle not.' The company knew not what to think of this remarkable occurrence, but the general said : ' At all events your tears will not permit me to fulfil mine oath. Live, fair Anna Felix, all Heaven's allotted years, and let the bold, bad men that worked thee wrong suffer the penalty. ' And straightway he commanded that the two Turks hang from the yard-arm. But the viceroy pleaded against this, for madness rather than viciousness had been their crime. The general yielded, for vengeance is not well taken in cold blood.

They next sought to devise a scheme for the rescue of Don Gaspar Gregorio, Ricote offering toward this object more than two thousand ducats in precious stones. Many methods were discussed but none seemed so good as that of the renegade, who suggested returning to Algiers in a small craft of some six banks manned by Christian oarsmen. He said he knew where, when and how he could and should embark, and knew as well the house where Don Gregorio stayed. The general and viceroy doubted whether or no to believe the man and whether or no to entrust him with the Christians at the oars. But Anna Felix said she would answer for him and Ricote was ready to ransom them were they taken. With things thus arranged the viceroy left the ship, and with him Don Antonio Moreno, who took Ricote and his daughter home with him. The viceroy charged him to care for and cherish them as best he could, offering anything of his own for their comfort — so kind were the feelings and so deep the charity Anna Felix' beauty stirred in his heart.

CHAPTER LXIV

An adventure that caused Don Quijote greater discomfort than any yet

THE wife of Don Antonio Moreno, the history relates, enjoyed welcoming Anna Felix to her home. She received her with much grace, as taken by her beauty as her sense, for in both she was well endowed ; and all the people of the city, as at the sound of a bell, came to wait upon her. Don Quijote advised his host that the plan hit upon for Don Gregorio's release was ill-judged, as more perilous than expedient, and better far 'twould be did they place himself with arms and steeds in Barbary, where he would effect the rescue despite all Moordom, even as Don Gaiferos had rescued his wife Melisendra. ' But consider, sir, ' interposed Sancho, ' that Señor Don Gaiferos found his wife on the mainland and on the mainland fetched her back to France, but in this case, supposing us to have rescued the gentleman, there's no way of getting him to Spain, for the sea lies between. ' ' There's a remedy for all things save death, ' declared the knight ; ' a barque coming along just then, we could board her though all the world said nay. ' ' Your worship paints it well enough and makes it appear most simple, ' replied Sancho, ' but long is the run 'twixt said and done, and I hold to the renegade, for he looks like a fellow of good parts and stout heart. ' Don Antonio promised that, should the latter come to grief, the recourse of sending the great Don Quijote would certainly be adopted. Two days later the renegade put out in a light barque of six oars to a side, manned by a strong crew, and two days after its departure the galleys set sail for the Levant. The general asked the viceroy to keep him informed of all that happened in the affairs of Don Gregorio and Anna Felix ; to which the viceroy agreed.

One morning as Don Quijote sallied forth to take the air along the Strand, armed cap-a-pie (for, as he often said :

Of arms my habit's made
And fighting's my repose,

and never for a moment was he seen without them), he beheld approaching another knight equipped like himself, bearing on his shield a resplendent moon. When within ear-shot this knight called loudly : ' Illustrious and never-adequately-praised Don Quijote de La Mancha, I, the Knight of the White Moon, whose unheard-of deeds will perchance bring him to your mind, come to contend with you and test the strength of your arms, that you may recognise and declare that my lady, be she whom she may, is beyond compare more lovely than your Dulcinea del Toboso ; which truth if you admit off-hand, you will avoid your own death and spare me the labour of its effecting. But if you fight and I emerge victorious, I shall ask no other satisfaction than that, dropping arms and adventures, you retire to your village for the space of one year and there live without putting hand to sword, in tranquil peace and profitable ease, to the advantage of your soul. But if I be the vanquished, my head shall be at your disposal, mine arms and steed your spoils and to you will pass the glory of my deeds. Consider and straight reply, for this day alone is free to me. '

Don Quijote was transfixed with wonder and amazement, both at the arrogance of the knight and the occasion of his challenge. With calm restraint he replied : ' Knight of the White Moon, whose deeds have but now come to my notice, I take mine oath that you have never looked upon the noble Dulcinea (else I am confident you could never have persevered in this demand), the sight of whom would have convinced you that there has not been nor could there be beauty compared with hers. Not saying therefore that you lie, but that you are at fault in the proposal, with the conditions named I at once accept your challenge, that the day to which your are limited may not expire. Alone of your terms I reject that in which the renown of your deeds shall pass to me, for, not knowing their nature, I am content with mine own, even as they are. Take then what part of the field you wish, and I will

do the same, and whom God shall prosper let Saint Peter bless.'

From the city they had discovered the Knight of the White Moon, and the Viceroy, hearing of his parley with Don Quijote and supposing it some fresh adventure planned by Don Antonio Moreno or other person, at once set forth with that gentleman and many others for the Strand, just as Don Quijote was turning Rocinante about that he might measure the course. Seeing that the two signalled for the encounter, the viceroy put himself between, demanding the cause of such sudden battle. The Knight of the White Moon explained that it was a question of the supremacy of beauty and briefly told what he had said to Don Quijote, together with the accepted conditions of the challenge. The viceroy then approached Don Antonio and asked if he knew this stranger-knight and was this some fresh trick they were playing upon their guest. Don Antonio said that he neither knew him nor whether the challenge had been given seriously or in jest. This answer left the viceroy doubtful as to whether or no he should let the combat advance further, but finding it impossible to accept it as other than a hoax, he withdrew from between them, saying: 'Sir knights, if there be no remedy but to yield the point or die, and Señor Don Quijote be deaf to advice and he of the Moon still deafer, in the hand of God be it and fall to.'

In courteous and sensible words he of the Moon thanked the viceroy; Don Quijote likewise, and commending himself to Heaven with all his heart, likewise to his Dulcinea as was his wont, he turned to take a little more field, seeing his adversary do the same. And now without trumpet or other martial instrument to announce the onset, both turned their steeds at even time. But as the Knight of the White Moon was the nimbler, he met Don Quijote at two-thirds the course and so irresistably that without touching him with his lance (which he seemed purposely to couch high) he brought horse and rider to earth in perilsome fall. At once upon him and setting lance to the other's visor he cried: 'You are vanquished and undone, do you not confess the articles of our combat.' Knocked almost witless with visor down and speaking brokenly as from a tomb, Don Quijote replied: 'Dulcinea del Toboso is the beautifullest woman in the

world, nor is it well that I, the most luckless of living knights, in my frailty gainsay the truth. Drive the lance home, errant, and rid me of live, having bereft me of honour.' 'That will I never do,' returned the Knight of the Moon; 'live, live in its perfection the fame of Dulcinea's beauty. Suffice it that the great Don Quijote retire to his village for a year, or till such time as I set, even as we agreed before entering the fight.' The viceroy, Don Antonio and many more heard all this and how our fallen champion made answer that as naught was demanded to the prejudice of his lady, he would comply with the rest like an upright and faithful knight. He of the White Moon wheeled about and bending his head in acknowledgement to the viceroy at half-gallop rode back to the city. The viceroy bade Don Antonio follow him and try to discover his identity.

They now raised Quijote and found him all-pale and all-perspiring. His steed, clean forspent, stirred not, and his squire, all-sad, all-forlorn, knew not what to say or where to turn. It seemed to him that all had been a dream and a thing of enchantment. He saw his master laid low and for a year debarred from arms. He imagined the light of his deeds obscured and the hopes of his fresh promises spent like smoke before the wind. He feared lest Rocinante be crippled for life, and his master fit for nothing, though a fit or two less would be welcome. Finally, at the bidding of the viceroy, they made a saddle of hands and carried Don Quijote to the city, whither as well returned the viceroy, anxious to learn who it was had done their guest so evil a turn.

CHAPTER LXV

The identity of the Knight of the Moon, the deliverance of Don Gregorio and other passages

DON Antonio sought after the Knight of the White Moon, and not singly, for many urchins followed, nay pursued him to one of the city taverns, where a squire came forth to receive and disarm him. He entered one of the lower rooms and after

him Don Antonio, whose bread wouldn't bake till he had placed the fellow. The knight, seeing that the gentleman didn't leave, said : ' I know very well, señor, that you come to learn who I am, and since there's no reason why I should withhold this knowledge, while my man is disarming me I'll put you in its true possession. First I will say that they call me the bachelor Samson Carrasco, and that I am of the same village as Don Quijote de La Mancha, whose mania and mummeries move all his friends to pity. Among those most afflicted am I, and believing that his health lies in rest at home, I devised this scheme of returning him thither. Three months back I sallied forth as errant, under the title of the Knight of the Mirrors, with the purpose of fighting and subduing him, without harm to himself, stating as the condition of our combat that the vanquished remain at the will of the victor. What I thought to demand of him (for already I considered him as laid low) was that he return to his village and not leave it for a year, in which interim he might be restored. But fate ruled otherwise : he threw me from my horse and my intention missed fire. He pursued his journey and I returned vanquished, vexed and battered from my fall, which was serious enough. But not for this did my desire rest to seek him out and reduce him, as to-day I have done. And as he is most faithful in observing the ordinances of errant-arms, there's no doubt he'll keep this our compact and word. This, sir, is my story ; prithee betray me not or tell Don Quijote I am here, that my well-meant resolve may prove effective, and that a man with the rarest wit may recover it, would this nonsense of chivalry but leave him. '

' Ah ! ' exclaimed Don Antonio ; ' may God forgive the wrong you do the world in seeking to make sane its most gracious madman ! See you not, sir, that no benefit derived from Don Quijote's restoration can equal the delight his vagaries afford ? However, I imagine that all this industry of señor bachelor will never reclaim a mind so wholly gone, and were it not uncharitable I should say may Don Quijote never be hale again, for with his health we shall lose not only his own pleasantries but those of Sancho Panza his squire, either of which can turn melancholy

itself to mirth. However, I shall seal my lips and keep mum, that we may see if I am right in suspecting that Señor Carrasco's trouble will prove fruitless.' The other replied that the affair was at any rate well started and he hoped for happy issue. And with armour packed upon a mule, mounting the same steed wherewith he had done battle, he left the city and returned home, naught occurring worthy of note in this faithful history. Don Antonio told the viceroy the bachelor's plot, and from it the latter received little pleasure, for upon Don Quijote's retirement all would be lost that his escapades furnished.

Six days the knight remained in bed, sad, pensive, sorrowful and disgruntled, viewing his misfortune in all lights. Sancho tried to console him, saying among other things : ' Let your worship raise your head, master mine. Cheer up a bit if you can and thank Heaven that though you came to the ground, 'twas not with broken rib. You know that where they give them, they take them, and that not always are flitches where there are hooks. A fig for the doctor, for there's no need of him in curing this ailment. Let us go home and drop looking for adventures in towns and countries unknown to us, for, if it be rightly considered, I am the greater loser, though your worship is the most afflicted. For though with the government I lost all desire to rule, I still should relish being a count, which I never can be if your worship, taking my advise, drop your chivalry and cut off your chance of kingship and all my hopes go up in smoke.' ' Peace, Sancho, for you know my withdrawal is to last but a year, when I shall return to mine honoured calling, nor will there be lacking a kingdom to gain and a countship to give.' ' God hear it and sin be deaf,' said Sancho, ' and ever have I heard that a good hope is better than a bad holding.'

At this moment Don Antonio entered, saying with signs of pleasure : ' Good news, good news, Señor Don Quijote : Don Gregorio and the renegade who went to his deliverance are on the Strand. On the Strand do I say ? they are by this time at the viceroy's house and in a second will be here.' Don Quijote was little cheered and said : ' Verily I was on the point of saying that I should have been pleased had it resulted otherwise, for that

would have necessitated my crossing to Barbary, where by the puissance of mine arm I should have liberated not only Don Gregorio but all the Christian captives there. But what do I say, miserable that I am ? am not I the enslaved one, the undone ? am not I he that cannot take arms for a twelvemonth ? Then what do I propose ? wherefore do I boast, when the distaff suits me rather than the sword ? ' Enough of that, sir,' said Sancho ; ' let the hen live though it be with the pip, and to-day for thee and to-morrow for me, and in these matters of cuffs and encounters there's no use troubling, for he that is down to-day will be up to-morrow, unless he lie abed, unless he give way to despair I mean and pluck not fresh courage for new combats. Let your worship rise to welcome Don Gregorio. The people are making a hubbub and he must be in the house. '

Such was the case, for as soon as Don Gregorio and the renegade had given account to the viceroy of their going and return, they hurried to the house of Don Antonio, since the former was eager to see Anna Felix. Though when rescued from Algiers the lover had been in woman's clothes, on the barque he had changed garb with a captive that had fled with him ; but whatever his dress, he would appear a person to be sought, courted and esteemed, for great was his beauty — of the age apparently of seventeen or eighteen years. Ricote and his daughter came forth to greet him, the father in tears, the girl with diffidence. The onlookers were amazed at the combined beauty of these lovers, who even now embraced not, for true love shuns demonstration. Silence here spake for them and their eyes were the tongues that told the depth of their affection.

The renegade now described the manner and means of Don Gregorio's rescue, while the other briefly related the dangers and difficulties he had had to face with the women with whom he had been cloistered, but all briefly, showing that his discretion surpassed his years. Ricote paid the renegade and his crew liberally, and the former was reincorporated with the Church and from a rotten member became sound and clean through penance and contrition. Two days later the viceroy and Don Antonio consulted as to how Anna Felix and her father might abide in Spain,

seeing no reason why daughter so Christian and father palpably of such honest aims should suffer the general banishment. Don Antonio offered to go to court, whither other matters called him, and negotiate for this, believing that there through gifts and favour difficulties are made smooth.

‘No,’ said Ricote, ‘naught can be expected of favour or gifts, for with the great Don Bernadino de Velasco, Count of Salazar, into whose hands His Majesty placed our expulsion, nor prayers nor promises nor bribes nor griefs avail. Though he mingles pity with justice, he applies the cautery that burns rather than the ointment that mollifies, for he sees our whole state rotting through contamination. By prudence, by sagacity, by industry and the terror he inspires, on his broad shoulders he has carried the weight of this business to due execution, our tricks, ruses, stratagems and petitions having no power to dazzle his Argus eyes, ever alert that not one of us may be left hid like a root to blossom later and bear poisonous fruit here in Spain, now freed and purified of the fears wherein the greatness of our numbers kept her. Heroic resolve of the great Philip the third and exceptional foresight in entrusting all to the said Don Bernadino de Velasco!’

‘At all events,’ replied Don Antonio, ‘being there I shall exert myself to the utmost and Heaven adjust it as it will. Don Gregorio shall go with me to relieve the anxiety his parents must feel at his absence, Anna Felix shall remain here with my wife or in a nunnery, and I am sure that señor viceroy will be glad to have Ricote at his house till it is seen how I fare. The viceroy agreed, but Don Gregorio, remembering the past said on no account could or would he leave Anna Felix; but considering that after he had seen his parents he could return, he too fell in line. The day of departure arrived, not without tears, sighs, swoons and moans on the lovers’ part. Ricote offered his future son-in-law a thousand crowns, if he wished them, but the latter took only five lent him by Don Antonio. Don Quijote with Sancho, since his fall permitted not earlier, set out two days after, the knight in riding gear, the squire afoot, since Dapple was armour-laden.

CHAPTER LXVI

Which treats of what will be seen of him that reads or
hears that listens

ON leaving Barcelona Don Quijote turned to view the place of his downfall, saying : ' Here was Troy ! here my luck, not my lack, robbed me of all glory. Here fortune made me the sport of her change and change-about and here my deeds were darkened. Here in short fell my felicity, never to rise again.' On this Sancho said : ' 'Tis as much the part of gallant breasts, master mine, to be faithful in darkness as to wear a cheerful face in the sun. This I learn from myself, for if when governor I was happy, now that I am a squire and afoot, I am not sad. For I have heard tell that this they call fortune hereabouts is a drunken capricious woman and blind withal, so sees not what she does, nor whom she casts down or sets up.'

' You are much of a sage, Sancho, and speak wisely ; I do not know who taught you. But this I can tell, that there's no such thing as fortune, nor do things that befall us, good or bad as they may be, happen by chance, but by the particular providence of Heaven. Hence arises the common saw, every man is forger of his fate. I have been of mine, though not with the needed prudence ; therefore has my pride cast me down. I should have foreseen that the leanness of Rocinante would be as naught before the great bulk of the other. I did my best however, and though overthrown and dishonoured, I lost not, nor could I lose, the virtue of fulfilling my vow. While errant, bold and valiant, with works and with hands I accredited my deeds, and now, though but a squireling of the road, I'll accredit my words by making good my promise. Trudge on then, Sancho friend, and let us homeward hie to keep the year of our novitiate, in which seclusion we shall receive new strength for returning to the never-by-me-forgotten exercise of arms.'

‘ Señor, ’ said Sancho, ‘ this trudging is not so cheerful that it incites and inspires me to cover long distances. Let’s leave these arms hanging from some tree like a hanged man and with me on Dapple and my feet off the ground we can make runs such as your worship wills and measures. To think I shall go all the way on foot and cover the ground nimbly is to think topsy-turvy. ’
‘ Well spoken, Sancho : let mine arms be hung for a trophy and at their feet or near by we shall grave on the trees what was writ on Roland’s arms :

Let none these arms remove
That cannot his deserts with Roland prove. ’

‘ It couldn’t be done better, ’ said Sancho, ‘ and were it not that we should miss him on the journey, it might be well to hang Rocinante also. ’ ‘ Neither he nor the arms should I wish to see strung up, ’ returned the other, ‘ lest it be said, to good service, poor pay. ’ ‘ Indeed your worship says well, for in the opinion of the wise the fault of the ass should not be laid on the pannel, and since your worship is alone to blame for this affair, ’tis yourself should bear the punishment ; your wrath should not be vented on the already broken and bloody armour, on the meekness of Rocinante, nor yet on the softness of my feet, asking them to travel further than is right. ’

In this and other discourse they passed all that day and the four following with naught occurring to impede their journey, but on the fifth being a festival, on entering a village they found much people making merry about the door of an inn. As Don Quijote rode up, a peasant cried : ‘ One of these two gentlemen, since they don’t know the parties, can decide what shall be done about our wager. ’ ‘ I shall be pleased to, ’ replied Don Quijote, ‘ and fairly, if I am made to understand it. ’ ‘ This, then, is the case, ’ began the peasant : ‘ a man of this village, so fat that he weighs twenty stone, has challenged his neighbour, who weighs only nine, to run a hundred yards even weights, but when asked how they were to be made equal, suggested that the challenged carry eleven stone of iron on his back. ’

‘ Never ! ’ struck in Sancho before his master could reply ; ‘ I, that only the other day ceased to be governor and judge, as

all the world knows, can settle and give judgment on the whole case.' 'Give it then and welcome, Sancho friend,' vouchsafed his master, 'for I am not fit to give crumbs to a cat, my wits are that shaken and gone.' 'With this leave,' said Sancho to the peasants (who had drawn round him with open mouths, awaiting the delivery of his sentence), 'let me tell you, brothers, that what mister fatman seeks won't hold water and hasn't the shadow of justice, for, if as 'tis said the challenged has choice of weapon, it's unfit that the other should choose for him, and of a kind to hinder and prevent his winning the race. My opinion, then, is that mister fatman-challenger prune, peel, pare, scrape, trim and clear away eleven stone of his flesh, somewhere or other on his body, as may seem and be best for him, and then at nine stone both can run on fair terms.'

'I vow,' said a peasant, 'this gentleman has spoken like a saint and adjudged like a canon. But on my faith the fat one is loth to part with an ounce of his flesh, to say nothing of eleven stone.' 'Twere better to call the wager off then,' said another, 'that the lean one may not collapse beneath the weight nor the fat one be defleshed. Let half the bet be spent for wine and let us lead these gentlemen to the tavern where the dear old stuff is waiting, and on me the cloak when it rains.' 'I thank you, gentlemen,' replied Don Quijote, 'but not a moment can I delay, for sad thoughts and trials force my discourtesy, urging me apace.' And letting Rocinante feel the spur he passed on, leaving all in wonder at his strange comportment as well as at the perception of his squire, and a peasant said: 'If the man is that wise, what must be the master? I'll wager they've just come from Salamanca, and in a trice they'll come to be judges at the capital. 'Tis all a trick, naught but study and more study, a little favour and fortune, and when least he looks for it he finds himself with staff in hand or mitre on head.'

Master and squire passed the night in an open field beneath the bare unclouded sky. Next day as they pursued their journey they saw approaching a man on foot with wallet around his neck and a javelin or pike in his hand, the proper outfit of a courier. As he drew near he mended his pace and reaching them on the

half-run embraced the errant's thigh (for he could reach no higher), crying with high jubilation : ' O my Señor Don Quijote de La Mancha, and what delight will thrill the heart of my master when he hears your worship is returning to his castle, where still he is and the duchess.' ' I know you not, friend,' replied Don Quijote, ' nor can I think who you are, if you don't tell me.' ' I, Señor Don Quijote, am Tosilos the duke's lacquey, that refused to fight with your worship over the marrying of Doña Rodriguez' daughter.' ' So help me God !' cried the knight; ' is it possible you are he whom mine enemies the enchanters transformed into the lacquey you speak of that I might lose the glory of that battle ?'

' Nay, nay, good sir,' responded the messenger, ' there was no enchantment there nor change of face : the same lacquey Tosilos entered the lists that came out of it. I meant to marry me without a set-to, for the chit looked well to me. Yet it turned out quite differently, since as soon as your worship had gone, my master made them give me a hundred whalings for disobeying orders, and it ended in the lass becoming a nun and the mother's returning to Castile. I am now bound for Barcelona with a packet of letters from my master to the viceroy. Should your worship like a little draught, pure if a bit warm, I have a calabash of the dear old stuff, with some slices of Tronchon cheese, a caller and waker of thirst, should it be napping.' ' I accept,' spoke up Sancho, ' and let all other courtesy pass. Pour out, good Tosilos, despite and in defiance of all the magicians of the Indies.' ' Of a truth, Sancho, you are the greatest glutton in the world and the greatest booby, not to see this messenger is enchanted and this Tosilos a hoax. Abide with him and fill your belly ; I'll go slowly and wait till you come.'

The lacquey laughed, unsheathed his calabash, unwalleted the cheese, and taking out a little bread he and Sancho sitting on the greensward in good peace and fellowship touched bottom with the wallet, and with such relish that they licked the packet of letters because it smelt of cheese. Said Tosilos : ' Surely, friend Sancho, this your master is bound to be mad.' ' How bound ?' quoth the other ; ' he owes nothing to nobody, for he pays as he

goes, expecially when the money is folly. I see it plainly enough and tell him so, but what's the use? the more that all is over with now, for he has been vanquished by the Knight of the White Moon.' Tosilos prayed him tell of that incident, but Sancho said 'twould be unmannerly to keep his master waiting; another day, should they meet, he would find opportunity. Rising from the ground he shook the crumbs from coat and beard and bidding Tosilos good-bye drove Dapple before him and after his master whom he found waiting in the shade of a tree.

CHAPTER LXVII

Don Quijote resolves to turn shepherd and pursue the pastoral life during the year of probation, along with other passages verily delightful and good

IF many thoughts were wont to harass our knight before his overthrow, how many more now he was fallen. There, as he rested in the shade of a tree, they swarmed as flies about honey. Some ran on the disenchantment of Dulcinea and others on the life he should lead during his enforced withdrawal. Sancho, arriving, praised the liberal nature of the lacquey Tosilos, and his master said: 'Can you still think him a veritable lacquey? One would think there had vanished from your thought that you had seen Dulcinea transformed into a peasant and the Knight of the Mirrors into the bachelor Samson Carrasco. But tell me, did you question this you call Tosilos what God had done with Altisidora, whether or no she wept mine absence? or were the thoughts of love that goaded her in my presence already given into oblivion?' 'Mine own were not of the sort,' said Sancho, 'to let me ask moonshine. Body of me, sire, is your worship now in a position to enquire after others' fancies, especially amorous ones?'

'Look, boy,' said the knight, 'there's big difference 'twixt acts of love and of gratitude. It might easily be that a knight becomes disenamoured, but, speaking in all strictness, he can

never be an ingrate. Altisidora, 'twould seem, loved me deeply : she gave me three kerchiefs as you know, wept my leaving, cursed me, calling me names and shamelessly abusing me in public : all signs of her adoration, for lovers' rage is wont to take the form of anathema. I had no hopes to proffer nor treasures to bestow, for mine hopes are pledged to Dulcinea and an errant's treasures like an elf's exist in the air only. I can but give her then these memories, without prejudice to those I keep of Dulcinea, her whom you wrong by postponing the flaying of your carcass, which may I see eaten by wolves, since you'd sooner hold it for the worms than for the relief of that unfortunate fair one.'

' Señor, ' replied the other, ' if the truth must be told, I can't persuade myself that the beating my backsides has aught to do with disenchanting the enchanted, which is as if we should say, If the head ache, anoint the knee-pan. At least I dare swear that in all the histories of knights-errant your worship has read, you have never come across a disenchanting by stripes. But whether you have or not, I'll give them when I please and there's plenty of time.' ' God grant it, and may Heaven make you aware of the debt you owe my lady, and yours, since you are mine.' With these words they went travelling along till they came to the spot where they had been run over by the bulls. Don Quijote recognised it and said to Sancho :

' This is the mead where we fell in with the gay shepherdesses and gallant shepherds that would revive and emulate the pastoral Arcady : an idea no less novel than good, and in its imitation, if it seem well to you, I could wish, O Sancho, that you and I during the period of my retreat likewise transform ourselves into shepherds. I'll buy a few ewes and other requisites of the pastoral life, and calling myself the shepherd Quijotiz and you the shepherd Pancino, we'll wander over wood over mountain over field over fountain, here singing, there mourning, drinking the liquid crystal of the springs, now of the clear water-brooks, now of the brimming rivers. The oaks shall give us with bountiful hand of their luscious fruit, the trunks of the rock-hard cork will afford us seats, the willows shade, the roses perfume, the broad

meads carpets of a thousand varied colours. Breath we shall draw of the transparent air and light from the moon and stars maugre the darkness ; song will lend us pleasure, and weeping joy. Nor will Apollo deny us verses nor Love his conceits, whereby we shall make us famous and immortal, not only now but in the times to come.'

'Egad,' quoth the other, 'but this life squares nay corners with me to a T; ay, if the bachelor and barber but glimpse us, they'll wish to turn shepherd too. Nay, God grant it may not come into the priest's head to enter the fold, for he's a jolly one, fond of good times.' 'You say well; the bachelor, when he leaps the pale, as he surely will, can call himself Samsino or Carrascon, while Nicholoso will just fit the barber, even as old Boscan named himself Nemoroso. Our priest and curate I know not what we can call unless a name derived from his office, such as Curiambro. As for the shepherdesses of whom we're to be enamoured, as among pears we can choose their names. My lady-love's happens to sort as well with the pastoral as the princely calling, so why should I trouble for another, but you, Sancho, can call yours what you please.'

'Teresona (big Teresa) I shall call mine, which fits well with her size. 'Tis her I shall celebrate in my verses, discovering my chaste thoughts, for I don't go looking in others' houses for better bread than wheat. The priest would look as well without a shepherdess, for the sake of example, but let the bachelor have whom he please — his soul is in his hand.' 'So help me God,' cried the other, 'and what a life we shall lead, son! What hautboys shall fill our ears! what Zamoran bagpipes, what tambourines, timbrels and rebecks! And if amid this variety there also sound the albogues, nigh all the pastoral instruments will be represented.' 'And what are these last?' enquired Sancho; 'I never heard them named or played in all my life.'

'Albogues are copper plates resembling candlestick-bottoms which, when struck together on the hollow side make a sound that, if not very harmonious and pleasing, is yet not offensive and fits in well with the crudeness of the bagpipe and tambourine. The word is Moorish, like all that in Castilian commence

with al, such as almohaza, almorzar, alhombra, alguacil, alhuzema, almacén, alcancía and others, for there are sure to be a few more. Three words only in our tongue that end in í are Moorish, namely borceguí, zaquizamí and maravedí; alhelí and alfaquí, as much by the initial al as by the final í are also recognised as Arabic — this I have said in passing, having been prompted by the word albogues. The fact that I am something of a poet as you know and the bachelor a good deal of a one will help not a little in forwarding our plans. Of the priest I say nothing, though he too I venture smacks a little of the poet and as for the barber I am certain, for all or most of his calling are ballad-mongers and thrum the guitar. I shall complain of absence; you will discover your constancy; the shepherd Carrascon will praise himself as a rejected suitor and the priest Curiambro may sing what most pleases him, and so the business will go forward and leave naught to be desired.'

To this the squire made answer: 'I, sir, am so unlucky that I tremble lest the day that finds me in this calling will never come. For O! what bright and shiny spoons shall I make when I see myself a shepherd! what bread-puddings and cream-cheeses, what garlands and all manner of shepherds' baubles! which, though though they won't win me the name of wise man, will be sure to win me reputation as a wit. Sanchica my daughter will bear our dinner to the fold — but take care, she's good-looking and there are shepherds more roguish than simple and I wouldn't that she went for wool and came home shorn. Your love-makings and evil desires are as prone to walk the country as the cities, into shepherds' huts as into royal palaces. Remove the cause and you remove the sin, and if eyes don't see, heart doesn't break, and better a leap o'er the hedge than the prayers of good men.' 'No more refrains, boy; any one of them would have made plain your thought and oft have I warned you not to be so open-handed with these sayings — to show a little self-restraint. I feel as if 'twere all preaching in the desert: my mother beats me, yet I whip the top.'

'And I feel that your worship is like the saying, Quoth the frying-pan to the kettle, Get out, black eyes: you chide me for

uttering proverbs and then your worship strings them in pairs.' 'Yes, Sancho, but I introduce them pertinently, fitting them like a ring to the finger, whereas you drag them in by the hair rather than lead them. If my memory serve me, I have before remarked that proverbs are words of wisdom drawn from the experience and reflection of our fathers, and that a saw spoken at random is nonsense, not a maxim. But enough of this : the night is coming, so let us retire from the high road and find where we may pass it, for God knows what the morrow will be.' They retired accordingly and supped late and ill, to the distress of one that could not but think of the hard lines errantry had to follow in woods and mountains, even though occasionally plenty showed her face in castles and homes, as there with Don Diego de Miranda, again at the nuptials of the rich Camacho and last of all with Don Antonio Moreno. But realising that it couldn't always be day nor for that matter always night, unlike his master he passed that one in sleep.

CHAPTER LXVIII

The bristly adventure that overtook the errant of La Mancha

THE night was fairly dark for though the moon was in the sky she wasn't in a quarter to be seen — at times mistress Diana takes the air at the antipodes, leaving our own mountains and valleys black and shadowy. Don Quijote complied with nature and slept out the first sweet sleep but yielded not to the second ; quite the reverse of Sancho, who never knew a second, since his first lasted from twilight to dawn, manifesting a sound constitution and few cares. Those of his master so beset him that he roused the squire saying : ' I am amazed at the liberties you take, Sancho son. Methinks you must be of marble or unyielding bronze, wherein is neither emotion nor feeling. I wake while you slumber, I weep while you sing, I faint from fasting while you, sluggard, are torpid from satiety. Good servants should share

their masters' ills and feel their sorrows, for decency's sake at least. Note the night's serenity, the utter solitude, inviting us to mingle vigils with our sleep. On your life, arise and go apart, my son, and with cheerful heart and grateful spirit let fall three or four hundred strokes toward the disenchantment of Dulcinea. This I ask as a favour, not caring to come to arms with you again, knowing the weight of yours. This done we shall pass the remainder of the night singing, I my severance, you your constancy; and so make beginning of the life we are to follow in our village.'

'Master,' replied the other, 'I am no friar to rise in the middle of my sleep and flog me, and little methinks can one pass from the extreme of whipping-pains to that of music. Let me sleep, your worship, nor hurry me in this matter of the scourging, or I shall be driven to vow never to touch a hair of my coat, to say nothing of my flesh.' 'O obdurate heart, O pitiless squire, O bread ill-bestowed and favours ill-considered, both those already done and those I think to do! Through me you found yourself governor, through me you find yourself with present hopes of becoming a count or its equivalent; nor shall they be but hopes beyond the year, for, *Post tenebras spero lucem*.' 'That is beyond me,' returned Sancho; 'all I know is that while I sleep, I've neither hopes nor fears nor toil nor glory. Blessed be the man that invented sleep, the cloak that covers all men's thoughts, meat that satisfies hunger, water that quenches thirst, fire that warms, cold that tempers, a common coin in short that buys all things, a balance and weight that makes equal shepherd and king, fool and wise man. One fault alone can be found with sleep, so I've heard tell, that she's akin to death, for 'twixt the sleeping and dead, there's little to be said.' 'Never have I heard you speak so elegantly as now, Sancho, whence the truth of the proverb I've heard on your tongue, *Not with whom thou art bred, but with whom thou art fed*.' 'Woe's me, master, master! no longer blame me for stringing saws, when they fall from your lips in pairs and though there's the difference that yours hit and mine are beside the mark, yet all are saws.'

They had proceeded this far when they heard a frightful and

deafening noise resound through those valleys. The knight arose and put hand to sword, but his squire hid beneath Dapple, piling the armour on one side and the ass's pannel on the other. Gradually the sound increased, approaching the timorous ones or one, for the other's valour can be taken for granted. The case was that six hundred hogs were being driven for sale at a fair, yet so great was the noise of their snorting that with ears stunned neither master nor man could guess what might be. The wide-winged and grunting troop came on pell-mell and with no respect of persons passed straight over Don Quijote and Sancho, demolishing the latter's card-house and carrying knight and steed on its tide. The number, the noise, the speed wherewith the unclean beasts advanced, brought to chaos and the ground pack-saddle, arms, Dapple and the rest. Sancho rose as he could and asked his master for the sword, saying he'd kill a half-dozen of these gentlemen and their unmannerly swine, as he now perceived them. But his master counselled :

‘ Let them be, friend ; this affront is but penalty for my sin : just chastisement from Heaven on a vanquished errant is it that jackals eat him, wasps sting him and hogs trample him under foot.’ ‘ As well must it be on their squires,’ said the other, ‘ that flies bite them, lice devour them and hunger surrounds them on all sides. Were squires sons or close kin of knights, ’twouldn't be strange if they suffered the punishment of their masters' sins down to the fourth generation. But with you and me, what have the Panzas to do with the Quijotes ? Ah well, let's sleep what little of the night be left ; God will dawn and we shall thrive.’ ‘ Sleep then, for you were born to sleep, but I to watch, and in the interval I'll give rein to my thoughts, venting them in a little madrigal, which unknown to you just now I composed.’ And the other : ‘ It has always seemed to me that the thoughts that make room for the writing of verses can't be very great ones. But let your knightship verse it as you please and I'll sleep as I can.’ And taking the ground he coiled himself up and slept an easy slumber, undisturbed by promises or debts or any woe. His master leaned against a beach or oak (Cid Hamet doesn't specify) and sang to the music of his sighs. Each line he accom-

panied with not a few tears, like one whose heart was transfixed with the pain of his overthrow and of absence from Dulcinea.

And now dawn came and the sun darted his rays into Sancho's eyes. He wakened, shook himself and stretched his drowsy limbs, gazing at the havoc wrought by the swine on his stores and cursing them and not them alone. The pair took up their journey and late in the afternoon beheld approaching some ten mounted men and four or five afoot. The knight's heart shook and Sancho's fell, for the group bore lances and shields in all the guise of war. Turning to his squire the master said : ' Had I the wielding of my weapons and my word had not tied mine arms, this rout that bears down upon us would be to me but cakes and cookies ; but it may result other than we fear. ' Here the mounted men came up and raising spears silently surrounded Don Quijote as if threatening death. One of the footmen, finger to mouth to enjoin silence, seized Rocinante's bridle and led him from the road, while the others, hemming in Sancho and the ass, followed their chief, all preserving a marvellous silence.

Two or three times Don Quijote would have questioned whither they carried him and why, but scarce came the words to his lips, when forced back with lance-points. And with Sancho the same, for barely would he open his mouth when a footman pricked him with a goad, and Dapple too, as if he also were about to speak. The night closed in, they quickened their pace and the captives' fear increased, particularly as they heard the men call to them from time to time : ' Get a move on, Troglo-dytes ; hold your tongues, barbarians ; pay up, Anthropophagi ; stop your whining, Scythians ; shut your eyes, murderous Polyphemi, cannibal lions ; ' and other ephitets wherewith they teased the ears of the wretched pair. Sancho skipped along, saying to himself : ' Are we frogs and eels ? we barbers and popinjays ? we bitchlings with your hist, hist ? It likes me not these names ; by an ill wind the corn is threshed. Every ill berates us at once, like blows on a dog, and God grant they may stop here with what this misadventurous adventure promises. '

The knight rode bewildered, nor for all his conjectures could surmise what meant these imprecations. Alone he gathered it

boded no ill and threatened much evil. About an hour after dark they arrived at a castle which at once Don Quijote knew to be the duke's where he had stopped such a short space before. 'So help me God!' he cried as he saw the dwelling, 'and what does this mean? Truly in this house all is courtesy and attention, yet for the vanquished good is changed to bad and bad to worse.' They entered the large court of the castle and found it decorated and embellished in a way that increased their astonishment and doubled their fears — as will be seen in the following chapter.

CHAPTER LXIX

**The rarest and most original occasion that ever befell
Don Quijote in the whole course of his chivalries**

THE horsemen dismounted and assisted by the footmen quickly caught up the captives in their arms, bearing them into the court, about which blazed in their sconces well-nigh a hundred torches and about the galleries more than five hundred lamps, so that in spite of the darkness, which was sufficiently dense, daylight was not missed. In the very centre of the court rose a tomb some two yards from the ground, entirely covered by a spacious canopy of black velvet, around which on the steps were burning candles in more than a hundred candlesticks. Upon the tomb lay the corpse of a damsel so fair she made death itself beautiful. Her head rested upon a pillow of brocade, crowned with a garland of many sweet-smelling flowers; her hands were crossed above her breast and between them a branch of the yellow and triumphal palm. Along one side of the court ran a staging, seated upon which were two persons whose crowns and sceptres betokened them kings, real or feigned. At the side of the staging and approached by steps were two chairs, upon which their captors now made the knight and squire take seats, themselves silent and making signs to the pair to be the same; but such warning was superfluous for they were tongue-tied with wonder.

There now mounted the staging, followed by a great concourse, two notable personages, whom the knight at once saw were the duke and duchess his former hosts, and these sat themselves on two richly ornamented chairs next the apparent kings. Who wouldn't have marvelled at all this, the more to see as Don Quijote did that the body on the tomb was that of the lovely Altisidora ? As the ducal pair mounted to their places, master and man made profound obeisance, acknowledged by a slight inclination of the head. Next an officer came across and threw over Sancho's shoulders a robe of black buckram, painted with flames, and removing his cap put in its place a mitre resembling those worn by penitents of the Holy Office, whispering to him that he mustn't unsew his lips, else they would either gag or kill him. Sancho looked all over his person and found it ablaze with flames, but as they didn't burn, he cared not two coppers. He removed the mitre and found it painted with devils, and muttered as he put in on again : ' All's well, for those do not burn me nor these carry me off.' Don Quijote also looked him over and though fear had stunned his senses, he couldn't but smile at the figure cut by his squire.

And now from beneath the tomb to all seeming there began the low and pleasant sound of flutes which, unbroken by human voice, for silence itself there kept silent, came soft and amorous. Then suddenly there arose, near the pillow of the corpse, a fair swain clad in Roman garb, who to his harp-music in sweet clear voice sang two verses of a song. ' Enough,' cried one of the royal pair ; ' no more, songster divine ! for you would never have done were you to rehearse the death and graces of the peerless Altisidora — not dead as the ignorant world believes but alive in the tongues of fame and in the penance which, to restore her to light, Sancho Panza here present has to undergo. Therefore, do thou, O Rhadamanthus, that judgest with me in the dismal depths of Dis, since thou knowest all the inscrutable fates have decreed concerning the resurrection of the maid, speak and declare forthwith, that the joy we anticipate at her return may be no longer delayed.' Scarce had Minos, the companion judge of Rhadamanthus, said this when rising to his feet the other

cried : ' Ho there, officers of the house ! high and low, big and little, hurry one and all and seal Sancho's face with four and twenty slaps, a dozen pinches and twice three pin-pricks on arms and thighs, for in these rests the salvation of the fair one. '

At this Sancho broke silence and cried : ' I swear by all things that I will as soon let my face be sealed or my cheeks fingered as turn Moor. Body of me, and what has the handling of my countenance to do with the resurrection of this girl ? The old woman went daft over the spinach : they enchant Dulcinea and then flay me to get her out again ; Altisidora dies of diseases it pleased God to send her, and to revive the wench they must slap me four times and twenty, cripple my body with pin-pricks and pinch mine arms black and blue. These jokes for your brother-in-law, for I'm an old hog : none of your, Here, here, with me. ' ' Thou shalt die, ' quoth Rhadamanthus ; ' yield, tiger ; humble thyself, proud Nimrod ; suffer and be silent, since only possibilities are asked. Don't argue the difficulties of this case ; slapped thou must be, pricked thou hast to see thyself ; pinched, thou shalt groan. Ho officers, I say, execute my bidding ! or by the faith of an honest man ye shall know why ye were born. '

Hereupon through the court marched six duennas in single file, four with spectacles and all with right hands on high and wrists bared to the length of four fingers, as is now the fashion to make the hand appear larger. Sancho, seeing them, roared like a bull : ' I might let the whole world handle my face, but allow duennas to touch me — never ! Let them cat-claw my features as they did my master's in this same castle ; let them transfix my body with sharp daggers or tear mine arms with burning pincers and I'll bear it patiently for the sake of these gentlefolk. But that duennas should touch me, I'll not consent though the devil fetch me. ' But here his master broke silence, saying : ' Have patience, my son, and satisfy this lord and lady, giving thanks to Heaven that such virtue resides in your person that by its martyrdom you liberate the enchanted and restore the dead. '

The duennas were now about Sancho who, a trifle less rabid and a trifle more resigned, fixing himself firmly in his seat, lent his face and beard to the first comer who gave him a slap well

sealed and made him a low bow. 'Less courtesy, less cosmetics, mistress duenna; by God but your hands smell of vinegar-wash.' The other duennas sealed him and many of the household pinched him, but what proved the overload were the pin-pricks, for rising in a rage the penitent seized a lighted torch and running after his persecutors cried: 'Avaunt, ye ministers of hell; I am no brass not to feel these outrageous torturings.' But straightway Altisidora, weary of her position, turned a little and all the host cried: 'She liveth, Altisidora liveth;' and Rhadamanthus shouted to Sancho to ease his wrath for all was achieved.

And now Don Quijote, who had seen Altisidora move, knelt before his squire saying: 'Child of my bowels, not to say my shield-bearer, now is the time to practise some of the strokes due the disenchantment of Dulcinea. Now I repeat is the hour when your virtue is seasoned and prepared to work the expected good.' But he received for reply: 'Dodge upon dodge methinks this and not honey upon pancakes. A pleasant thing 'twould be if on top of pinches, slaps and pin-pricks lashes were to follow. The only thing left is to tie a big stone round my neck and drop me down a well, which wouldn't much grieve me if I'm to continue the wedding-heifer for others' ailments. Avaunt! if not, by God I'll fling out all by the dozen, though it spoil the sale.'

Altisidora now raised herself to a sitting posture on the tomb, and instantly the clarions sounded, accompanied by the flutes and many voices acclaiming: 'Long live Altisidora, long and long!' The duke, the duchess and the kings then a rose and with Don Quijote and Sancho went to receive the resurrected damsel and help her off the tomb. She, almost fainting, bowed to the ducal pair and the kings, and glancing across at Don Quijote thus addressed him: 'May God forgive thee, lacklove knight, by whose cruelty I have been in the other world it seemed more than a thousand years! But thee, O most compassionate squire the globe can boast, I thank for the life I now enjoy. From this day forth thou mayst call thine own sixs smocks I now bequeathe, which will make so many shirts for thee, for if not all are without holes, not one but what is clean.' Holding his mitre and with knees to the ground Sancho kissed her hands. The duke bade

them return him his cap and cloak and relieve him of mitre and robe of flames, but the squire prayed that he might keep these as marks and mementos of that rare occasion. The duchess said he might, as he already knew how much she was his friend. The duke then ordered the servants to clear the court and all retire to their rooms, and that Don Quijote and Sancho should be shown those they had previously occupied.

CHAPTER LXX

Following on the sixty-ninth and necessary to the clear understanding of this history

THAT night Sancho slept on a truckle-bed in the same room with his master, a thing not to his liking, since he knew that sleep was impossible what with questions and replies and he was particularly in a mood not to talk much — the pains of his past martyrdom being still present wouldn't let his tongue move in perfect freedom. He'd have preferred to sleep alone in a hut than in that rich hall with another. And his fear proved so well-founded that scarce had his master touched the bed when he spake out : ' How did the evening's adventure strike you, Sancho ? Verily great and puissant is the power of a lover's disdain ! with your own eyes you saw Altisidora dead — killed by no arrow, sword, instrument of war or fatal poison but by her brooding on the utter lack of affection wherewith I ever treated her. ' ' She might have died and welcome, how and when she pleased, ' replied the other, ' and left me at home in mine house, for I neither loved nor disdained her in my life. I do not know nor can I think how the health of Altisidora, a damsel more whimsical than wise, can have aught to do with the torturing of Sancho Panza. But indeed I come to see clearly and distinctly that enchanters and enchantments do exist in the world ; from whom may God deliver me since I cannot myself. And now prithee let me sleep and don't put one single question more unless you would that I fling myself from the window. ' ' Sleep, Sancho

friend, if the pinchings, pin-pricks and sealed slaps on the cheek will allow.' 'No pain equalled the insult of the slaps,' declared the other, 'for they were given by duennas, whom may God confound. But again prithee let me sleep, for slumber is the soother of all woes.' 'Be it so,' said his master, 'and God be with you.'

The pair fell asleep and Cid Hamet, author of this great history, takes this opportunity to write and explain how the duke and duchess came to concoct the aforementioned episode. He says that the bachelor Carrasco, still remembering how as Knight of the Mirrors he was vanquished and laid low by Don Quijote and all his plans upset, would again try his hand, hoping for better issue. Accordingly, having learnt from the page that brought the letter and present to Sancho's wife where Don Quijote was to be found, he sought out another mount and new armour, painting on the shield a white moon. This and his arms he loaded on a mule, led not by Tomé Cecial but by a peasant, so as to escape detection by Sancho and his master. He arrived then at the castle of the duke, who informed him of the road and route taken by the knight for the purpose of the jousts at Saragossa. The duke also told him of the tricks played upon the pair, in particular the scheme for Dulcinea's disenchantment, namely at the cost to Sancho's posteriors.

In brief he described the deception Sancho had practised on the master, making him believe that Dulcinea was enchanted, transformed into a peasant-wench, and how the duchess had in turn made Sancho believe that he was the one that had been tricked and that Dulcinea really was under a charm. At all of which the bachelor smiled and wondered, reflecting on the shrewdness and simplicity of the servant no less than at the complete obsession of the lord. The duke prayed him, should he meet with and conquer Quijote or no, to return that way and relate to them the event. The bachelor promised, set out on his search, found nothing at Saragossa, passed on and at length experienced what is already known. He returned by the duke's castle and related all, together with the articles of combat, and that Don Quijote like a good errant was now on his way home to

fulfil his promise of resting for a year ; in which time, added the bachelor, he may be cured of his frenzy. It seemed to him most pitiful that so brilliant a gentleman should continue distraught, and he had therefore been moved to take all this trouble.

With this he left the duke and returned home, waiting there for the other that was to follow. Thus it was the duke had the chance to play this jest, such was his joy in the concerns of the roving twain. He sent out servants far and near ahorse and afoot to patrol the roads by which Don Quijote might return and to bring him, if captured, willingly or by force to the castle. They were successful and sent word to the duke who, with his plans well-laid, ordered the lamps and torches in the court lighted and Altisidora ascend to her tomb, with all the other devices, so natural and well-contrived that 'twixt them and reality was small space. But Cid Hamet adds that he personally considers the tricksters as mad as the tricked and not two fingers' breadth from appearing fools in making fools of real ones.

Upon them, the one lost in sound sleep, the other in unbridled fancies, the day fell and upon the latter the desire to rise, for victor or vanquished him the downy couched ne'er pleased. The wench Altisidora, who in the opinion of her chosen knight had been restored to life, following the humour of her lord and lady, crowned with the same garland she had worn on the tomb and clad in a gown of white taffeta flowered with gold, her hair loose upon her shoulders and herself leaning on a staff of finest ebony, entered the chamber of her beloved. Excited and confused he tucked himself almost out of sight beneath sheets and quilts, tongue-tied and unable to offer any courtesy. The damsel sat herself on a chair near the bed's head and heaving a deep sigh in a faint voice and feeble thus began : ' When ladies of quality and modest girls trample honour under foot and let the tongue break down every obstacle, revealing to the world the secrets of the heart, they certainly are far gone. I, Señor Don Quijote de La Mancha, am one of these : caught, conquered and in love, yet virtuous and enduring, wherefore my soul burst through my silence and I lost my life. Two days, from brooding on the rigour of your treatment, O heart harder than marble to my

plaints, stony knight, have I been dead or at least so deemed by all that beheld me, and were it not that Love out of compassion set my release in the sufferings of this good squire, there in the other world I should have continued.'

'Love might well have placed it in the sufferings of my Dapple,' said Sancho, 'for I should have thanked him for it. But tell me, lady, and may Heaven grant you a softer lover than my master, what did you see in t'other world? what is going on down in hell, for she that dies in despair, that must be her tavern.' 'To tell the truth I couldn't have died outright for I didn't get inside hell, and had I, verily I couldn't have got out again had I wished. The truth is that I arrived at the gate, where some half-dozen demons were playing tennis, all in breeches and waistcoats, their collars trimmed with Flemish lace and ruffles of the same used as cuffs that left four finger-breaths of arm exposed, to give the effect of long hands, in which they held rackets of fire. But what most struck me was that in place of balls they used books that seemed puffed with wind and nonsense—a thing wonderful to behold. Still more was I amazed to see that, whereas winners in a game are usually happy and losers sad, down there everybody grumbled and snarled and called names.' 'No,' said Sancho, 'that isn't to be wondered at, for devils, game or no game, win or no win, are never satisfied.'

'So must it be,' agreed the girl; 'but there's still another thing that surprises me or did then, and this was that with the first the ball was of no further service, and the way they chewed up books old and new was a marvel. To one in particular they gave such a fillip that, brand-new and finely bound though it was, out came its guts and the leaves went flying. One devil said to another: 'What book is that?' and his friend replied: 'The Second Part of Don Quijote de la Mancha, not the one by Cid Hamet its first author but that by an Aragonese, claiming Tordesillas as his birth-place.' 'Clear it out then,' said the other; 'drop it in the bottom of the abyss that mine eyes may never see it more.' 'Is it so bad?' 'So bad that if I tried mine utmost to make it worse, I should fail.' The game went on with other books for balls, but this particular vision I took care should

abide with me, since then I heard the name of him I love and adore.' 'A vision it must have been,' said the knight, 'for there's no other I in the world. That history up here too is bandied about from hand to hand and stays in none for all give it the foot. It matters naught to me to hear that I go like a phantom through the shades of hell or amid the brightness of the earth, since I am not he of whom this history treats. Were it a good one, faithful and true, 'twould live for ages, but being false, from birth to burial 'twill be a short road.'

Altisidora was about to continue her complaint of Don Quijote when the other said: 'Oft have I told thee, lady, that it distresses me you should have set your thoughts upon me, since mine can only acknowledge and not cure them. I was born to be Dulcinea's: the fates, if such there be, dedicated me to her. To think that another beauty will replace her in my soul is to think topsyturvy. Sufficient plain-speaking this for you to withdraw within the bounds of your modesty, since no man can be forced to do the impossible.' Altisidora, considerably vexed apparently, exclaimed: 'God's life, Don Poor-Jack, soul of a brass mortar, you date-stone, more dumb and unmoved than a questioned peasant when taking aim at a mark! if I get at you, I'll tear your eyes out. Think you perchance, don vanquished and don cudgelled, that I really died for you? All that you witnessed last evening was pretence: I am no woman to let myself, for such camels, grieve the black of my nail — much less die.' 'I believe you,' said Sancho, 'for this dying for lovers is all poppycock. Easily can they say they will, but as for doing it — believe it, Judas.'

There now entered the singer and poet that had sung the two verses the night before, who making a low bow to Don Quijote said: 'May your worship, sir knight, count and keep me in the number of your greatest servants; 'tis many days I've been drawn to you, as well by your fame as your achievement.' The other returned: 'Prithee tell me whom I have the pleasure of addressing, that my courtesy may correspond to your deserts.' The youth then told him he was the musician and panegyrist that sang beneath the tomb. 'Indeed,' said the knight, 'your worship

has a wonderful voice, but what you sang didn't seem to me very pertinent ; what had those stanzas of Garcilaso to do with this lady's death ? ' ' Don't worry about that, ' was the answer, ' for with the unshorn poets of our age 'tis the fashion to write each as he pleases and steal from whom he will, to the point or not, and every stupidity sung or scribbled is attributed to poetic license. '

Don Quijote was about to reply but was prevented by a call from the duke and duchess, with whom passed a long and pleasant conversation, wherein Sancho said so many sharp and witty things that his listeners wondered afresh first at his simplicity then at his shrewdness. The knight asked leave to depart that day, since to vanquished errants like himself a pigsty were more suitable than a palace ; and this request they conceded. The duchess enquired whether or no Altisidora was still in his good graces ; to which he answered : ' Madam, let your ladyship realise that all this damsel's trouble springs from idleness, whose antidote is virtuous and constant employment. She has been saying to me that they wear lace in hell ; since she surely knows how to make it, let it never leave her hands. While engaged in making her bobbins dance, the image or images of her fancy will not dance before her mind. This is the truth, this my view of the matter and this my advice. '

' And mine ' said Sancho, ' for in all my life I've never seen a lace-maker die from love : girls at work think more of getting it done than of cooing. I speak from myself, for while digging in the fields I quite forget the old woman, I mean my Teresa Panza, whom I love better than mine eyelids. ' ' You say well, Sancho, ' approved the duchess, ' and I'll see to it that my Altisidora busies herself hereafter in some kind of needlework, which she does to perfection. ' ' There's no need of a remedy, ' interposed the damsel, ' for the memory of this vagabond's cruelty will blot him from my thoughts. And now with your grace's permission I would leave, that I may no longer behold, not his sorry aspect, but his ugly, abominable countenance. ' And the duke said : ' This suggests the common saying, He that insults is near to forgive. ' The maid pretended to wipe away tears with a kerchief and making obeisance to her lord and mistress left the

room. 'Ill-luck I promise thee, poor girl,' said Sancho, 'ill-luck I promise thee, for thou hast to do with a soul of a reed and heart of oak. I'faith had thou to do with me, another cock would crow for thee.' Their talk came to an end, Don Quijote dressed, dined with his hosts, and knight and squire sallied from the castle.

CHAPTER LXXI

On their way to their native-village

UTTERLY sad on the one hand and almost jubilant on the other the vanquished and wayworn Don Quijote rode along. His defeat caused his sorrow, and the thought of Sancho's potency, as revealed in the resurrection of Altisidora, occasioned his joy, though it had been a struggle to persuade himself that the enamoured maid had been dead indeed. Sancho was cheerful neither way, for he grieved to find that the girl had not kept her word with regard to the smocks. With this thought running to and fro in his mind he said to his master: 'Of a truth, señor, I am the most unlucky doctor in the world, in which are physicians that expect to be paid for treating a sick man whom they killed, when all their trouble was to sign a scrap of paper for some medicines, which not they but the apothecaries make, and lo! 'tis done. But to me, whom another's cure costs drops of blood, slaps in the face, pinchings, pin-pricks and lashes, they don't give a copper. I swear then that if they put another patient into my hands, they must grease them before I cure him, for the abbot dines by what he sings, and I cannot persuade myself that Heaven has lent me this virtue that I should be giving it away free gratis for nothing.'

'You are right, Sancho friend, and Altisidora has done ill in omitting to give the promised smocks, though your virtue was given without cost or study, save how to receive torturings. For myself I can say that should you desire reimbursement for Dulcinea's disenchantment, I'll stand for what's fair, though not

sure that the paying will mix well with the curing and I shouldn't wish the meed to counteract the medicine. However, methinks there's no harm in trying. See, boy, how much you ask, and strike away. You have the money, so count the sum out and pay with your own hand.' At this Sancho opened his eyes and ears a palm wide and in his heart consented to a sound thrashing. ' Well now, señor, I'm willing to suit myself to your pleasure in what you wish for my profit, for the love I bear my children and my wife makes me seem interested. Let your worship say how much you'll give for each lash.' ' Were I to pay in accordance with the greatness and quality of the remedy, the treasures of Venice, the mines of Potosi, were little for your recompense. Look and see how much you have of mine and put a price on each stroke.'

' As to the strokes,' said Sancho, ' there are three thousand three hundred and so many : I have given some five, the rest remain. Let these five count as the odd ones and let us get down to just the three thousand three hundred, which at a quarter-real apiece, and I won't take less though all the world bid, amount to three thousand three hundred quarter-reals. Now the three thousand make one thousand five hundred half-reals or seven hundred and fifty reals ; and the three hundred make one hundred and fifty half-reals or seventy-five reals, and these with the seven hundred and fifty make in all eight hundred and twenty-five reals. These I will disburse from what I have of your worship and enter mine house rich and content, and though well whipped, trout are not caught — I say no more.' ' O blessed Sancho, O amiable squire ! and how bounden shall we be, Dulcinea and I, to serve you all the days Heaven may grant us. If she return to her lost state (and 'tis impossible that she shouldn't), her misfortune will be turned to joy and my defeat to happy triumph. Tell me, son, when will you begin this scourging, for provided you hasten it, I'll add a hundred reals ?' ' This night without fail,' replied the other ; ' see that we spend it in the open beneath the unclouded sky and I'll lay open my flesh. '

It seemed to Don Quijote that the day lingered more than usual, to his great unrest, for he feared lest the wheels of Apol-

lo's chariot had broken — even as lovers fear, who never can adjust time to their desires. But night came at last and the pair entered beneath some pleasant trees that stood a little from the road. Emptying Rocinante's saddle and Dapple's pannel they reclined upon the green grass and supped of Sancho's stores, till the squire, making a strong and flexible scourge of Dapple's halter and headstall, retired amid some beech-trees some twenty paces from his master. Seeing him step off lively, the other said : ' Take care, friend, lest you lash yourself to pieces ; allow plenty of room 'twixt the strokes ; don't hurry so much at the beginning of the course that your breath will give out in the middle. In other words don't lay on so vigorously that your life will fail you before the full number is told. I'll count the strokes on my rosary here that you may not lose by a card too much or too little, and may Heaven favour you, as your good purpose deserves ! ' ' Pledges never worry a good paymaster. I mean to scourge me in a manner to hurt without harming, for surely therein abides the essence of this miracle. '

With this he stripped to the waist and seizing the lash commenced the laying on and his master the counting. He had administered six or eight ropings when the joke seemed to him too costly and the price he was charging too cheap. So he moderated his zeal and said to his master that he appealed against a fraud, for every stroke was worth a half-real, not a quarter. ' Proceed, Sancho friend, faint not, for I'll double the stake. ' ' 'Tis in God's hands then and let Him rain lashes ; ' but the rogue took them from his back and let the trees have a taste, groaning now and then as though his soul were being uprooted with every stroke. His master was so tender that, fearful lest Sancho end his life and his own desire be left high and dry, he called to him : ' On your life, friend, let the business rest, for the medicine seems bitter to me and 'twill be well to take it at intervals only ; Zamora wasn't captured in an hour. If I haven't miscounted, you have already received a thousand strokes, which will suffice for the present. To use a homespun phrase, the ass bears the load but not the overload. '

' Nay, master, it must not be said of me, Money given, arms

riven; stand apart a little while more that I may give myself at least another thousand, and then in two bouts we shall have finished with the lot, and cloth to spare.' 'Since you find yourself in pliant mood,' said the other, 'Heaven help you and flog away, for I am not near.' Sancho returned to his task with such good-will that many a tree lost its bark, but finally and just before smiting a beech with one fell blow he cried: 'Here Samson shall die and all that are with him.' The knight ran to his rescue and seizing the twisted courbash exclaimed: 'Fate doesn't permit, O Sancho my friend, that for my pleasure you should lose the life whereby your wife and children are sustained. Let her of el Toboso await a better opportunity and I shall keep within the limits of my present hope, waiting till fresh power come to you whereby to conclude this business to the satisfaction of all.' 'Since your worship wills it,' replied Sancho, 'be it so, and fling your cloak over these shoulders, for I am sweating and would not get a chill — a danger all we novitiates run.'

Remaining in his doublet the master covered the servant, who slept till the sun awakened him. Then then pursued their journey, to which a temporary end was given in a village three leagues on. They alighted at a tavern, recognised as such by Don Quijote, and not as a castle with moat, turrets, portcullises and drawbridge for, since his overthrow, he had shown clearer judgment in all things, as will now be seen. They lodged him in a lower room, round which there served for leather hangings some old painted serges, as is the fashion in small country-villages. On one was depicted by a vile hand the rape of Helen at the very moment when his bold guest stole her from Menelaus, and on another the story of Dido and Aeneas — she upon a high tower making signal with half a bed-sheet to her fugitive lover who was flying over sea in a frigate or brigantine. In the first picture it was noticeable that Helen fled with no very ill grace, for she was smiling to herself on the sly. The fair Dido on the other hand dropped tears the size of walnuts.

On seeing the tapestries Don Quijote remarked: 'These two ladies were most unfortunate in that they were not born in the present age, and I unhappy above all in not having been born in

theirs, for had I met with these gentlemen, Troy would never have been burned nor Carthage destroyed — the slaying of Paris would have forestalled these catastrophes.' 'I'll wager,' said his squire, 'that ere long there won't be wine-stall, tavern or barber-shop without the pictorial history of our doings. But I trust they'll be painted by a better dabster than the hand that did these.' 'I could wish so too,' said the other, 'for this artist reminds me of the Ubedan painter, Orbaneja, who when asked what he painted replied, Whatever it turns out. If perchance he painted a cock, he wrote below, This is a cock — lest it be taken for a she-fox. Of this sort methinks was the painter or writer, for it's all one, that composed the new Don Quijote, painting or writing whatever might turn out. Or he may be likened to a poet named Mauleon, who flourished some years ago at the capital, who was wont to answer any question off-hand and without thinking. This fellow, when asked once what Deum de Deo meant, replied : 'Dé donde diere (let him hit where he will).' But leaving this aside, tell me, my son, whether or no you think to administer another dressing to-night, and whether you wish it under cover or the open sky.'

'Egad, sire, what I think to give me may be given in house or field. Yet I seen to prefer that it be amid trees, which keep me company and wonderfully help to bear the pain.' 'Indeed this must not be, Sancho friend; you must get new strength. We'll reserve the rest till we reach our village, which will be the day after to-morrow at the latest.' Sancho replied he would suit the other's pleasure; personally he'd like to give brief end to that business while the blood was hot and the mill agrind. 'Danger lurks in delay, master, and pray to God and ply the hammer, for one take is better than two I'll-give-thees, and a sparrow in the hand than a vulture flying.' 'No more, by the only God! I fear you are returning to, As it was in the beginning. Speak plainly and simply, as many times I have bid, and you'll see how one loaf is as good as a hundred.' 'I can't make out what bad luck this is of mine, but I cannot speak sense without a proverb or a proverb that doesn't seem to me sense. But I'll do better if I can;' and with this their colloquy ended.

CHAPTER LXXII

Don Quijote and Sancho arrive at their village

ALL that day the pair remained at this village and inn, awaiting the night, Sancho that he might finish his count in the open country and Don Quijote that he might see it finished, since it meant the fulfilment of his desire. In the meantime arrived at the tavern a traveller with three or four servants, one of whom said to his master : ‘ Señor Don Alvaro Tarfe, your worship may pass the siesta here, for the place seems clean and cool.’ On hearing this Don Quijote said to his squire : ‘ Look, Sancho : when I turned the leaves of the false second part of my history, methinks I chanced upon this name of Don Alvaro Tarfe.’ ‘ That might easily be,’ replied Sancho ; ‘ let him alight and we will question him.’ The gentleman dismounted and the innmistress gave him a lower room with painted serges like that of our knight and opposite to him. The gentleman put on a light summer suit and coming out onto the large and airy tavern-porch, where Quijote was pacing up and down, he said to him : ‘ Whither is your worship travelling, sir ?’ And the other replied : ‘ To a village not far away, whereof I am a native ; and you ?’ ‘ To Granada, my fatherland.’ ‘ And a good one,’ said the knight ; ‘ but out of courtesy tell me your name, for methinks it concerns me to know it more than I can easily say.’ ‘ Don Alvaro Tarfe,’ replied the traveller.

‘ Surely then,’ returned Don Quijote, ‘ you are the gentleman of that name figuring in the second part of the History of Don Quijote de la Mancha, recently printed and published by a modern author.’ ‘ I am,’ said the other, ‘ and that Don Quijote was one of my greatest friends. I was the one that drew him from home or at least moved him to come to the jousts at Saragossa, whither I was going. Indeed I did him many a friendly turn and saved him from getting his shoulders slapped by the hangman for his foolhardiness.’ ‘ And tell me, sir, do I look at all like

this Don Quijote?' 'Not in the least.' 'And this Don Quijote, did he have for a squire one Sancho Panza?' 'Yes, but though the fellow had the reputation of a wit, I never heard him say anything to justify it.'

'That I can easily believe,' broke in Sancho. 'for to be witty is not for all, and this Sancho your worship speaks of must be a rascal, thief and booby in one, for the true Sancho Panza is I that have more humours than are rained. If not, let your worship make a test and walk behind me for just a year, and you'll find that they drop from me at every step, such and so many, that usually without my knowing why everybody laughs. And the true Don Quijote, the famous, the valiant, the wise, the enamoured, the righter of wrongs, the guardian of minors and orphans, the bulwark of widows, the slayer of damsels, he that has for his sole mistress the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso, is my master, this gentleman before you. Every other Don Quijote and every other Sancho Panza is a delusion and a dream.' 'Fore God I believe it,' replied Don Alvaro, 'for in few words you have shown more sense than the other Panza ever spoke in my hearing. He was more the glutton than the good talker and more the witless than the wag, and I haven't a doubt that the enchanter-persecutors of the good Don Quijote have tried to persecute me with the bad one. But I know not what to say, for I dare take an oath that I left him confined in the Nuncio's house in Toledo for treatment, yet here appears another Quijote and a very different one.'

'I,' began our own, 'am not certain that I am good, but I can say that I am not the bad one. As proof of this, your worship should know that in all the days of my life I have never set foot in Saragossa. Having heard that this fictitious Quijote had appeared at the jousts there, I refused to enter, that I might proclaim his lie to the face of the world. Instead I went openly to Barcelona, that treasure-house of courtesy, asylum of strangers, hospital of the poor, fatherland of the brave, avenger of the injured and and pleasant garner of firm friendships, in site and beauty unequalled. And though affairs there didn't turn out to my pleasure, to my great sorrow rather, without it I suffer them because

her have I seen. In a word, Señor Don Alvaro Tarfe, I am Don Quijote de La Mancha of whom fame reports, and not that chicken-hearted fool that has tried to usurp my name and honour himself with my thoughts. And I pray your worship as a gentleman, that it please you to declare before the mayor of this place that this is the first time your worship has seen me and that I am not the Don Quijote of the false second part, nor this Sancho Panza my squire the one your worship knew.'

'This I shall be only too willing to do,' replied Don Alvaro, 'though it confuses me to have met with two Quijotes and two Sancho Panzas alike in names, so different in actions. But again I say and swear I have not seen what I have seen, nor experienced what I have experienced.' 'No doubt your worship is enchanted like my lady Dulcinea del Toboso,' suggested Sancho, 'and would to Heaven your restoration lay in my giving myself three thousand and odd lashes like those I am giving for her, for you could have them without interest.' 'I don't understand about these lashes.' Sancho replied that it was a long story but that he would tell it in case they went the same road.

The dinner-hour had now arrived and the two gentlemen ate together. There chanced to enter the tavern the mayor of the village with a notary and before him Don Quijote laid a petition to the effect that his rights demanded that Don Alvaro Tarfe, the gentleman there present, should declare before his honour that he was not acquainted with Don Quijote de La Mancha, also present, and that he was not the one figuring in a history entitled : Second Part of Don Quijote de La Mancha, composed by a certain Avellaneda, native of Tordesillas. The mayor thereupon disposed of the matter judicially and the statement was drawn up with all needed formalities. Don Quijote and Sancho rejoiced at this declaration, as though the difference 'twixt the two Quijotes and Panzas were not made plain by their own acts and words. Many courtesies and proffers of service passed between Don Alvaro and our knight, in which the great Manchegan showed his sanity by ridding Don Alvaro of his error in thinking he must be enchanted when he could touch with his hand two such unlike men of the same name. Evening come they set out

on their road, the same for a matter of half a league. In this short space Don Quijote told the other of the disgrace of his overthrow, and of the enchantment and treatment of Dulcinea, which moved new wonder in Don Alvaro, who now embracing master and squire separated from them.

That night they passed amid some trees that Sancho might have opportunity to fulfil his penance, which he accomplished in the same manner as on the previous night at the cost of the barks of beech-trees, tougher than his shoulders, of which he took such care that the lashes wouldn't have disturbed a fly, had one been there. The deceived master lost not a stroke of the count, which with those of the night before came to three thousand and twenty-nine. The sun appears to have risen early to witness this sacrifice, and by its light they continued their journey, conversing of Don Alvaro's mistake and what a lucky idea it was to take his declaration before justice and so authentically. That day and that night they pushed on with naught befalling them worth relating, save that Sancho finished his tally. At this Don Quijote was jubilant beyond measure, waiting for the dawn to show him the now disenchanted Dulcinea somewhere on the road. Every woman they met as they travelled along he rode up to see were she the one, considering that Merlin's promises could not fail.

In these thoughts and desires they mounted a hill from whose crest they beheld their village lying below, and Sancho, catching sight of it, was on his knees saying : ' O my longed-for native country, open thine eyes and behold to thee returning thy son Sancho Panza, covered with lashes if not with gold. Open thine arms and receive likewise thy son Don Quijote, who comes, though conquered by another, triumphant over himself, and this he tells me is of all victories the most to be desired. Money I bring ; if they gave me many lashes, I had a good mount.' ' Enough of this nonsense,' said his master, ' and let us descend with right foot foremost into our village, where we shall give reign to our fancies and our scheme of the pastoral life.' With this they descended toward the town.

CHAPTER LXXIII

The omens Don Quijote met with on entering his native village, together with other passages that adorn and accredit this great history

CID Hamet says that as Don Quijote approached the village, two boys were quarreling on her threshing-floor, and one was saying to the other : ‘ Don’t wear yourself out, Periquillo, for you’ll never see it in all the days of your live. ’ The knight overheard this and said to his squire : ‘ Did you notice, friend, what that urchin said? ’ ‘ Well, and what of it ? ’ ‘ What, do you not see that it means I am not to see Dulcinea more? ’ Sancho was about to reply when he was prevented by the sight of a hare that, fleeing before many dogs and hunters, came to take shelter beneath the feet of Dapple. Picking it up safe in his hands, Sancho presented it to his master, who was saying : ‘ *Malum signum, malum signum* : hare flees, hounds pursue her, all’s over with Dulcinea. ’ ‘ My, but you’re a queer one, ’ said the squire ; ‘ suppose this hare then is Dulcinea and these hounds the cut-throat enchanters that transformed her ; she flees, I pick her up and hand her to your worship who hold her in your arms and caress her. What bad token is this or what evil omen can be here ? ’

The urchins now came to get a look at the hare and Sancho asked what their quarrel was about. The one whose words they had overheard answered that he had snatched from the other a cage of crickets which he didn’t mean to restore in all his life. Producing four quarter-reals, Sancho gave them to the boy for the cage, which he then put in his master’s hands saying : ‘ Here are your omens, sire, broken and worthless, and though a fool methinks they have no more to do with our affairs than last year’s clouds. If my memory serve me, I’ve heard our village-priest say ’twas not the part of wise and Christian beings to regard these mummeries. Indeed you yourself told me the other day

that all those Christians that looked to signs were asses. But there's no need to make a fuss; let us on and to our village.' The hunters coming up asked for their hare, which the knight accordingly restored.

As they neared the entrance to the town, they found the priest and the bachelor in a little meadow praying. Now Sancho had thrown the buckram fiery robe over his ^{ass} as by way of sumpter-cloth and on the beast's head had fitted the mitre — the most novel transformation and adornment ever ass experienced in the world. Their friends immediately recognised them however and came with open arms to greet them. Don Quijote dismounted and embraced them warmly, and the small boys, lynxes whom naught escapes, seeing the mitre on Dapple, ran to get a nearer view, calling to others: 'Come, fellows, and see Sancho Panza's ass, gayer than Mingo, and Don Quijote's nag leaner than ever.' And so, surrounded by urchins and attended by priest and bachelor, entering the town they went straight to Don Quijote's house, at whose door they found niece and housekeeper, the news of their coming having preceeded them.

It likewise had reached the ears of Teresa Panza, and she, dishevelled and half-naked, holding Sanchica by the hand hastened to meet her husband, and finding him not so far advanced as she had been thinking a governor should be, said: 'How come you thus, husband dear? methinks you come afoot and foundered, more like a gadabout than a governor.' 'Tut, tut, Teresa, for many times where are hooks are no flitches. But let us go home, where you shall hear marvels. Money I bring, which is what counts, earned by my diligence and to no one's hurt.' 'Fetch it along, my good husband, for be it earned by this or by that, you won't have set a new fashion in the world.' Sanchica embraced her father, asking him did he bring her anything, for she had been longing for him like rain in May. And seizing his girdle on one side and the wife the other hand, they marched off home, the daughter leading the ass.

Considering neither time nor season, Don Quijote at once closeted himself with the bachelor and priest, and in few words

told them of his overthrow and the vow he had taken not to leave his village under a year, which oath, as became a knight-errant, he meant to keep to the letter, not trespassing upon it one tittle, bound by the rigorous rule of his order. He purposed to fill this interval by turning shepherd and diverting himself in the solitude of the fields where he could give range to his amorous thoughts, busying himself with the virtuous pastoral life. And he prayed them, were they free, to accompany him, since he would buy ewes and stock sufficient to entitle them to the name of shepherds. He gave them to understand as well that the main part of the affair had been attended to — he had already assigned them names that fitted them like gloves. The priest asked what they were. The shepherd Quijotiz was his own; the bachelor was to be called Carrascon, the priest Curiambro and Sancho the shepherd Pancino.

Both were dumfounded by this new fondness of their friend, but that he might not again range about on his chivalries, and trusting that one year would work his cure, they stamped his folly wisdom and offered themselves as companions in the enterprise. ‘The more,’ said Samson, ‘in that I am a famous poet, as all the world knows, and at every step I shall be composing pastoral or courtly verses, as may best suit our aim, that we may divert ourselves off there in the wildwood. But our greatest need, gentlemen, is that each select the shepherdess he means to celebrate, that he may not leave a tree however hard ungraven with her name, after the manner and usage of enamoured shepherds.’

‘There you’ve hit it,’ cried Don Quijote, ‘I myself need not look for an imaginary shepherdess, when I have at hand the peerless Dulcinea, glory of these river-banks, ornament of these meads, prop of beauty, cream of graces, in short the object whereon all praise may rest, hyperbole though it be.’ ‘True,’ said the priest, ‘and for ourselves, we shall look for some tractable shepherdesses hereabouts, whom, if they don’t square with us, we may corner.’ And Samson Carrasco added: ‘And should these be wanting, we’ll chose names from those already in vogue in books whereof the world is full: Filidas, Amaryllises, Dianas,

Fléridas, Galateas and Belisardas, whom, as they are sold in the market-place, we can buy and keep for our own. If my lady, or to speak more correctly, my shepherdess, be called Anna, I'll celebrate her under the name Anarda, and if Francisca, Francenia will hit it off; it Lucia, Lucinda, for so it goes. Sancho Panza, if he enter our fraternity, can celebrate his wife as Teresaina; ' which application brought a smile to Don Quijote's face. The priest showered praises on his virtuous and honourable resolve and again offered to bear him company such times as he was free from imperative calls. And with this his friends left him, advising and begging that he look to his health, eating only what was wholesome.

Fate willed that the niece and housekeeper overheard this converse of the three, so no sooner were they with their master than the niece said: ' What is this, dear uncle? when we were thinking you would settle at home and live a quiet and decent life, would you fall into new labyrinths, turning yourself into, Gentle shepherd, thou that goest; Gentle shepherd, thou that comest? Indeed the straw is too old to make pipes of.' And to this the housekeeper added: ' And out there in the fields will your worship be able to stand the hot afternoons of summer, the night-dews of winter and the howling of the wolves? Nay, surely not, since this is the calling and office of robust men, reared and trained thereto almost from swaddling-clothes. Indeed, evil for evil, better knight-errant than shepherd. See here, master, heed my advice, not given on a stomach filled with bread and wine, but on fasting and more than fifty years of age. It is that you abide at home, look to your estate, confess often and help the poor. Then if ill betide you, on my soul let it rest. '

' Peace, children, for I know well where I stand. Bring me to my bed, for I seem not strong. But be assured that whether errant knight or wandering shepherd I shall not cease to attend to your needs, as you'll find in the testament.' The good children (for children they were) carried him to bed, where they gave him to eat and did all that was possible for his comfort.

CHAPTER LXXIV

Of how Don Quijote fell ill, of the testament he made
and his death

As nothing human lasts for ever, all things declining from their first term to their last, in particular the lives of men, and as Don Quijote's had no heavenly privilege to stay its course, it's end and fulfilment came and when least he expected. Whether it was from the sorrow of his downfall or the deposition of Heaven, he contracted a fever that kept him in bed six days, during which time he was frequently visited by his friends the priest, bachelor, and barber, nor did once quit his bedside Sancho Panza his faithful squire. His friends, thinking his sense of defeat and the miscarriage of his desire anent Dulcinea's disenchantment kept him there, did all they could for his cheer, the bachelor urging that he bestir himself and rise that they might enter upon their pastoral calling, for he had already composed an eclogue that put all Sannazaro's to shame. Moreover, on his own account, he had bought two famous dogs to guard the fold, Barcino and Butron, sold him by a drover of Quintanar.

But not for all this did our knight cast his melancholy, and his friends called in the doctor, who, taking his pulse, didn't like the beat of it, saying he should look to the welfare of his soul for that of his body was in jeopardy. Don Quijote heard him in calmness ; not so the housekeeper, niece and squire who wept as if he already lay dead before them. The leech gave as his opinion that grief and dejection were hastening his end. The knight prayed them to depart for he would rest a little. They yielded and he slept more than six hours at a stretch as the saying is, till the women feared he might abide in that dream. At the end he wakened, crying in loud voice : ' Blessed be Almighty God that has done me this great good ! Verily his mercies are limitless, nor checked nor shortened by the sins of men.'

The niece overheard these words, and as they sounded more rational than he was wont to utter, during his illness at least, she questioned him : ‘ what is it you say, uncle ? have we something new ? what mercies or what sins of men are these ? ’ ‘ The mercies, niece, are those God at this moment has shown toward me, nor are they lessened by my sins, as I say. For my mind is now clear, free from the dismal shadows of ignorance wherein my incessant and disastrous reading in the detestable books of chivalry enshrouded me. Now I see their folly and fraud, and my sole regret is that this disillusion has come too late to permit my reading other books that might prove the light of my soul. I feel that I am at the point of death and I could wish so to meet it that my life may not be judged bad enough to gain me the sobriquet, madman, for though one I have been, I would that my death belie it. Summon my good friends the priest, the bachelor and Master Nicholas the barber, for I wish to confess and make my will. ’ But the niece was spared this by the entrance of the three, on seeing whom Don Quijote cried :

‘ Good news, my friends, good news ! no longer do you behold Don Quijote de la Mancha, but Alonso Quixano, whose manners earned him the epithet, the good. Now am I the foe of Amadis of Gaul and his infinite progeny. Now are all the profane books of chivalry hateful to me, for now I know my folly and the peril they placed me in. Now, schooled in my right senses, do I abhor them ! ’ On hearing this the three thought some new perversion had seized him, and Samson said : ‘ Just when we have heard Dulcinea is disenchanted, do you come forth with this ? And when we were on the point of turning shepherds, passing our lives in song like princes, would you make yourself a hermit ? Tut, tut, on your life. Come back again and leave these fairy tales. ’ ‘ Those that till now, ’ replied the other, ‘ have been true ones to me to my damage, my death with the help of Heaven shall turn to my profit. I feel that at post-haste I am dying, gentlemen, so, jesting aside, summon a confessor to confess me and a notary to draw up my will, for in straits like this a man mustn’t trifle with his soul. While señor priest confesses me, prithee let them go for a scrivener. ’

Amazed they looked at one another, but, though doubting these words, they were yet inclined to believe them. One of the signs that led them to think he was dying was the ease wherewith he turned from mad to sane. And to the words above he added so many more, so well-spoken, so Christian and so sensible that in the end they were convinced of his restoration. The priest made the others leave the room : he alone received his confession. The bachelor went for the notary and soon returned with him and Sancho Panza, who having already heard from the bachelor of his master's state and finding the niece and housekeeper in tears, burst into blubbering. The confession was now over and the priest came out saying : ' Truly he is dying and truly is he sane. All must enter that he may make his will. '

This news came with sudden impact on the swollen eyes of housekeeper, niece and Sancho Panza his good squire, who now poured forth the tears in floods with a thousand sobs from the breast, for verily, as has been said once before, whether plain Alonso Quixano the good or Don Quijote, knight-errant of La Mancha, his was ever a gentle nature and loveable way, and he numbered all that knew him as friends. The notary entered with the others and having drawn up the preamble of the will, wherein the knight ordered his soul with all the requisite Christian circumstances, coming to the bequests, he was told to write : ' Item : 'tis my will that of certain monies in the possession of Sancho Panza, whom I in my madness made my squire, inasmuch as between us are certain outstanding accounts, I would that no reckoning be taken thereof, but that if aught remain after what I owe him has been paid, it shall be his, which little may it do him good. And if I, while mad, was party to giving him the government of an isle, being sane I would if I could give him that of a kingdom, for the simplicity of his nature and the fidelity of his services deserve no less. '

And turning he said to Sancho : ' Forgive me, friend, that I gave thee occasion to appear like myself, making thee fall into mine own error of believing there were and are knights-errant in the world. ' ' Ah, sir, ' replied the other weeping, ' don't die, master mine, but take my advice which is to live many years,

for the maddest thing a man can do in this life is to let himself die off-hand without anyone's killing him, nor other weapon working his end than that of melancholy. Don't be slothful, señor, but rise from this bed and we'll off to the country like shepherds, as we agreed. Maybe we'll find the lady Dulcinea behind some bush, disenchanted and as fine as you please. And if you be dying from grief at your overthrow, lay the blame on me, saying that I girthed Rocinante badly. The more that your worship in your books of chivalry must have seen that often knights get the better of others : that he that is vanquished to-day may be victor to-morrow.' ' True,' seconded Samson; ' the good Sancho is quite right in these matters.' ' Slowly, friends,' said the knight; ' don't look for birds in last year's nests. Mad I was but now am I sane — Don Quijote de La Mancha of old but now again Alonso Quixano the good. May the sincerity of my repentance restore me to your esteem. And now, señor notary, the second clause :

' Item : I bequeathe all my estate, without reserve, to Antonia Quixana my niece here present, after there have been deducted certain small bequests. The first such payment I desire to be to my housekeeper as wages for the period of her service, plus twenty ducats for a dress. Señor priest and señor bachelor Samson Carrasco here present I leave as my executors. Item : 'tis my will, should Antonia Quixana my niece wish to marry, that she wed a man of whom it has first been ascertained that he's ignorant of works of chivalry. Should it be proven that he knows them and my niece persist in marrying him, she shall forfeit this my bequest and my executors shall distribute the same in pious works as they see fit. Item : I pray said gentlemen, if fortune make them acquainted with a certain author, said to have written a history that walks abroad under the title of the Second Part of the Deeds of Don Quijote de La Mancha, on my behalf I would that they beseech him as earnestly as may be to pardon the occasion I unwittingly afforded him of writing so many and such great enormities, for I leave this life with compunction at having occasioned them.'

With this he brought the testament to a close and being over-

taken with faintness lay extended at full length upon his ancient bed, to the great alarm of all, who hastened to his relief. In the three days following he fainted frequently and the house was never at rest. Yet the niece ate, the housekeeper drank and Sancho Panza made merry, for this inheriting blurs or softens the sense of grief a man may be supposed to leave behind. At length, after he had received the sacraments and in many and moving terms heaped further execrations on books of chivalry, our knight's last hour was at hand. And the scrivener, being present, attested that in no book of knightly deeds had he read of an errant that passed away so quietly and like a Christian as did Don Quijote; who, amid the tears and compassion of all, gave up his spirit — died in other words. And the priest bade the scrivener write a declaration, affirming that Alonso Quixano the good, commonly called Don Quijote de La Mancha, had passed naturally from this life, that other authors might not falsely revive him and scribble interminable narratives of his deeds.

Such an end had this imaginative gentleman of La Mancha, whose village Cid Hamet didn't care to specify, that all the towns and hamlets of that district might contend for the honour and claim him as their own, even as the seven cities of Greece contended for Homer. The lamentations of Sancho, the niece and housekeeper are not set down, together with the epitaphs on his tomb, though here is the one Samson Carrasco placed there :

Here lies a gallant gentleman
Whose boldness to such measure ran
That though at last death laid him low,
Her naught availed his overthrow.

The world he deemed of little worth,
And he the bugbear of the earth,
Her scarecrow. Lo ! his destiny :
Insane to live, and sane to die.

And the considerate Cid Hamet said to his pen : ' Here shalt thou rest suspended from this rack by copper wire, O my goose-quill ! whether of skilful or careless cut I know not. Here shalt thou rest long ages, if rude and presumptuous historians take

thee not down to profane thee. But ere they touch thee, warn them, saying as best thou canst :

Hands off, hands off, ye infidels !
I must be touched of none.
My worthy monarch, this emprise
Was meant for me alone.

‘ For me alone was Don Quijote born and I alone for him. He knew to act and I to tell. Together we make one, maugre the fise Tordesillescan scribe that dared or may dare with coarse and clumsy pen write the deeds of my gallant hidalgo — no burden for his shoulders, no subject for his frozen wit. Whom shouldst thou meet, warn to let lie in his tomb the weary, mouldering bones of Don Quijote de La Mancha ; nor carry him, against all canons of death, off to Old Castile, dragging him from the vault where now he lies with leg outstretched, dead to another sally. Sufficient to shame the many made by the mobs of errant knights are the two on which he issued, to the pleasure and delight of all, both in these and foreign realms. So wilt thou fulfil thy Christian calling, giving good counsel to one that would work thee ill. And I shall rest content, proud to have been the first to possess these documents in full ; wherewith my sole desire has been to expose to the abomination of mankind the vain and vapid books of chivaries which, hard pressed by my Don Quijote’s genuine ones, even now stumble and certainly shall fall. Vale. ’

ADVENTURES

- Andres 16-9
 balsam 88-90, 98-9
 Biscayan 39-47
 blanket 91-2
 Braytown 414-7
 bulls 595-7
 car of Death 306-10
 cat-and-bell scare 519-21
 cave of Montesinos 379-90
 corpse 102-7
 dolorous duenna 471-96
 Doña Rodriguez' night-visit 528-33
 dubbing 11-6
 Dulcinea's enchantment 297-304
 enchanted bark 422-7
 friars 39-41
 fulling-mills 108-19
 galley-slaves 129-38
 government of the isle 508, 513-8,
 521-8, 535-44, 551-8, 565-70, 580-2
 hogs 652-3
 inn, 80-93
 island-assault 565-70
 Knight of the Mirrors 313-32
 Knight of the White Moon 636-40
 lions 342-7
 Mambrino's helmet 119-23
 merchants 19-22
 pit, Sancho in the 576-81
 puppet-show 404-11
 sheep 94-101
 windmills 36-7
 wine-sacks 196-201
 wooden-horse 485-96
 Yanguesans 74-80

INCIDENTS

- ape 400-4, 413
 Arcadia 592-7
 Barcelona 615-42, 671-2
 beard-washing 442-3, 448-9
 books, burning of the 26-32
 Camacho's wedding 356-74
 Claudia and Don Vicente 607-10
 cross-roads 19
 curds 340-2
 dance 620-1
 Dapple found 181
 Dapple stolen 148-9, 266, 412
 death of Don Quijote 678-82
 Dulcinea's disenchantment 460-9
 Dulcinea's enchantment 297-304
 el Toboso 293-304
 enchanted head 618-9, 621-4
 enchantment of Don Quijote 208-40
 fat man and lean man 644-5
 fencing 359-60
 galleys 626-34
 gold crowns 140-2
 hanged men 606
 home-coming 673-5
 hunt 457-60
 images 589-91
 lashes 460-9, 490-1, 599, 605, 648,
 652, 658, 665-8, 669, 673
 omens 674-5
 pastoral life 648-50, 675-7
 penance 145-70
 pin-pricks and pinches 656-8
 Princess Micomicona 167-80, 198-202
 printing-house 624-6
 raped woman 516-8
 robbers 607-15
 Rocinante and Dapple 312-3
 Sancho's visit with Dulcinea 182-5
 squires, talk of the 315-20
 stick with crowns inside 515-6
 tailor and caps 514-5
 will of Don Quijote 680-1

LETTERS, STORIES, SUBJECTS

- arms versus letters 202-7
 brayers 397-9
 bridge and gallows 552-3
 books of chivalry 26-32, 192-5,
 215-8, 227-33, 252-4, 335-6, 679-83
 Charles V at the Rotonda 290
 death, Sancho on 368-9
 Don Quijote to Dulcinea 155
 Don Quijote to Sancho 554-6
 Doña Rodríguez' husband 532-3,
 559-61
 drama 219-22
 duchess to Teresa 546-7
 enchanted, the 223-6
 false second part 601-3, 662-3, 669-
 72
 fame 289-91
 families 279
 goats at the river 111-4
 golden age 53-4
 governing, art of 498-506, 554-5
 head of the table 436-7
 insult and injury 440-1
 knights versus friars 391-3
 knights-errant 62-3, 124-8, 185-6,
 231-3, 250, 347-9, 351-2, 439
 liberty 588-9
 madman and pointer 243
 madman and cane-tube 243
 madman Neptune 247-51
 Marcela and Chrysostom 56-61,
 67-73
 marriage 357-8, 375-6
 poverty 510-1
 Sancho and his blacks 170-1
 Sancho to Don Quijote 556-8
 Sancho to Teresa 470-1
 sleep, Sancho on 652
 stage, the world a 310-1
 studies 337-40
 talk of the squires 315-20
 Teresa to duchess 562-3
 Teresa to Sancho 563-4
 wages of a squire 35, 118-9, 282-4,
 420-1
 war 395-6
 wine-tasters 320
 word-artist's tale 525-8

PERSONS

- DON QUIJOTE**
SANCHO PANZA
ROCINANTE
DAPPLE
DULCINEA
ENCHANTERS
- Altisidora 511-12, 519, 587-8, 591-2,
 655-65
 Ambrosio 56-61, 67, 73
 Andres 16-19
 Anna Felix 629-35, 640-2
 bachelor, Alonso Lopez 104-6
 barber 2, 24-34, 160-255, 679-81
 Basilio 357-77
 Biscayan 39-47
 Camacho 356-74
 canon 212-38
 Cardenio 140-2, 166-80, 198-202,
 211-2
 carrier 81-6
 Claudia Gerónima 607-10
 cousin 377-411
 daughter of Doña Rodriguez 533,
 559-61, 570, 582-6, 646
 Doctor Pedro Recio 521-3, 536,
 551-2
 Don Antonio Moreno 616-42

- don Fernando 198-202, 211-2
 don Lorenzo 337-8, 349-55
 doña Molinera 7-16
 doña Rodríguez 432-3, 452-3, 456,
 474-5, 528-33, 560-1, 582-6, 646
 doña Tolosa 7-16
 Dorothea 166-80 198-202, 211-2
 duchess 428-588, 654-65
 duke 428-588, 654-65
 ecclesiastic 435-40
 farmer, Juan Haldudo, 16-19
 friars 39-41
 galley-slaves 129-38
 Ginés de Pasamonte 134-8, 148,
 181, 399-413
 goatherds 52
 housekeeper 1, 24-34, 238-9, 245,
 254-5, 276-82, 287, 675-81
 innkeeper, Juan Palomeque 80-6,
 90-3, 192-200
 innkeeper of the cow-heels 599-604
 innkeeper of the the dubbing 8-16
 innkeeper of the puppet-show 396-
 413
 knight of the Green Cloak 334-55
 majordomo 461-570
 man from Braytown 393, 396-411
 marcelas 56-61, 67-73
 Maritornes 80-6, 92
 merchants 19-22
 niece 1, 24-34, 238-9, 245, 254-5,
 276-80, 287, 675-81
 officer of the Brotherhood 85-8
 page, on his way to enlist 394-411
 page to duchess 545-51
 peasant, the Marquis of Mantua
 22-5
 Pedro, the goatherd 57-61
 penitents 235-7
 priest 2, 24-34, 160-255, 548-51, 675-
 81
 puppet-show interpreter 404-8
 Quitéria 356-77
 Ricote 570-6, 633-5, 640-2
 Roque Guinart 607-15
 Samson Carrasco 258-76, 281-2,
 284-7, 313-32, 548-51, 636-40,
 660-1, 675-81
 Sanchica 545-51, 675
 students 356-61
 Teresa Panza 35, 238-9, 271-6, 545-
 51, 561-4, 675
 travellers 61-9, 73.
 travellers at the inn 600-4
 Tomé Cecial 313-32
 Tosilos 570, 582-6, 645-7

Captains, carriers, commodore, corpse, fishermen, gamblers, hanged
 men, hermit's deputy, herdsmen, hunters, innfolk, islanders, ladies,
 inn-keeper, millers, mourners, officers, peasants, pilgrims, renegade,
 robbers, seamen, secretary, seneschal, servants, shepherds, shepher-
 esses, travellers, Turks, urchins, viceroy.

